



TRANSCENDING THE NINE HEAVENS

BOOK 07

Fengling Tianxia

E PUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Transcending the Nine Heavens

(傲世九重天)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Chu Yang, the Ninth Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, sacrificed almost everything he had for the sake of improving his martial arts, including the love of his life. After spending three years locating the fifth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword, he was ambushed by all sides at that very place. Mortally injured with no means of escape, Chu Yang executed a sacrificial technique by plunging the Nine Tribulations Sword into his very own heart. “With the blood of my heart, ten thousand tribulations will collapse!”

After witnessing the death of all his ambushers, Chu Yang’s vision began to darken. At a distance, moments before his death, he saw the mastermind who had plotted his downfall — Mo Tian Ji. With that, his eyes finally closed.

However, with a start, Chu Yang once again awoke to find that he had returned to when he was sixteen years of age! Furthermore, the Sword Spirit of the Nine Tribulations Sword now resided within his Dantian, the energy center of his body! From that very moment, Chu Yang would then begin to right all of his past regrets, and carve his very own legend by fulfilling his destiny as the final Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and defeating the Heavenly Devils beyond the realm of the Nine Heavens Continent.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

Editing by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601: I Will Make You A Man!

Chu Yang beat Tan Tan to his heart's content. And, he felt very satisfied at the end of it. After all, he had given vent to all the worries that he had harboured in his heart.

Tan Tan obviously squealed like a dying pig. Meanwhile, the five brothers were taking joy in Tan Tan's misfortune from the sidelines.

Chu Yang finally lifted up his hand after his anger had calmed down. He felt very rejuvenated now. He then waved his hand, "Get ready! We are leaving."

They started their journey some time later. Though, these brothers appeared as if as if they were trying to recall something. However, they were in a daze in reality, and couldn't think properly as a result. They came a long way like this... and finally –

"Hey... Second Master Luo, Fifth Brother Luo, I feel that something is wrong with you..." Rui Bu Tong stroked his chin as if he was thinking something.

Luo Ke Di's face flushed with anger, "Get lost! There's nothing wrong!"

"Yes, yes. I know." Dong Wu Shang suddenly had a realization, "But, it seems that Fifth Brother Luo isn't the same as others in some place... I wonder where it is..."

Luo Ke Di was stuck in a dilemma. He repeatedly bowed with his hands joined in front, "Elder brothers, younger brothers. Please spare me. I don't want to discuss this topic... We should change the topic. Change it to something like... Ji Mo likes to fart and snore while sleeping. He farts seven or eight times in one night..."

Ji Mo became angry. So, he blurt out without thinking, "You haven't grown hair down there. Would you still not let anyone speak of it?"

Luo Ke Di was thunderstruck when he heard this. So, he spoke up in grief and indignation while pointing his shivering finger towards Ji Mo, "Ji Mo... you, you..." He had been rendered speechless...

However, Ji Mo also somewhat regretted it this instant. So, he hastily apologized, "Eh... I'm sorry about this. I wasn't careful. I would never say that your birdie doesn't go up... oh my... what the hell am I saying..."

He then shut his mouth in regret, and didn't speak any further.

Ji Mo's attempt at explaining himself didn't go well. In fact, his explanation had given the whole picture.

Luo Ke Di wanted to die inside. He looked at Ji Mo with tears in his eyes. He shouted while vomiting blood, "You you you... you've made so angry that I could die..."

Everyone laughed heartily while holding their bellies.

However, Luo Ke Di felt so ashamed that he was unable to show his face. In fact, he nearly started to cry.

Chu Yang couldn't bear this in his heart. So, he said, "Um. Coyote, there is... nothing to worry about. The term 'Hairless Cleaver' has been in use since ancient times! In fact, it's a common saying that 'Smooth Cleaver' and 'Smooth Beaver' are exceptional body types. So, what is there to be shy about? Moreover, it doesn't affect you whatsoever..."

Then, he leaned close to Luo Ke Di's ear and whispered, "I've heard that such men are extraordinarily vigorous in bed..."

Luo Ke Di's face blushed harder when he heard this. And, he suddenly shouted out loud, "Fine, you guys don't need to laugh! I will explain everything properly!"

Everyone stopped laughing. In fact, they somewhat regretted in their hearts... [Could making fun of other people's flaws be appropriate behaviour for us brothers?]

"I had found this a long time ago. That's why I've never taken a bath with any of you..." Luo Ke Di spoke-up with a calm and righteous attitude... In fact, it seemed as if he was prepared to sacrifice his life, "Boys develop them at the age of twelve or thirteen... But, I haven't developed them till now..."

Everyone looked at him in silence; they had an ashamed look in their eyes.

"Moreover... It's not a bad thing that I don't have them. Big Brother says that such men are extraordinarily vigorous in bed... But, I don't know what the matter with me is. It somewhat... somewhat, anyway... it's not right! You guys understand this, right?"

Luo Ke Di angrily roared.

"Coyote..." Ji Mo shamefully lowered his head, "I'm sorry."

Dong Wu Shang, Gu Du Xing, and Rui Bu Tong also went forward a step at the same time. Then, they sincerely said, "Coyote, we are sorry. We should've known that it would hurt you."

Luo Ke Di bitterly smiled and said, "You don't have to apologize. You guys are my brothers. I should have just told you before. After all, I can't say this in front of anyone else. In fact, I feel relaxed in my heart after sharing this with you."

He softly whispered, "My family had been urging me to get married with my fiancée two years ago. But, I had used all sorts of excuses to decline... I was afraid that I might cause her trouble. After all, my fiancée is a one-in-a-million kind of beauty. I thought... Wouldn't she be wasting her life if she married someone like me... who can't have sexual intercourse?"

Luo Ke Di smiled distressfully. Then, he suddenly said loudly, "I admit that I'm not a good man. I try to hit on every beautiful woman that I see. I feel like roaming around in brothels for fun. I feel like snatching something precious from someone if I'm bored!"

But, a marriage concerns the matter of harming an innocent person for lifetime. And, I can't do such a thing!

"This is the matter of a woman's lifelong happiness. And, I won't marry her if I can't give her this happiness!

"I would have three wives and four concubines if I were normal. Heck... even eight to ten wives wouldn't be too many. After all, the damn men are fighting and killing each other every day out there. They all fu*king die! Doesn't that make their women widows?

"But, I am not normal right now. I am no good! I can't even do it! So, I can't even have one wife!

"Why?! Why should a pure and virgin maiden die virgin because of me? It doesn't make any sense. A woman also deserves to enjoy her life. Why should I bar her from experiencing what it means to be a woman? My mother had told me that a woman becomes a genuine woman only after she gives birth to a child! How can I marry her if I can't make her a woman?

"I want the honor. But, I can't have this honor at the cost of an innocent woman's happiness! I am telling you that I don't want this honor anymore! I will break off the engagement as soon as I return to the clan. I will tell them that I have an intimate relationship with someone else..."

Luo Ke Di spoke everything like a barrage of artillery. Then, he remained standing in a daze for a while. He had become deflated as if air had leaked out of a balloon. His whole body seemed to have lost all the energy at this moment.

Gu Du Xing and the others stood in a daze as well. But, everyone felt that it won't be good if they stepped up to console him. However, it won't be good if they didn't...

"You guys don't need to worry about it... I can let it go now that I've told you this. I can't be a fu*king man?" Luo Ke Di couldn't face it. He laughed out loud and said, "So what if I can't be a man?"

There are many eunuchs in the world! I can't be a man. However, it doesn't mean that I can't be the wolf of the Middle Three Heavens... Ahwooh... Ha ha ha..."

His brothers wanted to cry even though he was laughing. Ji Mo had never thought that Luo Ke Di had buried such a pain deep in his heart. So, he also wanted to cry...

[His body is undoubtedly perfect. But, that can't make him a man! This matter would be intolerable for any man! It would also be a huge shame for him!]

[And, I was laughing at him just a while ago...] Gu Du Xing and the others nearly slapped themselves in the face after they had thought this. Everyone turned their faces away at once. They didn't have the heart to see the look on Luo Ke Di's face.

"I see..." Chu Yang faintly smiled, "Coyote, you would've held a son in your arms by now if you had told me this before. I also think that this is serious condition. But, it... can be cured with a slight effort!"

"Eh?" The first reaction didn't come from Luo Ke Di. Instead, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others gathered around Chu Yang in a flash, and jabbered in excitement, "Big Brother, do you have a cure for this?"

"Of course, I do!" Chu Yang proudly raised his head, "In fact, I can also make Coyote more vigorous than before... Ahem, at first, I wanted to give it to you guys so that you could enhance your skills. But, now that you people have made fun of your brother a while ago... He-he... You guys know what I mean, right?"

"Eh?! Big Brother, you wouldn't, would you?" Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong shouted at first. They then yelled in misery, "Please don't..."

"Ahwooh~~~" But, Luo Ke Di no longer looked miserable. He howled like a wolf, and pounced over like a tiger, "Big Brother, Big Brother... you are my saviour. You're like a light in my life. You're

like the spring sun, the summer sun, the winter sun, and the autumn sun of my life... Ahwooh... Do you really have the cure? Can you really cure it?"

"Don't you believe me?" Chu Yang squinted.

"I do. I believe you! Oh dear Big Brother... give it to me quickly. I, I... I can't wait anymore. I..." Luo Ke Di jumped high, "I will get married when I go back! Dammit, I feel like writing a poem!"

"Writing a poem?" Ji Mo and the others were stuck by thunder. [Didn't this guy change way too quickly?]

"That's right. I want to write a poem!" Luo Ke Di nodded in affirmation. Then, he excitedly said, "A spear has risen after several years. It hasn't done anything yet... except for pissing. But, it is finally going to have an awakening today. Now, this one spear will thrust a million times!"

A 'thump' sound came. Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang swayed and fell owing to this formidable 'poem' despite having such mental strength and cultivation. They crooked their mouth, and slanted their eyes. Then, their entire bodies convulsed. However, Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong were filled with reverence and praise for Luo Ke Di.

Second Master Ji cheered. He gave a thumbs-up, "That was such fine literary talent!"

Rui Bu Tong admired, "Such literary talent is hard to come by!"

Tan Tan felt like he was missing out. So, he moved close to them, "I also want to write a poem..."

"Get lost!" Chu Yang's whole body convulsed. Then, he kicked away this troublemaker.

"Big Brother... that medicine..." Luo Ke Di was finally done dreaming. So, he happily went close to Chu Yang, and exposed a flattering smile to him.

Chu Yang knew that Luo Ke Di was more worried in his heart than anyone else even though he had been joking around. And, he knew that Luo Ke Di must be more worried about his future right now than he had ever been...

Luo Ke Di had been pretending to be happy. He had been joking around as if he didn't care. But, he had cared about it more than anything else in reality. He had an expression of intense worry in his eyes even though he had been joking around. In fact, his pupils had enlarged because of anxiety. Moreover, he had been trying his hardest to keep his fingers from shaking. But, they were still shaking a bit...

[I can't fool around at this moment! After all, I'm the only hope for Luo Ke Di now. In fact, I'm afraid that Luo Ke Di would collapse in an instant if I showed even a little reluctance!]

Chu Yang put his hand in his pocket, and took out a bottle of Lust Dragon's blood from the Nine Tribulations Space. He then said in a serious manner with the bottle in his hand, "Coyote, you drink this medicine. It will cure you. But, I want you to remember one thing..."

"Please say it, Big Brother." Luo Ke Di had seen the grave expression on Chu Yang's face. So, he couldn't help but become serious.

"You won't ever feel ashamed about anything as long as you are with us. I won't allow you to feel inferior in front of us brothers! In fact, that would make us feel uncomfortable."

Chu Yang deeply said, "Your embarrassment is our embarrassment. Your humiliation is our humiliation. Therefore, we are there for you... no matter what comes your way."

Luo Ke Di's lips quivered. He didn't say anything; he merely bit his lip tightly.

"Drink it!" Chu Yang handed over the Lust Dragon's blood to him.

A myriad of feelings welled up in Luo Ke Di's heart as he looked at the bottle. He finally took the bottle with his trembling hands. He opened its cap. Then, he turned around, covered his face with his hand, and drained the bottle in one gulp.

He took advantage of the time when he was putting down his hand, and wiped clean the teardrops that had come out from his eyes a moment ago. Therefore, nobody noticed them...

He was somewhat embarrassed. He turned his head and looked up... only to see that Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, and Rui Bu Tong had gathered together with their backs towards him. They were discussing about something... In fact, it seemed as if they hadn't paid any attention to him...

....

Chapter 602: Ingenious Plan to Cross the River

The efficacy of this medicine was remarkable.

However, Chu Yang didn't have any prior experience of treating such a condition. And, he didn't want the efficacy of this medicine to fall short. So, he had given Luo Ke Di the full bottle of the Lust Dragon's blood for the fear that it won't be effective if consumed in less quantity.

However, this quantity was a bit too much with regards to the so-called 'illness' of Second Master Luo. In fact, only a sip would've been sufficient for Luo Ke Di's condition. However, Luo Ke Di had drunk a full bottle of it...

The consequences were obvious.

Second Master Luo circulated his martial power since he feared that the medicinal efficacy of the Lust Dragon's blood would go wasted. He only felt as if his body was somewhat feverish at first. Then, he started to feel some gradual reactions in his body. And, he became pleasantly surprised in his heart as a result...

He stopped the flow of his martial power after an hour. Then, he became somewhat flabbergasted.

He stood perfectly straight, and saw that there was a bulging tent on the crotch-part of his trousers. It was protruding proudly!

In fact, Luo Ke Di felt as if he was about to explode...

However, he was elated in his heart. In fact, he was incomparably pleased! [Motherfu*ker, I'm finally cured!]

Something unexpected had happened to him when he had been thirteen years old. He had been sleeping next to his elder brother, Luo Ke Wu. And, he had been repeatedly bumped by his brother's thing that night. That incident had ruined him for life since his

heart had become very tangled. He had thought that he would never be able to recover from this strange illness. He couldn't even marry due to this illness. Moreover, it was embarrassing for him to tell this to anyone.

However, this illness had been eliminated by this medicine. Luo Ke Di thought, [I would feel blessed even if I have to carry this tent for a lifetime.]

"Ahwooh~~~" Second Master Luo jumped fifty feet high with his tent proudly erect. Then, he laughed heartily. "Hip hip hurray. Second Master Luo is open for business now..."

However, this was no longer the howl of a wicked wolf. It had turned into the howl of a pervert now!

Everyone spat in disgust when they heard it...

Second Master Luo started to walk with an exaggerated swagger... with his head held high and chest out. He started to walk in a heroic manner. In fact, he was walking ahead of everyone with his beautiful and shiny bulging tent. He even sang folk songs along the way!

All the brothers looked askance at him!

Chu Yang didn't dare to utter a word even though he had noticed something, [This guy has taken too much of the medicine. Perhaps it will be erect for several days if he isn't relieved very soon...]

[But, how would he... release it at this time?]

Minister Chu looked around in this widely spread area. But, he couldn't find any female... not even a female animal...

"Black Water River is about twenty-five kilometers ahead!" Gu Du Xing was quite familiar with the terrain, "And, the Ou Clan comes after crossing the river. So, we'll have to quickly go to the Xie Clan, and stay there for a while. We must sleep there, and rest well."

"Black Water River...?" Chu Yang's feet hadn't touched the

ground the last time he had been here. After all, he had been running through the journey. In fact, it had seemed as if he had flown through it. So, how could he possibly have paid attention to some Black Water River while passing from here the last time? Moreover, he had taken a different route the last time he had visited the Xie Clan. This further confirmed that he had never seen this river.

"The entire riverbed of the Black Water River is black. The river water also appears jet-black as a result. That's why this river is called the Black Water River. The width of this river is around two-to-three kilometers. And, it has a turbulent flow," Gu Du Xing said with a smile, "By the way... the fish in this river are very delicious. Big Brother, you should definitely have a taste of them."

"Um, you never show a desire for food. But, you're still saying that the fishes here are delicious. It seems that I must taste them..." Chu Yang nodded.

These brothers chatted and laughed as they care-freely headed towards the Black Water River.

They could faintly hear the sound of water after they had covered a distance of more than fifteen kilometers.

However, Chu Yang suddenly wrinkled his brows. He then muttered, "Something seems off."

Tan Tan flared his nose, and sniffed the air. He also seemed to be somewhat amazed.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang stopped after walking a few steps, "Indeed, something feels off. There's a constraining feeling... like the calm before a storm!"

"It isn't a constraining feeling. It's the aura of death!" Tan Tan sniffed in the air. He then shook his eyebrows and said.

"There seems to be a situation up ahead..." Dong Wu Shang muttered, "Haven't we dealt with an ambush a little while ago?"

How come there's more?"

Each of these brothers possessed an exceptional spiritual awareness. So, they quickly concealed themselves. Then, they moved forward cautiously whilst staying hidden.

However, they then saw something. This scene extended as far as their eyes could see. And, it had brought a sudden change in their complexions!

They saw that there were piles of shiny-white carcasses of fishes and shrimps on the grass around the shores. These carcasses had obviously been intercepted by the plants and trees on the shores. [There are so many dead fish. Could it be that the Ou Clan has used some poison on the river water?] Ji Mo thought to himself.

There were many people standing aloft. They were eyeing the river in a covetous manner... like a tiger watches its prey.

Those people upstream were probably seeking for someone or something in the river...

"What's going on here?" Gu Du Xing looked at these men with his sharp eyes, "I can say by looking at the faces of these men that they're probably looking for something... or someone..."

"Ao Xie Yun!" a brilliant light flashed in the eyes of Chu Yang and Dong Wu Shang since they had suddenly recalled this name.

[Those people of Ou Clan had prepared an ambush for Ao Xie Yun earlier. And, there's an army at this place as well. So, it is fairly obvious that we have run into an ambush that is meant to catch Ao Xie Yun... or a battlefield to be precise.]

"Should we save Ao Xie Yun or not?" All eyes turned towards Chu Yang.

Chu Yang hesitated for a while.

It could be said that Chu Yang had only one reason to save Ao Xie Yun. His impression of Ao Xie Yun could neither be considered

good nor bad. But, one thing was certain – the Middle Three Heavens would spiral into chaos if Ao Xie Yun were to die.

"Why is Ou Clan targeting Ao Xie Yun?" Chu Yang asked while muttering. He seemed to have asked this question to himself. "Look at this lineup. How can the Ou Clan have so many people? There must be at least three clans here. They must've formed an alliance. But, why do they want to kill Ao Xie Yun?"

"Could it be that something big is about to happen in the Middle Three Heavens?" Gu Du Xing murmured.

Chu Yang indifferently replied, "What major event could occur in the Middle Three Heavens now? The matter of the Northern Wilderness has ended very recently. And, the Three Stars Divine Clan has also been silent of late. In fact, they are quieter than before. So, nothing major should happen in such a short time!"

However, a brilliant light suddenly flashed in his heart, "But, the clan that is dealing with Ao Xie Yun is Ou Clan. And, the people who have recently offended the Ou Clan... are us. Moreover, we represent great aristocratic clans even if we aren't important people. Could it be that..."

"Is it possible that the Ou Clan is planning to deal with Ao Xie Yun with the intention of shifting the blame on us?" This thought suddenly popped in Dong Wu Shang's brain. He then immediately raised this point.

"This could easily be the case..." Chu Yang pondered for a while. Then, he raised the tip of his brow and said, "We will cross this river first... because, we must hurry along on our journey. And secondly... we can't just stand and watch this with folded arms if our prediction is right. So, everyone must listen carefully..."

"First of all, there's no harm in meddling in this if are able to do so. But, we mustn't force ourselves into this if can't handle this." Chu Yang closely looked at the men's silhouettes flashing continuously in the distance. "Our enemy is very strong. They have

several hundred people. But, we are only seven people. So, we won't be enough to tackle the enemy!"

"Yes."

The brothers agreed with him. The plan was already decided. So, everyone quickly decided to set into action. However, Chu Yang stopped them when they were just about to go over, "There's this river between us and them. And, this isn't a good thing for us. So, we will first have to think of a way to cross this river. Then, we will plan our next move..."

"How to cross this river?"

"Tan Tan, Bu Tong, you two will calmly walk in the front. The rest of us will wear masks, and follow behind you. We will be acting as your subordinates. We will be able to cross the river openly in this manner." An idea popped up in Chu Yang's mind. He said, "These people won't want to cause any issues on the side since they're carrying out an important assassination. So, we'll be able to attack and retreat freely once we cross this river. And, all the power of initiative will be in our hands then!"

"Great idea!" Everyone in this group was bold and rash. So, they all set into action as soon as they heard this idea.

....

Meng Luo was watching over the downstream stretch.

The Meng Clan's strength had reduced greatly. And, it was notorious for its bad deeds. So, it obviously couldn't be in the upstream where Ao Xie Yun was most likely to be found.

Catching Ao Xie Yun was directly related to who would rule over the Middle Three Heavens afterwards. It would also determine how the power would be divided. So, how could this pleasant task fall into the hands of the declined Meng Clan?

Meng Clan was in-charge of the longest section of the river. The entire downstream stretch of the river was under their

jurisdiction. However, everyone knew that there was no hope of catching Ao Xie Yun in that section of the river.

Meng Luo had hung his head dispiritedly, and had a gloomy expression on his face. He bestrode on a stone on the riverbank, and was flinging the whip in his hand. He was clearly dissatisfied with his part in this search. But, he had no other alternative.

Suddenly, a loud shout came through from the distant opposite side while he was uninterestedly making his men search in the river.

This loud shout was bizarre. It sounded as if a hungry wolf had howled while looking up to the sky. And, thousands of male ducks had also quacked at the same time. Therefore, everyone who heard this shout was left to tremble... regardless of how great their martial power was.

They weren't merely shocked. They were frightened as well!

[What kind of a bizarre monster could issue such a sound? Hearing this shout is simply like having a nightmare...]

Meng Luo suddenly stood up. He saw that several men's silhouettes were coming over from far away on the opposite side. They were neither too slow nor too fast.

The group was headed by two bizarrely shaped youngsters. In addition, there were five men behind these two. Those five men had worn masks, and were dressed in black. Their loose black robes made them look like ghosts. They were coming towards this place while drifting over the ground.

Meng Luo's pupils shrank. [They're powerful!]

He clearly felt the strong murderous aura of these seven people. He also felt the overbearing aura of a ruler who looks disdainfully at the common people! [There's a formidable expert among them.]

These seven men arrived at the riverbank while he was still thinking. He couldn't even think of anything when one of them

suddenly waved his hand. A big tree on the riverbank snapped from its base the next moment. Then, it fell towards the river. They were ready to cross the river!

Meng Luo felt somewhat offended. [Didn't you see that this young master is guarding this place? Why didn't you ask if you could cross? Did I allow you to come over?]

He then gave a signal with his eyes. A King Level Expert of the Meng Clan understood his signal, and took a few steps forward. He raised his voice, and asked loudly, "Will you gentlemen kindly identify yourself?"

One of the two youths in the front was as skinny as a monkey. He didn't respond. However, the youth who was as ugly and grotesque as a monster stepped out from the middle of the group. He then proudly raised his head to look upwards. Then, he tilted his head and shouted, "Who are you? Who are you to ask about my identity?"

The King Level Expert of the Meng Clan felt somewhat dizzy. [So, it was this man that had issued that extremely coarse voice.]

He had listened to this voice at a close range now; it had made his blood and vitalities turn over and over. [This guy is even mightier than the devils mentioned in the legends...]

"I'm a subordinate of the Meng Clan! May I ask who Your Excellency is?" The bearing of the person on the opposite side was unyielding. So, the King Level Expert of the Meng Clan became somewhat soft.

[They've come from the north, and they're quite strong... I haven't heard of any great clans there... So, why is this guy so arrogant?]

Tan Tan wore a bizarre smile. His voice was becoming more and more disgusting... so much so that the people who had heard it wouldn't be able to swallow anything for three days. "Meng Clan? How come I've never heard of it?"

He had looked around while saying this. Then, he raised his nose high, and asked, "[Yang-itchy](#)... have you heard of it? Well? Well? Uh-huh?"

This 'Yang-itchy' is a pun on Chu Yang's name. The 'Yang' in Chu Yang's name means 'Positivity' or 'Yang principle'. Tan Tan calls him 'Yang Yang Ang', which means 'Rising itch'.

Chapter 603: You Are A Good Person!

Chu Yang literally wanted to kick this bastard into the river!

[You dared to call me by my childhood name... And, that too such a weird one... 'Yang-itchy'...? You're asking for a spanking!]

However, the situation at present was unusual. So, Chu Yang was forced to submit to humiliation. He replied, "I've heard that there's a clan named Meng in the Middle Three Heavens. And, that it's a big clan. These people before us here are most likely from Meng Clan."

"Oh uh-huh~~" Tan Tan let out an uncanny smile as he said, "So, it's originally a clan of the Middle Three Heavens? No wonder I've never heard of it. I see... a clan of the Middle Three Heavens... uh-huh... Yang-itchy, isn't this the first Middle Three Heavens' clan that we've seen since we've come 'down' here?"

The King Level Expert of the Meng Clan stood opposite to him. His complexion had turned pale, and his body was on the verge of collapse. After all, he had been repeatedly bombarded by Tan Tan's endlessly destructive voice. Consequently, he had nearly fallen apart.

However, Meng Luo's eyes shone brightly, [People from the Upper Three Heavens? Moreover, it seems that their status isn't low.]

The person standing next to him was a Third Grade Martial Emperor of the Meng Clan. He whispered at this moment with a solemn look on his face, "Young Lord, this person... he is seemingly from the Upper Three Heavens."

Meng Luo rolled his eyes. He then said in his heart, [Do you need to tell me that? That guy himself said so earlier].

"Moreover, the people around him are all experts... I can especially sense the pure sword energy that is soaring to the

heavens, and the pure saber energy that is surging around unhindered. I'm afraid... there's at least one Sword Emperor and at least one Saber Emperor among the black-clothed people at his side!"

"Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor?" Meng Luo's eyes brightened up.

"Furthermore, the person beside him... the one who had spoken just now... his cultivation is concealed. I can't make out its depth..."

Meng Luo was shocked to hear this.

He was a direct descendant of a top-notch clan of the Middle Three Heavens. So, how could he not know about the significance of Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor? There were indeed many Emperor Level Experts in the Middle Three Heavens. Meng Luo himself knew of at least seven such people! However, he didn't know of any Sword Emperors or Saber Emperors!

The practitioners of palm and fist techniques could use each other's experiences as reference. Similarly, the sword way and the saber way had things in common as well. The other weapons also always had some common basis of existence between them... whether they were hard or flexible. Therefore, the practitioners could learn from others' strong points in order to make up for their own weak points. They could achieve mastery of the subject via a comprehensive study of the surrounding areas. And, they could ultimately succeed in achieving the Emperor Level in this way.

However, the Emperor Level that was achieved like this would seem heterogeneous and impure! One would indeed reach the Emperor Level by this method. However, it would merely be an ordinary Emperor Level.

Some people would learn from each other's experiences in the early stages. They would grasp the concepts, and would gradually progress upward. However, they would choose a special subject to

master when they reached a certain point. And, they would subsequently become the so-called Sword Emperor, Saber Emperor, and such... However, there was absolutely no comparison between such a Saber Emperor and Dong Wu Shang. After all, Dong Wu Shang had wholeheartedly focused on mastering the saber way since childhood. This was the reason he had come so far.

The dry and dull road that Dong Wu Shang had taken could drive any expert insane!

However, this road would become smooth once the Emperor Level was achieved! Therefore, it was said that a genuine Sword Emperor or Saber Emperor would be like the seedling of a future Saint Level Expert as long as he didn't die an accidental death! This legend of the Nine Heavens had been there all along. Also, it was their most dominant legend.

[So, this grotesque youth in front of me has a pure Sword Emperor and a pure Saber Emperor as bodyguards? What kind of family background does he have?!]

[However, that exceptional expert whose cultivation can't be sensed should be the true guardian of this Young Master!]

[When will I become friends with such a noble Young Master if not now?]

Meng Luo came forward bravely. He then smiled gracefully, and said, "Dare I ask the respectable Young Master... have you come from the Upper Three Heavens? May I know what your name is?"

"Smart! Boy, you have a promising future. My family name is Ye." Tan Tan burst into loud laughter. He looked extremely ferocious and wild as he replied. However, he only knew the name of the clan of his master's dear wife from the Upper Three Heavens. In fact, he merely knew that it was a big and respected clan; he obviously hadn't been able to come up with anything else at this time.

"So, it turned out to be Young Master Ye." Meng Luo turned speechless once again. [No wonder he's so flashy and arrogant. He's the Young Master of the number-one clan of the Upper Three Heavens. However, it's a great aristocratic clan with ten-thousand years of inheritance. Therefore, it should have outstanding genetics, right? So, how did it give birth of this repulsive freak? Don't tell me that he's a product of incest...]

He was thinking these things in his heart, but he naturally didn't dare to show any of it on his face.

Tan Tan snorted, and pointed a finger at Meng Luo's nose from across the river. His arrogance overflowed the sky as he asked like the insufferably arrogant freak that he was, "Is your surname Meng?"

"Yes, my surname is Meng!"

"Well, Meng... do you want me to keep talking to you from the other side of the river? Aren't you getting tired?" Tan Tan's arrogant behavior had nearly reached the sky. It was basically like this, [I have a complete upper hand over you! So, it doesn't matter what I say... you have no choice but to follow obediently!] However, this kind of attitude fully demonstrated the hegemony of the hedonistic son of the number-one clan of the Upper Three Heavens.

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were hedonistic sons of their clans. However, Tan Tan's demonstration had made them feel ashamed of being inferior. [This is pure talent... to think that a brazenly shameless guy like him could be capable of pulling this off.]

Ji Mo secretly cursed in his heart, [This guy should maybe try acting in plays... It's needless to say that the others have believed that he's the Eldest Young Master of the Ye Clan. But, perhaps he-himself has also started to believe it...]

"In that case, the Young Master might as well cross the river." Meng Luo readily accepted the good advice. He then quickly gave a

hand signal to respectfully welcome 'Young Master Ye' and help him cross the river.

Several big trees were laid down. Chu Yang took the lead, and stepped on a big tree to float forward. The big tree was extending for several hundred feet from the river side. He reached the end of the tree, and leapt. He sprang himself forward with this jump, and covered 300 feet in one fell swoop. He then flicked his hand, and shot the branch that he was holding in his hand. Then, he lightly stepped on it once, and arrived at the opposite shore of the river while floating like a feather. He didn't even glance at Meng Luo who was standing right before him. Instead, he turned around at once, and began to wait on the shore for Tan Tan and the others.

It was the image of a loyal and devoted old bodyguard.

And, the fact that he was the first one to cross the river confirmed what Meng Luo had guessed in his heart, ['This expert is the true guardian'].

Gu Du Xing let out a long and loud shout. And, the sword energy burst into the sky. He then stepped onto the big tree. He reached the terminus, and then suddenly soared up. A strand of sword light shot towards the horizon like a rainbow while staying snugly over the water surface.

The swords hanging from the waists of the people of Meng Clan had issued a 'clang' sound the moment his sword light was released.

This was because these dozens of swords were like common people. But, the Supreme Emperor of the swords had suddenly appeared before them at this time.

"Sure enough, it is the purest Sword Emperor!" The Third Grade Martial Emperor opened his mouth wide. He confirmed in his heart while talking to himself, and quickly closed his mouth shut thereafter.

Then, the saber light filled the air. Its power was overwhelming and tyrannical; Dong Wu Shang was the next one to arrive.

"Purest Saber Emperor!" The Third Grade Martial Emperor confirmed his guess to himself.

Tan Tan and the other talented people skimmed over immediately after that. Finally, everyone had arrived.

All of them were silent at the moment. They appeared indifferent and arrogant. They seemed to be repelling people in thousand miles distance. However, everyone was excited in their heart, [Didn't think that crossing the river would be this easy!]

Chu Yang was also surprised.

However, they didn't know that Meng Clan was detested by everyone in the Middle Three Heavens. Therefore, it was dying to improve its status by making powerful connections.

Moreover, there wasn't even a single Pure Sword Emperor or Pure Saber Emperor in the Middle Three Heavens. Naturally, this had made Meng Luo's imagination roam even more.

The arrival of a Sword Emperor, a Saber Emperor, and a Young Master from the Upper Three Heavens had given rise to an opportunistic mentality in Meng Luo, [Who would dare to touch my Meng Clan in the Middle Three Heavens if I can claim connections with the Ye Clan...?]

[Even the Ao Clan wouldn't dare to do that!]

Therefore, he didn't dare to suspect them for the fear that he might appear inconsiderate to his guests.

And, this unusual situation had been created by none other than Chu Yang!

He was the one who had exposed Meng Luo's evil technique on Mt Dingjun, and brought about this phenomenon. This could be considered as the case of delayed cause and effect. After all, the

cause that had occurred way back had produced an effect only now...

"What are you doing here?" Tan Tan came over, and right away occupied the big stone on which Meng Luo had been sitting earlier. He relaxed his legs, and asked in an authoritative way like a minister.

"Well... Ha-ha, I won't hide this matter from Young Master Ye. We're here because we're hunting down a fugitive." Meng Luo smiled and said, "This guy has committed every imaginable crime in the Middle Three Heavens. He rapes and loots wherever he goes. The public's resentment overflowed, and we were force to move into action. We had no choice but to join forces to uproot this evil!"

Tan Tan replied in a disinterested manner while picking his ear, "Fugitive? Damn, I'm so disappointed in the Middle Three Heavens. It's so unclean. It even has fugitives on the run. Yang-itchy, I think this person of Meng Clan is pretty nice. How about we lend him a helping hand?"

Meng Luo instantly became delighted in his heart.

Chu Yang's heart was full of rage at the moment. But, he acted respectful and sincere in his response, "Well... Young Master, I think this isn't a good idea... The Clan Lord had told you something when we were leaving... he had said that we mustn't meddle in other people's business if we can avoid it. You must finish your job here, and go back as soon as possible. Please don't delay too much..."

"Humph!" Tan Tan's eyebrows moved up and down as he flew into a rage. He then stood up from the rock with a jerk, and yelled, "Fu*k off! What's not good about this? What do you mean by meddling in other people's business, huh? Yang-itchy! You always use that old bastard's name to try to push me down! I'm not the future Clan Lord. But, I'm still the Second Young Master, am I not? Shouldn't what I speak before you be a command?"

"This won't do; won't do!" Tan Tan said furiously, "Today, I must look at what this fugitive looks like..."

"But, Young Master... this is... not appropriate. You are on an important mission. So, this distraction is not advisable since it might cause some side issues," Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang tried to dissuade him as well.

However, Tan Tan became even more furious. He kicked Dong Wu Shang and cursed, "Fu*k off! I know that you're a disobedient brat. You hit me three days ago when we were practicing martial arts. And, now you even dare to try preventing me from doing a good deed! You won't allow me to go? So, I will definitely go."

Dong Wu Shang endured that kick, and grimaced in pain. [This bastard redressed personal grievances out in public. I just kicked him a few times while practicing martial arts three days ago. And, he chose to take revenge at this time...]

[You just wait!] Saber Emperor Dong secretly gnashed his teeth.

Chu Yang watched Meng Luo intently, and very clearly indicated him to reject.

Meng Luo might have rejected the offer if they hadn't been acting like this. However, Meng Luo pretended not to see Chu Yang's eye signal in this case. He didn't change his mind, and politely said, "Of course, it's a great thing that Young Master Ye is willing to help us. But, for what matter has Brother Ye come here? You see... my clan can be considered somewhat influential in the Middle Three Heavens. And, I would love to do my best in helping Brother Ye in completing his important mission once this matter ends!"

He had tried to become familiar amidst the exchanges by very conveniently changing 'Young Master Ye' to 'Brother Ye'.

Tan Tan became extremely happy. He looked at Meng Luo and said, "You are a good person."

Meng Luo nodded again and again. He just smiled... as if he was

saying that he didn't deserve Tan Tan's praise. However, he couldn't help smiling bitterly in his heart, [I have become a fu*king street rat nowadays, and this guy calls me a 'good person'... However, it's for the best that you think that I am a good person!]

"Are you convinced now?" Tan Tan seemed to be immensely proud with himself. He looked at Chu Yang and Dong Wu Shang.

The two men made a 'we have no alternative' gesture one after another. Then, they let out a long and a brief sigh.

"Brother Ye, please come with me!" Meng Luo had found a very powerful helper whom no one could afford to offend. So, he was naturally going to grab credit for it. There was no way that he was still going to hopelessly guard the downstream. He was in high spirits as he led Tan Tan to the upper reaches of the river.

Hundreds of people were carefully searching in the river upstream. Some people would come out of the water, take a deep breath, and then dive back into the river. They were continuously repeating this process.

The range of the search reduced more and more with time. In fact, it was very close to Ao Xie Yun's hiding place at the moment!

...

Chapter 604: I Will Take You to the Top of the Nine Heavens!

Meng Luo went flying upstream along with the seven honored guests in an overt manner. He had a smile on his face since he felt cheerful in his heart. [My Meng Clan will certainly be blessed if I can become friends with this Young Master Ye...]

"I don't know why Brother Ye has come to the Middle Three Heavens." Meng Luo asked while hurrying along the roadside. Then, he immediately laughed out loud and said, "I'm obviously not trying to probe for information about your noble clan. Anyway, my capability is meager at best. So, it would be useless even if I were to ask about the top secrets of your clan, right?"

"That is natural!" Tan Tan grinned, "I understand that you don't have that kind of capability!"

Meng Luo felt as if he had eaten a housefly. [I was only trying to be modest. And, you straightaway labeled me as useless!]

"So, there's no harm in telling you!" Tan Tan said in a thorny way.

"Second Young Master!" Chu Yang used the voice of an old man, and hurriedly reminded him.

"Shut up!" Tan Tan turned his head. He then said this with extreme fierceness, "I can handle my matters. You don't need to poke your nose into them. You're here to guard me. So, just do your job."

"But..." Dong Wu Shang interrupted at the right moment.

"'But' my ass!" Tan Tan showed no trace of politeness. He pointed his finger at him, "Just take a look around. Do you think that these puny people can obstruct Ye Clan's important mission? All of them look like weaklings. None of them seem to be powerful. So, I don't understand what you guys are afraid of."

Meng Luo's face turned dark. He cursed Tan Tan's ancestors of eight generations in his heart. [You motherfu*ker! Mocking people outrightly damages them more than slapping them in the face. Fu*k you motherfu*ker. You can't insult someone like that even if your Ye Clan is very flamboyant and cocky. This boy lacks manners.]

"Hey... you tell me; wasn't I right about what I just said?" Tan Tan tilted his head, and asked Meng Luo.

[This fellow insulted me. And, now he's asking if what he said was right... How can someone be this shameless?]

"You're right... Our clan can't be compared with your Ye Clan." Meng Luo's face had turned black. He had clenched his teeth so tight that they almost shattered. But, he had no other choice than to relax his teeth, swallow his anger, and agree with him.

"Right? Right? You see... they admit that they are weaklings. They admit that they aren't powerful!" Tan Tan was immensely proud of himself. He then looked towards Chu Yang in an insufferably arrogant manner, "What do you have to say now?"

Chu Yang opened his mouth, but then he closed it. He only sighed.

Meng Luo nearly vomited blood. He repeatedly cursed Tan Tan in his heart. [Fu*k your ancestors of eighteen generations! Your ancestors' souls won't rest in peace. Everyone in your clan will be eunuchs for generations...]

He had cursed the Ye Clan a lot in his heart. However, he didn't know that this aggravating 'Second Young Master Ye' before his eyes didn't have any relation with the Ye Clan.

"We've come here to look for a ten-thousand years old vestige," There was no limit to Tan Tan's bragging. He was being incomparably arrogant. In fact, he was behaving like the spoiled second child of a rich family. Moreover, it seemed as if he would

open his mouth, and reveal the whole truth. "This vestige is extraordinary..."

Chu Yang and the others repeatedly coughed.

However, Tan Tan hadn't finished his sentence before he was interrupted. So, he angrily spat saliva and yelled, "You're extremely annoying. You don't even let me finish my sentence. Why the fu*k are you coughing? The map of the hidden treasure is with me! I will fu*king go by myself the next time I want to go somewhere. I won't bring you guys with me. You people have no use other than disappointing me!"

Meng Luo clenched his teeth secretly. [I guarantee that a chap like you wouldn't be able to survive for even half-a-day if he were to go alone...]

[But, this guy has the map of a hidden treasure with him? Moreover, it is of a ten-thousand-year-old vestige?]

[Crap! That vestige must be extraordinary. Otherwise, why would the extremely wealthy Ye Clan send their own men down here to explore it?]

"There are a lot of... vestiges in the Middle Three Heavens," Meng Luo said with a helpless attitude, and chuckled.

"What shit are you spewing out? Is that your mouth? Or a butthole? It's like you're shitting from your mouth! Fu*k you motherfu*ker!" Tan Tan angrily cursed at Meng Luo. He simply kept on abusing Meng Luo, and Meng Luo kept holding himself back. However, he couldn't endure it anymore, and was on the verge of becoming hostile. But then, Tan Tan resumed bragging while panting, "Can the vestiges that you have discovered be compared with a ten-thousand-year-old hidden treasure of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master? Huh?!"

Tan Tan suddenly shut up in the middle of speaking, and pretended as if he had leaked some secret out by mistake. In fact,

he even had a look of annoyance on his face at the moment.

[Hidden treasure of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master?] Meng Luo seethed with excitement. He nearly faced upwards and cheered. [Holy fu*k! I can get a lot of profit if I put some effort into this matter... How would it not be a big gain?]

[As for this cussing... I will act as if I hadn't heard it. This doesn't bother me as long as I'm in a happy mood.]

Meng Luo was happy despite being so brutally insulted. Perhaps, no one else could bear it except for Meng Luo.

"Don't worry Brother Ye. You are like a brother to me. So, I obviously won't leak out your secret! In fact, I will provide you all the help. It's just to show my devotion as a friend." Meng Luo straightforwardly said, "I have no other motives."

"You're a good person... Ha ha. I find you pleasing to the eyes. You didn't get angry even though I called your mouth a butthole. You just fu*king don't get angry. You're a good man. Very, very, very good. This is called self-control. Yeah, this is self-control." Tan Tan became very happy. And, he patted on the Meng Luo's shoulder as if Meng Luo was an obedient puppy.

The experts of the Meng Clan were walking behind them. But, they couldn't prevent themselves from exposing colors of humiliation in their eyes. [Our Young Clan Lord is being humiliated like this. What respect are we all left with?]

The corner of Meng Luo's mouth twitched. He tried to suppress the anger in his heart, but he became angrier instead. [Would you not get angry if I called your mouth a butthole? Fu*k you, motherfu*ker! Self-control my ass! I would've shown you my 'self-control' if you weren't Ye Clan's Second Master. I would've kicked your ass!]

[Wait for me to obtain the hidden treasure of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master. Then, I won't mind killing you, you

bastard. No, I won't kill you. I'll make you beg for death... but, I won't kill you!]

"It's so good that you're so obedient. I'll give you a portion of the hidden treasure after I obtain it." Tan Tan said in an extremely generous manner. He had stroked Meng Luo's hair with his hand as he made this empty promise. In fact, he had beamed with smiles when he had patted his head in a pacifying manner.

"Thank you very much, Brother Ye!" Meng Luo filled with exultation.

"Good, you're very obedient. He-he-he. Little Meng, you keep working diligently. And, I'm telling you that I'll take you to the top of the Nine Heavens if you feel comfortable when I pat you," Tan Tan squinted as he cherished Meng Luo's gratefulness and flattering even though he had given the man a bounced cheque.

"Brother Ye, you're... a good person..." Meng Luo heard the words 'I'll take you to the top of the Nine Heavens', and immediately started to day-dream. In fact, he nearly somersaulted due to the pleasant surprise, and took a fall. He had even started to stutter. He felt as if he was on top of the world. He felt as light as air... as if he was floating amidst the clouds and mists.

[Rushing up to the Upper Three Heavens is the ambition of all the clans in the Middle Three Heavens! But, going up there and gaining a foothold is as difficult as ascending to the heavens. One would simply vanish in a puff of smoke if one tries to go up there without a foundation.]

[But, I don't even need to mention what would happen if one is backed by the ruling Ye Clan of the Upper Three Heavens. However, these great clans that have been established there for ten-thousand years wouldn't accept any outsider that easily. Can it be that I have run into great luck today? Wouldn't my ultimate desire be fulfilled if I can take my clan, and rush to the Upper Three Heavens?]

[Wouldn't it be easy for my clan to go to the Upper Three Heavens after I reach there?]

"Meng Luo promises to serve the Young Clan Lord faithfully!" Meng Luo hastily made a solemn vow. The rim of Meng Luo's eyes became moist as he said this. [This is the type of lucky encounter that one can wish for but can't find...]

He had first called him 'Young Master Ye'. Then, he had pulled the relation a bit closer, and had started calling him 'Brother Ye'. Now, Meng Luo had started calling him 'Young Clan Lord' after he had heard his offer. This meant that he had acknowledged himself as Tan Tan's subordinate. In fact, he had secured this position very firmly.

Perhaps, he would've still been analyzing over his decision to follow Young Master Ye if he had received this offer in the past. But, it was evident that the Meng Clan didn't have any foothold in the Middle Three Heavens at present. Perhaps, he would only manage a narrow escape if he were to take the risk out of desperation, and cause chaos in the Middle Three Heavens by taking advantage of Ao Xie Yun. Moreover, it would only be a temporary solution since his clan might get abandoned by the other clans upon achieving their goal...

[I've become the target of public criticism after King of Hell Chu exposed my evil technique. And, the Meng Clan's evil technique would still be a big source of gossip even if Ou Clan, Tian Clan, and the other clans gain firm footholds. Moreover, it isn't necessary that these clans have good intentions towards us... They might purge us to quell the anger and indignation of the public, and win over their hearts when the time comes...]

[After all, it's not like those guys are saints.] Meng Luo thought till here. He obviously hated King of Hell Chu to the core.

[Wouldn't it be better to follow the Ye Clan, and get a firm foothold of my own? After all, it's something that I might never be

able to do on my own.]

"Hm, obedient." Tan Tan praised him. Then, he touched his head and said, "Yang-itchy, uh-huh. How about we allow this guy to follow us?"

Chu Yang frowned and said with a sigh, "Second Master... this guy's heart seems unpredictable..."

"I knew that you wouldn't allow! However, the more you prohibit it — the more I feel like taking him to the top of the Nine Heavens!" Tan Tan fiercely clenched his teeth. He then fiercely exhaled air from his nostrils like a bull, "Take a look at you guys... you don't do a thing. You only look after me, and do nothing else. But, look at this Meng kid — he doesn't hit back even if I hit him. He doesn't answer back even if I cuss at him. He's fun to be around. So, I have made up my mind..."

A smile of relief bloomed on Meng Luo's face. He made a solemn vow and guaranteed, "Senior, rest assured. Meng Luo will spare no effort to assist the Young Clan Lord! I'll be struck by lightning if I prove to be disloyal!"

Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing, and Dong Wu Shang knitted their brows at the same time.

[What does this guy want to do? We must arrive at the middle reaches of the river as soon as possible. We need to begin quickly. Why is he still carelessly and baselessly boasting?]

"Well, Meng Meng, uh-huh..." Tan Tan threw a coquettish wink at Meng Luo. Meng Luo immediately shivered. He said in his heart, [Could it be that this Second Master swings that way? What if he makes me accompany him into the bed...? Should I comply if that's the case?]

[I've toyed with many people for several years. But, would I have to get 'toyed with' now?]

He was constantly having conflicting thoughts in his mind. He

was worrying about his gains and losses. So, he couldn't help but speak somewhat firmly, "Young Clan Lord... if you want to ask something... please say."

"Well, we've finished the matter here a while ago. And, we're headed to the Ao Clan now. Um, I have heard that there is clan named Ao Clan in your Middle Three Heavens? Apparently, it is great~~~ eh?" Tan Tan pointed his nose to the sky and said. He had twisted the word 'great' while saying it to show his disdain.

"Ao Clan?" Meng Luo stared blankly, "Yes. There is such a clan here." He felt apprehensive in his heart. [Why did he suddenly mention the Ao Clan?]

"Well, that's good. I thought that the rumors were false." Tan Tan nodded in a relaxed manner, "First, we will catch the direct descendent of the Ao Clan; someone who carries their pure bloodline. And, this matter will be considered partially done then."

...

Chapter 605: Bragging to Swindle

"The direct descendent of Ao Clan? A pure bloodline?" Meng Luo was somewhat in a daze. He said in his heart, [Wouldn't it mean Ao Xie Yun? Why did he suddenly mention Ao Xie Yun?]

"May I ask if a pure bloodline of the Ao Clan is useful to Young Clan Lord?" Meng Luo became vigilant in his heart.

"You fool!" Tan Tan scolded Meng Luo as if he had failed to meet his expectations. He then smacked him on his head. "Have you grown up eating nasal mucus? Why would I want to catch him if he were useless to me? It's not like I wish to make him the husband of my younger sister, huh?!"

"Eh..." Meng Luo stroked his head. He was perplexed. [What is this?]

"Let me tell you... I've heard that Ao Clan has acquired a dragon's vein. Do you understand? And, there's a hidden treasure-house under that dragon's vein. However, there are some prohibitions in that area. An average person can't go in there. However, the Ao Clan had occupied that area a thousand years ago. Consequently, the pure bloodline of the Ao Clan has attained the power of that dragon's vein. So, I need the blood essence of a direct descendant of the Ao Clan in order to open the sealed dragon's vein... and, get the treasure!"

Tan Tan told him everything, "Otherwise, that dragon's vein is restricted by the energy of the Nine Tribulations Sword. Even a Saint Expert wouldn't be able to avoid serious injuries if he tried to open it by using force. Understand? I will pinch you both above and below if you dare to disclose this secret!"

"So that's how it is," Meng Luo responded. He then analyzed this matter in his heart in order to estimate its possibility.

[Dragon's vein exists! I can't say about other clans, but the Meng

Clan was established on a dragon's vein. But, I have to consider that the Ao Clan keeps on expanding more and more. And, there has to be a reason behind it... It seems that there's also a vague mention of opening a dragon's vein using blood essence in the legends. Is it possible that this guy has spoken the truth?]

Meng Luo repeatedly pondered in his heart. He remained spellbound for a while.

"Ao Clan mustn't find out about this." Tan Tan raised one his eyebrows up to the sky, and lowered the other to the earth. He had put on an extremely serious expression as he had warned Meng Luo. Then, he continued to smile frivolously, "Those blockheads have been guarding that enormous treasure for more than a thousand years. They have known this all along, but they've still treated it like an ordinary dragon's vein. Ha ha ha... But, this Young Master luckily got the map of that treasure-house. Humph, humph, dumbfu*ks!"

Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others suddenly found themselves filling with admiration for Tan Tan. All of them sighed at the same time. They could clearly see that Tan Tan's eyelids weren't even blinking while lying. And, he had clearly fascinated this Young Master of the Meng Clan. Moreover, he was furthering the plan step by step, and was getting close to saving Ao Xie Yun...

[He's a very talented person.]

In fact, Minister Chu even felt ashamed of his inferiority. Ji Mo had always believed that he was very eloquent, but he was even fuller of admiration at this juncture. [Crap! This matter can be handled this way too...]

[I didn't know that Young Master Tan Tan could come up with something like this. This is god-tier story-telling!]

"Why the sighs...? Why are you guys sighing over?" Tan Tan aggressively glared at them, "You lot... How would you understand

this magnificent blueprint that I've put all my heart into?"

He held Meng Luo's shoulder while saying this. Then, he raised his nose upward and said, "We had originally decided to look for some assistance after coming here. After all, we knew that we would need some help in order to accomplish our mission. But, this work is done here now. Little Meng Meng has a slightly slippery character. But, why can't we bring him back to the clan with us if he can help us accomplish this? After all, I am very farsighted."

Chu Yang sighed. He shook his head, and he firmly looked at Meng Luo while adding fuel to the fire. "Meng, don't try to play any cheap trick. We will slaughter your entire clan like livestock if I find out that you harmed the Young Clan Lord in any way!"

"Yes. Yes. I will sincerely obey Senior's instructions. I won't dare to go against you in any way." Meng Luo swallowed the insult. He said in his heart, [I'd first pay you bastards back for this so-called 'favor' if I ever crawled up to a position higher than yours...]

"Yang-itchy... uh-huh..." Tan Tan raised his eyebrows. He was unable to contain his joy, "You tell me... would daddy make me the next clan lord if I completed this secretly important mission? Or, do I have to break the legs of my elder brother, and throw him out?"

Chu Yang rolled his eyes, and stammered for a while. Then, he 'honestly' said, "Second Master... I don't think that you will get the Clan Lord's position..."

Meng Luo greatly approved of it in his heart. He thought; [A guy like you can become the Clan Lord of the top ruling clan in the Upper Three Heavens? I won't believe it even if you beat me to death.]

Tan Tan flew into a rage. He became furious like a madman. He stomped about in anger, and shouted, "Shut up. Shut up. Shut up. Shut up... this position of the Clan Lord is a job for slackers. Even

dogs can do it!"

Everyone was dumbstruck upon hearing this.

Meng Luo formed a smiling expression. He thought, [Wouldn't that mean that you're calling your father a dog?]

"Why haven't we arrived there yet?" Tan Tan complained, "Where is that scum? We will catch him, and go back without delay... Why are we talking about this rubbish matter?"

Meng Luo came back to his senses. He had made up his mind, [I must accomplish this thing. After all, I presently have an opportunity to make a great contribution.]

"Congratulations, Young Clan Lord. Congratulations, Young Clan Lord..." Meng Luo lowered his voice, "This escaped criminal is exactly the one you are looking for... He's a pure bloodline of the Ao Clan... In fact, he's their Eldest Young Master — Ao Xie Yun."

"Eh?" Tan Tan became 'shocked'. He suddenly turned his head, and looked towards Meng Luo. He then suspiciously asked, "Damn it! I barely asked, and you're already prepared? You can't deceive me like that! How can there be such a coincidence?"

His expression suddenly became severe. Then, he said angrily in a low voice, "Do you think that I'm so easily fooled? Damn you, you are a scoundrel!"

Meng Luo forced a smile. He wished that he could pull out his heart, liver, and lungs to prove that he was speaking the truth, "Young Clan Lord, I'm telling the truth. The man that we're trying to track down is the Young Clan Lord of Ao Clan – Ao Xie Yun."

"Stop your nonsensical lies, Motherfu*ker!" Tan Tan became angry, "Do you think that I don't know about the Ao Clan? That clan is considered to be the number-one clan in your Middle Three Heavens even though this Young Master hasn't seen it yet. And, the pure-blooded son of the number-one clan is considered as a fugitive by you? Motherfu*ker! Don't shoot off your mouth! Don't

boast so much!"

He almost drew his mouth close to Meng Luo's face and spat on it, "Take my example. Who would dare to hunt me down in the Upper Three Heavens? I would execute all of them. And, I will execute you too if you dare to deceive me!"

"This is true... it is indeed that way. Young Clan Lord, you've just got very lucky today..." Meng Luo felt wronged. He cried out, "Ask them if you don't believe me... Everyone knows this..."

"How can there be such a big coincidence?" Tan Tan flew into a rage as if he had been cheated, robbed, and raped. He felt grief and indignation, "Meng Luo, Meng Luo. I wanted to guide you properly. But, I didn't expect that you'd take me for a fool. You have done it now. Tsk tsk, I kill the people who try to play tricks on me..."

Meng Luo almost vomited blood since he felt unjustly treated. "It is true. Young Clan Lord, you can ask anyone if you don't believe me." However, the only hope that was left in his heart vanished like a puff of smoke when he saw Tan Tan flying into a rage.

"Nonsense! They are your subordinates. What's the point of asking them?" Then, Tan Tan's face suddenly turned dark. "Do you want to die?"

He spoke till here, and suddenly his belly made a rumbling sound. He couldn't help but cuss, "Motherfu*ker, you're making me so angry that I feel hungry!"

He took out a bright and sparkling fist-sized inner core of a sixth-grade spirit beast. He then stuffed it into his mouth, but didn't chew it. He simply stretched his neck, and it swelled up. Then, he continued to gulp down the inner cores one by one while issuing gulping sounds.

Meng Luo opened his eyes wide in shock. He almost jumped up in fright. In fact, it seemed that his head had somewhat blown out.

[He eats spirit beast inner cores? Oh fu*k! He... deserves to be called the Second Young Master of Ye Clan. This motherfu*ker can eat the inner cores of spirit beasts just like that...]

"Someone, come! Execute him for me!" Tan Tan bellowed. He emitted murderous aura from his eyes, "You dared to deceive me! Humph, humph..."

"This isn't fair..." Meng Luo shivered. He hastily shouted, "There's a reason for this..."

"What kind of reason?" Tan Tan waved his hand to stop his men. He then squinted, and looked at Meng Luo.

"The matter goes like this... I was once damned by King of Hell Chu at the Mt. Dingjun..." Meng Luo had no other choice. He was forced to tell the whole matter from the beginning to the end. "... then, since Ou Clan wanted to deal with King of Hell Chu... this led to... therefore... that happened... this is why... we want to kill Ao Xie Yun... this is the whole matter."

Everyone's complexion changed after they had heard the reason.

It was hard to imagine that these many things, these many coincidences, the union of these many clans, and the hunt for Ao Xie Yun... were all because of Chu Yang.

Chu Yang himself was flabbergasted.

[Do I have such a great ability? I can make such a tremendous impact? Fu*k! How did I not know?]

"Is it so? So, you're saying... this man is the Eldest Young Master of the Ao Clan? This Ao... whatever his name is?" Tan Tan looked as if he couldn't believe it. "Fu*k, so this isn't a coincidence, right? It's like a maiden came by herself just when I was thinking of getting married... Could it be that this is the will of heavens?"

Everyone felt so overwhelmed in their hearts that they felt like vomiting.

Chu Yang had never thought that the Junior Martial Brother he had grown up with was such a good actor!

His act had been simply amazing!

Meng Luo repeatedly nodded. Then, he flatteringly said, "That's right. Young Clan Lord, it is a great sign for you. Such a coincidence is proof that Young Clan Lord is very lucky. You only need to stretch your hand, and you can grab anything you want. Everything is easy for you. The heavens have bestowed a gift upon you so that you can succeed in this important mission. This is certainly your luck."

Tan Tan shook his head. He was overjoyed, and he patted Meng Luo, "Damn it! You're very thoughtful. I like it. Wa ha ha... Do you think I'm handsome?"

Meng Luo was startled by this. But, he hastily replied, "Yes! No one can be more handsome than you! I haven't seen anyone so handsome in the Middle Three Heavens..." He felt somewhat overwhelmed in his heart... [Why does he need to ask whether he's handsome or not...? This is fu*ked up...]

"Wa ha ha... Little Meng, you truly talk sincerely. I like it. Wa ha ha..." Tan Tan burst into loud laughter.

Everyone had been rendered speechless. So, they turned away their heads one after another, and pretended not to see.

They had reached the middle reaches of the river while having this conversation. Ou Du Xiao came over from the front along with the other men. Then, he spoke-up in a rude tone, "Meng Luo, why are you not at the lower reaches of the river? Why have you come here? And, who are these people?"

Meng Luo had a big backing now. So, why would he give importance to these minor people of the Middle Three Heavens? He snorted and said, "These are my friends. And, you don't need to talk so rudely, okay?"

Tan Tan picked his nose with his finger. Then, he snapped his finger with a 'snap' sound. Consequently, the yellow and sticky mucus from his nose got pasted on Ou Du Xiao's white robe. Then, he said in an eccentric manner, "Who is this? He's not even paying respect to me. Don't you have any manners here in your Middle Three Heavens?"

The complexion of Ou Du Xiao and the others changed. He threw a rude glance at Tan Tan, "Who is this?"

Tan Tan coldly snorted. However, he didn't get enough time to speak since a wave suddenly splashed nearby on the riverside. Then, a blood circle rose from the bottom of the river. Then, someone rushed out of the water's surface. After that, a loud shout came, "Ao Xie Yun has been found!"

....

Chapter 606: Escapes Alive From Mortal Danger

Everyone's spirit rose up. They turned their heads to see. Ou Du Xiao didn't get enough time to inquire about the identities of Tan Tan and the others. Instead, he and the others took out their weapons with 'shua' sounds.

They saw the river water rippling and churning. Then, a silhouette came out of the river. And, all the weapons from all the directions rushed forwards to attack this person.

Flesh and blood swirled in the air along with multiple 'shua' sounds the next moment. In fact, that person wasn't even able to utter a word before he got chopped to pieces. However, this person turned out to be a Revered Martial Artist of the Tian Clan who had secretly dived into the river.

Meanwhile, a splashing sound came from another direction as another figure jumped out of the river. This figure had a large bright and shiny saber in his hand. It was the 'Sunlight Saber' that he had plundered from the Lower Three Heavens.

This saber was no less than a treasure for Ao Xie Yun. It was a part of his personal collection. However, he wasn't a saber artist. In fact, the entire Ao Clan had a family tradition of using swords.

Therefore, he was incapable of using a saber to a proper effect when confronting an enemy.

A swordsman might as well be unarmed if he were to face the enemy with a saber. Therefore, it wasn't a good choice since the saber couldn't come in handy for Ao Xie Yun. However, Ao Xie Yun had been discovered underwater. And, his sword had been shattered into pieces. Therefore, he had no other choice but to use this saber...

"Brother Ao, long time no see," Ou Du Xiao mischievously smiled.

He sounded very cultured and gentle.

"It's you guys!" Ao Xie Yun was inside an intense encirclement. But, his face had a calm and collected look. Water droplets were dripping down from all over his body. He insipidly said, "Have you brought such a big army just to... kill me?"

"There was no other way. Brother Ao is the number-one person among the younger generation in the Middle Three Heavens. How would we have caught you if we weren't prepared?" Ou Du Xiao laughed out loud, "Brother Ao was able to escape for a thousand miles even from such a big army. This little brother truly admires you."

Ao Xie Yun swept his eyes around. Then, he slightly smiled and said, "But, you've finally found me." Ao Xie Yun was very tranquil even in such a hopeless situation. He then gently smiled, "Brother Ou, can I ask you a question?"

"Does Brother Ao wish to ask... why we want to kill you?" Ou Du Xiao smiled.

"Yes!"

"I honestly admire Brother Ao as a friend. Brother Ao has always been my closest friend and brother! I would've never thought of going against Brother Ao if I had any other choice." Ou Du Xiao sighed with regret, and said helplessly.

"Brother Ou is affectionate and righteous. You're a good man," Ao Xie Yun replied with a vague smile.

Tian Bu Hui, Tu Qian Hao, and Black Devil Youth giggled at the same time.

Ou Du Xiao's face had somewhat turned red. But, he regained his composure and said, "It's always better to be 'good man' than a dead man."

Ao Xie Yun nodded. After all, he also felt the same way deep down. "Brother Ou, we were almost like family to each other.

Therefore, could you not keep me in the dark before I die?"

"Brother Ao, the fact is that you're innocent. We didn't wish to deal with you at all... but, we've no other choice. However, we can't ignore the fact that you're the Eldest Young Master of the Ao Clan, can we?" Ou Du Xiao faintly smiled, "How would we shift the blame on Xie Dan Qiong if we don't kill you. How would we create chaos in the Middle Three heavens if we don't shift the blame on Xie Dan Qiong? And, how would we deal with King of Hell Chu, Xie Clan, Mo Clan, Dong Clan, Gu Clan, and Luo Clan if we don't cause chaos in the Middle Three Heavens?"

Ou Du Xiao coldly snorted, "How would we protect ourselves if we don't deal with them? How would we establish our domination? Wouldn't all this be impossible if your Ao Clan doesn't move into action? And, wouldn't everything work out smoothly so long as you die?"

"So that's how it is." Ao Xie Yun nodded. He had understood everything clearly. "It is all about your ambitions in the end."

Tian Bu Hui took a step forward and said, "Ao Xie Yun, this Tian wanted to have a fair fight with you. But, I deeply regret that I never got the opportunity to do so."

Ao Xie Yun slightly shook his head. Then, he solemnly said, "Nothing has ever been fair between you and me because the Tian Clan stands nowhere in the eyes of Ao Xie Yun."

A sharp vigor glowed in Tian Bu Hui's eyes as he indifferently said, "I hope that Brother Ao will be able to argue this incisively even after he has turned into a ghost."

Ao Xie Yun burst into laughter and replied, "I can't be sure about that. But, there is one thing I'm sure about — I won't be the ghost of a shameless traitor!"

An ominous glint flashed in Tian Bu Hui's eyes. He then shouted at his men, "Who would take down Ao Xie Yun for me?!"

Ao Xie Yun burst into loud laughter. Then, a heroic and utterly fearless voice transmitted out to afar. He was carrying his saber horizontally in front of his chest. Then, he let out a loud shout, "There's an excellent head right here. Who wants to take it?"

Tan Tan pushed Meng Luo at this moment. Meng Luo immediately understood the gesture, and jumped over. He then said with a smile, "Brother Ao, I will have this fight with you."

The several other Eldest Young Masters were startled. [What happened to Meng Luo?]

[Ao Xie Yun is like a turtle in a jar at the moment. He wouldn't be able to escape even if he was given a pair of wings. So, why would Meng Luo willingly jump into danger like that?]

One must know that Ao Xie Yun's present cultivation level was far better than that of Meng Luo. Ao Xie Yun was seriously hurt at the moment. However, he would still be able to take Meng Luo down with him.

And, it was certain that Ao Xie Yun would do his utmost to save himself no matter who stepped forward.

The rest of the young masters hadn't stepped forward to undertake this task because they were worried about this. However, they hadn't expected that this ever-gloomy Meng Luo would impetuously jump over.

Meng Luo laughed out loud and said, "Brother Ao's corpse is very useful. So, how would I ever feel relieved if I let others ruin it?"

He raised his palm after he said so. Then, he said with a smile, "I want to fight Brother Ao unarmed. Let's fight!"

A killing intention flashed in Ao Xie Yun's eyes as he said, "Such being the case... you are most welcome, Brother Meng."

Meng Luo laughed out loud, and set into action to attack Ao Xie Yun. Ao Xie Yun's saber light flashed to welcome the attack. And, both of them immediately engaged in a barrage of clashes.

Forty to fifty experts of the Meng Clan gathered to watch the fight. They seemed afraid that their Young Clan Lord might lose.

This was human nature after all. Tian Bu Hui and the others also took a step forward unconsciously.

However, Chu Yang and the others seemed completely uninterested in this. They were standing on a boulder at a distant place with their arms crossed. They were observing from outside the encirclement.

The fight between these two set-off gusts of strong wind in the battlefield which issued whistling sounds. The sounds of the collisions were unceasingly echoing as well.

The more Ao Xie Yun attacked, the more startled he became. The more he hit, the more puzzled he became. Meng Luo's attacks didn't have any killing intention behind them even though his attacks were very fierce and his fighting style was extremely malicious. His attacks would start out as extremely powerful. But, they would lose their power by the time they'd approached Ao Xie Yun's body.

[He's clearly losing on purpose... But, why?]

Ao Xie Yun was at a loss. [Meng Luo and I have never had friendly relations. In fact, we don't have any good impressions of each other. We have only mocked and ridiculed each other whenever we've met. So, why is he losing this fight on purpose?]

However, a hope had emerged in Ao Xie Yun's heart no matter what Meng Luo's intentions were. He had thought that he would certainly die this time. And, he had accepted his fate as well. But now, he had a hope of surviving. So, how could he let himself die?

He couldn't help but circulate his vision to look all around for an opportunity to escape. There was no certainty of this opportunity... However, Ao Xie Yun didn't have any other choice at the moment.

Meng Luo suddenly shouted loudly while they were in the middle of the fight. He said while smiling, "Brother Ao is truly worthy of his reputation. You have been chased for a thousand miles. However, you're still left with so much strength. That's truly admirable!" he had blinked while saying this.

Ao Xie Yun's heart was filled with doubts. But, he had suddenly seen a glimmer of hope in this hopeless situation. He coldly snorted and said, "I have been hunted for a thousand miles. But, I am confident that I can drag Brother Meng down to hell with me if I want to."

Meng Luo continuously hit out his palm with whistling sounds. And, the dust in the surrounding area soared upwards because of the palm attacks. It almost created a smoke screen before everyone, and left them unable to see anything inside. They could only hear the 'bangs' and 'thumps' echoing chaotically. Therefore, it seemed as if these two were engaged in an intense battle. Then, Meng Luo loudly roared, "Ao Xie Yun, die!"

However, Meng Luo drew close to Ao Xie Yun amidst all the dust and smoke, and quickly whispered, "I will send you to your left front with all my strength! Don't defend afterwards. Some people will get you out of here."

He didn't wait for Ao Xie Yun to reply after he had said this. Instead, he suddenly shouted out loud, "Ao - Xie - Yun! Die!" A sound of explosion was heard... as if the two men had firmly collided with each other. Then, sand flew, stones rolled, and the dust fiercely rose upwards.

Everyone raised their sleeves up to cover their faces from the flying sand and stones.

A shadow suddenly flew high like a meteor from amidst the dust and smoke. Then, the voice of Meng Luo's laughter came. It was also followed by his words, "Die!" Then, he moved quickly and struck heavily with his two palms in midair. The two slaps landed

on the middle of Ao Xie Yun's back whilst he was in mid-air. Then, he fly-kicked Ao Xie Yun's lower back.

Ao Xie Yun screamed as he was smashed out like a meteor.

Meng Luo didn't relax a bit. He pursued after him flying. Then, he laughed in a self-satisfied manner.

[Ao Xie Yun is doomed!]

A feeling arose in the hearts of Tian Bu Hui, Ou Du Xiao, and the others. [I didn't think that the exhausted Ao Xie Yun would be so easily sorted out by Meng Luo. I would've taken the credit for killing him if I'd known this earlier...]

They turned their heads to see while regretting. But, they immediately opened their eyes wide in a stare.

However, they saw that the Ao Xie Yun's body was flying. It had strangely flown out to a distance of more than three-hundred feet away. But, it was still gliding at a high altitude...

"Crap!" Young Black Devil was the first to react. He stamped his feet, and flew forward to chase after Ao Xie Yun with a lightning speed.

Everyone had come to realize this, [It would've been impossible for Ao Xie Yun to keep on flying for so far relying on his own ability even if he were in his prime. Moreover, he had just been sent flying by a kick. The only person who could be responsible for such a situation is Meng Luo!]

[This can only mean that Meng Luo has colluded with Ao Xie Yun, and he is helping him escape.]

They thought till here. Then, these Eldest Young Masters gritted their teeth so hard that they almost grinded them into pieces!

[Meng Luo, you've done it now!]

Ao Xie Yun went flying over to Chu Yang and the others in the blink of an eye. Then, Gu Du Xing suddenly unsheathed his Black

Dragon Sword with a 'clang'. It changed into a black lightning. Then, he united with his sword, and flew up into the sky. He grabbed Ao Xie Yun's waistband. Then, he brandished his Black Dragon Sword, and flew away!

They crossed a thousand feet in a flash... like a meteor streaking through the horizon!

Young Black Devil had been the fastest to chase. However, his entire body shivered at this moment. He blurted out, "Sword Emperor?!"

Chu Yang and the others let out a shout. They also followed at a lightning speed.

Finally, Meng Luo also ran away.

All of these things had happened so quickly and dramatically that it was too much for everyone's eyes to take in. All of these things had occurred almost at the same time. Therefore, no one had gotten enough time to react. After all, they had never imagined that such a thing could happen.

Ou Du Xiao, the other Young Masters, and the experts of those big aristocratic clans wanted to pursue. But, they were collectively attacked by the experts of the Meng Clan. In fact, five or six people immediately lost their lives. All of them felt so angry that their hearts almost crumbled.

However, Meng Clan's people also ran behind Meng Luo before these people could react.

"Meng Luo! You scumbag!" The Ou Du Xiao's entire body shivered in anger. He almost vomited out blood. He shouted loudly in a stern voice, "Chase after them. Don't spare them at any cost. Kill them all! Don't leave even one of them alive!"

The experts of all the great clans immediately rushed forth.

In fact, they flew out like a duck that had been cooked thoroughly! However, Ou Du Xiao and the others felt like rubbing

rub their eyes in disbelief. [Isn't this too fu*king bizarre?]

It would've been understandable if someone else among them was in Meng Luo's place. In fact, it would've been excusable even if Ou Du Xiao had let Ao Xie Yun escape. Everyone would've understood it. [But... why did Meng Luo – who was the most unlikely one to do it – do it?!]

[Is this a fu*king dream or something?]

...

Chapter 607: Cross the River and Not Destroy the Bridge Afterwards? Just to Keep You?

Du Xiao felt like he was dreaming or something. He could've suspected anyone, but he could never have suspected Meng Luo.

After all, Meng Luo and his Meng Clan had been most supportive of this alliance. Moreover, Meng Clan had been the most forceful since Ao Xie Yun's hunt had begun. The reason for this was very simple — the Meng Clan had come to a dead end. So, they had been hoping to benefit from this chaos.

On top of that, Meng Luo had never gotten along with Ao Xie Yun. In fact, a selfish guy like Meng Luo would never break an alliance for Ao Xie Yun's sake even if they had been friends.

Therefore, this betrayal had come from the most unlikely person.

This matter had made Ou Du Xiao, Tian Bu Hui, and the others depressed, angry, and puzzled at the same time.

[What the hell is this?]

[Meng Luo has had several opportunities to let Ao Xie Yun escape in the past. He could've silently sent Ao Xie Yun out of the encirclement at several instances. But, he didn't do that. Therefore, all of us had felt quite reassured!]

[Why didn't he act before if there was indeed some sort of collaboration between him and Ao Xie Yun?]

[Did he want to act at the last moment when Ao Xie Yun was completely cornered, and it was absolutely impossible for him to escape? Did he intentionally wait until all of Ao Xie Yun's loyal subordinates were dead...? Wouldn't it be useless if he rescued Ao Xie Yun like that?]

[Does he think that Ao Xie Yun will simply forget everything?]

Everyone's heads had turned into a mushy paste from thinking too much. And, the more they thought about it, the more confusing it became.

[However, things have come to a point where the situation seems completely out of our control. So, we must continue to chase even if we don't understand what is going on. After all, we would be done for if we allowed Ao Xie Yun to return to the Ao Clan...]

More than a thousand people bellowed, and began to chase.

Gu Du Xing was darting away like a meteor while carrying Ao Xie Yun. Ao Xie Yun felt as if he was riding on the clouds. He thankfully said, "Thank you very much for rescuing me, Senior. May I ask who you are?"

Ao Xie Yun was obviously a very knowledgeable and experienced person. And, he had noticed that all of the enemy's swords had started to issue orderly sword cries the moment Gu Du Xing's sword had come out of the sheath. In fact, it had seemed as if they were worshiping their emperor. So, Ao Xie Yun had immediately come to realize that this man was a Sword Emperor.

This was the so-called example of 'I've never eaten pork, but I have seen pigs running around'. There hadn't been such a Sword Emperor in the Middle Three Heavens for centuries. However, Ao Xie Yun was the successor of the number-one clan of the Middle Three Heavens. So, how could he not recognize a Sword Emperor?

Therefore, he naturally assumed that, [Someone with this kind of cultivation has to be a highly skilled senior expert!]

Gu Du Xing lightly smiled behind the mask and said, "Evil Young Master, I am Gu Du Xing."

Ao Xie Yun nearly collapsed to the ground as soon as he heard this.

In fact, he would've fallen down from the shock if it weren't for Gu Du Xing holding him.

[What is this? Is this truly that Gu Du Xing who is equally famous as me?]

[This Sword Emperor... turned out to be Gu Du Xing?] Ao Xie Yun's mind instantly blacked out.

[How did he suddenly become a Sword Emperor? And... how can I be equally famous as him if that's the case?]

Gu Du Xing had covered a distance of ten-thousand feet at a stretch. Then, he shrugged his shoulder up, and threw Ao Xie Yun away. Dong Wu Shang let out a bellow, turned into a starry saber-light together with his saber, and caught Ao Xie Yun. Then, he dashed away like a saber beam while carrying Ao Xie Yun on his back.

Ao Xie Yun didn't ask anything this time. Instead, he just slightly sighed, and whispered, "Dong Wu Shang, thank you!"

He felt a sense of loss in his heart, [Those two were once equally famous as me. However, one has become a Sword Emperor, and the other has become a Saber Emperor now. And, I'm still a mere Sixth Grade Martial King. Yet, I've been pushed forward to the rank of 'number-one young master of the younger generation of the Middle Three Heavens'.]

[Would I have obtained that title if I didn't belong to the Ao Clan?]

[It's no wonder that people don't acknowledge me as the number-one. Why would they do so when they know that my clan is the reason behind my success?]

[However, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang have achieved success based on their own hard work... one step at a time. How can I ever compare myself with them? Who would give me any importance if I lost the title of 'Ao Clan's Eldest Young Master'?]

Ao Xie Yun sighed sorrowfully.

He hadn't sighed or lost heart when he was facing a hopeless

situation of life and death. However, he felt inferior deep down at this moment.

[I am inferior!]

'Ao Clan's Eldest Young Master'— this title is my biggest enemy..." Ao Xie Yun mocked himself in his heart.

Gu Du Xing and the others had restored their original physiques when they had snatched Ao Xie Yun and dashed off. So, they no longer had that meticulously transformed appearance. Firstly, they had done this so that they could display their strength to the maximum. Secondly, it was to make Ao Xie Yun recognize them. Otherwise, nothing good would've been gained if some misunderstanding had arisen...

Whiz whiz whiz...

The seven individuals pushed forward towards the mountain forest like an orderly group of shooting stars while tracing long marks on the ground.

Meng Luo and the people of his clan were doing their utmost to keep up. And, the experts of Meng Clan who had fallen behind were being wiped out by the raging experts of the other clans.

Many people had been killed. In fact, only two Martial Emperors were left by Meng Luo's side at this moment. However, Meng Luo was still extremely excited.

[Ao Xie Yun has finally been snatched away. And, I've managed to win Young Lord Ye's trust.]

[Young Lord Ye should appreciate me even more, right? He-he, I was so decisive back there. I snatched Ao Xie Yun with such determination and decisiveness. This is the direct descendent of Ao Clan... he's the bearer of pure bloodline. He's the key to opening the dragon's vein wherein lies the hidden treasure-house of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master.]

[I've provided such a great service to Young Lord Ye, he he, he

he...]

[I can now get my hands on a part of the treasures of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master, right? Furthermore, I will get an opportunity to rush straight into the Upper Three Heavens...]

Meng Luo was fleeing while thinking all this. He felt as if his body was full of inexhaustible energy at the moment.

He obviously had his own plans as well, [I had better call the Meng Clan's ancestor, and bring along several experts as backup when we go to find the hidden treasure.]

[This Young Lord Ye looks like an idiot. However, I can't rule out the possibility that he won't destroy the bridge after crossing the river...]

[But, the first step has finally been taken no matter what happens afterwards. And, there is no turning back now that it's done. So, I can only keep going onwards bravely even if it is risky.]

[Since ancient times... all those who have become successful... when have they not taken risk? Riches and honor are always found amidst danger.] Meng Luo kept comforting himself in his heart.

[How can there be a huge harvest without huge investment?]

[How can one attain a magnificent future without making effort in the present day?]

[This might be the case of 'Heaven never seals off all exits'. There will appear a new way out even in the most adverse and hopeless circumstances. And, it will be more powerful than any other way.]

All sorts of inspirational allusions emerged in Meng Luo's heart in an instant; [I believe that I, Meng Luo will become a new legend in the Middle Three Heavens in the near future.]

[Who would dare to say that what I did today was wrong after I become successful...? But, there will surely be some people who'd envy my sinister insight and my guts to make this investment...

along with my resolution to go forward with strategy.]

[You become a king if you come out victorious, and you become a bandit if you lose. There is no place for compassion, duty, propriety, and integrity.]

[This is fu*king Jianghu for god's sake!]

Finally, Meng Luo fiercely said this in his heart, and then continued to happily rush in the forward direction.

However, the pursuing brigade was getting closer and closer. And, a dozen or more Emperor Level Experts were very close.

The Third Grade Martial Emperor clenched his teeth. Then, he shouted out loud, "All Martial Kings, stay behind and block the enemy. Today is the matter of our Meng Clan's survival. The Young Lord has already endured humiliation as a part of an important mission for Meng Clan's sake. You people won't be able to run away from the Emperor Experts at your current speeds. So, you might as well sacrifice your lives for the clan. Don't worry. This old man swears on his life that your family members will live comfortably after you are gone. This old man will make sure that they won't have to face any humiliation until their last moment."

The dozens of King Level Experts that had survived this far had already given up all hope. And, these words made them so thrilled that they wanted to die.

"Don't worry, Second Elder. We'll leave Young Lord Meng in your capable hands. But, please don't forget the promise that you've made to us subordinates today... regarding the safety of our family members..."

They suddenly stopped after shouting this out. Then, they rushed back to fight with everything they had.

They all had the same mindset – to take down the enemy with themselves.

Everyone knew in their heart, [Second Elder spoke the truth. The

situation already looks very dire. It doesn't look like we'd be able to survive today. So, it's better to trade our lives for the safety of our family members.]

[Our Meng Clan would storm into the Upper Three Heavens as long as Young Lord and Second Elder get out alive from this. Then, our family members will be able to get the best care. Moreover, our children will flourish in the Upper Three Heavens.]

[We feel content in our hearts even though we're about to die.]

Then, several explosive sounds were heard. And, this was followed by several screams. The King Level Experts of the Meng Clan had launched a suicide-attack to block the enemy.

The two Emperor Level Experts of Meng Clan heaved a deep sigh. And, their faces suddenly turned red at the same time. They picked up Meng Luo, and simultaneously started a secret technique of burning their vitality. Their speed instantly became threefold as a result. And, they followed Chu Yang and the others like shooting stars.

A trace of intense bitterness flashed in Meng Luo's eyes. He said in his heart, [The kings are already dead. It's a pity. However, it was a last resort. In fact, I would even make these two Emperor Experts go all-out to obstruct the enemy in the name of the clan's future if the worse comes to the worst. After all, that would give me a slim chance of survival.]

[Everything will be worth it as long as I can escape. And, I will have as many Emperor Experts as I want afterwards.]

[Moreover, these people have been continuously chasing for such a long time. All of them must be exhausted and spent. I believe that they won't necessarily be able to catch up with us... Furthermore, they can't possibly be prepared to face a Young Lord that has a Sword Emperor, a Saber Emperor, and a mystical expert by his side...

[The pursuers have an overwhelming numerical strength. So, we may not be able to defeat them. However, we should be able to escape without any issue.]

The experts of the other clans had been pursuing like the wind, while the Meng Clan's experts had been running away in a battered and exhausted state. So, how could the pursuers have anticipated that the Meng Clan's experts would suddenly turn around to fight a decisive battle with them?

The pursuers got held up for a while as they eliminated all these suicidal King Level Experts. Subsequently, they could only see a boundless mountain forest in front of them. After all, their targets had already disappeared without a trace...

Tian Bu Hui and the other young masters caught up at this moment. They were panting, and their complexions had turned extremely gloomy.

"Find them! At any cost!" Tu Qian Hao's gaze turned vicious.

"Set fire! Burn down the entire mountain forest!" Ou Du Xiao had become even more poisonous.

These two had issued commands at the same time.

The two Emperor Experts beside Meng Luo continued to use the secret method of burning their vitality for about half-an-hour before they were finally able to catch up with Chu Yang and his party. However, they hadn't caught up with them of their own merit since Chu Yang and the others had been taking a short break at the summit during this time.

"Young Lord!" Meng Luo stepped forward jubilantly while panting. He then said while laughing gently, "Finally, mission has been accomplished! This man is the bearer of the Ao Clan's pure bloodline. And, we have finally succeeded in obtaining him."

Tan Tan said while beaming with smiles, "You worked hard."

Meng Luo let out a carefree smile. Then, he said in a loyal and

devoted manner, "It's an honor to work for Young Lord. So, how can it be called hard work?"

However, he wiped his sweat as he said this... as if it was in fact a very hard work. He then somewhat eagerly asked, "Young Lord, what should we do next?"

"Well, next... you may go back. You don't need to follow me anymore," Tan Tan casually replied.

"This is... what?" Meng Luo suddenly couldn't believe his own ears. He said while stammering, "Young Lord, you... you're joking right..."

"Fu*k off! Joking, you say? Who would be interested in joking with someone like you?" Tan Tan got furious, and started to rant, "I don't even bother to joke with the children back home. So, why would I be interesting in joking with you? Get lost motherfu*ker! Why are you still here? Don't tell me you're still thinking of depending on me? You think I wouldn't destroy the bridge after crossing the river? Why would I keep you? Who the fu*k do you think you are?! Fu*k off! Shoo!"

It turned dark before Meng Luo's eyes. His entire body suddenly started to shudder.

...

Chapter 608: What Offense Did I Commit Against You?

Meng Luo suddenly felt as if he had been dreaming. This person had told him in that dream, [I'll take you to the top of the Nine Heavens if you help me in my matter...] But, he had woken up from that dream now.

"Did you deceive me?" Meng Luo looked at Tan Tan with grief and indignation. He felt as if his head was spinning. His eyes had almost popped out of his head.

"Deceive you?" Tan Tan eccentrically said. "I haven't cheated you. You can only blame your name for this. What are you called? You're called Meng Luo, right? Fu*k! Meng Luo means 'the dream will fall'. This means that the dream doesn't have any meaning in reality. I hope my explanation helps."

Meng Luo's entire body shivered. In fact, he trembled like sifting chaff. The only thing that he felt in his heart at the moment was, [I'm done for!]

[I've fallen in a deathtrap! I'll surely die this time.]

Meng Clan had already been struggling-on whilst at the death's door. And, no chance of survival was left now.

The three men of the Meng Clan were in daze at the moment. They had fallen weakly on the ground as if they had given up all hope. In fact, they didn't even have the strength to be angry. They felt dead in their heart at this moment.

The felt as if the world had suddenly lost its color.

"Yang-itchy... do you feel pleased? I feel very happy playing tricks on people." Tan Tan laughed heartily while issuing 'quack' noises, "Such a stupid c*nt is hard to find. He has entertained us a lot."

"I'll make you Yang-itchy now!" Chu Yang became angry, and

kicked him. Then, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others flocked around him. All of them seized the 'Second Master Ye of the number-one aristocratic clan of the Upper Three Heavens right in front of Meng Luo, and beat him up ruthlessly.

Chu Yang continuously punched and kicked Tan Tan. And, Tan Tan continuously screamed. Tan Tan's body was spinning in midair like a spinning-top. It hadn't fallen on the ground throughout the beating.

Meng Luo had been surprised by this even though he was in extreme despair. In fact, he was staring at them with his eyes wide open. [These servants dare to beat their own Young Lord? They are indeed audacious.]

Chu Yang vented out all of his anger, and finally let go of Tan Tan afterwards. Then, he arrived in front of Meng Luo...

"Young Master Meng, we must take our leave now. You may stay here, and enjoy yourself. Relax, Ou Du Xiao, Tu Qian Hao, and the others... they are your allies. They wouldn't do anything to you," Chu Yang said while brimming with smiles.

"No! You can't abandon me." Meng Luo miserably shouted. His entire body went limp. Allies? Ou Du Xiao and the others would eat him alive if they were to see him.

Meng Luo was sure about this.

"It seems that Brother Meng still hasn't recognized us," Chu Yang smiled. He then pulled off the mask that he had used to cover his face. Then, he softly smiled and said, "Brother Meng, do you recognize me now?"

Meng Luo was extremely shocked to see his face... It seemed as if he had seen a ghost or something. He crawled up from the ground using his hands and feet, "It's you? It's you?! King of Hell Chu?! How can it be you?"

"Why can't it be me?" Chu Yang gently smiled.

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others also pulled off their face masks at this moment. Then, all of them looked mockingly at Meng Luo.

They were looking at Meng Luo as if he was a wretched worm.

"It's you people... How can it be you?" Meng Luo yelled in grief and indignation, "Your build was completely different when I saw you before. How could I not recognize you?"

"Dumb-fu*k! Martial arts for changing one's appearance exist in this world. Don't tell me that you didn't know about this." Ji Mo shrugged his shoulder as he looked at Meng Luo disdainfully.

"Then he... he is not the Second Young Master of Ye Clan?" Meng Luo helplessly looked at Tan Tan. He still had a trace of hope in his eyes.

This guy still had such hope...

"He's my Junior Martial Brother. As for the Ye Clan that you're talking about... we're sorry," Chu Yang gently replied, "We have no idea about it."

Chu Yang smiled, "I wanted to deal with you. That's all! Do you understand?"

"King of Hell Chu...? When did I offend you? Why do you want to destroy and kill me? You could've at least let off my Meng Clan?" Meng Luo shouted in grief and indignation. His voice was full of misery, despair, and disbelief.

"How did you offend me? Ha ha ha..." Chu Yang sneered. "Meng Luo, you've committed an unforgivable crime against me. And, let me tell you that it is your biggest offense."

"Biggest offense...?" Tears of despair were streaming down from Meng Luo's face. He then lifted up his head, and thought hard. But, the more he thought, the more hollow his mind felt to be. [When did I offend a frightening character like King of Hell Chu? Why is he going out of his way to deal with me?]

[Meng Clan is a big clan. It had been established several hundred years ago. However, he has consigned it to damnation in the short time from Mt. Dingjun up until now. In fact, he has thoroughly pushed the clan into a hopeless situation.]

[This person's shadow has been behind almost all the unfortunate things that have happened to the Meng Clan. What offense have I committed against him?]

[He was in the Lower Three Heavens, while I was here in the Middle Three Heavens. We didn't even have any contact. Then, how did he get offended?]

Meng Luo was at a loss. He pondered, but couldn't think of anything.

In fact, he also thought about all the young girls that he had violated. However, not a single one of them had any relation with Chu Yang... So, he eventually asked in a very fierce manner, "How did I offend you? You must tell me."

He had a confident and righteous stance at the moment. [I haven't committed any offense against you. So, why do you want to deal with me? This is extremely wrong and unjust...]

"He-he... you have committed an outrageous crime. And, it doesn't have the least bit of relation with me. The evil technique that you practice is shit in my eyes even though others fear it. In fact, it is simply unworthy to be afraid of."

Chu yang sneered, "But, the thing that you shouldn't have done... is that you dared to set your eyes on Mo Qing Wu. He-he-he... The demise of you and your Meng Clan was set in place the moment you sent that marriage proposal to the Mo Clan."

Chu Yang exposed a bright smile on his face. Then, he lashed out, "I will destroy any life that's related to your clan. I will erase your clan's existence."

"Just for a girl?" Meng Luo opened his eyes wide, "You want to

deal with me for such a crippled girl? And, that too a little girl...?"

"Yes, I can kill you a hundred times over for her!" Chu Yang coldly looked at him, "And, your family too."

"I see..." Meng Luo's head drooped in a daze. Then, he finally spread out on the ground like mud. He couldn't even stand anymore. He had lost all of his strength.

In fact, he had lost the will to live.

He didn't want to live even though he felt revengeful towards Chu Yang. He was only thinking of killing himself. After all, where could he go to show his depression?

"So, you guys were tricking us all along! And, that's why you people deliberately saved Ao Xie Yun!" The two Emperor Level Experts of the Meng Clan looked at Chu Yang and the others with hatred in their eyes... as if they wanted to tear them apart with just their gazes.

"You people want to kill Ao Xie Yun. Isn't it to deal with us?" Chu Yang generously smiled and said, "So, we would obviously wish to save him!"

"You!" The two Martial Emperors suddenly stood up. They exposed an ominous glint in their eyes.

"Are you not going to escape with your Young Clan Lord? Don't tell me that you're still thinking of having a fight with us?" Chu Yang sneered, "Wouldn't it be acting recklessly? Don't you have families to look after?"

"You won't kill us?" The hearts of both the Emperor Experts were palpitating with fear.

"Why would I want to kill you?" Chu Yang turned around indifferently, and started to walk away, "I want my hands clean."

Dong Wu Shang carried Ao Xie Yun on his back. Then, a long whistling sound was heard. And, the seven men flew away from

the summit like whirlwinds.

The two Emperor Experts then noticed this point, [These seven went as vigorously as lightning, but no leaf or underbrush swayed as they went away.]

A series of sounds were heard from all directions behind them at this moment. It was obvious that the pursuers were near.

The two Emperor Experts immediately understood — Chu Yang hadn't had any good intentions towards them. Chu Yang and the others had waited here just to leave Meng Luo exasperated. They had conveniently stalled for time until they found that the hunting-army had come near. Then, they all ran away.

Chu Yang had led them closer to the army of pursuers in this way... so that they themselves could run away without any hassle.

These seven brothers couldn't dare to disperse while facing such an enormous hunting-army. At least one of them would've inevitably died if they had done so. Therefore, they had remained together for their safety. And, they would now be able to escape from here as long as they could find the right path.

They had drawn Meng Luo closer to the hunting-army. This was because Chu Yang and the others would have a better chance of making an escape if Meng Luo and his men could lead away even a portion of the army.

And, Meng Luo and his men would die if they didn't lead away the pursuing troops...

After all, those pursuing clans' hatred towards the Meng Clan had reached to its peak now. So, they wouldn't believe Meng Luo regardless of what he would say to them...

Therefore, Meng Luo and his men had to flee even if they didn't want to. And, they would be helping Chu Yang by doing so...

This kind of grievance was indeed unprecedented.

They had been deceived into doing something for someone. And, the other party had destroyed the bridges after crossing the river. Consequently, they had been abandoned once the job was done. Moreover, they would now be indirectly helping the ones who had abandoned them because things would be worse if they didn't do so...

The two Martial Emperors wanted to take Chu Yang and the others down with themselves. But, they didn't dare to do it because they had to think about their clan. After all, their clan knew nothing about what was happening in this mission...

Their clan would be exterminated if they didn't manage to escape successfully.

"Meng Clan is finished this time..." Both the Emperor Experts sighed. They both felt powerless, "Young Clan Lord, let's go. We must leave as soon as possible. We must report to our clan."

Meng Luo was sitting down in a daze. He murmured as if he was dreaming, "Go? Where should we go? What road is left for me to go on?" He was filled with gloomy intentions of dying at the moment. His eyes looked lifeless.

Meng Luo had always been proud and arrogant. He should've been one of the twelve influential figures of the Middle Three Heavens in the future. But now, he had been reduced to a walking corpse by the repeated blows.

He didn't have any fighting spirit left in him. He didn't have any will to live. In fact, the desire of seeking survival that he used to have had also been shattered.

He was alive. But, he was as good as dead.

Both the Martial Emperors felt anxious in their hearts. The enemy was close at hand. But, their Young Clan Lord had sunken into such a depression. Both of them looked at each other, and finally made a decision. Then, one of them smacked at Meng Luo's

nape with a thumping sound.

Meng Luo remained in a daze. He didn't resist or dodge the blow. He simply collapsed like a pile of wood.

One of Emperor Experts put Meng Luo's body on his back, and stood up. Then, the two Emperor Experts started to run. However, they suddenly heard an angry voice shouting, "I saw them. They are there!"

[The hunting-army has arrived!]

Both the Martial Emperors flew in the direction in which Chu Yang and the others had fled. But, these two had done so in grievance and anger. [I must drag you people down even if I have to die today!]

The hunting-troop behind them bellowed as they chased them from all over...

...

"Let's go this way," Chu Yang and the others had been moving swiftly throughout the journey. Finally, they arrived at the foot of the mountain. Chu Yang took the lead, and changed their direction. He went to the southwest. This direction was at a right angle to the direction in which they were originally headed.

"These devils won't be able to implicate us." Chu Yang mischievously laughed, "I'll let these three fools take the lead. The farther they go... the better it is."

.....

Chapter 609: Cheeks Streaming with Tears!

Ao Xie Yun's injuries had already been healed by the incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pills Chu Yang had given him. So, he was walking on his own feet. He no longer needed anyone to carry him. However, he had been sad and silent all along this road.

"Senior Martial Brother, we've played enough tricks with Meng Luo. Why don't you slaughter him now?" Tan Tan shook his eyebrows.

"Slaughter him... Wouldn't it be letting him off lightly?" Chu Yang rolled his eyes. "There are big benefits of keeping him and his people alive. First, it'll distract the hunting-troop away from us. Second, it'll exhaust the strength of the people of those few clans. Third, Meng Clan is anyway already done for... And, this will make Meng Luo see the destruction of his clan with his own eyes. Wouldn't it be the best punishment for him?"

"So to say... we wouldn't get any of these things if we kill them right away. It's such a pity." Luo Ke Di explained with a self-satisfied look because the crotch of his trouser was still bulging out.

"Hey... Does it hurt?" Ji Mo had a lingering fear looking at Luo Ke Di's crotch. In fact, he was unable to control his emotions. He couldn't remain calm, and said in his heart. [Second Master Luo is incredible. Having such an erection for one day... would be a huge pain in the ass for me. And, he has a happy look on his face... It must hurt down there because of this fu*king boner...]

Chu Yang made a signal amidst their conversations, and everyone bent down. They all lay in the underbrush on their stomachs, and looked in the front at the same time.

They saw that there were two silhouettes in a faraway place. The silhouettes seemed to be running away from someone. A large troop was rushing towards them while issuing rumbling and

rolling sounds.

It looked from a distance as if a colony of ants was chasing after two ants. Also, these two ants were carrying a small ant...

"It is fu*king satisfying." Luo Ke Di straightened his back, and said with a sigh, "It's too frantic... They are chasing these men with so much anxiousness. They must have great hostility against them..."

"Yes, keeping this boy Meng Luo alive wasn't in vain after all. So many great clans of the Middle Three Heavens are hunting him down right now. This is the payback from the Eldest Young Master of the Ao Clan to this motherfu*ker!" Ji Mo's eyes shone. He had an expression of admiration on his face.

"It can also be said that the Meng Clan organized a mission, and offended Ao Clan, Xie Clan, Mo Clan, Dong Clan, Luo Clan, Gu Clan, and Ji Clan. But now, their own allies Ou Clan, Black Devil Clan, Tian Clan, Tu Clan, Li Clan, and Zhao Clan are chasing them down..." Dong Wu Shang counted down the number of the clans. He then jumped in fright, "Fu*k! This Meng Luo has caused a lot of trouble for everyone."

"He must be very bold," Second Master Luo – Luo Ke Di said in admiration.

"The boldest is our Big Brother. You must know that Big Brother attracted all these people to deal with the men of the Meng Clan. In fact, Meng Luo didn't even do anything to them... he has been accused wrongly... But, it must be so hard for him to explain himself because there are just too many things to explain."

Ji Mo clicked his tongue twice, and concluded by saying, "Take a look at Meng Luo. We brothers must learn a lesson from his mistakes. Offend whomever you want, but never offend our Big Brother... You never know when you'll be secretly destroyed if you're like Meng Luo... Well, don't stare too much, Second Master Luo. I'm talking to you."

Luo Ke Di erupted in response. He clutched Ji Mo's neck, and choked him, "I'm like Meng Luo? You are like Meng Luo! Your whole family is like Meng Luo!"

Everyone started laughing.

Many experts were approaching those two people from all directions while these brothers were chatting in a carefree manner.

Chu Yang smiled. Then, he got up and said, "Let's go. It's all right now. These men are separated into four groups on four different roads. So, we don't need to worry even if they catch up with us. We'll go to the Xie Clan, and find Xie Dan Qiong."

Everyone rushed forward like a gust of wind. They flew away noiselessly, and disappeared into the dark forest in the blink of an eye.

Ao Xie Yun smiled. He said while running along, "Brother Chu, thank you for saving me today. Ao Xie Yun will give you a generous reward for this kindness and favor."

Chu Yang was also rushing forward. He insipidly replied without turning his head, "Oh? What generous reward do you want to give me?"

Ao Xie Yun was shocked by this. He had only said these words out of politeness. He hadn't thought of repaying him in such situation and time. Therefore, he was left baffled since he hadn't had get enough time to think about it...

"He-he... I didn't save you in hope that you'd repay me." Chu Yang gently said, "And, I didn't save you because you were in any ordinary situation, or any chaotic situation. In fact, I saved you because those people wanted to deal with us by killing you. They wanted to shift the blame of your murder onto us. Your death would've been a very big trouble for all of us. I wouldn't have saved you if it weren't so... even if you're the Eldest Young Master of one

of the nine great clans of the Upper Three Heavens."

"Therefore, you don't need to thank me!" Chu Yang gently concluded, "Wait until we reach Xie Clan. Then, you'll be completely safe. We'll deliver you to your clan when the time is right. And, we'll also feel relieved then."

Ao Xie Yun smiled and said, "It's okay if it doesn't matter to you. But, you've saved my life, and this is a big favor as far as I am concerned. But fine; I won't thank you even though you've done such a big favor. However, don't say later that Ao Xie Yun doesn't know how to show proper appreciation, he-he."

"We won't say, alright?" Ji Mo moved closed to them, and said.

Ao Xie Yun smiled and said, "Brother Chu... I truly feel that I owe you. But, my Ao Clan is no fool. The enemy wouldn't necessarily have succeeded in shifting the blame on anyone. So, they couldn't necessarily have framed you even if I had died."

Chu Yang mischievously smiled, "I know this better than you. They wouldn't have succeeded in shifting the blame. It is because there's a person called Mo Tian Ji among the people that they want to deal with."

Ao Xie Yun forced a smile, "Mo Tian Ji may or may not have such remarkable abilities... But, we people of Ao Clan are not fools."

"Mo Tian does have such remarkable abilities!" Chu Yang responded with confidence. Then, he squinted and looked at him, "Your Ao Clan isn't full of fools. But, there are still many fools in your clan!"

He sneered, "You are Ao Xie Yun; not Ao Clan. Your Clan will still be Ao Clan even if you die. But, you've only referred to the Ao Clan in everything that you've said until now. What's wrong? Don't you have confidence in yourself?"

Ao Xie Yun was startled by this.

He indeed lacked confidence in himself, and had been

subconsciously latching on to the Ao Clan. However, he hadn't expected that Chu Yang had such a keen observation.

"Their plan of shifting the blame wouldn't have succeeded since Mo Tian Ji was there. So, I've only saved you to prepare against contingencies. After all, the present Mo Tian Ji is still too inexperienced," Chu Yang randomly said. Ao Xie Yun didn't understand the meaning behind these words.

[After all, the present Mo Tian Ji is still too inexperienced?] Ao Xie Yun pondered upon this sentence in his heart for a long time.

Gu Du Xing flitted across from his side.

"Brother Gu, are you a... Sword Emperor now?" Ao Xie Yun asked.

"Yes, a first grade Sword Emperor," Gu Du Xing honestly told him.

"Oh~" Ao Xie Yun felt disappointed... as if he had failed to meet his own expectations.

"Brother Dong, are you a... Saber Emperor now?"

"Yeah. Luckily. A first grade Saber Emperor."

"Oh~~"

Ao Xie Yun's complexion turned dark.

"Ji Mo, what's your current cultivation level?"

Ji Mo's face turned black, "I'm just a ninth grade Martial King. Why are you asking?"

Ao Xie Yun was startled. [Even you're a ninth grade Martial King?]

"Coyote, you're currently... at what level?"

"I'm at the same level as Ji Mo's. I'm ashamed to death." Luo Ke Di's happy mood was attacked to death as soon as he mentioned this.

[He's ashamed to death...]

Ao Xie Yun felt giddy. He felt as if his head was spinning.

[How old are you right now? You're ashamed despite being a ninth grade Martial King? I'm some years older than you... and, I'm at the sixth grade Martial King Level. Shouldn't I be the one to feel ashamed?]

"Brother Rui, what about you?"

Rui Bu Tong replied in a bad mood, "You want to make fun of me, right? I'm at the eighth grade Martial King Level. I'm the lowest!"

Ao Xie Yun's cheeks started streaming with tears.

...

Chapter 610: Where is the Spark?

Chu Yang mischievously laughed, "You don't need to ask about my cultivation. I'm a ninth grade Martial King. Well, this is my Junior Martial Brother Tan Tan. He's also a ninth grade Martial King. Brother Ao, please share some of your knowledge with us whenever you have the time."

"My knowledge~~~~" Ao Xie Yun bit his lips because he had a strong urge to cry out loud.

[This is a group of ninth grade King level Experts, a Saber Emperor, and a Sword Emperor.]

[These people are said to be as famous as me. But, they used to be below me some time ago... Now, I'm just a sixth grade Martial King ...]

[It's too embarrassing! I feel extremely inferior.]

"Brother Ao, may I ask what your cultivation level is?" Ji Mo rolled his eyes, and asked.

"Well! ~~~~" Ao Xie Yun heaved a deep sigh. However, tears streamed down his face before he could speak...

Rui Bu Tong coldly snorted. He seemed to be taking joy in other's misfortune as he consoled, "Brother Ao doesn't need to feel down about this. Do you know how much hard work we've put to have our current accomplishments? Do you know how much we've had to struggle? We've sacrificed a lot... Well, we'd practice martial arts almost a dozen times a day. We'd practice until we fainted... you can't have a good harvest without a good amount of investment. The fact is that you're already doing well at present..."

This guy had said the exact same words that Chu Yang had said to him in order to motivate him. [Damn! Who would've thought that I'd feel happier now when I'm saying these words than I had felt... the time when I heard these words?]

Ao Xie Yun's face turned pale in embarrassment. He lowered his head, and hastened-on with the journey. He couldn't say anything anymore.

However, he heaved a deep sigh after a long while, and said, "I – Ao Xie Yun – am surnamed 'Ao', which means proud!"

Suddenly, a strong conviction arose in his heart. [Why can't I accomplish it if they can? There will come a day when I will reclaim this word in my name!]

[I will be proud in front of the world!]

The one who wants to set the pace always remains under pressure, but they lack motivation. And, this guy here wanted to set the pace. However, he was full of motivation, and wasn't under any pressure.

Ao Xie Yun suddenly found himself brimming with fighting spirit once he let go of his arrogance.

[First, I must make myself unique and unrivalled. Second, I must take revenge. I must personally avenge the deaths of my uncles. I'll also do my best to look after their families. Third, I must catch up with these brothers, and then surpass them. I will reclaim my title of being the number-one youngster in the Middle Three Heavens.]

[They all are human beings. They all have been raised by their parents. They are also made up of flesh and blood like me. I won't concede to them.]

...

They encountered the pursuers several times along this journey. They had several fights. But, everyone managed to escape. This was because they primarily focused on escaping. They didn't get involved in prolonged contact with the enemy. Ao Xie Yun and Rui Bu Tong received some injuries during the course of this journey as they rushed out...

...

Tracing back to one-month before this matter...

Mo Tian Ji had set-off great waves in the Middle Three Heavens. The entire Middle Three Heavens was in great chaos. Ou Clan, Meng Clan, Tian Clan, and the other clans were battle-ready. And, Xie Clan, Mo Clan, Dong Clan, and the other clans were also ready with their stern defenses.

The war was about to break out.

On that day...

Mo Tian had a discussion with Dong Wu Lei, Luo Ke Wu, Ji Zhu, and the others. After that, he didn't speak for a very long time. But, he looked conflicted in his mind.

"What are you thinking, Brother Mo? Why do you have such a worried look?" Dong Wu Lei admired Mo Tian Ji's plan very much. So, he couldn't help but ask when he saw him looking worried.

"You guys mentioned that Meng Luo, Tian Bu Hui, Tu Qian Hao, and the others aren't in their clans. So, it is a possibility that they've taken their armies to hunt down Ao Xie Yun. I'm thinking... how to deal with this...?" Mo Tian Ji heavily replied.

"When did we mention that they aren't in their clans?" Luo Ke Wu scratched his head in confusion.

"It's because everything has become too calm at the moment even though the storm is brewing. This is 'war' we're talking about. There are only thick clouds... and no rain. How is it a war if both sides only guard against each other?" Mo Tian Ji said in a soft voice, "Didn't you guys say that it had been too calm in the neighborhood when you were coming here. Therefore, I speculated this.

"The environment wouldn't have been so tranquil if those hot-blooded youngsters were in their clans. They would have caused at least small conflicts... if not some big movements. Such tranquility explains that the sly old foxes are handling things since the juniors

aren't present there. And, where else could they have gone if they aren't here at such a critical moment? There can't be any other matter besides chasing down Ao Xie Yun.

"The old fogies are experienced and knowledgeable. They like to wait calmly, watch things from the sidelines, and save their strength. Important matters often get dragged by these old foxes. They then turn into several hundred years of grudges and enmity between big clans because these old fogies never take decisive steps in complex situations. This is every clan's way of handling affairs – dragging it. They don't have the acute spirit of a youngster. Therefore, I can conclude that the youngsters aren't present in their clans!"

Mo Tian Ji wrinkled his brows, and said, "I'm thinking about... Ao Xie Yun!"

"Ao Xie Yun?" Dong Wu Lei knitted his brows, "Brother Mo is thinking... that we should save Ao Xie Yun, right? I think we will have many benefits and no harm if we save Ao Xie Yun. So, we should save him."

Mo Tian Ji fiercely shook his head. Then, he raised his head, and looked up to the sky. He pondered for a long while, and said, "This is a wrong argument."

Mo Tian Ji let out a deep breath. Then, he resolutely said, "It took our plan so long to give rise to chaos in the Middle Three Heavens. However, the response of the great clans is still not intense. And, the friction will become dull with time in case Ao Xie Yun doesn't die. All the clans would seal themselves. And, Ao Clan doesn't have the ability to crush everyone's defenses at once.

"Moreover, Ao Clan will probably treat it as an incident in which Ao Xie Yun got to experience the brutality of Jianghu up close if he survives. So, they won't start off a war against those clans.

"And then, all of our arrangements will certainly go in vain, and all of our efforts will be for naught. After all, those old fogies are

far too tolerant," Mo Tian Ji sighed, "They only focus on the survival and expansion of their clan... sigh..."

Luo Ke Wu's eyes flickered as he said, "You mean to say that Ao Xie Yun must die? We can't save him?"

"Yes, Ao Xie Yun must die. Otherwise, Ao Clan won't get involved in this turmoil." Mo Tian Ji deeply nodded. "We can't help him in any way. Ao Xie Yun might come out alive in case we provide any support."

He sighed and said, "Ao Xie Yun is an outstanding man. I also hate to let him die. But... we have to abandon him, and we must do it without the slightest of hesitation."

"But... this..." Luo Ke Wu gawked, "And, what if they successfully shift the blame on Xie Dan Qiong... We'd be the unlucky ones if that happens."

Mo Tian Ji pulled the corners of his mouth and grinned. Then, he insipidly said, "I had informed Xie Dan Qiong about this a few days ago. He will rush to the Ao Clan to look for a meeting with Ao Xie Yun after he has handled his clan's affairs."

"Look for a meeting with Ao Xie Yun?" Dong Wu Lei and Luo Ke Wu opened their eyes wide.

"Yes! Look for a meeting with Ao Xie Yun." Mo Tian Ji smiled, "Then, Xie Dan Qiong will think of a way to stay at the Ao Clan. And, he'll wait for Ao Xie Yun to return. Xie Dan Qiong will leave the Ao Clan only under two situations. First, Ao Xie Yun has come back home safe and sound. Second, the news of Ao Xie Yun's death has come... But, this must be done in secrecy..."

"Excellent!" Dong Wu Lei clapped his hands, "Ou Du Xiao will certainly shift the blame on Xie Dan Qiong if he wants to shift the blame on someone. But now, Xie Dan Qiong would've been present in the Ao Clan this entire time... So, he couldn't be blamed even if Ao Xie Yun were to die 10,000 times over!"

Mo Tian Ji exposed a faint smile and nodded, "It will be so. Therefore, we'll patiently wait for the news now... the news that I want to hear the most... the news of Ao Xie Yun's death!"

Dong Wu Lei, Luo Ke Wu, and Ji Zhu slapped the table and showered praises.

"However, this whole premise... is lacking something somewhere..." Mo Tian Ji wrinkled his brows, and paced back and forth. He had wrinkled his brows even more tightly... as if he was thinking very hard.

"Lacks something? Brother Mo, this plan is foolproof. What could it possibly lack?" Dong Wu Lei was already full of admiration.

"It lacks thrust... it needs a very strong thrust," Mo Tian Ji frowned, "We've already incited friction all over. It is like a grassland spread to a thousand miles in which all the grasses have already dried. We only need a little spark at this moment in order to set the entire grassland on fire. But, where is this... little spark?"

"But, we can't take the initiative to set into action. Our initiation will turn into our passiveness if we do so. They will possibly say that we were the ones with the evil plans unless they are publically exposed beforehand. Therefore, we can only gather the strength, pull the bow-string, and wait for the right time to strike."

He wrinkled his brows, and persistently pondered. [Where is this spark? Where to find it? How can we give rise to a large fire? Moreover, how can we make this large fire spread uncontrollably, and make it destroy everything?]

"We've already done enough to cause turbulence in Jianghu. So, it will raise suspicion against us if we move a foot again... But, who will come to ignite these dry grasses for me? Who has the potential to set the grassland ablaze?"

He was pacing back and forth with a frown upon his face. And, the wrinkles of his brows were getting tighter and tighter. The

look of contemplation was becoming increasingly intense in his eyes.

Dong Wu Lei and Luo Ke Wu heaved a deep sigh, and looked at each other. They had finally realized that their own thoughts weren't able to follow the rhythm of Mo Tian Ji's.

[The way Mo Tian Ji thinks is on a whole other level... It seems as if he can rise high above and have a bird's eye view at all situations.]

Mo Tian Ji stopped his footsteps after a long while. He then tightly wrinkled his brows, and muttered, "Everything that we've built with so much hard work will go in vain... If there's no fire..."

"Do you think that Ao Xie Yun's death wouldn't be enough to cause this large fire that we need?" Dong Wu Lei was puzzled as he asked.

"The Ao Clan will obviously fight to take revenge. But, it is completely different from the battle to establish power. Things wouldn't be chaotic enough... if it is only a war for revenge. And, we won't get enough big advantages out of it..." Mo Tian Ji grunted.

"But, we still don't know... when King of Hell Chu and the others would return?" Dong Wu Lei muttered, "Brother Mo, what is your plan... in case it all begins before they come back? Our previous preparations will certainly be wasted."

"They won't be wasted!" Mo Tian Ji replied with full confidence, "We will stand in an invincible position... even if they can't arrive here in time."

Then, Mo Tian Ji's eyes suddenly lit up. [King of Hell Chu? Return?]

Suddenly, a lot of thoughts started to emerge in his heart. [Can King of Hell Chu do this... can he? Can he do this... can he do this or not...]

Mo Tian Ji pondered hard, and then he finally said, "Well... the very crux of this whole mess has been caused by King of Hell Chu. So, I'll just need to exploit it; that's all..."

"The rules and conventions of the world state that the instigator must get involved in the drama of his creation. Therefore, King of Hell Chu can't escape this drama. It's just karma... But, can King of Hell Chu set this large fire?" Mo Tian Ji thoughtfully said.

Chapter 611: A Storm Rises!

Mo Tian Ji had guessed it right. This spark had indeed started from King of Hell Chu. But, it happened many days later than he had expected. Therefore, this made the Master of Calculation and Manipulation so worried that his hair almost turned white...

Ao Clan

The sudden arrival of Xie Dan Qiong surprised Ao Clan's people.

Xie Clan was weaker than the Ao Clan, but it still couldn't be neglected. And, Xie Dan Qiong was the Eldest Young Master and the future successor of the Xie Clan after all said and done.

Therefore, Ao Clan received Xie Dan Qiong very politely.

The Clan Lord of the Ao Clan — Ao Tian Xing personally welcomed him. After all, his son would sooner or later take over the Ao Clan. And, having such a big ally for his son would only bring many benefits and no harm whatsoever.

"Young Master Xie, ha-ha... how is your father?" Ao Tian Xing greeted him in a very polite manner.

"My father is safe and sound. Thank you for your concern, Uncle Ao." Xie Dan Qiong very respectfully and sincerely made his salutation. Then, he greeted him respectfully and said, "Brother Xie Yun and I have always been close friends. In fact, we had joined hands and worked together on Mt. Dingjun. However, it has been a long time since I've seen him. I truly miss him. So, I have come to visit him at his home. I ask uncle to be generous enough to let me be a guest in your place."

"Um, what's the harm in this?" Ao Tian Xing stroked his beard, and said with a kind smile, "This old man appreciates righteous and affectionate young people. My son is fortunate to have a friend like you."

He hesitated for a while, and then said, "It's just that... my son Ao

Ao hasn't returned from the Northern Wilderness yet..."

"My son Ao Ao..." Xie Dan Qiong's eyes popped out. This name had struck him like a thunder.

"Nephew Xie, you might as well stay for some days since you've come here. Ao Clan's landscape is considered to be fabulous." Ao Tian Xing smiled and said, "Moreover... it has been several months since Ao Ao left. So, he must be on the return trip at this time. He will possibly be back in a few days. Then, you guys can have fun together."

"I see. This nephew will be in your care for a few days if that's the case. I would listen to your teachings during this time, Uncle." Xie Dan Qiong went with the flow, and complied with him.

Then, Xie Dan Qiong stayed in the Ao Clan while showing no trace of politeness. He would have a lot of lavish meals and exotic delicacies every day. He couldn't be more comfortable.

Several days went by in a flash. But, Ao Xie Yun still hadn't returned.

Consequently, Ao Clan started to feel that something was fishy.

[Why hasn't he come back yet?]

Xie Dan Qiong stayed for several days. Then, he asked to take his leave. He told them that he wasn't feeling well. Ao Tian Xing showed great kindness. He urged Xie Dan Qiong to stay, and asked him to see their family doctor. Xie Dan Qiong complied, and decided to stay for three more days. However, Xie Dan Qiong suddenly fainted the next morning while the doctor was checking-up on him. In fact, the youth seemed to be suffocating...

The doctor jumped in fright as soon as he saw this. He then hastily reported back to the Clan Lord of Ao Clan, Ao Tian Xing. Subsequently, Ao Tian Xing came to see — He saw that Xie Dan Qiong's entire body had turned purple. His eyes had almost bulged out; his breathing was erratic. His Dantian had seemingly

ruptured. And, all of his meridians were on the verge of collapsing...

Ao Tian Xing became scared as a result.

[It would be a scandal if this Young Clan Lord of the Xie Clan were to die in our clan....]

All the highly skilled medical experts of the Ao Clan gathered together to make Xie Dan Qiong healthy again. But, they all wrinkled their brows, shook their heads, and sighed. They couldn't do anything about it...

They could only use vital energy to keep Xie Dan Qiong alive for the time being. They didn't have any other method apart from this.

Ao Tian Xing felt an intense regret. [I should've let him go when he asked me for his leave two days ago... at least I wouldn't have gotten blamed for his death in that case...]

"Uncle Xie doesn't need to worry about me. I have this... foul disease... since childhood... It does not... have any... permanent method to... cough, cough, cough, cough... cure it..." Xie Dan Qiong weakly 'consoled', "I only need... one... cough, cough, cough, expert... cough, cough, to donate his vitality... cough, cough, cough, every day... for some time... cough, cough, cough, I'll be fine..."

"For how long?" Ao Tian Xing hurriedly asked.

Then, Xie Dan Qiong's head tilted, and he immediately fainted.

Ao Tian Xing's face turned dark. [For some time? Dammit! You little bastard. One day is also some time. One year is also some time. A lifetime... is also some time.]

But, Xie Dan Qiong had already lost consciousness. So, what could he do now?

Ao Tian Xing went out in a depressed state of mind.

The time passed day by day. And, Xie Dan Qiong remained unconscious like before. Moreover, not the least bit of information about Ao Xie Yun had been received... The atmosphere of the Ao Clan became increasingly serious as a result...

A month passed by. The people of other clans as well as some people not associated with any major clans returned home one after another. News was coming continuously from all directions. Finally, Ao Clan couldn't stay calm any longer.

They dispatched men to rescue Ao Xie Yun. The men went out like continuous waves. They made discreet inquiries so that they could start the rescue operation. But, it was as if a clay ox had entered the sea. They couldn't get the least bit of information.

Ao Tian Xing became frustrated.

Ao Clan continued to dispatch troops on a large scale towards the direction of the Northern Wilderness in order to conduct the search.

Nobody knew how important Ao Xie Yun was to the Ao Clan in reality...

....

These days, even an ordinary person could feel the suffocating atmosphere of the Middle Three Heavens. It felt to be a sizzling long and hot summer. There wasn't a trace of wind in the sky, and black clouds were hovering on people's heads. The environment was heating up, and everyone was sweating profusely. However, a rainstorm had been brewing for a long time. And, it was about to come down...

Everyone's heart was beating anxiously. They were in deep worry even though the matter hadn't touched the ground yet.

Moreover, this suffocation was getting more and more intense, and was slowly shifting from the sky into the hearts of people.

They felt as if they were being choked to death... as if they were

stifling to death.

Everyone knew that a rainstorm of destruction would arise once this situation erupted. However, these stifling winds would keep on brewing, and reach to a level where it would become unbearable. And, everyone would rather choose the destruction at that time. They would rather choose the rainstorm on their own accord in order to get rid of this suffocating atmosphere.

Another month passed... Everyone was losing their peace of mind. They couldn't decide whether to sit or stand; the entire Middle Three Heavens had sunken into an atmosphere of extreme restraint. Suddenly, something was detonated...

A piece of news spread like a thunder on a sunny day in the Middle Three Heavens.

There occurred an internal strife among the Ou Clan, Tu Clan, Black Devil Clan, Meng Clan, and Tian Clan... It needs to be mentioned that were originally comrades-in-arms.

Ou Clan, Black Devil Clan, and Tian Clan slaughtered all the experts of Meng Clan that had gone together with them on a mission. They killed everyone including the Eldest Young Master of the Meng Clan — Meng Luo, the two Emperor Level Experts, as well as all the King Level Experts and Revered Martial Artists.

It seemed as if these great clans had the red eyes of killers after they returned. Everyone in the alliance talked cheerfully and wittily about how they had slaughtered all the people of Meng Clan.

Then, their armies went down south, and killed the entire Meng Clan. The women and children were no exception to this massacre. In fact, they didn't even spare the fowls and dogs.

The ancestor of the Meng Clan — Meng Tian Yue was a ninth grade Martial Emperor. He was compelled to come out from his closed-door practice. However, the Emperor Level Experts of these

great clans ganged up on him, and a crazy war broke out.

Meng Tian Yue was in grief and indignation. He made counterattacks. But, these great clans dispatched their several ancestors at this extremely crucial moment. All of them were high level Martial Emperors. All the old masters went all-out, and finally managed to subdue Meng Tian Yue. They then killed him on the spot.

The entire Meng Clan was burnt to the ground.

The combatants' eyes had turned red while they participated in this battle. All the men of Ou Clan, Tu Clan, Black Devil Clan, and Tian Clan... everyone's eyes were red. All of them were attacking with an attitude which made it seem as if this was a matter of life and death.

This situation made it seem as if the Meng Clan had dug the ancestral tombs of these clans or something... These few great clans harbored so much hostility towards the Meng Clan that it seemed as if the Meng Clan had taken rounds on all the female relatives of these clans. And, they couldn't live under the same sky as Meng Clan for this reason...

Their methods were ruthless; their execution was fierce, cruel, brutal... In fact, such cruelty had never been seen in the Middle Three Heavens before.

This brutal massacre took place in broad daylight. It all happened fair and square... when the heaven and the earth were in peace and harmony... when the sun was shining... and it was absolutely unrestrained. It wasn't secretive in any manner.

And, a great clan was erased from existence as a result.

The men and women of the Meng Clan... old and young... even the in-laws... and, every branch clan of Meng Clan... got eradicated by those several great clans.

The death toll in this war was more than a hundred thousand.

This news was like a thunderclap in the clear sky. It shocked all the great clans of Middle Three Heavens.

No one had anticipated that this repression would be broken due to an internal strife. The alliance split up from the inside because the Meng Clan had outrageously chosen the other clans' side...

Mo Tian Ji had taken all the possibilities into account beforehand to make a foolproof plan. But, his eyes almost popped out of his eye-sockets when he heard this news. The cup in his hand fell on the ground with a smashing sound, and shattered into pieces. After that, he pinched his own thigh and arm several times until they turned purple. Finally, he was convinced that he hadn't been dreaming.

Mo Tian Ji had given out such a strong reaction to this situation. Therefore, one can well-imagine the reaction of other people...

Those few great clans didn't utter a word about why they attacked the Meng Clan. So, the common people didn't know the reason for this massacre. However, everyone was whispering their speculations to each other.

[Meng Clan got exterminated in such a way... What did it do to make these other clans so angry that they joined hands together in fury and frantically burned it to hell?]

[Did Meng Clan do something... so audacious? Fu*k! It was already standing against seven or eight great clans. And then, it dared to offend its own allies at such a moment of crisis? Meng Clan shouldn't be that stupid...]

[Why did the Meng Clan provoke their allies?]

There were many different opinions in the Middle Three Heavens.

One person said, "I can say it for sure. Meng Luo must've raped the young girls of all these great clans. This is the reason for such a massive outrage."

Another man retorted, "Nonsense! This is obviously not the case. You don't understand these aristocratic clans. No big clan would sever their relations with another clan for this. The reason for this massacre has nothing to do with that Meng Luo raping their young girls."

He had said resolutely and decisively. Then, he became a bit puzzled and said, "Maybe, Meng Luo's father got into the beds of the Clan Ladies of these clans..."

Everyone thought that this could be a possibility. Then, another man interrupted, "What you said seems reasonable... as they say 'if the upper beam is not straight, the lower beam will be crooked'. But, the lower beam is already crooked... that means that the upper beam wasn't straight either. Meng Luo liked to rape young girls. So, maybe his father liked to rape too... of course... Yes, that makes sense..."

Many people nodded together. "Yes... that makes sense. But, according to this deduction... all those influential clans in the alliance must've given that old pervert an opportunity... After all, he would've never indulged in pleasure while forgetting home and duty... However, they say that the Clan Ladies of all of these great clans are extremely charming... despite getting older each day... Haven't you seen them? The older they get, the chewier they become..."

Then, everyone sighed at the same time. [Meng Luo's father died a happy man. It can be considered that he died in the forbidden pink garden. He will be considered a romantic even after he has become a ghost. But, it was unwise of him to involve the whole clan in this...]

But, someone retorted again, "Your comprehension is nonsense... when does a man care about his family when sex is on his mind..." Then, everyone pondered, and imagined putting themselves in the other's shoe. And, all of them nodded one after another after a brief introspection...

These words had come from some unknown person. But, it seemed that this particular-someone had deliberately promoted them. The more these words spread, the more intense their impact became. These words were slowly bubbling and gurgling...

Consequently, the Clan Lords of those few clans became personalities of great importance in the Middle Three Heavens. But, they also became embodiments of jealousy at the same time...

...

Chapter 612: Bu Tian Gives Birth to a Child

A storm had suddenly risen in the Middle Three Heavens. But, an earth-shaking event had also occurred in the Lower Three Heavens at the same time.

The Iron Cloud Empire had finally succeeded in uniting the whole world and ruling over the entire Lower Three Heavens.

The Wolf Tribe of the Northern Grassland had also surrendered to the Iron Cloud Empire.

The Lower Three Heavens was now the dominion of the Iron Cloud Empire.

Tie Bu Tian was finally ruling the world for real. All of the territories belonged to him. There was no land on the earth that didn't belong to him.

Tie Bu Tian sent Tie Long Cheng as his representative while the entire nation was celebrating. The entire world felt joyous at this time.

However, he didn't come out of the imperial palace himself. It was said that Empress Wu Qian Qian was about to deliver the baby. And, the Emperor couldn't leave her alone during this time.

The entire nation spiraled into jubilation once this news had spread. And, no one said anything about the fact that the Emperor hadn't come out of the imperial palace. This was because everyone believed that the Emperor was someone who valued friendships and relationships very much. They all believed that he was a very good man, and that such a man could rarely be found in the world. The world was very fortunate that Iron Cloud had such a Monarch. The common people were very fortunate.

Commander Tie Long Cheng and the other ministers were very happy. However, some people noticed that their eyes were involuntarily looking in the direction of the palace from time to

time. They had faint expressions of worry and uneasiness in their eyes. It seemed as if they couldn't wait to break away from here, and return to the imperial palace...

...

Lan Mei Xian was inside the imperial palace, and was guarding the delivery room. She was deeply worried. Therefore, she was constantly pacing back and forth. She had distress and anxiety on her face.

Sounds of moaning were constantly coming out of the delivery room. It seemed that someone was suppressing her painful screams...

A rich and cultured married couple was sitting in a corner. They were pleasant to look at. The man appeared polite, gentle, and cultured. And, the woman appeared graceful and luxurious. They both seemed like a Daoist immortal couple.

Lan Mei Xian was continuously sighing while pacing back and forth. Finally, she said, "Ruo Lan, is the midwife that you brought from the Upper Three Heavens not managing things properly? Fei Ling, didn't I tell you that there's no good midwife in your Chu Clan? Didn't I tell you to go and find Grandma Cui from Lan Clan? But, you didn't listen to me. And, now five or six midwives have come from your Chu Clan. It's been a long while. Why haven't they still come out of the room? Are these midwives eating in there?"

This couple was Yang Ruo Lan and Chu Fei Ling.

The fact was that Tie Bu Tian hadn't been feeling relieved around the midwives of the imperial palace. She had been worried that her secret might come out. So, Lan Mei Xian had sent an order to Yang Ruo Lan. Then, Yang Ruo Lan and Chu Fei Ling had personally led down midwives from the Upper Three Heavens.

Yang Ruo Lan replied with a smile, "Master, you don't need to worry. These ladies that I've brought are rich in experience. And,

their primary martial power is excellent. Besides, I've already checked that the position of the fetus is in the right place inside the womb. So, there won't be any accident."

She found it somewhat funny in her heart. [Midwives of the Lan Clan... are obviously good. But, Master didn't go herself. How could my husband and I ask some other person to come with us?]

[After all, it is the Lan Clan.]

"But, why is it taking so long?" Lan Mei Xian was extremely anxious.

"Master doesn't know that..." Yang Ruo Lan felt somewhat embarrassed at mentioning it, "... it is not easy for a woman to give birth to a child. It had taken me one full day and one full night when I was... about to give birth. I had to bear that unbearable pain for that long..."

She couldn't help but feel sad in her heart after she spoke this. The sadness that she harbored because of her missing child had come out again. And, the rims of her eyes turned red. Chu Fei Ling hastily comforted her.

Chu Fei Ling was somewhat restless. He had been worried that his lovely wife would meet with some accident if she were to go alone. Otherwise, he wouldn't have come here. After all, this was such a weird scenario. The Junior Martial Sister of his wife was giving birth. And, he — a man who was the husband of the Senior Martial Sister — was sitting outside in wait.

"That damned King of Hell Chu," Lan Mei Xian said while panting, "You caused this mess. Then, you just walked away from it. That bastard left Tian Tian to suffer so much pain. It is such an important moment. Tian Tian is giving birth. And, even his shadow is nowhere to be seen at such a time."

She then heavily stamped her foot, "He has angered me."

Yang Ruo Lan forced a smile. She said in her heart, [How can that

man be here when he doesn't even know anything?]

Suddenly a loud moaning sound was heard from the inside. Then, the voice of a midwife was heard, "Endure it... don't exert yourself physically. You must save your strength. Otherwise, you'll have no strength left when the child starts coming out. And, that wouldn't be good for the child..."

'That wouldn't be good for the child'— these words seemed to have filled infinite power in Tie Bu Tian. Her voice immediately lowered down, and she took a deep breath. She then continued to inhale deeply, and saved her strength bit by bit...

"My poor apprentice," Lan Mei Xian suddenly sat down in a chair, and covered her face with her hands. Tears had started to stream down her face. "Even your ancestors don't know what you owe to that man... And yet, you're sacrificing your life for him."

She sat still for a while. Then, she stood up. Then, she again sat down, and again stood up. After that, she walked to the portrait of the Goddess of Birth, and sincerely knelt down, "Mother Goddess... I, Lan Mei Xian have never believed in any supernatural being. But now, I believe in you... So, this follower will worship you for a lifetime if you help Tian Tian in giving birth to this child... May I die a painful death with the sky crashing upon me if I break this oath."

Yang Ruo Lan's eyes became somewhat moist.

[My master Lan Mei Xian has always been so strong and stubborn. She never got married. Her nature has always been proud and aloof. She has never prayed to the almighty, and has always defied the supernatural. But, she is sincerely praying to a goddess for her disciple's sake at this moment. It is obvious that her heart is in chaos...]

On another side, Wu Qian Qian had already knelt down in front of the portrait of the Goddess of Birth. She had been kneeling down here for a long time now. She was silently praying in her

heart. [May the child be born healthy. May the mother and child be healthy...]

Suddenly, another moaning sound came from inside the room. The sound made it seem that Tie Bu Tian couldn't bear the pain anymore.

Lan Mei Xian kowtowed. She was feeling pangs of distress at this time. She suddenly turned her head and said, "Ruo Lan... Can vitality be used for helping her in giving birth to the baby? How... would Tian Tian... bear so much pain?"

Yan Ruo Lan felt embarrassed as she replied, "Master, you don't know. Even a Supreme Expert has to go through this phase... while giving birth to a child. This has nothing to do with one's vitality. Any woman is just an ordinary woman during childbirth. It doesn't matter what cultivation she has... or how extraordinary she is."

"Ah!" Lan Mei Xian turned her head back in disappointment. She then kowtowed, and continued to pray devoutly.

"Keep on enduring it... Keep on enduring it... You're almost there. Do it properly one more time..." the midwives comforted Tie Bu Tian in soft whispers. It seemed as if there was a calming strength in their voices...

Tie Bu Tian painfully moaned. Her complexion had turned deathly pale, and her eyes had turned very red. Her hands were clenched very tightly on the sides of the bed. Her fingernails had sunken into her palms, and blood was seeping out from them.

"Don't worry. It's all right. It's just that you're giving birth for the first time... Good, your child looks very good and healthy. The important thing right now is to look after you. You must hold on..." the midwife constantly comforted her.

Tie Bu Tian weakly nodded in response. She then revealed a determined look in her eyes. Then, she lowered her head, and said, "My child must be born safe and sound..."

Finally...

It was that time when the people outside had almost lost their calm...

"Good... push... push harder, alright. The child has come out... it has come out. The child has come out..."

"Boohoo~~~" a loud sound of the crying of a baby was heard. Finally, a ray of sunlight had come piercing through the black clouds in the sky.

It was the most natural sound of nature. Tie Bu Tian finally felt relaxed after she heard it. She exposed a smile of relief from the corners of her mouth. Then, she fainted owing to the exhaustion...

[My child. His and my child... is born!]

Everyone's body had shaken the moment they had heard the cry of the child. And, all of them had exposed the expression of ecstasy on their faces.

"How is the child? How is the Emperor?" Lan Mei Xian hastily asked.

"It's very good. It's very healthy. It's a big and healthy boy. The mother and the child are safe and sound."

'The mother and the child are safe and sound'. Lan Mei Xian, Chu Fei Ling, Yang Ruo Lan, and the other experts felt as if their bodies were on the verge of collapsing as these words transmitted out of the room. It seemed as if their entire strength had silently exhausted in that instant.

A blessing fell from their hearts.

[God bless them!]

Lan Mei Xian knelt down in front of the portrait of the Goddess of Birth in joy. She then pounded the ground with her head, "Thank you, Goddess. Thank you, Mother... This Lan Mei Xian will worship you day and night from now on. I'll constantly burn

incense in front of your temple. Thank you for keeping my Tian Tian and her child safe..."

Chu Fei Ling and Yan Ruo Lan looked at each other. They saw redness in the rims of each other's eyes.

A long while passed. Lan Mei Xian had finally regained her calm and composure. She stood up, and sipped tea. Then, she wiped her tears, and said while feeling somewhat embarrassed, "Both you girls irritate me. You also make me worried to death... I would rather shed my blood than shed a tear. I have cried only twice in my whole life... and it is because both of you have failed to live up to my expectations."

She again wiped her tears. She was somewhat angry out of shame as she said, "The first time was when you gave birth to a child. I stayed on the rooftop of your Chu Clan all night. I shed tears the whole night for you. The other time was when this aggravating girl... conceived a man's child, and didn't even let him know... she bore it all by herself... alas..."

"Master..." Tears were streaming down Yang Ruo Lan's face.

Wu Qian Qian had been struck dumb when she had heard the baby crying. She had felt as if she had awakened from a dream. She crazily knocked her head several times in front of the portrait of the Goddess. Then, she sprang up, and rushed towards the delivery room.

"Don't go in!" Yang Ruo Lan quickly grabbed her hand, and stopped her, "You can't go in yet."

"Why?"

"This... you can't go in because she is saying so." Lan Mei Xian smiled and reprimanded, "Let them hold the child for a while. What are you worried about? Do you think that you can rush casually to a place where a child is born? You don't have any clue about such matters, do you?"

"Eh..." Wu Qian Qian's face turned red. She felt somewhat embarrassed.

Then, a splashing sound came from the inside. It seemed that the baby was being bathed.

A gentle sound of footsteps was heard after some time. And, an old lady came out carrying a child in a swaddling cloth. She then said with a smile while walking, "It is strange. This old lady has delivered so many babies. And, almost all of those babies were born with their eyes closed. But, it was different for this little guy. His eyes were wide open. His round eyes were flexibly rotating. However, I don't know if he can see anything or not..."

Another old lady said from behind, "Such big babies can't see anything even though their eyes are open. It takes at least one day for all seven orifices of the head to open up. After that, they become able to see."

"Therefore, it is strange..."

"Really?" Everyone gathered around them in a competitive manner. They moved close very carefully, and looked. They had formed a big circle of heads around the baby in the swaddling cloth.

Yang Ruo Lan had also moved close in excitement. However, she was startled as soon as she glanced at the baby. She then closed her eyes, and again opened them to look. Then, she rubbed her eyes, and stared at the baby with her eyes wide open.

....

Chapter 613: This is a Nine Tribulations Pill!

"He is very beautiful..." Lan Mei Xian said. Wu Qian Qian curled her lips, [How come this baby has tiny wrinkles all over his body? He looks like a little old man. However, Master Lan is saying that he is beautiful for some fortunate reason...]

The fact was that Wu Qian Qian didn't know that these wrinkles were an aspect of the smoothness of newborn babies.

Yang Ruo Lan suddenly groaned at this moment. She was on the verge of collapse.

Lan Mei Xian was quick to notice this. She immediately reacted, and held her to support her. Then, she said, "Ruo Lan, what's wrong?"

Yang Ruo Lan opened her eyes. She was somewhat confused. Then, she looked at the baby, and said in a daze, "I... I'm alright..."

Chu Fei Ling had also noticed that something was wrong. He hastily rushed over to support his wife. He then asked, "What's wrong with you? Do you feel sick?"

Yang Ruo Lan absentmindedly looked at the baby wrapped in the swaddling cloth for a long while. Then, she weakly repeated, "I'm alright..."

The fact was that a feeling of being in a conflicted situation had risen in Yang Ruo Lan's heart.

She would feel an emotion of affection towards Tie Bu Tian when she looked at her. After all, Tie Bu Tian was her Junior Martial Sister.

However, a feeling of blood connection had arisen in her heart when she had looked at this infant. In fact, Yan Ruo Lan felt that she was closest to this baby.

This feeling was very mysterious.

Moreover, Yang Ruo Lan vaguely felt, [How is it possible that this baby resembles... my son at his time of birth?]

She shook her head, and forced a smile, [All babies look the same at the time of their birth. He has just come out of his mother's womb. He has wrinkles all over his body. So, how can I say who he looks like at this moment? It is basically impossible.]

[It will take at least a few days for the baby's skin to stretch out completely. Only then would the approximate outline of the facial features become apparent.]

[It seems that my longing for my son is driving me crazy...]

They had looked at the baby only for a while when a midwife hurriedly held the baby, and went back in; she was the same midwife that had come out to give the good news. It was because Tie Bu Tian had woken up, and was anxious to see the baby.

Tie Bu Tian got a burst of strength from god knows where, and sat up when she saw the baby in the midwife's arm.

This scared the midwives. They all yelled at her in alarm, "Don't get up... quickly lie down... Oh my goodness... how can you sit up now..."

Tie Bu Tian finally held the baby in her bosom. She looked at the cute little face in her arms, and a feeling of immense satisfaction arose in her heart. She felt as if she had the whole world. She felt so happy that she couldn't contain it in her heart. This uncontainable happiness had filled the depths of her heart.

Such happiness and satisfaction was far more fulfilling than the sense of achievement that she had gotten on successfully unifying the world.

The whole world couldn't compare to the importance of this little baby in her arms at this moment.

"Chu Yang, do you know? Our child has been born; and it's a boy." Tie Bu Tian looked at the cute face of the baby. She couldn't

help but move her lips close to him. She felt tenderness in her heart as she gently kissed him, "I'll take care of him well. I'll educate him well. I'll raise him, and make him more outstanding than you!"

However, she paused at this moment. Then, she suddenly changed her tone and said, "No. I don't want him to be more outstanding than you... because... I want him to be safe and sound. I don't want any harm or danger to come his way... even if he doesn't become that outstanding..."

....

The midwife had already carried the baby into the room. However, Yang Ruo Lan continued to absentmindedly look towards the direction of the inner room. She was at a loss... as if there was a vacuum in her heart.

"What's wrong?" Chu Fei Ling could sense that there was something unusual about his wife at the moment. So, he asked her while showing deep concern.

Everyone had gathered to see the baby just a while ago. But, Chu Fei Ling didn't have the nerves to go close to the baby. He had only looked at him from a distance. So, he hadn't seen him clearly.

"I'm alright." Yang Ruo Lan's entire body felt weak. So, she snuggled up in the arms of her husband. She had gotten a strange feeling a short while ago. She opened her mouth, but didn't say anything.

[I will stay here for some time... maybe till the time this child is one month old. His facial features would become apparent at that time. Then, I will take a good look at him again...]

"Junior Martial Sister's baby looks very cute..." Yang Ruo Lan admired in a soft voice.

Chu Fei Ling felt a pain in his heart. He knew that his wife was thinking of their own son. So, he couldn't help but sigh.

Lan Mei Xian continuously questioned, "Is everything alright? Can I go in now? Am I allowed to go in first...?"

A long while passed. The midwife finally came out after she had put everything in order. Then, she informed, "You can go in now. However, keep in mind that you must walk very gently. Don't produce even the sound of wind..."

Lan Mei Xian eagerly went in while slowly floating like a ghost.

As for not producing any sound... even the sound produced by the stirring of dust wasn't issued when she moved.

Chu Fei Ling rubbed his forehead. He had been rendered speechless, [Just for this...? She circulated the martial power of her whole body just to not produce the sound of wind... She launched her 'Goose Feather Core Technique' for this...?]

Yang Ruo Lan weakly took back two steps. Then, she fixed her eyes toward the inner room once again. She didn't blink even once. She clearly wasn't in her right mind. And, it was hard to tell what she was thinking at the moment. She unconsciously took two more steps back, and then started to sit down.

She would've sat down on the floor if not for the quick and agile reaction of Chu Fei Ling...

Inside the inner room... Lan Mei Xian anxiously rubbed her hands together, "Tian Tian, does it still hurt?"

"No, it doesn't hurt." Tie Bu Tian gently shook her head. The baby in her arms stretched his hands, and moved his legs. He rolled his little shiny black eyes as if he had wisdom.

Tie Bu Tian couldn't help but warmly smile. She said, "Master, look at him. He is so mischievous."

Lan Mei Xian also smiled. She then slowly sat down on one side of the bed. Then, she looked at the baby and sighed, "This little bastard caused so much pain to my good disciple... Wait until he grows up a little. I'll ruthlessly spank him then."

"No, you mustn't." Tie Bu Tian opened her eyes wide.

Lan Mei Xian smiled, "Look how anxious you became... You'll spoil him if you protect him like this. Don't pamper him too much. I see that you're an Emperor. But, you mustn't let your son become hedonistic and spoiled. It has been said since ancient times... an overly caring mother spoils her child too much..."

Tie Bu Tian rolled her eyes. She then said in a somewhat willful manner, "What's wrong in that? I have enough family wealth to spoil him."

Lan Mei Xian became speechless...

She grabbed the hand of the little guy, and said with a smile, "Let me take a look at this little guy's body. Back then, your Senior Sister's baby had an unusual physique. Let me see what kind of son your exquisite 'Icy Heart Physique' has given birth to..."

Tie Bu Tian pursed her lips, and said with a smile, "I love him no matter what physique he has... However, I'm worried about his future. I'm afraid that he would have to roam about in the Jianghu in the future... if his physique is good... Alas, wouldn't it be too dangerous?"

Lan Mei Xian rolled her eyes back and revealed the whites as she said, "You don't want your son to become an incredible powerhouse?"

Tie Bu Tian slowly shook her head, "I only want him to be safe and sound... That's all I want."

"You... lack vision for your child's future." Lan Mei Xian ridiculed. Then, she carefully input her vitality into the infant. However, her complexion suddenly changed. Her face turned red, and she muttered, "There is something wrong with his meridians..."

"Eh?" Tie Bu Tian was startled. She anxiously stood up, "Master... What is it? It's not something serious, is it?"

"How can his meridians be so wide..." Lan Mei Xian sucked in cold air while issuing a hissing sound. "I've seen many children in my life... How can he possess such a monstrous potential?"

Then, her complexion changed again. In fact, it had become deathly pale...

"It's strange..." Lan Mei Xian wrinkled her brows, and pondered for a while, "It seems somewhat similar to the Iron Blood Loyal Heart Physique mentioned in the legends. But... it seems superior to that... I'm not sure... I've never seen such a physique before..."

"Then... is it good or bad?" Tie Bu Tian nervously asked.

"Of course, it's good... In fact, it couldn't be any better..." Lan Mei Xian lifted her head while being in a daze. She looked all around this Iron Cloud Imperial Palace. Then, she muttered, "Is there a geomancy treasure ground in this imperial palace... How come there are so many monstrous physiques here..."

"I can't clearly make out... the physique of this baby." Lan Mei Xian seriously said, "But, it's certain that it's not ordinary. This news must not spread. Otherwise..."

Tie Bu Tian nodded. "Master, I understand." She beamed with joy as she looked at that little baby. She loved him too much to part with. She said, "I didn't expect that this little guy would be so extraordinary. He is indeed his father's son."

Lan Mei Xian's face turned dark. She badly snorted, and whispered, "Do you feel okay?"

"Yes, I feel alright." Tie Bu Tian looked strangely at her master.

"Take down the pill that's hanging on your chest," Lan Mei Xian urged.

"Pill?" Tie Bu Tian was astonished, "What pill?"

"The one you've always worn on your neck," Lan Mei Xian was somewhat anxious, "Be quick. A woman goes through the gates of

death when she gives birth to a child. She has a life and death experience. So, it's a good opportunity for you to change your physique. Quickly take the pill. It would be too late if your body were to recover."

"Change my physique?" Tie Bu Tian put her hand on her chest. [Chu Yang has gifted me this purple crystal bottle. I can't part with it.]

"Yes! Do it quickly!" Lan Mei Xian impatiently said, "You originally had the Icy Heart physique. But, it disappeared without a trace after you lost your virginity. But, this is a good opportunity to fix that. After all, you have a wonder medicine with you. Taking it will give you high chances of gaining the peerless physique of Icy Heart and Jade Bone. In fact, it will have appeared for the first time since ages. Hurry up."

"But... what about the baby?" Tie Bu Tian was somewhat unwilling.

"Ruo Lan... Ruo Lan... you take care of the baby," Lan Mei Xian shouted. Yan Ruo Lan suddenly heard this voice. It had sounded like that of a celestial. So, she immediately rushed in.

She and the others had been waiting for the summons for a long time...

Tie Bu Tian took out the Nine Tribulations Pill from her necklace under Lan Mei Xian's relentless urging. But, she still couldn't pop it. She said, "Master, are you sure that this mere pill can do it..."

"This is a Nine Tribulations Pill, silly child," Lan Mei Xian looked at her being hesitant. Then, she anxiously said, "This is the legendary Nine Tribulations Pill which is seen once in ten-thousand years... There is no other thing in this world that can change your physique... if this pill can't... I don't know what kind of luck you had when you ran into this elusive Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword... you're very lucky..."

"The elusive Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword?!" Tie Bu Tian cried out in surprise. Then, she suddenly felt a gigantic wave surging in her heart. And, her mind became uncontrollably chaotic. She suddenly felt a bittersweet feeling. [Chu Yang... turned out to be the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword?]

"No wonder... no wonder..." Tie Bu Tian murmured.

[No wonder Chu Yang is so powerful. No wonder Chu Yang was able to enhance his strength so quickly. No wonder he turned the world upside down. No wonder he could defeat Diwu Qing Rou...]

She stared blankly for a while. After that, she suddenly held Lan Mei Xian's hand, "Master, this matter mustn't spread out."

She was a talented Emperor of this generation. So, how could she not understand the severity of this matter? She had already sensed the threat this matter might pose to Chu Yang once she had understood it.

...

Chapter 614: Yang Ruo Lan's Intuition!

Lan Mei Xian said with a smile, "Don't worry... your master knows the gravity of this matter. This secret won't go out."

"No one must find out." Tie Bu Tian seemed resolute and decisive as she seriously said, "This disciple will take the pill as long as Master promises this. However, I'll commit suicide... in case you speak about it, and someone else finds out... Promise..."

Lan Mei Xian aimlessly took two steps. Then, she said hesitantly, "I promise you... as long as you promise to practice the Icy Heart Jade Bone to the peak."

"Alright!"

Tie Bu Tian opened the purple crystal bottle without the slightest hesitation, and took out the pill from it. She then stuffed the pill into her mouth without even looking at it. Her vision became brilliant, "Master, don't forget your promise!"

"I won't... But, you too can't go back on your promise to your master!" Lan Mei Xian wasn't aware that her disciple had charmed her with this promise. She quickly supported Tie Bu Tian who was about to get up. She supported the middle of Tie Bu Tian's back with one hand, and braced her heavenly spirit with the other. Then, she said, "Get rid of all distracting thoughts. Circulate your martial power so that you can digest the efficacy of this medicine. Don't think about anything else."

Tie Bu Tian was about to speak when she suddenly felt a heat rising in her Dantian. Then, the pain in her body disappeared without a trace in the blink of an eye. And, a feeling of utmost comfort simultaneously disseminated in all of her limbs and bones...

Moreover, a spiritual power surged up violently from the middle of her back. It then went forward, and penetrated into her

Dantian. Then, it spiraled along with the spirit energy within the Dantian. The Heavenly Spirit had wrapped the spirit energy from top to bottom. The three powerful energies came in contact with each other. Then, they suddenly scattered into myriads of spirit energy streams, and started to flow everywhere within her body...

Tie Bu Tian immediately felt minor changes occurring in her body. Then, all the minute changes converged together, and developed into a drastic change...

A long time passed. Suddenly, Lan Mei Xian fainted, and collapsed with a thumping sound.

The fact was that she had exhausted all of her martial power in order to help Tie Bu Tian change her physique. She wouldn't have been able to pull this off if she hadn't cultivated her spiritual essence in the last couple of months.

Tie Bu Tian was sweating all over with a fragrance. Her body felt soft and smooth. She didn't know what greasy substances had seeped out of her body, but it had left her to feel as if her body had completely recovered. In fact, her body felt as light as feather... as if she would fly. Moreover, she felt that she had gained many mysterious realizations in her mind...

She took support to stand up. But, she realized that she had become completely healthy.

Most of the hot water prepared for the childbirth had been used during the birth. So, she issued an order to bring-in hot water. Then, she properly cleaned her body. After that, she stood up, and felt that she was substantially different...

Lan Mei Xian leisurely woke up. She felt physically weak at the moment. But, she was in high spirits. She grabbed Tie Bu Tian's hand, and examined her. Then, she laughed heartily in relief and said, "Very good! Very good! I, Lan Mei Xian finally have my successor. Your meridians are completely connected now. And, your Dantian has become bluish-green like the ocean. You possess

an exquisite Icy Heart and crystal clear Jade Bone... all gathered in one!"

Her vision became brilliant, "Tian Tian, you must practice attentively from here on... Now, all of your practice obstacles have basically been removed. Now, you stand at the highest possible starting point for someone that practices Icy Heart and Jade Bone Saintly Technique. You must not let it go to waste. This is a gift from the Heavens."

She paused for a second. Then, she continued, "You'll be able to protect your child better... if you become strong. You're the Emperor of the Lower Three Heavens... However, you must keep the Upper Three Heavens in mind as well... not just because you're an Emperor, but also for how much you'll need to protect your son..."

Tie Bu Tian's heart trembled. She said, "This disciple understands."

Lan Mei Xian smiled in gratification and said, "I'll go back to the Upper Three Heavens with Qian Qian after the child will be one month old. You nurture your child well, and practice properly. Then, you must come up to the Upper Three Heavens at the appropriate time. Upper Three Heavens is the place where your talent truly belongs."

Tie Bu Tian showed neither approval nor disapproval. She just stared blankly...

A long while passed. Then, Tie Bu Tian slowly said, "You let Qian Qian come in. I want to have a chat with her."

Lan Mei Xian nodded, and went out.

Wu Qian Qian gently walked in after some time, "You asked for me?"

Tian Bu Tian looked at her with a complicated look. Then, she said after a very long while, "Have you decided?"

Wu Qian Qian lowered her head, and whispered, "Yes!"

Tie Bu Tian heaved a long sigh of relief. Then, she said, "Good! I will issue an imperial edict tomorrow that Empress Wu Qian Qian has died because of difficult labor... the entire nation would mourn..."

Wu Qian Qian remained silent for a good while. Then, she softly said, "I don't feel relieved..."

She sighed and said, "I don't feel relieved at all..."

Tie Bu Tian gently smiled and said, "You don't feel relieved... he-he... Qian Qian, don't tell him at any cost... if you see him," her expression became serious after she was done speaking.

Wu Qian Qian bit her lip. She bit her lip until it turned deathly pale. She only replied after a long while had passed, "Yes!"

Tie Bu Tian smiled, "Qian Qian, what do you think... how about we name this child Tie Yang?"

"Tie Yang? 'Yang' meaning 'sun'? Wouldn't that be a duplication of name?"

"Tie Yang... 'Yang' meaning the 'Poplar Tree' that pierces the sky... a steel-like heaven-piercing poplar tree! It doesn't have any branches. It grows straight. It bathes in sunshine... and, goes straight up to the ninth heaven!"

Tie Bu Tian slowly stated in a heavy tone, "Tie Yang will be the only heir of my Iron Cloud Empire. He'll become a crown prince someday. And, he'll become the overlord of the world in the future."

A light flashed in her eyes, and they emitted the brilliance of a monarch that reigned over the world. Then, she said in a heavy voice, "I'm going to establish an iron-solid regime over the world for my son... for hundreds and thousands of years to come!"

....

Outside... Yang Ruo Lan was holding the baby. She adored him too much to part with. There was a warm feeling of sorrow in her heart, and it was growing more intense with each passing second. The feeling that they were connected by blood made her hug this child tightly. And, she was unable to let him go.

"This is the first time I'm seeing you adore someone else's child so much," Chu Fei Ling said with a smile.

"You hold him, and have a look." Yang Ruo Lan's heart shook as she abruptly said.

Chu Fei Ling took the child very carefully. And, he held that warm and soft little body in his bosom. The baby opened his mouth, and smiled joyfully. And, Chu Fei Ling was conquered by this smiling expression almost-instantly. However, a bizarre feeling suddenly struck his heart like a lightning bolt.

Chu Fei Ling's body shuddered. Then, he muttered, "This little guy is very adorable... However, I feel as if he's someone from my Chu Clan..."

Yang Ruo Lan's body fiercely trembled, and she opened her beautiful eyes wide. Then, she said in a trembling voice, "You... you also feel this way?"

Lan Mei Xian walked over at this moment, "Ruo Lan, this Old Lady will stay for a month before going back. You and Fei Ling can go back if you have something to do."

"It's alright, Master. We'll stay with you. We will go back together after one month," Yang Ruo Lan hurriedly responded.

"Very well," Lan Mei Xian nodded, "I'll take some rest. I have to restore my elementary strength. I have emptied it for my disciple today..."

She went away minding her business after she said this.

Yang Ruo Lan felt choked by the emotions in her heart. [I have this feeling. My husband also has this feeling. However, what does

this feeling mean?]

[Why do we have this feeling?]

[Why?]

She stood there in a daze.

Tie Bu Tian walked out. She took the child from Chu Fei Ling's arms, and then thanked with a smile, "Thanks a lot, Senior Sister. Thanks a lot, Brother-in-law. I've troubled you both. Thank you for your patience."

"How come you walked out now?" Yang Ruo Lan anxiously asked.

"I'm fine," Tie Bu Tian chuckled, "Senior Sister and Brother-in-law, how about you both stay here with me for a few more days if you don't have any other thing to deal with?"

"Alright!" Yang Ruo Lan didn't wait for Chu Fei Ling to reply to this request. She readily agreed.

....

Two imperial edicts were issued in the Iron Cloud Nation the next day. They shocked the world at once.

The Crown Prince of the Iron Cloud Nation was born. The Emperor had personally bestowed him the name 'Tie Yang'. He was bestowed the position of the Crown Prince upon birth. And, it was sealed that he would be the successor of the Iron Cloud Empire. Moreover, a general amnesty was proclaimed for the entire empire. The entire nation was joyfully celebrating.

The Empress of the Iron Cloud Nation — Wu Qian Qian — went through a very difficult labor. And, she passed away. She was bestowed the title of a loyal, diligent, benevolent, righteous, and indomitably chaste Empress. She was titled as the only 'Mother of the Nation'. Her funeral was on the seventh day. And, she was finally buried in the Emperor's tomb on that day. The entire nation was in grief.

These two news — one happy and one sad — shocked the entire nation!

Then, another saddening news was spread in the Iron Cloud Nation after half-a-month.

The Lord of the Bu Tian Pavilion, King of Hell Chu had succumbed to an old injury. He had died despite having received medical help day and night. He was bestowed the title of the 'First Nobleman' with a different surname. The entire nation mourned.

....

No one knew that Tie Bu Tian had stared blankly at this third imperial edict after she had lifted the imperial jade seal. However, she hadn't been able to stamp it for half-a-day.

Two drops of tears had fallen from her eyes when she had finally stamped the edict with a loud rumble...

....

Time passed day by day. The baby's skin had started to stretch out. The baby's body had become as soft as water, and looked rosy-white. It made everyone dote on him.

Yang Luo Ran would go to see him several times every day. And, the more she looked at him, the more wildly her heart throbbed. In fact, she couldn't even contain it...

In addition, the facial features of the child had started to become clear. And, the more Yang Ruo Lan looked at the baby, the more it matched with the images of her son in her memory. She had obviously been recalling her only son every day over the years. She would even dream that she was holding her son in her bosom once again. So, how could those memories not be profound?

A miraculous glow flashed in Yang Ruo Lan's heart on this day. She recalled that she had taught a lesson to 'King of Hell Chu' in the Middle Three Heavens. She faintly felt that something was wrong. But, she couldn't find out what...

Finally, that day...

Yang Ruo Lan murmured, "I'll go and ask Junior Sister... if this is truly King of Hell Chu's child. I've met King of Hell Chu before. But, his appearance is completely different from that of this baby..."

"Different?" Chu Fei Ling was reading something. So, he had replied rather indifferently.

But, Yang Ruo Lan suddenly stood up. The absent-minded Chu Fei Ling almost jumped in fright. He lifted his head, and looked at the round eyes of his wife. Then, he muttered, "Different? Why is it different? This child has inherited his appearance from his mother. However, his sword-like eyebrows and his bulgy nose are masculine characteristics. They've obviously come from his father."

"But... why are they different?" Yang Ruo Lan's body shivered. "Why does he look different?! Why?!"

Chu Fei Ling groaned. He sat back in the chair and thought. [The thoughts of our son are driving Ruo Lan crazy. Someone else's son doesn't look like his father... What does it have to do with us...]

However, Yang Ruo Lan had stood up, "I'll go and look for Junior Sister."

"Hey... it's already very late at night!" Chu Fei Ling hurriedly tried to stop her. But, Yang Ruo Lan turned a deaf ear to him. She soon went far away. Chu Fei Ling forced a smile. He looked at the light and shade of candle flame, and thought in his heart, [We must redouble our efforts to search for our son after we go back. Because... I feel worried looking at my wife's condition.]

Tie Bu Tian had already breastfed the baby that night, and had made the little guy fall asleep by now. So, she hastily went to receive Yang Ruo Lan after hearing the report of her arrival.

The royal children were originally fed by wet nurses. However,

Tie Bu Tian had firmly rejected this. She wanted to raise her child on her own. Yang Ruo Lan also approved of this decision.

"Tian Tian... can... can I ask you something?" Yang Ruo Lan came over, and looked at the baby sleeping soundly. Her heart was beating wildly and anxiously, and she could feel her lips becoming dry. She then asked somewhat nervously.

....

Chapter 615: It Can't Be So Coincidental, Right?

"What's the matter? Senior Sister, please don't hesitate. Feel free to express yourself," Tie Bu Tian was very grateful to her Senior Sister. So, she frankly urged her to express herself.

"Can I ask... what does the father of this child look like?" Yang Ruo Lan's voice somewhat trembled.

Tie Bu Tian tenderly looked at the sleeping baby. Then, she pursed up her lips, and said with a smile, "Senior Sister, why bother asking? The baby's face looks almost the same as his father's. There's no difference."

"There's no difference?!" Yang Ruo Lan's voice trembled. A thunderclap had seemingly rung in her heart. [Does it mean that I found the wrong person last time?]

Her body shivered, and was on the verge of collapse. She had been taken back by Tie Bu Tian's reply.

Suddenly, she had a crazy thought in her mind. [Could it be that... that man... is my son? And, this is what makes me feel related to this little boy... Is he my own grandson???]

She clearly knew that she was indulging in wild fantasies. She was being unrealistic. She was speculating too much. However, she couldn't help but repeatedly think about it. And, she couldn't control herself from making deductions. She couldn't stop herself from longing for her son...

Yang Ruo Lan's face became deep red for a moment. But, it changed to deathly pale the next second. Her complexion was changing again and again. And, the sound of her heartbeats had become like that of drum. In fact, the sound was so loud that even Tie Bu Tian could hear it clearly.

"Senior Sister, are you okay?" Tie Bu Tian anxiously asked.

However, Yang Ruo Lan had turned a deaf ear to her. Then, she suddenly said in a rough voice, "Is he surnamed Chu?"

Tie Bu Tian nodded while being puzzled. She thought in her heart, [This is supposed to be a secret. However, shouldn't you already be aware of this?]

"Is he named Chu Yang?" Yang Ruo Lan further questioned.

"Yes," Tie Bu Tian replied.

"How old is he?" She again asked.

"He should be eighteen... or nineteen?" Tie Bu Tian said with some uncertainty.

"You don't know how old he is?" Yang Ruo Lan opened her eyes wide.

"Well, I've heard that he's an abandoned child... So, he doesn't know about his past..." Tie Bu Tian pondered for a while, and then replied.

A strange groan was issued from Yang Ruo Lan's throat... as if she was struck by lightning. She felt weak in her heart... as if it had been stung by a red-hot steel needle.

She felt dizzy.

Her body swayed for a while. Then, she finally composed herself with difficulty. But, she found that her cheeks were already streaming with tears.

[Abandoned baby!]

[Doesn't know about his past!]

These few words were enough to make her entire body ache. Her insides seemed to be churning up the pain at this moment. Everything turned black before her eyes due to the intense pain. And, she almost lost consciousness.

She felt as if her soul would leave her body and fly away. She

wasn't in her right mind. She only heard herself asking, "He's an abandoned baby? Doesn't know his past? Doesn't know his age...?"

"Um, yes..." Tie Bu Tian's voice seemed to have drifted over from the clouds. "His master had taken care of him since his childhood. Empress Wu Qian Qian is his Senior Martial Sister. I don't know much about his past."

"Empress Wu Qian Qian is... his Senior Martial Sister?" Yang Ruo Lan only thought about all the difficulties that she had had to go through in order to find Chu Yang. Her body was sweating profusely. And, she didn't have even a little bit of strength left in her. So, she sat down steadily and calmly on the edge of the bed.

[His master had taken care of him since his childhood...]

[Abandoned baby...]

[Doesn't know about his past...]

[This baby and his father look exactly the same. His face looks like that of his father...]

Yang Ruo Lan's mind was lost in thoughts. She had a lifeless expression in her eyes. Only teardrops could be seen in them. Tie Bu Tian called out to her several times. But, she didn't hear any of her calls. Her mind was lost in her fantasies.

"His master?" Yang Ruo Lan finally remembered this detail. This was undoubtedly an important trail. Yang Ruo Lan was somewhat biased towards her intuition. So, she believed in her own wishful thinking.

"What sect does his master belong to?"

"Beyond the Heavens Sect!"

"Who is his master? What's his name?"

"I've heard that his name is Meng Chao Ran. He's the youngest junior disciple of the previous generation of Beyond the Heaven Sect," Yang Ruo Lan's questioning was getting quicker and quicker.

And, Tie Bu Tian was also able to answer fluently, and more and more quickly. However, she began to faintly feel that there was something wrong. She became somewhat scared and flustered. She also had a vague intuition...

And, this vague intuition made Tie Bu Tian's face turn deathly pale. Then, her face became red. She became somewhat cautious and solemn as she answered Yang Ruo Lan's questions ...

[It can't be... I, I... It can't be, right... It can't be so coincidental, right...? Chu Yang is an abandoned child... I've heard that Senior Sister and her husband had also lost their son eighteen years ago. And, they haven't found him yet...]

Tie Bu Tian panicked all of a sudden. And, a feeling of embarrassment rushed in her heart.

[This... can't be... so coincidental. My goodness...]

[If this... if this... this is really... I...]

This Emperor... who had always been strong, wise, and farsighted... who was the peerless overlord who ruled over several billion commoners with an iron fist... who was the first Emperor of this new empire... Suddenly became panic-stricken!

Then, the two women's flustered eyes met.

There was doubt in Yang Ruo Lan's eyes. There was doubt... doubt... doubt... but then, there was also hope...hope...hope...

There was surprise, shame, fear, and uncertainty in Tie Bu Tian's eyes. She had a vague understanding... And, strong feelings of shame and distress were also mixed in with that vague understanding...

"You..." Yang Ruo Lan said in a daze.

"You..." Tie Bu Tian stared blankly, and said.

The two simultaneously opened their mouths, and then shut them. They silently sized up the expression on each other's face for

a moment.

"You speak first."

"You speak first."

They again spoke in unison, and then again became silent at the same time.

"Cough, Cough..."

"Cough, Cough..."

"I'm listening to you..."

"I'm listening to you..."

Both of them were stuck at the same starting point... as if they had been bound by some spell. They opened their mouths at the same time, and then closed them at the same time. They said the same words at the same time, and just sat there in a daze.

"I will speak first then..." Yang Ruo Lan sighed, "I and your... brother-in-law... brother-in-law..." Suddenly, Yang Ruo Lan found the words 'brother-in-law' hard to speak for some reason.

Tie Bu Tian's white face turned a deep shade of red... It seemed as if it had been set on fire. She deeply lowered her head. And, her heart beat wildly with thumping sounds.

[Such a coincidence isn't possible... What if it turns out that she's my mother-in-law...] Tie Bu Tian wished for the ground beneath to crack open and swallow her whole if this turned out to be true. She felt ashamed to death...

Yang Ruo Lan finally cleared her throat and said, "Eighteen years ago... we lost our child... in the Lower Three Heavens. And, he hasn't been found yet. Tian Tian, you look at my husband... see... do you see any... resemblance with your... cough cough?"

Yang Ruo Lan looked at Tie Bu Tian with eyes filled with hope while coughing.

Tie Bu Tian stammered. She felt as if her body had caught fire. She was trembling all over.

She had seen Chu Fei Ling just a while ago, and had thought that he looked somewhat familiar... as if she had seen him somewhere. Moreover, she had felt as if she knew him well. However, she had clearly met him for the first time. Furthermore, it was the husband of her Senior Sister...

However, she finally realized who his brother-in-law looked like after Yang Ruo Lan mentioned this at this moment – He looked like Chu Yang... that one man she yearned for day and night...

"They look a little bit alike..." Tie Bu Tian's voice had become as feeble as that of a mosquito.

"Only a little bit...?" Yang Ruo Lan dug deeper.

"Yes... Quite a bit..." Tie Bu Tian covered her face with her hands. She lowered her head. And, a swan-like graceful nape was exposed. But, it had turned red out of shame.

Yang Ruo Lan suddenly became excited, "Tell me more about him... It would be better if you told me in detail."

Tie Bu Tian foolishly and pitifully looked at Yang Ruo Lan. Then, she said while stammering, "Senior Sister... Senior... Sister... um... you see..."

The pitiful monarch of this generation had felt this embarrassed for the first time in her life. She was so ashamed that she was unable to show her face. She turned her head, and looked at her son. She suddenly had a feeling, [I wish I could grab this little guy, and stuff him back into my belly...]

Yang Ruo Lan looked at Tie Bu Tian with deep anxiety and hope in her eyes. Tie Bu Tian had a lifeless look in her eyes. She started to tell everything while stuttering.

"How did you two meet?"

"What happened at that time?"

"What did he tell you?"

"How did he..."

"How did he..."

"How did you two... have this child?"

Yang Ruo Lan asked questions in quick-fire succession. The questions pounded one after the other on Tie Bu Tian's head, and made her head spin. Her head felt heavy. She felt overwhelmed and dazed.

This peerless monarch who was able to face countless armies unfazed... was behaving like someone with a stuttering condition at this moment. In fact... she was behaving like a criminal who was stuttering while being interrogated...

She lowered her head, and answered... It seemed as if she was pleading guilty to a crime.

It seemed as if the honorable judge was asking about all the facts related to the crime with keen interest... as if the judge was being very patient to dig every little detail...

[I'm done for...] Tie Bu Tian had this feeling when Yang Ruo Lan asked the last question.

She told Yang Ruo Lan the entire story.

"Is it over?" Yang Ruo Lan sighed with a desire to keep going on.

"Yes..." the Emperor's voice had become feeble like that of a mosquito.

"That's it?"

"Yeah..."

"Been through a lot of hardships... poor child..." tears dripped from Yang Ruo Lan's eyes as she said these words.

Yang Ruo Lan naturally didn't dare to dig any deeper. But, she

had become vaguely sure in her heart. [This King of Hell Chu is the real King of Hell Chu. And, the one I had met was definitely a fake.]

[And, there's an 80% chance that this King of Hell Chu is my lost son.]

"And... as for the things before he arrived in the Iron Cloud Nation... you must ask Wu Qian Qian... she's in the imperial palace at this moment," Tie Bu Tian said in broken sentences.

She had hurriedly shifted the task to Wu Qian Qian. [Take my place, and share this burden with me. Younger Sister, I can't endure it anymore...]

"You're right! How could I forget her? That girl was his Senior Sister after all." Yang Ruo Lan was full of enthusiasm. And, there was a red glow spread across her entire face. She stood up and said, "I'll go and talk to her now."

"Yes... yes... Senior... please do as you wish..." Tie Bu Tian couldn't speak the whole thing. She nodded and bowed as she said.

"Very well, you take proper rest," Yang Ruo Lan bent over the sleeping Tie Yang, and looked at him. But, her way of looking at him was completely different this time.

"I'll see you off..." Tie Bu Tian hastily jumped up to attentively flattered her in a diligent manner.

"No... you've just given birth to a child. You must take proper rest," Yang Ruo Lan hurriedly placed her hand on Tie Bu Tian's shoulder.

Tie Bu Tian looked at Yang Ruo Lan going away with a whooshing sound. Her face had blushed hard. She sat down on the bed while being in a daze. She felt a burst of cold heat all over her body... as if she had caught some disease. A long while passed. Tie Bu Tian suddenly and weakly groaned. She fell on the bed, pulled the blanket, and covered herself with it...

[Oh God... please let me die...]

[How can this be happening? Boohoo...]

[What would I do... if by any chance... all of this is true?]

...

Chapter 616: Blames Those Heartless Parents!

Wu Qian Qian was sitting quietly in her room. She had barely slept in the past few days.

"My goal is to reach to the top of the Nine Heavens!" Chu Yang had spoken these words.

[Therefore, I must go as well!]

[I won't let you see me, but I'll watch over you and help you!]

"Qian Qian, I'll take you to the Upper Three Heavens when Tian Tian's baby is a month old. I'll recommend a famous teacher for you. Your future will be limitless!" Lan Mei Xian had said this.

"It's not necessarily impossible for even Monarch or Saint Level Expert to become your teacher. Even a highest level Supreme Expert might want to work hard on training you. Your aptitude won't disappoint them."

[I won't fail. The stronger I'll be, the more able I'll be to help him.]

"You must help me watch over him. You must help me help him. But... don't let him find out about Tie Yang," Tie Bu Tian's voice echoed in Wu Qian Qian's mind. And, Wu Qian Qian heaved a long sigh.

Both of them had a pitiful fate.

She still remembered the conversation she had had with Tie Bu Tian when Chu Yang had left, "So many women in this world get married and have kids in their life. They help their families in difficult times, and grow old together. But, they are struck with a realization by the time they die... that they weren't truly in love with their partner. They deeply love their children and grandchildren. However, they remain lonely throughout their

lives when it comes to romance.

"How many wonderful men are there in the world? There are billions of men and billions of women in the Nine Heavens. How many women are there who genuinely love a man, and are able to genuinely win the love of their man for themselves? I have. And, that's enough for me. I'm content with it. I don't want anything from anyone now. He will naturally take the responsibility if I force him to do so. But, what would be the point... of that kind of responsibility? So, I'm content with my one-sided love. After all, I can at least have some illusions in my heart.

"Women like strong men... especially young and handsome heroes who are passionate and courageous...What kind of woman wouldn't like such men? Therefore, heroes are destined to be tangled in emotions... But, heroes aren't necessarily sentimental.

"Chu Yang is not a sentimental person. However, he isn't a licentious young master either. He is sly and fierce by nature. But, he's an upright person deep down. The so-called slyness, wretched and immoral behavior, craftiness, and manipulation... these aspects are his ways of doing things, and not a part of his nature.

"Every word he says has a purpose behind it. He sometimes does things that make others not know whether to cry or laugh. However, everyone exclaims in admiration after he reveals his true purpose behind those things. Such a man can't be tangled in emotions or sympathy. He has to have a heart of iron."

Wu Qian Qian still remembered that Tie Bu Tian had exposed a strange and complicated kind of expression in her eyes when she had mentioned that Chu Yang had a heart of iron. There had also been pride in her eyes.

"If his heart was fickle... if he could easily be attracted to pretty women... Or maybe, if he had been attracted to me that easily... then, would he still be the same Chu Yang we admire? Would we still have suffered for him like this? Could such a fickle man be

worth sacrificing our love for?"

Wu Qian Qian had counter-attacked Tie Bu Tian at that time with these words. And, it had left Tie Bu Tian incapable of speaking-up for three days.

Both of them had no hope... Their love hadn't been acknowledged... They had been rejected... However, the feelings of love and pride for Chu Yang in their hearts had stayed undiminished.

She was thinking, pondering, inferring, and fantasizing. She was shedding tears, and was laughing heartily now and then. [I'll go to the Upper Three Heavens in a few days. Chu Yang will also go to the Upper Three Heavens sooner or later. So, I'll just have to wait for him to come up to the Upper Three Heavens. That's all.]

Wu Qian Qian came out of her thoughts when she heard the news of Yang Ruo Lan's arrival. She then hastily went to receive Yang Ruo Lan.

She was doubtful in her heart. [Why is Yang Ruo Lan looking for me in these wee hours?]

[Has something bad happened to Tie Bu Tian?]

Yang Ruo Lan sat down. Then, Wu Qian Qian very carefully asked, "May I know why Senior has come this late at night..."

"It's nothing serious." Yang Ruo Lan's mood had become somewhat tranquil by now. However, she was obviously still longing to know more about her son. Moreover, she was a lot worried about what might happen next. So, she was scared as well.

This present King of Hell Chu was her closest intuition at this time. He was also her biggest hope. She didn't know whether she would be able to withstand the blow... if it were not so...

She didn't know if she would be able to summon the courage to continue looking for her son after that...

"I've come here to ask one thing. I want to know the real story of your junior martial brother, um, about King of Hell Chu," Yang Ruo Lan tidied up the train of her thoughts and asked, "I want to know everything about him before he arrived here at the Iron Cloud Nation. May I ask Miss Wu to have a chat with me if she's okay with it..."

"Chu Yang?" Wu Qian Qian's eyes lit up as soon as she heard this name. But, she also became suspicious. [Why is she asking about Chu Yang?]

"Yes," Yang Ruo Lan said, "There's no other meaning behind this. I don't have any evil intentions. I just want to know something. So, don't worry."

Wu Qian Qian nodded and said, "I don't know what Senior wants to know. I didn't have much contact with Chu Yang when I was in the Beyond the Heavens Sect."

She recalled the time when she was in Beyond the Heavens Sect, and the things that Chu Yang had taken care of back then. Wu Qian Qian couldn't help but smile with her crescent moon-like eyebrows as she did so.

"Tell me everything you know," Yang Ruo Lan looked at Wu Qian Qian's expression. And, she couldn't help but stretch the corners of her mouth. [It looks as if... this youngster King of Hell Chu is a lady killer. This girl in front of me clearly has feelings of love towards him...]

"Um... I only met Chu Yang two years ago. He was habitually silent. He was somewhat reserved in the sect as well. He didn't like speaking much. He was the kind of man who would quickly vanish if thrown into a crowd..."

Wu Qian Qian spoke while constantly recalling.

"Oh?" This beginning of the story was beyond Yang Ruo Lan's expectations. [King of Hell Chu had held the world in his hand. He

could raise storms with the flick of his hand... But, he was introverted when he was young?]

"Martial Uncle Meng of the Purple Bamboo Garden was the most talented and able person in the previous generation of the Beyond the Heavens Sect. He knew everything about everyone. Moreover, he had the most tranquil nature. He didn't bother anyone.

"My father and the others had told me about the three disciples of Martial Uncle Meng. They had said that the eldest disciple was mature, wise, and full of stratagems; the second disciple — Chu Yang was silent and reserved. And, the third disciple — Tan Tan was the most undisciplined disciple of the Beyond the Heavens Sect...

"I followed father's order one day, and went to the Purple Bamboo Garden..." Wu Qian Qian's bright eyes slightly flickered as she recalled what had happened on that day.

"I suddenly found out that these rumors about the three disciples weren't true. The difference between the eldest disciple Shi Qian Shan and the second disciple Chu Yang was that of sky and earth. Chu Yang's planning skills, intelligence, and scheming... everything was far better than those of Shi Qian Shan's."

"Then... why was he introverted most of the time?" The conflict between Chu Yang and Shi Qian Shan was simply like the battle of two ants in the eyes of this Emperor Level Expert, Yang Ruo Lan. However, she was overwhelmed by emotions while listening. And, she couldn't help but further question.

"I think it has something to do with Chu Yang's past," Wu Qian Qian replied with a smile, "After all... Chu Yang thought that he was an abandoned child. He used to think that his heartless parents had abandoned him. He was aware of this. So, he didn't want to talk about it."

Wu Qian Qian smiled, "In fact, this is human nature. It's not at all surprising. Generally speaking... a child who has had a sad past

becomes reserved. Chu Yang is intelligent and crafty. But, he's only a human. He's no God. He certainly has a deep-seated anger in his heart."

Wu Qian Qian told this with a smile on her face. She had always defended Chu Yang, and had never let anyone say a bad word about him. But, she didn't know in what way these words of hers had attacked Yang Ruo Lan.

Yang Ruo Lan's complexion turned pale, and her eyes filled with tears.

[His heartless parents abandoned him!]

[He has a deep-seated anger in his heart!]

[Heartless parents!]

Yang Ruo Lan's body shivered, and her eyes became lifeless.

"He must be very hateful towards his parents, right?" Yang Ruo Lan bitterly smiled.

Wu Qian Qian was immersed in the memories. So, she didn't notice anything. She blatantly said, "He obviously does. We were once handling some business matters together. This was after he had arrived in the Iron Cloud Nation. There was nothing important to do that day. So, he mentioned the topic of his past."

"What did he say?" Yang Ruo Lan nervously asked.

Wu Qian Qian raised her head, and looked at her with a surprised expression on her face. [It seems somewhat strange. Why is she getting anxious?]

She said, "We were returning via a street at that time. We saw that many parents had placed signs made of woven weeds over their children's heads. Those signs indicated that the children were for sale. They were selling off their children in order to make livelihood. I had said at that time that the children were very pitiful... then, Chu Yang had spoken a few words..."

"What words?" Yang Ruo Lan anxiously asked.

Wu Qian Qian looked upwards, and started to recall Chu Yang's words and expressions back then. A long while passed. Then, she said, "Then, Chu Yang said, 'These children are not that pitiful... because they have some worth at least. They know that their parents are selling them because they are helpless under pressure. They have some worth even though their parents are leaving them. They know this. Therefore, they don't resist it. However, the most pitiful are the ones that are considered trash by their parents right when they are born... and, are abandoned by their parents. They are the most miserable ones. They don't have the least bit of worth. They are so useless that they don't even have the qualifications to be traded away.'

"I had thought that he must've been thinking about his past while speaking all this. So, I hadn't dared to pry anything. Chu Yang then kept sighing for a long while. He made me buy all the children on that day, and accept them in the Bu Tian Pavilion. Then, those children were sent to a school which is now called 'Cloudy Sky' School. This school provides accommodation to all those who are forced to sell off their children in order to survive. Chu Yang has left now. But, this work never stopped. His Majesty and Bu Tian Pavilion have continued this work."

Yang Luo Ran didn't hear whatever Wu Qian Qian said after this part. Sounds of explosions were echoing in her mind. Only a few words were reverberating in her mind, [However, the most pitiful are the ones that are considered trash by their parents right when they are born... and, are abandoned by their parents. They are the most miserable ones. They don't have the least bit of worth. They are so useless that they don't even have the qualifications to be traded away.]

These words repeatedly resounded in Yang Ruo Lan's mind. She could feel her heart shatter into small fragments... piece by piece. Her soul was repeatedly being crushed into dust.

[What was Chu Yang thinking when he said these words? Was he hurting inside? Did he feel hatred? His heart must've been shattered while saying these words, right?]

[His drifting and homeless past must've made him very indifferent in his heart.]

...

Chapter 617: Your Sworn Brother!

[This drifting and vague past had helped him in becoming a legend for eternity. It had helped him become the famous King of Hell Chu. However... a son's heart always wants to be cherished by his parents. And, the parents also wouldn't prefer to abandon such a legendary child. Wouldn't they want to see their child grow up into a legend before their eyes?]

Yang Ruo Lan felt very emotional. She felt very sad in her heart... In fact, she felt as if her heart would shatter into pieces.

"I still remember... Chu Yang had a very strange expression on his face when he had told me this..." Wu Qian Qian was trying her best to recollect the memory as she said, "...Of course, he felt kind of inferior. He felt a bitter resentment. He felt spite and self-pity... He seemed disheartened. I almost cried at that time..."

Yang Ruo Lan also almost cried. [Pitiful child!]

"I had told him at that time — your past is indeed pitiful. But, your parents hadn't known that you would grow up to become an influential figure when they abandoned you. They didn't know that you would rise above the world. They would certainly have many regrets if they knew this now..."

Wu Qian Qian's vision became somewhat dreamy and fuzzy; it seemed as if she was deep in recollection, "Then, Chu Yang had gritted his teeth and said — when I find them... my sword will slaughter them even if they truly regret their decision and try to patch things up with me."

Wu Qian Qian had subconsciously imitated Chu Yang's tone while saying these words... And, it was a tone that was full of bloody resentment and hatred.

Yang Ruo Lan was shaken to her core when she heard this. She felt as if a chill had arisen from the bottom of her heart, spread in

her entire body in a flash, and travelled straight to her soul.

Yang Ruo Lan didn't hear anything Wu Qian Qian said after these words.

She pondered calmly for a while. Then, she asked before leaving, "Qian Qian, you've grown up with him since childhood... Had you discovered that he had a purple jade pendent by any chance?"

Wu Qian Qian instantly replied, "No! At least, I haven't seen."

Then, she realized something. She was somewhat flabbergasted as she said, "Senior, do you suspect that Chu Yang is your missing son? Is this the case...?"

....

Yang Ruo Lan left in a daze. She walked awkwardly... as if she was walking in sleep.

Yang Ruo Lan had asked Wu Qian Qian about the purple jade pendent. And, Wu Qian Qian had straight up said 'no'. She hadn't given it any thought. This had dealt a heavy blow to Yang Ruo Lan. After all, Wu Qian Qian understood Chu Yang like no one else could.

But, she had said 'no'.

[Could it be that he isn't? Could it be that he isn't...?]

Yang Ruo Lan walked out facing the night breeze. However, she felt confused. She felt as if this matter was shrouded in a dense fog. A long while passed. And, Yang Ruo Lan finally started to sort things out little by little.

[The King of Hell Chu that I'd seen was clearly not the King of Hell Chu of the Lower Three Heavens.]

[King of Hell Chu and his son look the same. And, Tie Bu Tian has said that King of Hell Chu and my husband also look similar...]

Suddenly, a mysterious light flashed in her heart. She remembered something that Chu Fei Ling had once told her, [My

Sworn Brother looks a lot like me!]

Yang Ruo Lan's body shuddered. She suddenly stopped, and stood still. She remembered that she had responded in suspicion back then, "He only knew you for two days. So, why did he give you so many items? Can there possibly be some conspiracy behind this? What was his motive?"

Yang Ruo Lan's cheeks streamed with tears as she recalled that conversation with his husband.

[Could it be him?]

[Is it possible that he had already found out about his past by that time? Was that the reason he had given so many things to his father? He had even sent me a sword...]

[It has to be understood that they had only met two days before. So, why would a Sworn Little Brother be so generous even if he found the other person a kindred spirit? The important thing is that those items might be more precious than any treasure out there. Every one of them is capable of changing a person's destiny.]

[But, why didn't he reveal his identity if it truly was him?]

[He gave these many items to my husband. So, he must not hold any grudges in his heart anymore. Then, why didn't he reveal his identity?]

Yang Ruo Lan had conflicting feelings. She squatted down, covered her face with her hands, and started to cry...

....

Dawn had broken. Yang Ruo Lan finally returned to her place of residence. She then called out to the snoring Chu Fei Ling. Then, she didn't say anything further. She just covered her husband's face with a wet and cold towel.

Chu Fei Ling shivered, immediately became refreshed, and opened his eyes. He then angrily said, "What are you doing?"

"Hurry up!" Yang Ruo Lan's expression was very weird. She seemed somewhat scared as she said in a fit of anxiety, "You... do you still remember what you'd told me about your Sworn Little Brother?"

"He's my brother. So, I obviously remember," Chu Fei Ling subtly replied.

"What does your Sworn Little Brother... look like? What had he said to you when you both were together? Tell me everything carefully... and in detail..." Yang Ruo Lan urged. She hadn't slept last night. However, she was still full of energy. In fact, her eyes had shone brighter than before when she had asked these questions. Moreover, her chest was going up and down with uncertainty. It was clear that she was restless in her heart.

Chu Fei Ling was baffled. [How could I remember all that after such a long while? Why is my wife suddenly asking about this matter at this moment?]

"Speak quickly. What kind of person is that 'Sworn Little Brother' of yours?" Yang Ruo Lan bit her lip. She had made a heavy and serious voice while saying the words 'Sworn Little Brother'. She had a feeling in her heart, [My husband would become a big laughing stock... if this is true.]

"Well... my Sworn Little Brother is obviously very handsome and cool," Chu Fei Ling got excited while describing. He said with a gentle smile, "That guy isn't like ordinary people despite being so young. He's bold and insightful. He has knowledge and wisdom. And, he can adapt to any kind of situation. I had seen such a young hero for the first time in my life. Nobody is a match for him... not even the young geniuses of the nine great clans of the Upper Three Heavens..."

However, Chu Fei Ling noticed that something was off while saying this.

[How come my wife has such a weird expression on her face

today...]

He had mentioned about this matter before, and Yang Ruo Lan had listened to him attentively with a smile. But, she had done so somewhat half-heartedly. After all, she hadn't met the man in person. However, it was different today. Yang Ruo Lan's lips were happily curved in satisfaction. In fact, she was listening to him bragging about his Sworn Brother as if it was worth hearing a hundred times over.

Those exaggerated adjectives were making her listen with sparkling eyes. It seemed that she wanted to listen more and more about him... she had an expression of everlasting curiosity on her face.

Moreover, she also seemed to have an expression of pride on her face...

"Is that it?" Yang Ruo Lan wanted him to go on. She said, "Just that much...?"

Chu Fei Ling became confused. He stretched his hand to touch his wife's forehead, "Are... Are you all right, today?"

Smack!

Yang Ruo Lan knocked his hand away and said, "Do you have anything else to tell?"

"No."

"You don't?" A vigor somewhat flared up in Yang Ruo Lan's eyes, "You and your Sworn Brother travelled together for several days. You two faced life-and-death situations together. You killed powerful enemies together. Your Sworn Brother gave you so many good items. You two bonded for such a long time. And, you didn't have some random conversations?"

"Conversations...?" Chu Fei Ling was confused, "What kind of conversations?"

"How would I know what kind of conversations you had? What did you say? What did he say? Tell me about his facial expressions, his gestures, and so on... don't miss anything."

"My God!" Chu Fei Ling jumped up, "How can I possibly remember all of that? It's been such a long time. Even a god wouldn't have been able to remember, okay? Moreover, what is the point of this investigation of yours? My Sworn Brother is a man."

"The gods would obviously be able to remember, okay? And, who asked you if he was a man or a woman? Do you think that I have enough free time to be jealous?" Yang Ruo Lan glare turned dangerous, "Could it be that you've forgotten everything? That poor child did so many favors for you. How can you be so forgetful?"

"Alright... alright; let me think..." Chu Fei Ling raised his hands in surrender. He couldn't even force a smile in his heart. [Poor child...? What child... He's my Sworn Brother. You can't call him that even though you're his big sister-in-law... you're messing up the hierarchy of our relations.]

[It's messed up!]

But, how could he dare to say these words in front of his wife?

"Let me remind you..." Yang Ruo Lan saw that her husband was telling the story half-heartedly. She said, "When you and your Sworn Brother became 'Sworn Brothers'... was he very ecstatic? Or, so to say... did you two happen to agree upon it by chance?"

"Neither!" Chu Fei Ling remembered, "That boy had seemed terrified at that time. In fact, he was stuttering while speaking. Ha ha... I was somewhat aggressive when I mentioned about it. It's no wonder that he couldn't accept it at first..."

[He was terrified? He stuttered? You're a jerk!]

Yang Ruo Lan maliciously cursed at him in her heart. Then, she

hastily asked, "You still remember the whole situation of that time, right?"

"Of course, I do!" Chu Fei Ling smiled and said, "I had said to him at that time — we rarely come across someone we get along so well with. How about we two become Sworn Brothers? Then, my little brother was startled... ha ha ha... That guy told me that I was an older man. Then, I subjugated him by saying — could it be that you look down on me?' Ha ha... Therefore, he didn't get a way out of it..."

Then, Chu Fei Ling told her about the situation of that time while making gestures. This had left a deep impression in his heart. How could he forget that he had basically half-forced the other person into swearing brotherhood with him?

"So in this way... Ahem, I almost pressed his head to tap the ground in kowtow until the oath was taken. That guy looked as if he was in a dream... his complexion was also ugly... No, it was like an everlasting look of surprise. Um, yes, yes. That was it."

Chu Fei Ling recalled his Sworn Brother's dazed expression. And, he couldn't help but laugh out loud.

Yang Ruo Lan face-palmed while deeply sighing in her heart.

[His complexion was ugly? He was in a daze...? His own father forced him to swear brotherhood with him! How could his complexion be pleasant? You would perhaps have become muddled-headed long ago... if you had been in his place...]

[No, no, no. You were already muddle-headed!]

Yang Ruo Lan had better died if she hadn't been sure that it was her son even after hearing till here. She couldn't help but feel pity as she looked at the expression in her husband's eyes... [This pitiful man... he says that his Sworn Brother was in a dream... But, the fact is that he was the one in a dream...]

"And then?" Yang Ruo Lan asked, "You two must've chatted

endlessly after swearing brotherhood, right?"

"Yes," Chu Fei Ling sighed and said, "You know about our past, and how it has always pressed my heart like a mountain... It leaves me incapable of breathing. I can't dare to talk about it... not in my in-laws' home or even in my own home... And, especially not in front of you... Well, I obviously felt that I must tell about all of many sufferings to my brother... On that day... we talked about that stormy night eighteen years ago... I also talked about our lifelong regret of losing our son..."

Yang Ruo Lan suddenly interrupted him, and grabbed his wrist. A 'ka-ka' sound came from the wrist-bone that she had clutched, and Chu Fei Ling felt his wrist-bone aching. He was obviously somewhat startled by this. So, he raised his face and looked. He saw that his wife's pupil had expanded wide. Then, Yang Ruo Lan anxiously asked, "You told him about that night? You told him... about what happened on the night we lost our child? Huh?"

....

Chapter 618: I Must Have the Prestige of a Big Brother!

Chu Fei Ling was suddenly startled. Then, he said while stammering, "Tell... me... what's wrong with that... What's wrong? Can I not... can I not talk about it?"

"Who said that you can't?" Yang Ruo Lan hatefully stared at him, "How can you be so stupid under such circumstances?"

"Under what circumstances...?" Chu Fei Ling was so confused that he started to scratch his head. In fact, he had to stop himself from collapsing. "Dear wife, tell me what's wrong? Why are you acting so weird today..."

"I'll go mad at this rate..." Yang Ruo Lan blew her top, and glared at him. She was seething with anger. [Bastard! The most important part was just about to come, and you got distracted. Can't you see that I'm burning with impatience here?]

She was speechless. But then, she raised her head, and looked up. She then muttered, "I'm acting weird now. I wonder why I married you back then..."

Chu Fei Ling wore a sad expression on his face. He then heaved a long sigh. Then, he sadly said, "You're right... You would've been much happier than you are now... if you hadn't married me back then. I must say... I've hurt you. You've suffered so much pain for so many years because of the internal strife of my Chu Clan..."

Yang Ruo Lan rolled her eyes, and revealed the whites of her eyes in the process. She then fell on the bed in a dejected manner. In fact, she had become so irritated that she wanted to cry, but she couldn't find the tears. She then said in a pleading manner, "Damn it... I was asking you to continue speaking. Please, continue telling me..."

A depressing thought rose up from Chu Fei Ling's heart. He

muttered in his heart, [I've never seen someone dying to listen to the other person criticizing themselves. But, this matter is indeed the root of trouble for my family.] He continued to speak with pain on his face since he had no better option, "... you would've been happy for these many years if not for our Chu Clan. Ruo Lan, marrying me... has brought you suffering..."

There had been a sense of sincerity in his words when he had spoken the last sentence. In fact, there had been earnestness in his voice, and in his expression. After all, Yang Ruo Lan had been longing for her son for the past eighteen years. She had been in grief this entire time. And, Chu Fei Ling would start to criticize himself whenever he felt at a loss. He would speak softly, and become teary eyed. Then, the discomfort in Yang Ruo Lan's heart would disappear in thin air. And, she would start comforting him instead.

This tactic was tried and tested. It had become a standard method. Chu Fei Ling had been practicing self-criticism to gain proficiency in the art of coaxing his wife. He had even mastered the art of gabbing and using glib phrases!

However, this same old trick was obviously of no use today...

Yang Ruo Lan suddenly jumped up. She then clutched Chu Fei Ling's neck and said, "You jerk... you're so aggravating. You've been using this same old trick on me for eighteen years now. And, I have to pretend to comply every time for the fear that I would hurt you. And, you're still using this same old trick on me... You... You... Do you want me die of anger?"

Yang Ruo Lan became extremely angry! [This pig! Does he not understand what I'm saying?]

Chu Fei Ling was baffled by this.

[She has known about this trick of mine this entire time?]

He couldn't help but say in embarrassment, "Wife, you're very

nice... you didn't expose me for so many years..." [But, why did you do it today?]

"Continue speaking!" Yang Ruo Lan was completely aggravated... It seemed as if twenty-five kittens had sneaked into her heart, and their hundreds of fingernails were scratching her heart's insides.

"You... haven't you been hearing it for eighteen years?" Chu Fei Ling became awfully sad. "You just said that I'm aggravating you... Then, what do you want from me?"

Yang Ruo Lan herself became depressed on seeing her husband's depressed and grieved face... as if all of her efforts so far had been in complete vain. She controlled her urge to vomit out blood. Then, she said in a gentle and extremely patient voice, "Didn't you tell me that you and your Sworn Brother had had a long and intimate conversation after the two of you swore brotherhood? Correct?"

"Yes," Chu Fei Ling earnestly nodded.

"Then, you continue speaking from there, okay? You continue speaking what you were saying, okay?" Yang Ruo Lan looked at him as if she was about to shoot flames from her eyes. She was so angry that she felt as if her chest would explode. Then, she suddenly roared, "Okay?!"

The eyes of the guards and the palace maids in the vicinity of the imperial palace rolled back in shock with a loud buzz. It turned out that they had fainted from the shock of this roar. How could these people withstand the roar of an Emperor Level Expert?

However, Chu Fei Ling was the one to bear the brunt of this roar. He felt as if a drum and bell had rung together in his ears. He slowly came back to himself and said, "Oh, so that's what you wanted me to say... Well... Let me think..."

"Speak quickly!" Yang Ruo Lan interrupted while showing no trace of politeness. She sat upright and still. Then, she slightly

leaned forward, and assumed an attentive listening posture. But, Chu Fei Ling jumped in fright when he saw this.

"Then, it happened like this... I told him about the regrets from my past. I was indescribably sad in my heart when I had spoken till here. However, I must praise my Sworn Little Brother. He had truly sympathized with me at that time. My Sworn Brother also shed tears along with me. Ah! He is such a pure-hearted and good young man."

Chu Fei Ling sighed, "To be able to sympathize so much with someone else's sad past... It shows how kind-hearted my Sworn Little Brother is."

Yang Ruo Lan lazily pulled out the corners of her mouth. She thought, [What the hell are you talking about? You were talking about 'his' sad past which he didn't even know about. So, why wouldn't he cry? And, why are you still boasting about his kind nature and good character? You're digressing hundreds-of-thousands of miles away from the topic.] She wanted to smile after she thought this. But, she instead deeply sighed. This was because she had realized something else. And, her heart suddenly started to beat wildly at this realization...

[It must've been extremely saddening for him...]

['My Sworn Brother shed tears along with me'... So, my poor baby also cried at that time...]

"I turned my head towards him after I had finished speaking. And, I saw that my Sworn Little Brother's cheeks were streaming with tears. He was sobbing. I almost jumped out of fright when I saw this," Chu Fei Ling exposed a warm smile on his face. He then said, "My Sworn Little Brother said while crying that... he was deeply touched..."

Yang Ruo Lan turned her face. She then clenched her teeth so tight in anger that her face contorted. Then, she thought in her heart, [I'm also deeply touched... I'm so deeply touched that I want

to choke you to death...]

"Did he give you those gifts after you became Sworn Brothers... or before it?" Yang Ruo Lan sighed. She asked this question since she was very concerned about this fact.

"He obviously gave them to me after we became Sworn Brothers. My brother gave me those items as gifts on first meeting," Chu Fei Ling recalled the scene of that day, and his thoughts wandered far away. He then said with a smile, "My Sworn Little Brother is indeed a very good man..."

[I'm sure now. It was definitely him!]

Tears were streaming down Yang Ruo Lan's face like a river. But, a happy smile had bloomed on her lips. She felt as if a heavy stone had fallen off of her heart, "How is your Sworn Little Brother a good man?"

Chu Fei Ling's face was filled with gratitude. He said affectionately, "I had told him something before we became sworn brothers. I told him that his elder sister-in-law... um, that is you... has a condition of chronic chest pain. And, he had immediately taken out an elixir that could treat your chest pain when he had heard that. Moreover, this was a legendary medicine!"

Yang Ruo Lan felt as if a warm feeling had flown in her heart in a flash. Her entire body felt unprecedentedly comfortable at the moment. Her chest felt nice and cozy. It felt as if blood was rapidly flowing in her whole body. She couldn't help but cry tears of joy. Then, she thought while being in a daze, [So... so, my sickness was cured because my son was concerned about me... his mother...]

Suddenly, her heart twisted with bittersweet pain. And, she felt like crying her heart out. She seemed to be suffering extreme distress...

"Then, my Sworn Little Brother asked me my cultivation level, following which he gave me two wonderful elixirs that were even

more peerless than that one. They were pills to help us upgrade our cultivations by one whole realm... Then, he especially told me – these are for you and my elder sister-in-law... one each. My Sworn Brother seriously repeated these words again and again, and exhorted me for a long while. He made me take one of them on the spot. He then stood guard to protect me. And, I smoothly promoted my realm..." Chu Fei Ling said with satisfaction.

[Our son must obviously be concerned that our strengths were low. So, he gave them to us without a second thought... so that we won't stay weak. Those two wonder drugs were a son's filial piety.]

"Elder sister-in-law?!" Yang Ruo Lan finally responded. She glared at Chu Fei Ling as if she would shoot flames from her eyes.

"Ah!" Chu Fei Ling was baffled. He stared blankly and said, "What?"

Yang Ruo Lan stared at him as if she would eat him alive and then chew him for a long while. Then, she finally waved her hand and weakly said, "It's nothing. You go on..."

"You're acting very weird today. In fact, you're like a bewildering mystery," Chu Fei Ling muttered, "Then, my Sworn Brother saw that my saber had been damaged in the fight. So, he simply gave me a new saber. After that, he gave me a sword, and said that it was for the madam... um, that means for you... Then, I reproved him..."

"Reproved?" Yang Ruo Lan opened her beautiful eyes wide, "Why?"

"This boy was stammering for some reason at that time. He told me to give it to 'the madam'." Chu Fei Ling shook his head, and broke into laughter. Then, he calmly said, "Humph, we swore brotherhood. So, how could he call you 'madam'? He should've called you 'Elder Sister-in-law'. Therefore, I straightened him up with a strict tone and a strict appearance. He was sweating profusely because of those strict instructions... An Elder Brother

must always have the appearance of an Elder Brother."

Yang Ruo Lan opened her mouth wide. She looked at him in astonishment... In fact, it seemed as if she was looking at a strange creature.

[You're incredible... The other person doesn't address someone the way you want them to. So, you will forcibly make them do so. You are truly dignified...]

Yang Ruo Lan looked at Chu Fei Ling with 'high admiration' in her eyes.

[This man deserves to be worshipped. He swore brotherhood with his own son. There is no one like him in the entire world... No, not just in the entire world... It should be 'in the entire world through eternity'!]

[You're one of a kind.]

"You're awesome!" Yang Ruo Lan gave a thumbs-up, and stretched her thumb to Chu Fei Ling's nose. "You're fu*king awesome!"

She was happy and satisfied in her heart at this moment. She had come to know that her son had secretly given them so many good items. Moreover, every item was rare and ingenious. Happiness was overflowing from Yang Ruo Lan's heart. Therefore, she thought to joke with Chu Fei Ling for a while.

"Of course!" Chu Fei Ling seriously said, "My Sworn Brother is a heaven warping genius... But, he is still younger than me... He is still my junior."

"Don't show off so shamelessly. Just keep talking," A happy smile hung on Yang Ruo Lan's face. It made Chu Fei Ling look straight at her. He was taken aback by the quick changes in her mood. He then hastily focused his thoughts, and continued.

"Then, my Sworn Little Brother gave me two bottles of medicines with the basic function of hiding one's martial cultivation. In other

words, other people wouldn't be able to see our real cultivation level once we had taken it," Chu Fei Ling sighed. He was somewhat embarrassed, "Then, I became very embarrassed and was unable to show my face since my Sworn Brother gave me another treasured item – the Mysterious Yang Jade. Therefore, I immediately bid him goodbye, and took my leave...

"My Sworn Little Brother is a very kind-hearted man. He even comforted me before I left. Moreover, he praised our son..." Chu Fei Ling shook his head over and over. He was obviously extremely satisfied with his Sworn Little Brother.

"He... praised our son?" Yang Ruo Lan half-opened her mouth. She was dumbfounded.

...

Chapter 619: Son? Grandson?!

"Yes. He comforted me at that time, and told me that we'll find our son. He told me that our son is also perhaps a young hero," Chu Fei Ling gently chuckled and said, "Then, I said 'if only that 'puppy' of ours can be half as good as you, brother... Ah, I and my wife will have no regrets in our life if he can be even a fraction of what you are...' My Sworn Brother then comforted me, and said that our son will have boundless future prospects. Moreover, he said that our son is definitely handsome, confident, and dashing. And, that he is a promising young talent with grace and class... Girls go crazy about him when they see him..."

Chu Fei Ling said with a smile, "I clearly knew that he was saying all those things to comfort me. But, I strangely felt soothed after he mentioned those things..."

Yang Ruo Lan opened her eyes wide. She opened her small mouth, and became petrified.

Her eyebrows remained raised for a long time, while a smile had been formed on her lips. Then, the look in her eyes became even stranger. She then finally came to her senses, and looked at her husband as if she was looking at a deity. Finally, she couldn't help but bloom with a smile on her face.

[Does your son truly have boundless future prospects?]

[Oh yes, he truly has boundless future prospects. He turned over the entire Lower Three Heavens with his strength. Then, how could I say that he doesn't have boundless future prospects?]

[Will your son definitely be handsome, confident, and dashing? Will he be a promising young talent with grace and class?]

[There is no doubt in that...]

[Girls will go crazy about him when they see him?]

[I absolutely believe that. You can tell that just by looking at the

two outstanding beauties — Wu Qian Qian and Tie Bu Tian. The empress of an imperial capital was perfectly happy to give birth to his child. If this isn't being completely crazy about someone... then I don't know what is.]

[But... these words had come from his own mouth... Isn't it somewhat... funny, right?]

The smile on Yang Ruo Lan's face diffused. But, it gradually filled her entire face instead. And, she was just silently smiling from her entire face now...

[All things about him must be true. However, one more thing should be added to them – Your son is truly very shameless.]

"Your Sworn Little Brother is truly an interesting person," Yang Ruo Lan looked at her husband with a vague smile.

"The boy is indeed good," Chu Fei Ling's sworn brother was being praised. So, he felt much honored. Therefore, he replied while feeling pleased.

"Fei Ling, there is something... that I think I must tell you," Yang Ruo Lan heaved a long sigh of relief.

"What?"

"Um, our son went missing eighteen years and nine months ago, right?" Yang Ruo Lan slowly said.

"Yeah..." Chu Fei Ling sighed, "That makes me very anxious..."

Yang Ruo Lan didn't pay attention to what he said and continued, "It is said that King of Hell Chu is an abandoned child. King of Hell Chu's master — Meng Chao Ran — had adopted him... eighteen years ago"

"Eh..." Chu Fei Ling's eyes widened.

"You also know that the Empress of the Imperial Palace... that is, my junior martial sister has given birth to King of Hell Chu's son," Yang Ruo Lan started to tell him in detail. She slowly said, "It is

said that he is a carbon copy of King of Hell Chu. And, the appearance of King of Hell Chu is 80% similar to yours according to Junior Martial Sister."

"Ah~~" Chu Fei Ling opened his mouth wide.

"We can conclude from this that the King of Hell Chu that I had met back then... was a fake. In fact, I haven't met the real one," Yang Ruo Lan snorted.

"Huh...?" Chu Fei Ling's face turned a little black.

"That Sworn Little Brother of yours was also surnamed Chu. His name was Chu Yang. And, that is also the other name of King of Hell Chu," Yang Ruo Lan slowly said.

"Oh..." Chu Fei Ling's face became somewhat green.

"Therefore, we can conclude that your sworn brother is King of Hell Chu," Yang Ruo Lan pressed harder and harder.

"Eh..." Cold sweat seeped out from Chu Fei Ling's forehead.

"You had told me that you and your sworn brother seemed to have a predestined relationship, and that his appearance is 80% similar to yours," Yang Ruo Lan looked at her husband with a firm expression in her eyes.

"I..." Chu Fei Ling felt feverish. It was getting a bit fuzzy in front of his eyes. He felt a bit confused.

"You became friends with your sworn little brother for two days. And, he gave you the core of the Mysterious Yang Jade. He gave you so many wonderful elixirs that are difficult to come across. He gave you two Heavenly Armaments. And, there are only a few of those in the entire Nine Heavens. Moreover, your sworn little brother noted each and every word that you told him. He also noted the illness of your wife, and acted upon it. He did many good deeds for you. He didn't even forget to give things to your wife..."

"You and your second brother are born of the same parents on

the other hand. You two have grown up together since you both were crawling babies. But, he still wants to assassinate you.

"But, your sworn little brother gave you so many things in just two days. He gave you everything... as if he was shoving things on you lest you might not accept them... I wonder if... he gives so many things to others too..."

Chu Fei Ling's face had turned black and green. He should've dug a pit and buried himself in it if he still hadn't understood what Yang Ruo Lan was trying to imply.

"Your sworn little brother is a shrewd man. He is wise and intelligent, and can be considered the best in the young generation. He is vicious and merciless, and has a decisive conduct. Then, how could he be so devoted to a stranger?"

"He would have died 'god knows how many' times by now if he were to be that naive, right? Did he do all that... just to gain your praise? Do you think that he doesn't know... that a person's wealth arouses the envy of others? Even brothers with good terms become greedy when they see benefits in something, right? However, he took out all of his peerless and rare items in front of you? Wasn't he afraid that you might snatch them from him? Or, that you might kill him for them?"

"How was he so comfortable with you?"

"And, why did your sworn brother start to cry when he heard your story... You must know that he's a crafty, wise, and brilliant strategist, right? So, how could he be so frail on an emotional level?"

"You were together for just two days... You 'Brothers' didn't even undergo any test of emotions. And, he still gave all those things to you..." Yang Ruo Lan became angrier as she continued to speak, "Chu Fei Ling! Are you a pig?"

Chu Fei Ling was profusely sweating. He felt as if he was in an

extremely difficult situation. Sparkling and translucent beads of sweat were dangling on his eyebrows. And, those beads of sweat were then dripping onto his eyelashes. Sweat was falling down drop by drop. In fact, it was also falling into his wide open mouth. However, he seemed to be completely unaware of all this.

"You mean to say... he is... our son?" Chu Fei Ling said with a groan.

"You don't say!" Yang Ruo Lan gave him a cold and hateful look.

"Oh my God!" Chu Fei Ling sat down on the floor. His face turned into the color of a pig's liver. And, his entire body suddenly started to sweat profusely. He felt so ashamed that he couldn't show his face.

The more he thought about it... the more possible it felt. However, it wasn't just a possibility. It was a fact!

"I truly admire you. You tried to find your son for eighteen years. And, you were anxious that entire time like anything. Then, you met him with great difficulty. But, you made your 'son' your 'sworn brother'. This 'honorable' father forced his son to swear brotherhood when the son didn't want it. You pressed your son's head to make him kowtow, and forcefully made him swear brotherhood to you..."

Yang Ruo Lan shook her head and sighed, "Chu Fei Ling... I truly admire you a lot. What could possibly make you so brainless that you did these things?"

"You became Sworn Brothers with your own son... you forced him to call you 'Big Brother'. You forced your own son to call his mother 'Elder Sister-in-law'... Oh my great husband, Mr. Chu Fei Ling! There's no one like you in the entire Nine Heavens. You are unprecedented, and can never be duplicated."

Yang Ruo Lan felt like laughing after grilling him over and over.

Chu Fei Ling opened his eyes wide while being in a daze. His face

turned deathly white in a flash. Then, it immediately turned the color of a pig's liver. Then, it became miserably green. It was safe to say that his face was changing colors like a chameleon... He finally covered his face. Then, he groaned, and fell back on the floor... [I am done for!]

[I'm truly done for this time!]

[I've disgraced myself to death!]

Chu Fei Ling would've died from laughing too much if such a joke was on someone else. However, this joke was on him...

It was clearly the most embarrassing thing in the world. Nothing could surpass this.

Finally...

"That little bastard! That scoundrel! Why didn't he tell me anything...?" Chu Fei Ling abruptly jumped up. He seethed in rage, and blew his top. His appearance had also become very sinister, "He made such a big fool of me!"

"I'm afraid that he didn't say anything because you probably didn't give him a chance to do so, right?!" Yang Ruo Lan softly said.

Chu Fei Ling recalled the scene from back then. He then muttered while being extremely regretful, "No wonder... no wonder... he had hesitatingly tried to say something several times... But, I kept forcing him to become my sworn brother..."

Yang Ruo Lan became wild with rage when she heard this. Then, she firmly twisted his ear, "You still have the nerve to say this? Our son would've perhaps returned home long ago if you had given him the chance to speak... Everything is your fault! You pig-head!"

Yang Ruo Lan had realized that she would've reunited with her son long ago... if not for her husband's silliness which had delayed it for so long. She felt extremely hateful in her heart at this moment.

[Don't you know that it has been eighteen years since our son hasn't come home. I haven't seen him this entire time? I, I... his own mother doesn't know what he looks like because I haven't seen him for these many years!]

[You ugly and stupid swine...]. She almost went as far as to say this...

"He should've told me even after we became sworn brothers. It should've been very important for him to acknowledge his family and come back to the clan..." Chu Fei Ling was extremely angry as he shouted. But, he stopped in the middle of the sentence. His voice became lower and lower. He suddenly felt increasingly guilty. In fact, he even felt an increasing lack of confidence in his heart...

However, Yang Ruo Lan got furious instead, "You bastard! You just had to go and make things so complicated. You made him your sworn brother. How could he still dare to tell you? Wouldn't you have peeled his skin if he had done so?"

"I..." Chu Fei Ling couldn't continue speaking after this word. He heaved a long sigh of regret, "Sigh~~" Then, he held his head, and started to pull his hair. He squatted down, and didn't utter a word thereafter...

Yang Ruo Lan was also silent. Both husband and wife remained silent.

"Ruo Lan... this... this matter mustn't leak out." Chu Fei Ling suddenly had a thought. He then hurriedly grabbed his wife's hand, and pleaded, "If you tell this to anyone... I, I, I... I will, oh~~~ ah..."

Yang Ruo Lan felt happy and funny. But, she shook off his hand with all her strength, "Do you think that this matter can be kept a secret? We can't conceal it from your father at least, right?"

"I..." Chu Fei Ling felt like a deflated balloon, "My old father has a

big mouth... The entire Chu Clan will know... if he came to know this. And, the Yang Clan will know if the Chu Clan knew... which means that the entire Upper Three Heavens will know this. I... I'll die..."

"Humph!" Yang Ruo Lan was still outraged.

Chu Fei Ling stared blankly in a daze for a long time. He then gnashed his teeth and said, "When that little bastard comes back home, I... if I don't smack his ass, then I..."

"You will what? You will what?" Yang Ruo Lan sneered, and looked at him. Then, she stuck out her chest and interrogated in detail, "What will you do? Let me tell you, Chu Fei Ling! My son will come back. We owe him eighteen years. Eighteen long years! The consequences won't be good if you dare to even lay a finger on him."

Chu Fei Ling was completely baffled. So, he slumped down to the ground, and weakly said, "I... was just saying..."

"Even saying is off limits," Yang Ruo Lan shouted.

Chu Fei Ling groaned with a sigh. However, his eyes suddenly lit up. And, his face became flushed with excitement. "Then, wouldn't it mean that the little guy in the Imperial Palace... is our grandson... our own grandson?"

....

Chapter 620: How Can I Destroy Your Happiness!

"Do I have to tell you this as well?" Yang Ruo Lan threw a cold glance at him. She then coldly snorted. However, there was a happy and satisfied smile on her face.

Chu Fei Ling immediately stood up. He even forgot about that humiliating event from a moment ago in the blink of an eye. He then started to pace back and forth in excitement, "It means that I have a grandson? There is a descendant of our... old Chu Clan? Ha ha ha! This is... double happiness for the family."

He looked somewhat impatient as he rubbed his hands together, "Oh, by the way, I haven't properly seen my grandson... so... so... Ruo Lan, we will go and see your Junior Sister now... Eh, isn't it wrong to call her 'Junior Sister' now?"

"So, do you want to call her little sister-in-law instead?" Yang Ruo Lan asked him in a mocking manner.

"Huh~~" Chu Fei Ling's thick skin turned red. He became embarrassed, and was left at a loss. Then, he pleaded, "Could you please not mention this thing?"

"Humph!" Yang Ruo Lan coldly snorted. She wrinkled her brows and said, "It seemingly won't be that big of a problem if you want to recognize your son. But, it would be a bit difficult if you want to recognize your grandson... We will still need to think about it... we can't rush this matter."

"Huh? Why?" Chu Fei Ling was puzzled.

"You're asking why? He still isn't your good son, okay?! He doesn't have personal status yet. And, in fact... he still doesn't know that she is a woman... Or how much she has endured for him... He doesn't know that such a majestic monarch of supreme status is an unmarried girl... And, that she has secretly given birth

to his child..."

Yang Ruo Lan sighed. She became somewhat disconsolate, "Moreover, this child has an established status for his entire life now. He's the Imperial Crown Prince and the sole heir of the Iron Cloud Nation! So, how can we..."

"He must come home and recognize his clan... even if he is the crown prince, right?" Chu Fei Ling was flabbergasted, "My grandson can't always carry the surname Tie, right?"

"The important thing is... my Junior Sister doesn't want to recognize this relation," Yang Ruo Lan weakly sighed, "She doesn't want Chu Yang to know about this. Her sacrifice is pure. She had sacrificed her martial power and all her future prospects in martial arts to save your son's life. She has given birth to a child of your son. Do you want to snatch a piece of her heart from her like that?"

Chu Fei Ling blurted out, "What if we make our son marry her? Wouldn't that do?"

"Your son still doesn't know that she is a woman. So, he will move back ten-thousand steps if you tell him to marry 'him'. And, it isn't necessary that she will agree to marry even if he agrees to do so," Yang Ruo Lan gave an insightful look and sighed, "Moreover... she is the sole heir and sovereign of Iron Cloud. What would she do with such a big empire... if she gets married? This is her responsibility. Would you have thrown it all away if you were at her place?"

Chu Fei Ling lowered his head, and said in despair, "Then, are you telling me that I will have to see my grandson... carrying the surname Tie?"

Yang Ruo Lan frowned and said, "As for these matters... we must bring back our son first. We must handle things step by step. We mustn't act rashly. Otherwise, things could go in the opposite direction, and it could be disastrous!"

"Yeah," Chu Fei Ling didn't have any better option than to suppress his emotions. Both husband and wife thought about something in their hearts for a while.

However, they didn't need to go to look for Tie Bu Tian since Tie Bu Tian had come to them herself.

Chu Fei Ling and Yang Ruo Lan sat in a chair. They were looking at Tie Bu Tian who stood across from them. All of them were feeling somewhat awkward.

"Senior Sister, pardon me for I have taken the liberty to come here. I hope I didn't surprise you?" Tie Bu Tian's expression was calm and tranquil as she leisurely sat down. Then, she slowly lifted her head, and calmly looked at Yang Ruo Lan. Her expressions were natural and serene. She was bearing the elegant demeanor of the peerless emperor of this generation.

Her body language didn't have any traces of the flustered and shy attitude of a little girl that she had shown last night. Not even a bit of it could be seen now...

Yang Ruo Lan's heart sank.

Tie Bu Tian had called her 'Senior Sister'. A feeling emerged in Yang Ruo Lan's heart just by looking at the Tie Bu Tian's calm and tranquil expression. She almost didn't need Tie Bu Tian to start talking. She knew what Tie Bu Tian was about to say.

"Junior Sister... you... do you have something on your mind?" Yang Ruo Lan stuttered.

"Well, I've come especially to discuss something with Senior Sister," Tie Bu Tian calmly smiled and replied, "Tie Yang is my son, and I'm Tie Yang's father. This is the first thing."

"The second thing is that I don't want Chu Yang to know about this matter. Senior Sister might not know that Chu Yang doesn't know that I'm a woman. Moreover, there is another girl that Chu Yang deeply and faithfully loves. In fact, they both love each other

to death."

Yang Ruo Lan opened her eyes wide, "What?"

Tie Bu Tian continued, "Chu Yang never revealed his true identity to the people in the Iron Cloud for her... for the girl he loves. Wu Qian Qian is a beautiful woman. It can be said that she is the most beautiful woman of this era. She is a peerless beauty, and has unmatched elegance. This Little Sister is confident that there are only a few women even in the aristocratic clans of the Upper Three Heavens whose beauty can be compared to that of Wu Qian Qian!"

Tie Bu Tian insipidly said, "And, Chu Yang used to interact with her all the time. Wu Qian Qian had deep rooted feelings for him. But, Chu Yang never went into a relationship with her. So to say... he wasn't tempted in the least..."

She slightly smiled and said, "Chu Yang will start harboring conflicting views if he were to know about Tie Yang. And... it will probably make his life a living hell. It will be a tragedy for me, for Chu Yang, and for the girl that Chu Yang loves. This matter will be so serious that it will ruin the life-long happiness of everyone involved.

"It's because Chu Yang is a very responsible man. He seems to be crafty on the outside, but he's an unimaginably sensitive man on the inside. Moreover, I can feel that his affections towards the woman he deeply loves transcends the cycle of life and death. They are uncontrollable.

"And, I don't want such a tragedy to happen.

"Therefore, I don't want Chu Yang to know this. Chu Yang mustn't know this... whether it's for me, for Chu Yang, for that innocent woman... or even for the Chu Clan!"

Tie Bu Tian sat upright. Her figure exposed a calm and imposing air despite having a delicate appearance. She then said in a soft

voice, "Therefore, I'm asking both of you for help."

She didn't wait for Chu Fei Ling and Yang Ruo Lan to reply, and quickly added, "I can allow... In fact, I welcome you... to come here and meet Tie Yang from time to time... It won't matter even if you were to stay here every day. You can even give him Chu Clan's surname. However, he must be called Tie Yang in Iron Cloud and in the Lower Three Heavens. After all, he's the crown prince of Iron Cloud.

"My only request to you two is... to not let Chu Yang know about this. I ask you to promise me this.

"Senior Sister, please consider what your little sister has said to you. I should take my leave now," Tie Bu Tian smiled and stood up. She deeply bowed, and then walked out.

She walked confidently, and with determination.

Her floating silhouette soon disappeared outside the door.

Yang Ruo Lan and Chu Fei Ling were dumbstruck. They looked at each other in dismay.

Tie Bu Tian was a woman with persistence and perseverance. She was simply amazing. This couple had never seen such independent and strong nature.

"What to do?" Yang Ruo Lan sat almost paralyzed in the chair.

"What to do..." Chu Fei Ling deeply sighed.

"We will go to the Middle Three Heavens and look for him after our grandson becomes one month old. But, about this matter... this matter..." Yang Ruo Lan said while being disappointed and frustrated, "Should we tell him?"

"We must act upon it one step at a time..." Chu Fei Ling sighed. Both the husband and wife were sitting facing each other. They repeatedly sighed one after another... It seemed as if they were going to sigh throughout their remaining life.

Tie Bu Tian's words had shattered all the hopes, and had blocked all the paths for these two.

The meaning behind her words had been clear, [I admit that you can say that this baby belongs to your clan. You can come here, and meet him any time. You can even stay here if you want to. In fact, your entire Chu Clan can come to see this baby. I'll be fine with that.]

[But, my only request is to not let Chu Yang know about this baby.]

....

Tie Bu Tian had leisurely returned to the palace. She had barely sat down when her face suddenly started to flush. Then, deep red blood suddenly flowed out of a corner of her mouth.

She took out a pure white silk handkerchief, and covered her mouth with it. Then, she slightly coughed twice. A big swath of bloodstain appeared on the handkerchief. She then remained sitting on her emperor's seat as if she had lost all the strength in her body.

A long time passed. She then stood up, and walked to the bedside. The baby in the bed danced and gesticulated in joy as if he had sensed his mother's arrival. He exposed an adorable smile on his face as if he had been longing for his mother's embrace.

Tie Bu Tian looked at him. And, the expression in her eyes became as gentle as spring water. She then tenderly extended her hands, and carefully held her son in her bosom. Then, she looked at his small and tender face in a doting manner. The infant let out baby cries. He seemed to be hungry.

Tie Bu Tian chuckled, "Little one, you know it's time for a meal?" Then, she untied the front piece of her robe, and carefully moved her nipple close to the baby's mouth. Tie Yang immediately opened his little mouth, and started to suck. The baby looked at his

mother with his black and round eyes while consuming the milk. And, his little face filled with happiness.

Tie Bu Tian's heart filled with maternal love in an instant. A long while passed. She then lifted her vision away from her son's face, and started to stare blankly into the void. Then, she muttered, "I love you. But, how can I destroy your happiness...?"

Her voice became fainter and fainter, and gradually faded into thin air...

Then, that voice changed into a sigh.

Middle Three Heavens had become more like wildfire these days.

Mo Tian Ji had taken advantage of Meng Clan's destruction, and had launched a public propaganda. Countless terrible rumors had flown out like tides from Mo Clan, Dong Clan, and the other clans.

For example – [Ao Xie Yun has been killed by Ou Clan, Black Devil Clan, and the other clans in their alliance. They didn't even leave the corpse behind...]

[These clans' ambitions are outrageous. They want to destroy the Ao Clan, and displace it...]

The Jianghu was in chaos; the entire Middle Three Heavens was in chaos!

Xie Clan's invisible falcons were roaming everywhere during this period. They were transmitting messages which were bound for Ji Clan, Mo Clan, Dong Clan, Luo Clan, and Gu Clan...

Chu Yang had returned!

Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and everyone else had returned. All of them were in the Xie Clan at this time.

Ao Xie Yun had been saved by Chu Yang and the others. He had also returned, and was currently in the Xie Clan.

Chu Yang had passed this news to Mo Tian Ji first. He addressed Ao Xie Yun while they were waiting for a reply from Mo Tian Ji, "I

think it would be better... if we don't disclose the news of your safe return for the time being. In fact, it would be good if the news that the big clans have hunted you down is spread all around."

Ao Xie Yun deeply nodded, "I also feel the same. Ao Clan has been extremely carefree over the last few years. It needs this wakeup call to improve itself. Perhaps, my clan would leave the situation as it is if they got to know that I've returned safe and sound. The elders of the Ao Clan would cancel the plan to take revenge in that case."

He knitted his brows, "Besides, those clans have become the cancer of the Middle Three Heavens. They need to be eliminated."

Chu Yang nodded.

Ao Xie Yun had accompanied them to Xie Clan. No one else knew about this. Chu Yang had kept this news hidden since the beginning. It must be said that Mo Tian Ji and Chu Yang held the same view regarding this.

An invisible falcon came back flying a few days later, and brought an urgent message from Mo Tian Ji as expected. [No one must know that Ao Xie Yun is safe and sound.]

The handwriting was nearly illegible. It could be seen that Mo Tian Ji had written these words in an extreme hurry upon receiving the news. Chu Yang was absolutely convinced, [This invincible falcon didn't stay on Mo Tian Ji's hand for more than a breath's time.]

...

Chapter 621: Mission 'Caressing Ou'!

"Great minds think alike!" Chu Yang slightly smiled. Then, he started to ponder over it.

Clan Lord of Xie Clan – Xie Guangen – was sitting across from him. He had a serious look on his face. He said, "The Middle Three Heavens has become a boiling pot. And, it is ready to explode. But, Mo Tian Ji has seriously requested that our allied clans mustn't make the first move."

He took a deep breath and said, "This is simply torturous. We're just wasting time here... We aren't doing anything apart from hearing news every day. It's becoming unbearable."

"We naturally can't make the first move. The Ao Clan has to do that. Only then would the biggest turmoil arise in the Middle Three Heavens," Chu Yang didn't shy away from mentioning this taboo topic in Ao Xie Yun's presence, "I'm afraid that making the first move might lead to people adding criminal charges against us. It certainly won't be in our favor. In fact, it would be very detrimental to our plan."

Xie Guangen sighed, "It's not that I don't know this... However, it has started feeling more and more suffocating as its getting stretched."

"Anyway, this is Mo Tian Ji's plan. But, we have our own plans as well," Chu Yang nodded. He exposed a crazed killing intention in his eyes and said, "Xie Clan is situated in the north... in this vast stretch. And, the Ou Clan is the only other clan here. But, it has almost become like an empty city nowadays. So, we might as well uproot it first... and sweep away any possibility of future trouble by doing so."

Xie Guangen jumped in fright and said, "How can this be achieved? Didn't you just say that we mustn't make the first move?"

"Yes. But, who said that you'll be making the first move?" Chu Yang looked at him strangely.

"So..." Xie Guangen stroked his beard. He was at a loss. He glared at him, and wanted to say, [Aren't you contradicting yourself?] But then, he cared about the face of the other party, and didn't say it out loud.

"Xie Clan can't make the move. But, I didn't say that our Heavenly Armament Pavilion can't make any moves," Chu Yang mischievously smiled, "The Ou Clan had ambushed us earlier. They had almost made us die a violent death. We have such an enmity and hatred towards them. So, why wouldn't we take revenge?"

Xie Guangen smiled and said, "Minister Chu, it isn't altogether inexcusable if your Heavenly Armament Pavilion makes a move. But... pardon me for speaking so bluntly. I know that your Heavenly Armament Pavilion isn't weak. But, it isn't enough if you want to destroy the entire Ou Clan."

"Well, of course," Chu Yang said as a matter of fact, "Don't we have you people to back us up? Moreover, the Xie Clan is at the heart of the struggle. Every big clan has sent experts here in order to protect the alliance. Don't tell me those experts are just going to sit idly and look at us while we make our best efforts?"

Xie Guangen was left dumbfounded, "Do you want us to make a move or not?"

"You put on the get up of our Heavenly Armament Pavilion. You wear the mask of our Heavenly Armament Pavilion. And, you are the members of our Heavenly Armament Pavilion to anyone who sees you. So, how would that be Xie Clan's move if you do that?" Chu Yang was somewhat annoyed, [It took me so long to explain such a trivial matter.]

[This Clan Lord isn't as bright as his son.]

Chu Yang didn't know that the elders of the Xie Clan had always managed the clan. There was also an ancestor above the elders in the management. Xie Guangen was the Clan Lord... But, just to pave the way for Xie Dan Qiong to take over the clan and be the Clan Lord in the future.

Xie Dan Qiong's aptitudes had been the best in the entire Xie Clan at the time when he was born. The ancestor had personally declared that Xie Dan Qiong would be the next Clan Lord of the Xie Clan. And, Xie Guangen had gotten the complete benefit of his son's talent. That's because he had been mounted to the Clan Lord's position so as to avoid a family dispute.

"So that's how it is," Xie Guangen said with hesitation, "And, how... will we do that?"

Chu Yang wrinkled his brows, "Just follow my directions for now," He meant – [You stand a little far away, and don't speak.]

Then, Chu Yang spread the news, and all the experts assembled. Then, he issued the battle instructions. He told them to make the preparations, and asked them to get things done without delay.

The assembly of all the experts was done in a short period of time. There were thirteen Emperor Level Experts, and two-hundred King Level Experts in total. This included the external experts.

However, Chu Yang hadn't put the experts below the King Level cultivation to use.

"I'll also participate in this fight," Ao Xie Yun took a step forward, and said in a serious manner. He had already put on a mask.

"Very well!" Chu Yang straightforwardly agreed.

"Wait a minute," the ancestor of the Xie Clan — Xie Zhi Qiu — strode out of nothingness along with a loud shout. He then arrived in front of Chu Yang. The present aura of the Xie Clan's ancestor was stronger than it was the last time Chu Yang had met him. It

had become as deep as the seas, and as lofty as the mountains. It seemed that he had also made a breakthrough in his cultivation after obtaining the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal.

The ancestor looked at Chu Yang and said, "Little Brother, Xie Clan and Ou Clan have been here since ages. And, the two clans have never had friendly relations with each other. However, a battle never broke out between the clans. Do you know why?"

"Because of the Ou Clan's use of poison?" A light flashed in Chu Yang's eyes.

"Correct!" Xie Zhu Qiu nodded and said, "The Ou Clan's poison technique is the best in the Middle Three Heavens. This old man prohibits going into the battle if you don't have any means to deal with or restrain their potent poison. Otherwise, we'll be throwing away our lives instead of eliminating the enemy. Every place in the Ou Clan's courtyard is highly poisonous. And, it's virtually impossible to guard against it."

Chu Yang exposed a faint smile at first. Then, he replied with confidence, "Senior, don't worry. I've already planned for this."

He then made Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di carry two big barrels of liquor from his room. Each barrel had a weight of fifty kilograms. They staggered as they placed the barrels in front of the troops.

"This is my special detoxification wine. Everyone, drink a bowl of it. I guarantee you people that even ten-thousand poisons wouldn't be able to harm you for an entire day," Chu Yang said in a casual yet confident manner.

"Even ten-thousand poisons wouldn't be able to harm?" Xie Zhi Qiu squinted, "Let me try it."

He stepped forward while speaking. He then scooped out a bowl of that wine. He drank it all. Then, he took out a pitch-black pill from his bosom, and put it in his mouth.

"Ancestor, you mustn't!" Xie Guangen shouted. There was a

strong trace of fear in his voice.

"Don't worry!" Xie Zhi Qiu pushed him aside.

He smacked his lips after a long time, and then doubtfully said, "This Poisonous Dragon Pill is among the five most dangerous poisons of the Ou Clan. However, it seems to have lost its effect because I've drunk a bowl of this wine... What kind of medicinal wine is this? How does it taste so much like the immortal intoxication drug that is secretly made in our Xie Clan? However, our immortal intoxication drug doesn't have the property of detoxification..."

Chu Yang's face contorted. He coughed twice and thought, [This fellow is smart despite being so old. He could tell by drinking that this is the immortal intoxication drug of his clan...]

The wine in these two barrels was the same wine that Chu Yang had drunk the night he had set the treaty of alliance with the Xie Clan.

Chu Yang had out-drunk all the people of Xie Clan by himself that night. In fact, the people of Xie Clan had vivid memories of that incident until now...

The ancestor had already set the example. Therefore, the rest of the people also drank the wine without the slightest hesitation.

It could be assumed that those more than two-hundred people would've vomited on the spot... if they had known that the same wine had been drunk by Chu Yang first....

The Sword Spirit had extracted the wine, and changed its properties. However, that didn't change the fact that this wine had entered into Chu Yang's mouth, and had then gone into his belly; it had arrived inside the Nine Tribulations Space only after passing through his body...

It could be said that this wine was... in a way... Minister Chu's... vomit...

Minister Chu didn't have any other choice. They were in a hurry. Where could he have suddenly brought enough water to give antidote to over 200 people? It would have been a waste... if he had used the water from the Vitality Spring for this...

Why would he not use the two barrels full of wine that he just happened to have in the Nine Tribulations Space? Moreover... the wine's potency could make the medicinal efficacy work a little quicker...

"This old man will set into action tonight if this is the case. That Old Poison of the Ou Clan will finally have to confront me," Xie Zhi Qiu no longer had any fear of the poison of the Ou Clan. So, a heroic feeling broke out in his heart. And, he shouted as his heart filled with magnificent aspirations.

The ancestor of the Ou Clan had always stayed in a secret chamber of the Ou Clan. He and Xie Zhi Qiu were old enemies. And, both these old fogies were aware that the other one hadn't died yet. However, the moment of life and death had finally arrived!

Moreover, Xie Zhi Qiu had just broken through to become a Martial Monarch. Plus, he didn't need to fear any poison now. So, he was obviously looking down on the Old Poison of the Ou Clan.

"Everyone, so today's plan is like this..." Chu Yang drew a picture on the ground with his sword.

"We will destroy the Ou Clan at midnight!" Chu Yang told the complete plan. Then, he shouted, "My Heavenly Armament Pavilion will rise to fame in the Middle Three Heavens from tonight onwards."

"Roar!" a loud shout was issued to echo. However, it came only from Dong Wu Shang and the others.

The rest of the people only looked at King of Hell Chu with a strange look. [All of us are attacking the Ou Clan. So, why would

your Heavenly Armament Pavilion rise to fame alone?]

However, King of Hell Chu didn't give a damn about this.

[You people are making this attack, but under the name of our Heavenly Armament Pavilion. Who would know that you were the attackers after this battle? We have offended so many people in the Northern Wilderness. So, those people would inevitably try to settle an account with us. But, would those people dare to come and look for trouble... if they came to know that we had destroyed the Ou Clan overnight?]

[Also... the Heavenly Armament Pavilion will become famous after this. Wouldn't that mean that many people will come to join under our banner?]

"Tonight's operation must be quick. Moreover... we will make use of the poison of Ou Clan even though we don't fear it. Make sneak attacks. Avoid direct confrontation. Take them by surprise. Don't try to be a hero," Chu Yang's vision was flashing like electricity. He said with uprightness on his face, "Pretend to die if you come across any poison. Then, wait for the enemy to come at your side. Then, get up and kill them in one move.

"We must appear like gentle wind. We must gently caress Ou Clan's poisonous neck like a lover's hand. And, we will kill them when they tremble in the pleasure of climax."

Minister Chu righteously said, "I name this operation 'Mission Caress Ou'! Understand?"

Everybody was dripping with cold sweat from all over their bodies.

[This guy is extremely sinister. The most astounding thing is that he can have uprightness on his face and righteousness in his voice while deploying such an insidious and despicable operation.]

[He is truly a genius that has never been seen before.]

[He came up with... 'Mission Caress Ou'?]

[Who would be able to withstand... such a deadly caress?]

"Make preparations! All the troops will be dispatched after fifteen minutes. We'll break into the Ou Clan like fire at midnight. We will burn, kill, and plunder them. We will uproot the entire clan. We won't even spare fowls and dogs. The Ou Clan will no longer exist in the Middle Three Heavens after tonight."

A killing intention flashed in Chu Yang's eyes.

That very night...

The night was deep, and the sky was filled with stars. But, there was darkness all around.

The ancient castle of the Ou Clan stretched throughout this hillside. A geomancer would surely recognize that the headquarters of the Ou Clan was located on a dragon's vein if he were to arrive here. In fact, it was situated at the meeting point of a river and a mountain.

There was a small forest more than ten miles away from this castle. More than two-hundred people were gathered here in the depth of the dark night. All of them were glaring like a tiger watching its prey. Everyone was hiding in the bushes. Their eyes were brightly shining.

"Let's go!" Chu Yang waved his hand. He then hurriedly rushed out while leading the way. Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo, Rui Bu Tong, and Tan Tan followed closely behind him. They then rushed out like a cold breeze.

Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di weren't suitable for this task of leading the troops. Dong Wu Shang was too tall and sturdy. And, Luo Ke Di was somewhat lacking in this respect. So, Chu Yang and the other four had to carry out this action since they didn't have a better option.

The people behind them looked at these five rushing out. And, they all opened their eyes wide in nervousness. But then, they

started to rub their eyes with their hands, [What did I just see? How did these people disappear as soon as they rushed out?]

There was a smooth meadow in the front. The tallest plant there would barely reach to a person's calf. But, those five had rushed out wildly over the meadow. Yet, they were surprisingly silent and invisible.

Chu Yang and the others rushed seven or eight miles with a 'whoosh' sound. Their movements were indeed smooth... like the caress of a lover. Their movements were gentle and graceful. Their movements even contained tenderness and love... but, also a deadly killing intention!

The entrance of the Ou Clan's castle was close at hand.

....

Chapter 622: King of Hell's Banquet!

All those people hiding in the grove looked at the fuzzy shadows shimmering under the starlight. And, a question arose in their hearts.

[How strong are the defenses of Ou Clan's centuries-old castle?

[Chu Yang and his brothers are extremely talented in the art of stealth. However, they still can't enter the castle through the main gate. So, what kind of method will they use to sneak past the gate?]

Everyone still had suspicions in their hearts, [King of Hell has said that he has a way. But, what is this method? How will it make the Ou Clan open its main gate; especially under the current circumstances when Ou Clan is extremely vigilant? Ou Clan has tightened its defenses, and is fully prepared for a battle.]

[Maybe this method is a frontal assault...] Everyone thought of this possibility, but then discarded it at once.

[The front gate of Ou Clan's Castle might not give way even if a Monarch Level Expert were to go all-out in attack.]

Everyone was curiously looking at King of Hell Chu at the moment.

[The Ou Clan will be exterminated tonight if King of Hell Chu somehow manages to open the main gate. However, we all will have no choice but to withdraw if it can't be opened.]

There was a period of silence in the surroundings. And, it felt as if the night wind had become heavy and suffocating in this silence.

Suddenly, a mass of sword light appeared out of nowhere amidst the dark night; it illuminated the night sky. It seemed as if a desolate aura of vicissitudes had passed through times immemorial to arrive here, and had instantly engulfed the world upon its arrival.

Suddenly, the entire world changed seasons from this early autumn, and became chilly cold instead.

Then, a cold light emerged.

And, it expanded thereafter.

The sword-light fell from the sky in a transient moment... like a lightning splitting open the entire world. Even the empty void of night began to tremble fiercely in this moment.

The sword-light had spanned hundreds of feet in midair; it looked just like a dragon. It was a long dragon with a body as thick as a drum. It looked majestic. It then suddenly rushed towards the Ou Clan's main gate with earth-shattering power.

Everyone was petrified at the sight of this.

[So, the method that King of Hell Chu had mentioned about turned out to be such a barbarous attack. He went for such an extreme method — to brandish the sword and use brute force to blast open the main gate of the Ou Clan's castle.]

[This bastard had even added 'fire beacon' in his explanation of the plan. He had made us all think that he had some covert method to sneak in up his sleeve. We couldn't have expected that his plan was to burst through the gates all along. Motherfu*ker, what was the need to mention 'fire beacon' if this was your plan? Even a blind person... from 100 kilometers... can see your flashy sword-light...]

[This is nuts!]

More than two-hundred experts sighed at the same time. And, a thought arose in their heart, [Prepare to retreat. This King of Hell Chu had no plan. We thought that he had the means to pull it off. However, it appears that he was just talking big.]

[It seems that we got dragged here for nothing...]

[Damn, would Ou Clan have survived until now if the main gate

of its castle was something that could be breached with your sword alone? Wouldn't it have been destroyed 700-800 times already?]

[This is foolish!]

[Does he think that he's a Saint Level Expert?]

However, the people who had been sighing were left stunned-enough to open their eyes wide the very next moment. They then rubbed their eyes with their fingers. And, there was a look of incredible terror on their faces... as if they had seen a ghost!

[Am I dreaming or something?]

...

They saw a mass of sword-light dashing forward like a mighty wave.

However, some people on top of Ou Clan's watchtower spotted the sword-light as soon as it rose.

"Enemy attack!" there was a loud shout. And, the copper bell immediately rang up to signal the state of emergency. It began to produce a loud alarm sound. Then, a cluster of gold and silver lights appeared. And, poisonous smokes of various colors poured down in abundance.

Numerous concealed weapons and poisons instantly filled the area in a range of 500 feet in front of Ou Clan's main gate.

However, the entirety of these lights and colorful poison-smokes got overshadowed by Chu Yang's sword-light. The gold and silver lights got dispersed by the sword-light in all directions amidst the constant ringing sound of the alarm bell. And, the countless toxic smokes which had just begun to permeate vanished as well. Then, several screams sounded from above the gate tower.

The fact was that the sword-light had repelled the concealed weapons, and had sent them back flying in search of their owners.

That sword-light then shot towards the gate with the immense

momentum of a thunderbolt. And, it crashed into the main gate like a meteor.

This gate had been reinforced with steel. It weighed over 10,000 pounds. However, this sword-light left it looking like a giant that had a hole in its belly.

A large drum-shaped hole had been exposed in the gate. One could see the traces of torn steel around the hole; the torn steel had bent inward. In fact, Chu Yang had burst into the Ou Clan's castle with his sword by now.

Everyone sucked in a mouthful of cold air; [This... what kind of monster is this?]

This had been said by none other than Xie Zhi Qiu... the person that had the highest cultivation among the people present on the scene. He had opened his eyes wide in a stare, while his jaw had dropped to the floor. The look on his face was clearly stating —'what the hell'. He was extremely shocked; so much so that the shock had rendered him speechless.

Xie Zhi Qiu had received a Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal, and had finally broken through the barrier of Monarch Level to become a Monarch Level Expert. However, he asked himself at this moment, [I wouldn't be able to penetrate through the Ou Clan's main gate... even if I had a heavenly armament in my hand to supplement my lifelong cultivation.]

[But, this King of Hell Chu has pulled it off! He has even created a big hole, and rushed in.]

It wasn't long before several screams echoed from inside.

Then, a group of sword-lights appeared outside the gate. A person united with a sword came rushing. He followed closely behind King of Hell Chu, and went in. A chilling sword intention had suddenly filled the entire space as soon as this sword had appeared... In fact, it had felt as if the cold wind had started to

howl over the ground.

An orderly 'clang' sound suddenly rang in the entire world.

And, even the experts hiding in the grove were no exception.

The swords hanging on the waists of the sword wielders had begun to vibrate in unison... as if they were saluting their emperor.

This was the world principle of the Sword Way.

"Sword Emperor! Gu Du Xing — the Young Lord of Gu Clan turned out to be an extremely pure Sword Emperor! In fact, he doesn't have any impurity in his sword way!" Xie Zhi Qiu clutched his hair, and exclaimed in surprise.

However, this sword cry alerted everyone, and they all rushed out en masse.

Dong Wu Shang had already taken the lead, and had pushed to the forefront.

Ji Mo, Tan Tan, and Rui Bu Tong had also entered the gate after Gu Du Xing. Countless Ou Clan experts were frantically rushing out from the castle in order to stop the intruders.

After all, they knew that Ou Clan would be done for if they couldn't defend the gate and failed to drive out the intruders.

Chu Yang had let the Sword Spirit take control of his body during the attack on the gate. This is how he had been able to launch that violent attack. This was the reason why the move 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world' had been unleashed with full force.

A 90,000 year old ominous spiritual power had erupted as a result. Moreover, it had combined with the unstoppable incisiveness of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and the formidable power of a matchless sword move. Consequently, the resulting power was so overwhelming that it had even bore through the 10,000 pound gate of the Ou Clan like a hot knife through butter.

Chu Yang had even burst into the Ou Clan Castle with the flow of the attack along with his sword. The Ou Clan's experts had been waiting inside. However, they got slaughtered by this sword attack the moment the gate got breached.

Blood flowed like river!

An incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill was stuffed into Chu Yang's mouth immediately afterwards. The Sword Spirit waited until Chu Yang's martial power had half-recovered. Then, it quietly withdrew. And, Chu Yang regained control of himself as a result.

The experts of Ou Clan rushed over like a tide.

Chu Yang let out a loud shout, [One ray of cold light piercing ten-thousand fathoms.] The entire world filled with cold light as soon as this move was unleashed. This further stuffed the entire sky.

The bloody light was unceasingly rushing-about amidst the ringing sounds.

Then, a sword-light flashed from the side. A sharp and solid sword-energy swiftly swept past, and crashed into the crowd of experts with unstoppable momentum. Dozens of enemy's swords issued a sword cry in unison –'clang'!

Sword Emperor!

Gu Du Xing!

Gu Du Xing let out a long and loud cry. His Black Dragon Sword also let a sword cry at the same time. Then, he started to move to-and-fro in the air in a violent manner. Ji Mo and the other two also rushed over, and joined in. The five brothers joined hands. They appeared like a bunch of mad tigers. However, the Ou Clan's experts had also assembled in full force in an attempt to push them outside the gateway.

But, there would be a vast-stretch of space in case they were pushed out. And, this meant that the brothers would have to face a

multiplied intensity of pressure! Countless Ou Clan's experts were quickly rushing over from all directions. Chu Yang and the others had surely burst in. However, the situation still didn't look optimistic for them.

[This gateway is narrow. Those old monsters will still be able to exploit the terrain and block us if the Ou Clan firmly holds this place. Even two-hundred Martial Kings wouldn't be able to rush-in through here. They wouldn't be able to display their means to their full potential because of the narrow terrain. Consequently, they would only get wiped out by the enemies.]

This meant that Chu Yang quickly needed to change the present situation in his favor. After all, merely breaking-in was no victory — the real struggle would start right after bursting in.

Chu Yang and the others must hold this passage. They must keep this passage open in order to allow the experts on their side to enter the castle one by one. After all, they had only managed to complete the first step of the plan so far.

Chu Yang ordered in a loud voice. Ji Mo and Gu Du Xing immediately formed a line, and advanced forward by three steps. The brothers were attacking crazily while repulsing the enemy's attacks. And, their leader — Chu Yang — was guarding their back.

Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong sustained injuries over the course of these three steps. And, blood splashed from their bodies at the same time.

Chu Yang took advantage of this little time they had bought. He bellowed, and threw out dozens of large oil barrels from the Nine Tribulations Space with 'whoosh' sounds. Each barrel weighed several hundred pounds. The barrels loudly fell far and near, and oil flew about in all directions. Then, Chu Yang flicked his hand, and threw meteor-like sparks towards the barrels.

Boom! The flames met the oil, and a blazing fire erupted.

Bang! The raging inferno soared everywhere as a barrel exploded in the crowd of Ou Clan's experts.

"Ah! Oil barrel! Bastard, where did you take out so much oil from?"

"Damn, I got burned... retreat quickly!"

"Retreat quickly! I can't believe this! They caused such a big fire. Do they plan to rush through this fire?!"

Loud screams kept echoing unceasingly.

Immediately afterwards... Boom Boom Bang...

Several oil barrels exploded at the same time. The fire soared to the sky around the gate. And, this blocked the footsteps of the numerous Ou Clan experts who were about to charge into the gateway.

The raging flames were billowing.

Endless screams were echoing.

A grey-clad figure rushed over from the direction of Ou Clan's Inner Court at a great speed. He grazed through the air whilst issuing loud sonic booms. Then, he asked in a loud voice, "What happened?"

Several other figures emerged from the direction of the Inner Court, and rushed over.

Chu Yang strode out to greet the enemy. The Seven Yin Cold Energy surged out of his body. He wrapped himself and his brothers inside it, and advanced forward. The raging flames suddenly issued a loud hissing sound, and parted on either side to make way for the brothers. Then, the five brothers crossed through the flames with large strides.

It was as if five ominous devils had come out from the inferno whilst being wrapped in a sinister aura. Chu Yang laughed very loudly and said, "Nothing has happened. It's just that the King of

Hell wants to invite you people to a banquet. So, I request you people to join me in hell for the banquet. You can consider it a sightseeing trip. By the way... there's permanent residence available if you want. Members of the Ou Clan... please get ready for the banquet. Ha ha ha..."

The old man in grey robe coldly snorted. He dropped down from the air, and shouted, "Ignorant brat! This Ou Fang Ge shall take your pathetic life now." He then brandished his palm, and sent the wind blowing with 'hu hu' sound. A cold light flashed, and shrouded everything as a sinister energy filled the air. He had already launched the trademark Poison Technique of the Ou Clan!

It seemed as if a mass of thick fog was falling down as he landed on the ground. This thick fog was mixed with a cold light.

Chu Yang sneered and said, "A trivial First Grade Martial Emperor dares to talk big before me! Die for me!" The Nine Tribulations Sword rose up in the air and flashed. However, it didn't dodge... nor did it try to evade. Instead, the full-force of the move 'A sharp will buried deep will not change' was unleashed head-on onto the enemy!

The sword-light suddenly exploded. And, it dazzled the dim midnight sky.

... ..

Chapter 623: I Shall Turn You Into A Ghost.

What do you say?

Chu Yang's sword-light shot forth. Suddenly, a silhouette hurriedly flew-in like a gale. It had come through the circular hole Chu Yang had smashed open with the Nine Tribulations Sword.

Xie Zhu Qiu came in with the agility of a swimming fish. And, he brought a violent storm along with him.

He waved his hand, and his body got enveloped inside a bright and shiny Ice Crystal Jade Armor. He didn't stop even for a second after this; he broke into the large fire, and appeared beside Ji Mo the next moment.

A snapping sound was heard. Ji Mo had been facing the siege of three King Level Experts. Xie Zhi Qiu twisted and broke the neck of one of those three. Then, he slapped with his left hand, and the head of the King Level Expert on the right side got smashed like a watermelon. After that, he grabbed with his right hand. He ignored the threat of the incoming sword-light, and clutched the last King Level Expert's chest with his skinny fingers instead. He then pulled out that expert's beating heart.

Then, Xie Zhi Qiu swiftly swept past like a gust of wind. And, the three King Level Experts who had besieged Rui Bu Tong also collapsed like rice straws. Then, his skinny body crashed into that crowd of Ou Clan's experts like a tornado. And, he slaughtered a whole lot of them...

Whichever place his silhouette would venture towards... would eventually become an alley of blood.

Meanwhile, the grey-robed Martial Emperor had dropped down before Chu Yang from midair. And, Chu Yang's sword move 'A sharp will buried deep will not change' had already collided head-on with him.

His poisonous-fog-cloak got dispersed.

Consequently, the defensive layer of poison got destroyed by the sword-light!

That grey-robed Emperor Expert — Ou Fang Ge — gazed at Chu Yang with a look of disbelief in his eyes. Chu Yang then crashed into him with an irresistible force, and smashed his favorite sword; it must be mentioned that this grey-robed expert had treasured this sword his entire life. Then, the hand in which he had held the sword also changed into blood foams. After that, his arm, shoulder, and half body got swallowed by the sword-light. However, this grey-robed expert still had the expression of disbelief, confusion, and shock in his eyes.

After all, he had never imagined that the enemy would be able to nullify his poison technique. [This is such a highly effective poison. Even an elephant would fall down if it were to sniff it once.]

[But, this man is still alive even though his body had gotten shrouded in a cloud of this poison. In fact, he has even managed to attack me?]

[How can it be possible?]

He only repeated these words in his mind until he died — [How is this possible?!]

People were rapidly passing through that big and round hole in the Ou Clan's gate. The cold-attribute cultivation method that they had cultivated was on the stronger side for some of them. So, they were simply operating their cultivation to pass through the flames. After all, the cold attribute of their cultivation could assist them in resisting the heat of the flames. But, some Martial Kings possessed ordinary cultivation. So, they didn't have such good luck.

However, this group of experts knew that this was a very rare and golden opportunity for them.

Every clan had been making preparations in secrecy, but none

had made a move yet. However, the Ou Clan had never anticipated that their clan would be the first one to get attacked under such circumstances. Therefore, they had neglected to take enough precautions. And, this meant that they could be attacked and defeated with relative ease.

These attackers couldn't miss this opportunity today. After all, breaking through the Ou Clan's main gate would be as difficult as ascending to heavens the next time.

Moreover, who knew whether King of Hell Chu's detoxification wine would still be left or not by that time? Also, couldn't the Ou Clan research and develop some poison that could to cope up with the detoxification quality of this wine? No one could afford to take that risk...

Therefore, they needed to go all-out tonight.

Consequently, these ordinary King Level Experts would endure the burn from the flames as they'd dash into the large fire. They'd then rushed out from the flames with their bodies ablaze. Then, they'd roll on the ground in order to extinguish the flames. After that, they'd break into the enemy's ranks despite the fact that their bodies had gotten covered with blisters.

They were advancing towards victory... step-by-step.

Not many of the Ou Clan's experts were left in the gateway-area by the time half of the over two-hundred experts had entered.

Long shouts were constantly coming through. Ou Clan's people were rushing over from all the directions. Chu Yang and Xie Zhi Qiu were also rushing forward like sharp arrows along with their troops. They'd kill everything in sight wherever they went...

Ou Clan had apparently come to terms with the fact that the enemy had already broken through the gate. So, they gave up defending the gate. Instead, the Ou Clan's experts turned towards the same direction amidst the mournful cries and screams —

towards the Main Building of the Ou Clan.

It was the heart of the Ou Clan!

The best military strength and the top experts of the Ou Clan were present here. Even the entirety of their wealth was stored here.

Everything was here!

Hundreds of people gathered in the square that was located in front of the gate. And, an increasing number of people were unceasingly rushing towards this place. None of these people had spoken anything. They were merely looking at this avenue in silence.

Poison had been sprinkled on all the paths leading to this side. Even the roofs were no exception. In fact, it could be said that a cloud of poison had filled the entire sky above the Ou Clan.

It was now the break of dawn. But, it was still dark here since the poisonous fog had become increasingly dense. In fact, the sky seemed even gloomier than it had in the pitch-darkness of the night before.

The Ou Clan's clansmen unleashed their entire inventory.

These poisons could suffocate a person to death once they penetrated their skin... And, this was true for even the lowest level of poisons among them. In fact, the majority of them were so powerful that even a little bit of them could leave the entire body to fester until rot.

The poisonous clouds that were hovering there were similar to a kind of plague. But, these poisons were a hundred times more malicious than a plague.

Lets presume that the entirety of the Ou Clan's poison was gathered and released in a densely populated area... It could be said that no trace of life would be left within the radius of several thousand miles of that previously densely populated area.

Nothing would be left... Not the livestock, birds, and animals... And, not even the trees, plants and flowers!

In fact, the area within the radius of a thousand miles would remain barren for a hundred years. No living thing would be born there!

Coping with only a little more than two-hundred people was overkill if one had such weaponry at hand. It was like using a sledgehammer to crack a nut.

However, the people of the Ou Clan were still uneasy in their hearts. They were looking at that spacious avenue. And, they were frightened, and somewhat at a loss. It seemed that their confidence had been sucked out from them.

It was because they knew that the poisonous defense laid out in the direction of the castle's gate was a lot stronger than the one present here. Moreover, that was the direction from which the enemy had broken through...

However, this hadn't caused any casualties in the enemy's ranks...

[Is it possible that they aren't afraid of poison?]

Many people of the Ou Clan had thought of this possibility. And, this thought had smashed their belief in their poison.

Poison was Ou Clan's backbone. It was also the base of their morale.

They used to run amuck in the Middle Three Heavens owing to their use of poison. After all, no one could withstand it. Therefore, there was no one who wasn't afraid of it.

In fact, Ao Clan would also back down to some extent because of their poison. This was the reason why the Ou Clan was able to expand more and more. And, this was the reason why it was able to accumulate an increasing number of Emperor Level Experts in its ranks.

Xie Clan wasn't too inferior to Ou Clan. But, it still had only six Emperor Level Experts, while the Ou Clan had nine!

And, their poison was the reason behind all of this.

In fact, the Ou Clan would've had less-than-half the experts if it hadn't frightened the Middle Three Heavens with its poison.

No one dared to kill anyone from the Ou Clan. This was everyone's attitude towards Ou Clan. After all, one would have to face thousands of experts that were good at poison techniques if one dared to kill anyone from the Ou Clan. And, who could dare to take such a big risk?

However, this bunch of attackers didn't seem to be fearful of their poison in any way.

This was equivalent to a blow to the head for the Ou Clan. It had shattered the biggest pillar of the Ou Clan's support. It had shattered their fantasies. And, it had taken away their most powerful mental support.

An increasing number of Ou Clan's experts gathered. They gradually formed a scale of over a thousand people in front of the Ou Clan's main building. And, people still kept on coming from afar. Everyone seemed to have a tacit understanding since they had arranged themselves in an orderly fashion in accordance with their positions and ranks in the clan.

All the guards spontaneously lined-up in a defensive formation.

More than a thousand people were standing still in the morning breeze. And, that number slowly increased to over two-thousand people with the passage of time...

A great many human figures had made a battle formation in a distant location. And, all of them were silently looking at this side with rapt attention; these people were the low-level warriors of the Ou Clan.

All experts under the Martial Great Master level were standing in

that distant location.

And, only the experts above Martial Great Masters were standing on this side.

Three old men were standing at the forefront. Their white beards were fluttering in the wind. They were standing there with a firm and cold complexion on their faces. They were the three remaining Emperor Level Experts of the Ou Clan.

Five out of the Ou Clan's nine Emperor Level Experts had been killed by King of Hell Chu in the battle in the Chill Wind Forest. And, the sixth one had died in battle today.

However, these remaining three Emperor Level Elders didn't know that the Emperor Expert who had died today had also killed by King of Hell Chu.

Thumping sounds of footsteps were heard; they seemed to be coming from a distance at a gradual pace. However, the murderous aura brought along with them had left the army of thousands to shudder. The sounds were slowly coming over... step by step... It seemed as if innumerable giant ancient creatures were coming over.

The sound of the approaching footsteps made it seem as if their aura was closely packed in the air.

Sweat was already seeping out of the palms of the three Emperor Level Elders. Their forehead was also somewhat soaked in sweat.

They could tell from the sound of these footsteps that these attackers' strength hadn't suffered in this battle.

This also showed that the enemy wasn't afraid of poison.

The sky above the main building of the Ou Clan was filled with dense clouds of poison. But, the three Emperor Level Elders sighed as they saw this. And, a feeling of despair rose in their hearts.

Their Clan Lord and the Young Clan Lord had gone to capture Ao

Xie Yun along with three-hundred experts of the clan. And, they hadn't returned yet. Moreover, King of Hell Chu had maliciously killed thirty of their King Level Experts in the Chill Wind Forest. In fact, he had even slain five of their Emperor Level Experts there.

Ou Clan's strength was very low at present. In fact, it was less than one-fourth of its initial strength. There were still over two-thousand people at this side. This might seem to be a lot, but these three Elders knew that there were only a few King Level Experts among these three-thousand. A very small section of the rest consisted of Revered Martial Artists. And, the overwhelming majority consisted of Martial Great Masters.

These three elders had considered the strength of their enemy, and had realized that they had fallen in a state of complete disadvantage.

"Does the Ancestor know about this?" one of the old men licked his dry lip, and asked.

The Great Elder remained silent for a while. Then, he replied, "Ancestor already knows. But, he hasn't come out yet..."

"Ancestor is a ninth grade Martial Emperor. These enemies won't stand a chance if he decides to show up. I only hope... that the Ancestor doesn't come out too late."

The Great Elder didn't say a word in response. He knew that his brother was just emboldening, [Ancestor is a ninth grade Martial Emperor. And, the enemy doesn't have an equally strong expert to match him... However, he would exhaust himself to death if he were to deal with so many people by himself...]

The sounds of footsteps were getting more and more distinct amidst the thick fog.

Suddenly, that thick fog of poison seemingly disappeared in a flash. And, a man in black clothes appeared in the front in an awe-inspiring manner.

The fog of poison disappeared wherever he passed through... as if thin snowflakes were being exposed to the blazing sun.

His eyebrows were sharp like swords. His eyes were shining like stars. His face was like jade with bright red lips; he was magnificently tall and handsome. A sword was hung on his waist. And, the black clothes he wore looked like clouds as they fluttered in the wind.

A handsome youngster had appeared from that vanishing fog of poison.

However, there was a vast and endless murderous aura in this youngster's eyes.

He trod on the poisonous fog as if it was nothing. Then, he raised his eyes, and stared at the Great Elder's face with his sword-light-like sharp gaze.

"King of Hell Chu?!" The Great Elder was shocked.

The Great Elder had obviously seen Chu Yang when he had visited the Ou Clan earlier. In fact, he hadn't just seen this youngster; he had also formed a deep impression of this youngster.

"Great Elder, time has passed quickly. And, we meet again," Chu Yang said in a very soft and gentle voice. A faint and warm smile was hung on his face. He seemed like a newly-wed son-in-law who had brought his wife to her parents' home. His voice was gentle, and his complexion was tender. He was seemingly overcautious, and a bit shy. However, the words that he spoke at this point were opposite to his shy and bashful appearance, "Great Elder, your demeanor is still like that of a senile ghost. And, it's fun to look at."

He faintly smiled, and then politely said, "Great Elder, I've especially come here to turn you into a real senile ghost this time. What do you say? Doesn't it feel ecstatic...? Like it's a dream come true?"

...

Chapter 624: Are You Watching?

"King of Hell Chu, have you come to deal with our Ou clan this time?" The Great Elder angrily said, "How dare you?!"

Chu Yang gently smiled and said, "Only your Ou Clan can speak such nonsense, right? My Heavenly Armament Pavilion has attacked your castle. And, you still aren't sure that I've come to deal with you?"

He said while taking pity on the Great Elder, "I wonder how low your IQ is..."

"You!" The Great Elder became so angry that his frosty-white eyebrows trembled. However, he took in a long breath, and suppressed the anger in his heart. He then said, "King of Hell Chu, I agree that our Ou Clan handled the matter of that day very injudiciously. We've offended you, and so... you've come back to take revenge. This is understandable. However, you've already killed so many people of our Ou Clan. You've even broken into our castle. All of this must be enough to settle scores even if you have a thousand kinds of enmity towards us, right? Besides, your side hasn't suffered any loss or casualty..."

His dead fish-like eyes seemed to have a gentle look in them at the moment. He then slowly said, "King of Hell Chu, this humble man guarantees you that we'll let bygones be bygones if you withdrew at this point. We and your Heavenly Armament Pavilion will mind our own businesses thereafter. What do you say?"

The Great Elder's words caused uproar in the hearts of the Ou Clan's people.

The Great Elder had always been strong in his stance. So, these people found it hard to imagine that he would show such weakness in front of the enemy. In fact, this had ruined the Ou Clan's reputation.

However, the Great Elder was also helpless in this matter. Only one person from the enemy's side – King of Hell Chu – had revealed himself from the poison fog so far. Therefore, the Great Elder didn't know how many other experts could be hidden in the shadows. Moreover, the Ou Clan had truly fallen in a disadvantageous situation in today's fight. So, it would be considered as avoiding a catastrophe if he somehow managed to convince King of Hell Chu to withdraw. After all, he could still kill King of Hell Chu in an extremely miserable manner in the future if he was able to avoid this tragedy today.

He had surely been forced to take it lying down. However, it was also his delaying tactic. Therefore, he had to endure humiliation in silence as part-and-parcel of an important mission as the senior-most governing figure of the clan.

Besides, their old ancestor hadn't shown up yet. Therefore, he could at least waste some time by engaging the enemy in a conversation even if the enemy was unwilling to withdraw. Moreover, their chances of winning this battle would increase by a significant margin if their ancestor came out during this time.

Chu Yang gently chuckled and said, "Great Elder, you're joking, right? We certainly have some kind of misunderstanding between us. But, it's obviously important to clear this misunderstanding. And, it must be done at once; and be done with. As they say... 'It's better to squash enmity than keeping it alive'. A friend is like a road, and an enemy is like a wall. So, one must learn to be tolerant and forgiving. One must learn to let go. One should spare people where it's possible to let them off... Great Elder, you're truly very wise and farsighted."

The Great Elder's facial expression became splendid as soon as these words came out of Chu Yang's mouth. After all, the other party had fallen into his trap so nicely... that it had even made the Great Elder gob-smacked.

However, Chu Yang had seen through the intentions of the

enemy. It was obvious that this Great Elder was stalling for time. But, it just so happens... that Chu Yang himself wanted to stall for time. So, he and the Great Elder had hit it off like an adulterous husband and an immoral wife.

The Great Elder again wasted time here. He had no other choice but to keep wasting time until the Ancestor showed up. However, Chu Yang had already made some countermeasures to deal with that situation. After all, Xie Zhi Qiu was all-set to go all-out whenever needed. So, it would be no big deal even if that old foggy were to come out.

However, Ou Clan didn't have any other reinforcements or military forces. So, Chu Yang had no fear in that regard.

But, the real reason why he was stalling for time was the fire that he had started. After all, his two-hundred experts had rushed out of that raging inferno. The people with cold attributes had fortunately tolerated it. But, seventy-to-eighty King Level Experts had gotten burned to varying degrees.

He had set fire to so much oil at once that the temperature had risen to that of lava in a split second...

Everyone was wounded. So, their overall strength had been affected. Therefore, too much unnecessary damage would've been caused if they were to face so many enemies so soon.

However, the Great Elder didn't know about this.

The Great Elder only wanted to stall for time. And, Chu Yang wanted to exploit this! Gu Du Xing and the others were mixing three incomplete versions of Nine Tribulation Pills in a large bowl at this moment; this bowl contained the Vitality Spring Water. Everyone would then drink it to recover their health... In fact, this would work regardless of whether they had been burnt or wounded! Basically, these people were making the best use of this time by healing their bodies...

It must be said that such time of respite was rare to come across amidst an ongoing battle.

"Then... does that mean that King of Hell Chu will... stop here?" The Great Elder tried his luck, and probed.

"Stop? Oh, I'll obviously stop," Chu Yang repeatedly nodded, "We don't have the enmity of killing fathers or snatching wives between us... You tell me... Isn't that right...? Moreover, you're so old Great Elder. I'd have no interest... even if you were to make me snatch your wife... After all, I won't be able to lay a hand on her anyway... Isn't that right? Therefore, it would be better if we clear out this misunderstanding. Great Elder can consider giving me some compensation. And, I'll turn around on my heels, and walk away in that case. In fact, I won't have any complaints whatsoever once I've been compensated in full."

"What compensation do you want?" The Great Elder couldn't give a thought to becoming angry at this time. So, he hastily asked. Then, he thought, [You don't want to have the hatred of snatching wife with me? Well, I had sacrificed my wife long ago in order to build this 'Five Deadly Poisons Body' of mine. She is buried deep. So, you'll have to first die if you want to snatch my wife...]

"Let me calculate..." Minister Chu looked up to the sky. Then, he calculated with a serious face, "Your Ou Clan first deceived me, and then ambushed me... and then again... caused me some losses. You've caused me emotional loss, loss of my youth, and loss of my items. You made me so angry that it harmed my liver. You made me depressed... which harmed my heart. It affected my beautiful face... and therefore affected my chances of picking up girls..."

He started to state his losses in a series, and told about thirty to forty losses. Meanwhile, the Great Elder was burning with impatience in front of him as he listened to him. In fact, he wanted to choke this youngster to death right now. But, the present situation was such that he was inferior to this boy. So, he had no other choice but to endure all of it. Therefore, he listened to all of

it with a smile...

[I don't care what this bastard says as long as I can trick him. After all, I'm going to roll this kid between my hands, and flatten him up at later time. In fact, it can't even be said what I'd do to this guy...]

Chu Yang was incessantly counting his losses. But then, Gu Du Xing softly coughed from behind and said, "It's done."

Then, Chu Yang finally stopped. He took a long breath and said, "Just these. It would be good if you compensated me for just these things. I'm not asking too much, you know. Just try to put yourself in my shoes, and you'll understand."

"What do you want as compensation?" The Great Elder restrained his anger. However, rage was flickering in his eyes.

"It's very simple. I want the members of your Ou Clan to commit mass suicide. Then, you can hand over this domain to me. Then, we'll be even," Chu Yang faintly smiled, "What do you say?"

The Great Elder's entire body shivered. And, his eyes almost popped out of their sockets. He then clenched his teeth, and said while stressing on each word, "You're playing tricks on me?!"

"Excellent!" Chu Yang clicked his fingers. Then, his face beamed with a smile as he said, "You're truly a talented child."

The Great Elder glared at Chu Yang in anger... as if he would crack his head open. He breathed heavily in rage... as if he had asthma. Then, his entire body started to inflate with anger, and slowly bulged up. And then, it suddenly exploded as he shouted, "Son of a bi*ch!"

"Don't call out your name so loudly," Chu Yang sincerely and genuinely instructed him, and said, "These aren't good manners. Others will abuse your father."

"Die!" The Great Elder lost all his senses in anger. And, his tall figure pounced towards Chu Yang. He hadn't arrived near Chu

Yang yet. But, his flying body was issuing a world-shaking sharp whistling sound in midair.

"Go back!" Two men's shadows flashed. Two Emperor Level Experts had come out flashing from the grey fog behind Chu Yang. They met the Great Elder.

Then, a thick fog billowed, and two-hundred experts quietly appeared. All of them were dressed in black, and had worn a fierce-looking mask.

Two 'bang' sounds echoed. The Great Elder took a sharp turn, and retreated. Then, he looked at the two-hundred people in front of him in bewilderment. He was astonished to find that even the lowest among those experts was a first grade Martial King.

[From where did King of Hell Chu find so many experts?]

"These... are all of these the men of your Heavenly Armament Pavilion?" the Great Elder's eyes flickered as he asked.

"Of course! Where else would they be from if not from the Heavenly Armament Pavilion? Do you think that they are from your Ou Clan?" Chu Yang curled up his lips, and said while grinning, "Surrender and commit suicide. Be obedient."

The Great Elder's feet staggered as he felt hopelessness in his heart.

The Ou Clan's crowd issued several cries in alarm behind him. In fact, a commotion had been created amidst their ranks.

[The enemy's battle formation is that strong?]

Chu Yang coldly swept his vision around. The killing intention in his eyes was gradually getting more and more intense. Then, he finally waved his hand, "Attack! Kill all of them! Not a single one should remain."

The two-hundred experts set into action as soon as Chu Yang issued the order.

All of them rushed towards the Ou Clan's troops. War-cries rose up from all directions. Saber-lights and sword-shadows flickered here and there. And then, pitiful screams echoed...

The Great Elder stood in a daze opposite to Chu Yang. He kept looking at this army of mysterious enemies which was rushing straight through the 'Ten Thousand Poisons Great Array' his clan had laid out with painstaking effort. However, he saw that the poisons didn't have any effect on them. And, he agonized in his heart as a result.

[The Ou Clan is done for.]

This thought rose up in the Great Elder's mind. Consequently, he felt an increasing discomfort in his heart.

"I only want to ask one thing..." The Great Elder smiled in grief, "Why doesn't the poison affect you?"

"It's very simple. Our constitution is good," Chu Yang smiled back.

The Great Elder knew that Chu Yang wasn't going to tell him the truth. So, he heaved a deep sigh, and shouted all of a sudden, "Ancestor! Please come out quickly! Ou Clan is done for. Ou Clan is done for..."

His voice spread far and wide like a thunderclap. There was sorrow and despair in his voice. Everyone could feel it.

The Great Elder knew that the Ancestor must've been aware that such a big thing had happened. Moreover, he was certainly watching all of this from the sidelines. And, the Great Elder's heart had filled with more and more grief because of this.

[How can Ancestor watch his own clan being destroyed... and not do anything about it?]

Battle cries were still echoing. And, Ou Clan's people were still collapsing one by one. There was a great difference between a group of Revered Martial Artists and Martial Great Masters, and a

group of King and Emperor Level Experts. In fact, the difference couldn't be measured.

The Great Elder finally threw himself into the fighting area. However, he had set into action in grief and indignation.

He wanted to find King of Hell Chu. He wanted to kill this main culprit first. But, he couldn't reach to King of Hell Chu's side amidst the besiegement. He could only look at that goddamn bastard sneakily while carrying out his plots nonstop. So, he looked-on as Ou Clan's clansmen fell into King of Hell Chu's hands one by one.

Ao Xie Yun was killing in the most crazed manner. He had worn the mask of Heavenly Armament Pavilion, but he had the red eyes of a killer! In fact, he'd shout in his heart every time he'd kill a man. [Revenge! This is my revenge!]

He felt more and more bitterness in his heart. He felt more and more hatred in his heart. He was dashing on bravely with no thoughts of personal safety. And, he was only looking for enemies to kill.

The faces of Du Qing Yun and Qin Zhan had emerged in front of his eyes. Moreover, there was still care and concern in their eyes.

[Uncle Du, Uncle Qin — I'm avenging you two! Are you watching?]

Ao Xie Yun was madly killing the enemies. But, his heart was aching. Suddenly, his cheeks streamed with tears...

"Are you watching? Are you watching?" Ao Xie Yun suddenly looked upwards, and roared. He was moving unhindered with tears in his eyes, "I'm taking revenge for you! Revenge! Revenge..."

Ao Xie Yun was drenched in blood. He flew up, and crazily cleft the enemy who was coming from the right into two halves. He then again slashed his sword across the enemy's waist. His sword chopped him into fine pieces like vegetables, and reduced him to

dust. He then raised his sword, and suddenly shouted out loud. Then, he started to cry. But, it was the cry of heartbreak; tears and nasal mucus started to overflow his face.

His was slashing his sword around, and killing the enemy while crying.

[I hate this. It feels very painful... because, you can't see it... even if I kill all of these enemies ... you can't see it...]

...

Chapter 625: I'll Come Up if You Don't Come Down!

Suddenly, a sinister voice was heard in the midst of the chaos, "Bastards, where did you come from? You've dared to act atrociously towards my Ou Clan?!"

This voice was malicious. It seemed as if it had come out with a rotten breath. In fact, it could raise an urge to throw up in the hearts of listeners.

It seemed as if a swamp viper had coiled its body to conceal itself.

The battlefield suddenly became quiet. Everyone stopped fighting at the same time by chance. Then, all of them raised their heads to look up.

Xie Zhi Qiu calmly took a few steps forward, and stood next to Chu Yang.

No one among the people present there knew how sly, cruel, and dreadful this old Ancestor of the Ou Clan was; Xie Zhi Qiu was the only exception.

Ou Ke Feng was a dreadful opponent!

He was as timid as a rabbit. But, he was also as sly as a fox and as cruel as a wolf at the same time. He was the kind of man who would flee as soon as he found himself in a crisis. And, he would commit all manners of crime if he felt that he would be able to suppress the enemy. He would even torture the enemy before giving them a slow death!

He had once killed a person in eighty-one days! No flesh was left on the person's body by the eighty-first day. And, blood had been drained off his body. However, that man had somehow been kept alive. Then, the Ancestor had shoved his fingers into his throat, and choked him to death.

Inside the battle...

Xie Zhi Qiu was dressed in black, and was wearing a mask. But, he had only displayed the strength of a King level Expert so far; he hadn't dared to reveal his true strength in the fight.

It was because he knew that Ou Ke Feng would only look from sidelines while the entire Ou Clan got destroyed if he exposed his true strength... After all, Ou Ke Feng wouldn't come out to take the risk in that case.

And, Ou Ke Feng could turn out to be limitless trouble in the future in case he ran away today. After all, such an enemy would remain hidden in the shadows. And, he would be able to launch an attack at any time with his superb poison techniques and world-shaking mysterious powers. Consequently, he would be a big headache for the Xie Clan. Moreover, they wouldn't be able to do anything about it.

So, there was no other choice but to make him come out first.

Xie Zhi Qiu could obviously sense that a divine sense was scanning the entire battlefield thoroughly... as if looking for something and scrutinizing something... Therefore, Xie Zhi Qiu had restrained his aura even more cautiously.

However, Ou Ke Feng had finally confirmed that nobody was a threat to him among the enemies on the scene. So, he had arrogantly jumped out at this time.

Two-thousand people had been stationed at the entrance of Ou Clan's main palace hall before the battle. However, only seven-hundred to eight-hundred of them had remained by this time.

However, Ou Ke Feng obviously didn't care about that.

The Great Elder and the others of the Ou Clan heaved a sigh of relief, [The ancestor has finally set into action. There have already been many casualties. However, we would at least be able to retain Ou Clan's roots now.]

A man in a grey robe could be seen on the main hall's rooftop under the morning sunlight. His silhouette could faintly be seen swaying in a gentle manner as he stood there. His pupils were the size of mung-beans. He issued a poisonous glint from his eyes. The look in his eyes seemed to be cruel and callous.

He could make anyone's heart feel a chilling sensation with a glance!

The least bit of living aura couldn't be sensed from his body. In fact, it seemed as if an ancient zombie had suddenly appeared in this world.

He seemed completely devoid of emotions as well...

He didn't even have any sentiments towards his clansmen... his own descendants! He was an extremely selfish man.

He had surely come out. But, he was still standing at a very high place. He was an arrogant man. However, he was looking down with discerning eyes... In fact, it could be assumed that this guy would escape to faraway places in case the situation went out of hand.

"Think of a method to make him come down," Xie Zhi Qiu didn't dare to raise his head as he whispered. After all, Ou Ke Feng might recognize him if he raised his head. And, even the shadow of this Ou Ke Feng would disappear in the blink of an eye if that happened...

Chu Yang nodded. He looked up at Ou Ke Feng, "Where did this freak-show come from? He looks like a weird creature..."

"You audacious brat! How dare you insult our ancestor like that?!" Ou Clan's Great Elder angrily shouted.

"He is your ancestor?" Chu Yang showed an expression that made it seem as if everything had become clear to him in a sudden flash of insight, "No wonder! No wonder your Ou Clan's people look neither like humans nor like ghosts. I've finally understood

things!"

"Kid, you're dead!" Ou Ke Feng looked down at Chu Yang from above with sinister vision as he said in a ruthless manner.

"Dammit! You'll scare me to death," Chu Yang spat saliva with 'poooh' sound. Then, he waved his hand and said, "Why is everyone just watching from the sidelines? Set into action without delay, and finish the work for today. Butcher all of these people. Then, we all will go back after setting everything on fire. As for this old weirdo... let him stay up there."

"Kill!" Gu Du Xing burst into loud laughter. Then, he slashed his sword. The sword light wound around seven or eight people, and all of them got cut into halves before they could even scream.

After that, Dong Wu Shang, Ao Xie Yun, and the others also set into action.

Tan Tan shouted while fighting, "I'm just letting go of my hand, and these people are dying. Damn, why do I have a feeling that I'm killing chickens? However, I feel no qualms about killing these people after seeing that old tortoise up there... Every fu*king person says that I'm ugly. But, I feel that I'm very handsome now that I've seen this old bastard... I rarely get such satisfaction. It's so refreshing..."

Ou Clan's people kept on collapsing on a large scale. The Great Elder and the others were hatefully looking at this. But, Ou Ke Feng tightly wrinkled his brows on the roof. He chuckled and said, "You want to enrage me so that I get down? And then, you would kill me? I won't fall into your trap! I won't get down!"

An Emperor Level Expert of the Ou Clan had been fighting with Dong Wu Shang. That expert couldn't help but vomit out a mouthful of blood on hearing this. He had already received internal injuries under Dong Wu Shang's savage attacks. So, he became extremely desperate and hopeless when he heard his own ancestor saying these words. He couldn't bear this blow to his

psyche. So, he spouted blood, and lost a lot of his vitality in the process.

Dong Wu Shang let out a loud shout, and jumped over fiercely. Then, he cleft this Emperor Expert into two with his saber. Then, he rushed to another side of the battlefield without batting an eye while dragging his heavy saber along.

The battle circle was constantly shrinking. Ou Clan was suffering more and more casualties. On the other hand, only four or five of the black-robed people had died. There was a great disparity of power among the two parties.

Only two Emperor Level Experts were left now. Both of them felt as if they were in an extremely difficult situation as they faced the besiegement of the Eight Emperor Level Experts. In fact, both of them were crying for help.

Ou Ke Feng stood up, and then sat down. He then again stood up, and again sat down. He wanted to go down, but he clearly felt that it could be risky. Therefore, he was hesitating over what move to make.

It must be said that he didn't wish to see his descendants die miserable deaths even if he was cold-blooded and cruel. However, his keen instinct was telling him that there was a great danger down below. And, it was telling him that he mustn't go down.

He had always been a cautious man. Therefore, he hadn't gotten down despite being worried. He was just sweeping his jack-o'-lantern like eyes around. After all, he wanted to spot that so-called potential danger...

The Great Elder finally gave up all hopes.

Chu Yang wrinkled his brows. He secretly cursed in his heart, [This bastard is extremely calm. His entire clan will be exterminated soon. How can he still be so indifferent? What should I do to force him to come down?]

The reason why Chu Yang had insisted on fighting this battle and exterminating the Ou Clan first wasn't the enmity between Ou Clan and his Heavenly Armament Pavilion.

After all, he could take the revenge ten years later too; Chu Yang had never lacked patience.

However, he knew that the Ou Clan was an enormous threat. And, it was impossible for people to guard against their poison in an effective manner.

Ao Clan had also been wary of this clan since they were so proficient at using poisons.

Mo Tian Ji's tactics had already created chaos in the Jianghu. The news of Ao Xie Yun being hunted down had spread. And, the entire Jianghu was on the verge of exploding. But, none among the many parties involved had made any move.

And, it was precisely because of the Ou Clan.

After all, not everyone was as fearless as Chu Yang when it came to poisons. Not even a Monarch Level Expert could stand a chance against these poisons. Therefore, Ou Clan could create a terrifying situation if it wasn't uprooted. And, that situation would be hard to withstand for all the clans.

Ou Clan's military force wasn't dreadful. However, their poison surely was!

All this chaos in the Jianghu wouldn't cause any serious damage if Ou Clan wasn't exterminated. And, all of it would be for naught. And then, the Ao Clan would also have no other choice but to take out their anger on the other clans...

Therefore, Chu Yang had made a prompt decision after knowing the situation of the Jianghu... He had formulated this plan to destroy the Ou Clan.

However, it would undoubtedly be troublesome if Ou Ke Feng didn't come down.

And, it would be a headache for all great clans if he managed to run away.

Chu Yang rolled his eyes as he made a decision in his heart. Then, he shouted, "You guys get done with the people down here. And, I'll handle that old bastard up there."

[You're not getting down. But, do you think that I can't come up?]

[I'll get the chance to catch him only if I get close him. Otherwise, how would I be able to catch him if one of us stays up there and the other stays down here?]

[One can't catch a tiger's cub without entering the tiger's cave.]

Xie Zhi Qiu jumped in fright. He hastily said, "What are you doing? Don't take such a big risk."

"You don't move. He'll run away if you move," Chu Yang said in a whisper, "I too don't want to face this old monster alone. But, this is the only way to get to him. This fellow is too timid and cold-blooded... His descendants are getting killed. His family estate is ruined. But, he has still kept his composure... However, he wouldn't run away if he finds out that I'm only a King level Expert, right?"

"But, he can kill you!" Xie Zhi Qiu snorted. He lowered his head and said, "It's too risky. I still feel that you shouldn't go up."

"Relax," Chu Yang collected his robe, and tucked it in his waist. Then, he raised his eyes, and looked up.

"Just be very careful!" Xie Zhi Qiu had lowered his head as he said solemnly.

Chu Yang nodded. Then, he let out a long and loud shout, "Old bastard! You won't dare to come down, right? Then, this Young Master is coming up to play with you."

Then, his silhouette flew straight up like a meteor. He used his

martial power twice to leverage support in midair, and landed far away opposite to Ou Ke Feng.

Ou Ke Feng cruelly smiled, "Fu fu fu... Kid, you're the mastermind behind all this, right? You have such rare courage. So, this Ancestor will indulge you today."

He took a broad view all over, and found that everyone down there was engaged in fighting. Apparently, there wasn't any special expert hidden among them. So, Ou Ke Feng finally felt relieved in his heart.

[Let's presume that there was some super-expert hidden among them... He wouldn't have let the boss — King of Hell Chu — come up and throw away his life like that, right?]

He thought this, and felt relieved. However, he felt somewhat annoyed as well. [I would've gotten down earlier if I'd known this. And, it's too late to go down now... After all, almost everyone has died.]

He saw that the boy in front of him had pulled out his sword with 'shua' sound while he was thinking this. Then, that boy loudly shouted, "Ou Ke Feng, you old bastard. Come and receive your death."

Ou Ke Feng became angry. He thought in his heart, [So many of your people are present down there. So, I would've been severely outnumbered if I had gotten down. But, you've come up now... So, why would I be afraid of you now?]

He grinned fiendishly, "You've come to court death. And, I will grant your wish!"

Then, he suddenly stretched his hands. All of his fingers steamed up, and emitted green smoke. And, his body got shrouded in a cloud of green smoke in an instant. The jade roof tiles under his feet started to corrode with crackling sounds as soon as they came in contact with this green smoke. He had issued a thick smoke

which had a foul stench.

The green smoke that was emitting out from his body was even capable of corroding stones!

Such a poison technique could shock anyone.

....

Chapter 626: I Will Trick You to Death!

Xie Zhi Qiu was startled on the ground below.

[This Ou Ke Feng is at the peak of ninth grade Emperor Level. He is only one step away from being a Monarch Level Expert!] He had a suffocating feeling in his chest because of the pent-up frustration.

[This bastard has such a high cultivation. But, he still doesn't dare to come down to face a group of King level Experts!]

On the rooftop... Ou Ke Feng and Chu Yang had set into action, "You smell as if your mother's milk hasn't even dried yet. Still, you've dared to intrude in my Ou Clan. I'll exterminate you."

"I didn't come just to intrude... I've come here to massacre your entire clan!" Chu Yang repeatedly dodged his attacks. He then sneered and said, "Coward! Look over there... Your clan has been reduced to ruins. Let me tell you... There are innumerable Monarch Experts on my side for protection. So, you're undoubtedly going to die if you dare to attack me with your full strength."

Ou Ke Feng was startled by this. And, he immediately received his hand. Then, he angrily said, "Where? Where? Call them out. I'll crush them to death."

Chu Yang was dumbfounded.

[I've seen many experts in my life. But, I've never seen such a timid expert.]

Ou Ke Feng raised his eyes, and looked all around. He scattered his divine sense everywhere, and carefully probed. A long while passed. Then, he exposed a strange smile on his face, "You little bastard. Do you think that this Old Man can be scared by your bluffs? You won't get out of here alive even if a Supreme Expert were to come."

Chu Yang swallowed his saliva in a gulp... All of the people of the Ou Clan had already been killed when Ou Ke Feng had probed around a moment ago. The last death was that of the Great Elder. Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had worked together to bring him down. The Great Elder had looked up with a resentful and powerless expression in his eyes just before his death. He had become aggrieved as he had roared out, "Ancestor, ah..."

However, Ou Ke Feng had turned a blind eye to him. He had slid away his glance from the Great Elder, and started to look for that group of so-called 'Monarch Experts'...

Chu Yang truly admired him! [No wonder this guy has been able to live this long. So, this is the reason.]

Ou Ke Feng cautiously walked forward at this moment. An ominous glint was flashing in his eyes.

Chu Yang rolled his eyes at first. Then, he suddenly waved his hand, and shouted, "Attack! Kill him!"

Ou Ke Feng instantly got scared. He then went a hundred feet away with a 'whoosh' sound, and returned to his original position. Then, he guarded his chest with both of his hands and shouted, "Who?"

He remained vigilant for a long time, but he didn't see the shadow of even a single man. He then looked at Chu Yang who was giggling while holding his belly. And, he quickly understood that he was being tricked. His shameless face turned red as a result. He then flew into rage out of humiliation, and said, "Damn you brat! I'll tear you into pieces while you're still alive!"

Then, he shouted loudly, and his body flashed. He dashed towards Chu Yang leaving behind afterimages.

Chu Yang suddenly felt a boundless pressure coming head-on towards him. So, he straightened up his body, and exposed a sneering smile on his face. Then, he waved his hand and said, "This

is a good opportunity! Kill him!"

Ou Ke Feng cried out in fear, and somersaulted back in mid-air. Those countless afterimages vanished once again. He again returned to his original position, and looked at Chu Yang with an astonished and uncertain look on his face.

Chu Yang burst into loud laughter.

It was a real laughter this time. [I truly hadn't expected that such a coward ninth grade Martial Emperor existed in this world. He can be frightened with just a gesture and a few words. This is simply hilarious...]

However, Chu Yang was somewhat baffled too. [Ou Ke Feng is such a scaredy-cat. So, how did he manage to reach to his present cultivation?]

Chu Yang didn't know that Ou Ke Feng had been a very bold and courageous man in the past. He was so gutsy that he had even gone to the Upper Three Heavens in order to steal the Purple Crystals. In fact, he had gone there several times in a row.

This had continued until the last time — he had been walking in night when he had run into a sinister trap that last time. Countless people had besieged him. They had pursued him to block off his way. Then, they had captured him alive, and shut him in a dungeon. Then, they had made him suffer almost every kind of cruel torture of the world at once. The Ou Clan had eventually been forced into giving almost all of the clan's property to save him and bring him back.

His personality had changed dramatically after this incident. He had now become like a bird that could get startled at the mere twang of a bow. He had cultivated in seclusion for all these years. However, he still couldn't eliminate that time's trauma from his heart.

Ou Ke Feng was again tricked. It made him furious. His face

swelled up, and turned purple as a result. He then thundered in rage, "Brat! Is there anything you can do apart from bluffing?"

Chu Yang coldly snorted and said, "How do you know that I was bluffing you? For your kind information, Ou Ke Feng... you'll undoubtedly die if you dare to come at me."

Ou Ke Feng screamed in rage. His body seemed to have bloated up in an instant. He ferociously walked over step by step, and then sinisterly said, "Bastard, why don't you dare to try and scare me one more time? Come on, try."

Chu Yang sneered and said, "You come over!"

"It won't happen again!" Ou Ke Feng rushed over with large strides.

Chu Yang suddenly turned his head to a side as if he was listening to something. Then, he moved his lips twice. Ou Ke Feng was rushing over with a rainbow like vigor. However, he saw Chu Yang signaling to someone, and thought, [Could it be that there truly is an ambush?]

He couldn't help but hesitate in his heart.

Chu Yang turned his head at this moment, and looked at Ou Ke Feng. Then, he shouted out loud, "Yes! Good!"

Ou Ke Feng became alarmed. [This bastard is going to trick me to death!] He then hastily drew back.

A sword-light suddenly flashed before his eyes at this moment. It was earth-shattering!

The move 'One ray of cold light pierces ten-thousand fathoms' of Chu Yang's Nine Tribulations Sword came head-on.

Ou Ke Feng shouted, and counterattacked with both of his arms. But then, Chu Yang called out 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world', and attacked with all his power.

Ou Ke Feng gathered his arms together while he was retreating.

The Nine Tribulations Sword slashed onto the two small iron rods in his hands with a 'ding' sound.

However, the Nine Tribulations Sword couldn't pierce them despite being so sharp.

Chu Yang felt shocked in his heart. [What kind of treasures are these small rods Ou Ke Feng is using?]

This was the first time he had seen a weapon that the Nine Tribulations Sword couldn't destroy. However, Chu Yang quickly made a plan in his heart. [I must snatch them to examine what kind of stuff they are made of!]

However, Ou Ke Feng obviously fell back further. He was pushed back by the gigantic thrust generated by the clash between the weapons. His body crooked, and was sent back flying.

Chu Yang's sword glittered. He kept following after Ou Ke Feng to four-hundred feet while resisting Ou Ke Feng's weapons.

Ou Ke Feng roared out. He knew that he was being tricked for certain. But, he couldn't bring himself to make any counterattack. In fact, he was regretting in his heart over his decision to dash out. However, this was when Chu Yang suddenly raised his left hand, and gave a sharp and crisp slap on his face with a 'smack' sound.

This slap wasn't heavy. But, it was extremely humiliating.

Ou Ke Feng couldn't take it anymore. He bellowed, and was about to counterattack.

However, he saw that Chu Yang had abruptly sheathed his sword, and had started to withdraw. Chu Yang then calmly said, "Good! Now, finish him off!"

Ou Ke Feng turned pale with fright when he heard this. [So, is this the real attack?] He couldn't care less about counterattacking. He jumped up with a 'shua' sound, and flew seventy-to-eighty feet in the sky. He was going to flee away!

However, nothing happened. He turned his head while being in midair. Chu Yang was holding his sword, and laughing so hard that he was unable to breathe.

The people on the ground were also laughing.

Ou Ke Feng flew into a rage. [I got tricked again!]

[I got tricked in the same way four times in a row! Not only tricked... but also slapped! This is extremely humiliating!] He furiously raised his head, and roared. Then, his white hair fluttered in the air as he came down; the killing intention in his eyes had grown thick.

[I'll kill you no matter what trick you use this time!]

Chu Yang waved his hand, "Attack!"

However, Ou Ke Feng didn't pay any attention this time. Instead, he sped up.

Chu Yang shouted, "Wonderful! Kill him now!"

Ou Ke Feng turned a deaf ear to him as more and more anger blazed in his heart. In fact, his eyes had turned red. [Do you still think that you can deceive me? Not a chance! Do you think that I'm retarded...? It's just that a man starts to fear ropes once he gets bitten by a snake.]

Chu Yang exposed an expression of fright on his face while standing in front of him. He then drew out his sword with a 'clang'. Then, he pointed the sword towards Ou Ke Feng, and shouted, "Kill him!"

Ou Ke Feng had a scare in his heart. But, he didn't stop.

"Oh crap..." Chu Yang turned around, and started to run.

"Little bastard! You were truly deceiving me!" Ou Ke Feng had been bracing himself to respond to the rage inside of him, but he had still been nervous in his heart. But now, all of his worries were gone. In fact, they had changed into burning anger.

Chu Yang fled in disarray on the roof with flying speed, "Everyone, run fast! This old fart has gone insane!" he again shouted within an instant, "Everyone come and attack together. We can still kill him since we're more in number."

Then, he suddenly flew into panic, "Come people! Everyone, come up... quickly come up you all. Fu*k, hurry up!"

Ou Ke Feng became more and more self-satisfied. His heart filled with delight in this cat and mouse chase. He then sinisterly laughed, "Little bastard! I'll see where you would go to escape now?!"

"Help me..." Chu Yang pitifully shouted.

Ou Ke Feng turned a deaf ear towards him, and quickly pounced at him.

Chu Yang clenched his teeth, "Fight!" Chu Yang's sword suddenly burst out a bright sword-light. He then launched nine sword-moves of the Nine Tribulations Sword in a row.

Wind and thunder rose up from all around as a result. Then, countless sword-lights crisscrossed, and submerged Ou Ke Feng's entire body.

Ou Ke Feng crazily shouted from inside the sword lights, "Ignorant brat! Your sword moves are very good. But, how did you think that you could injure this Old Ancestor at your current cultivation level! Ha ha ha..."

The sword-lights had filled the air. And, they had obstructed Ou Ke Feng's line of sight. Xie Zhi Qiu had already seized the opportunity, and had hopped up in a gentle manner. It must be noted that he had been lying in wait at a distance place to ambush Ou Ke Feng.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang looked at each other. Then, they also jumped up one after another.

The sword-lights faded. Chu Yang said, "Oh fu*k", and then

turned around to flee.

The clothes on Ou Ke Feng's body had been left in a tattered state. But, his body hadn't received a single scratch; only white marks had appeared on it. It was evident that the body of this ninth grade Martial Emperor had gotten tempered because of his poisonous technique. In fact, his body had become harder than iron.

Chu Yang's sword-moves had dispersed. But, they hadn't been able to land a concentrated blow. After all, there was a big disparity between the martial powers of these two men. Therefore, Chu Yang hadn't been able to injure Ou Ke Feng even with the sharpness of the Nine Tribulations Sword as his disposal!

Ou Ke Feng burst into loud laughter. He then quickly rushed over, "Brat, do you still think that you can escape?"

Chu Yang was panting while fleeing away in desperation.

And, Ou Ke Feng was chasing after him while shouting and threatening. He nastily laughed, "Kid, I won't kill you! I'll catch you, and take you to a faraway place. And then, I'll examine how you're able to endure the Ou Clan's poison. Fu fu fu..."

Chu Yang got angry, "Your entire clan is finished. The only one left is you — a coward. You should've committed suicide by now. What are you waiting for?"

Ou Ke Feng became furious and said, "I'll kill you first!" His agility skill was extremely quick. Therefore, he had drawn very close to Chu Yang in the midst of this conversation.

Suddenly, Chu Yang shouted, "He has arrived at the pitfall location. Quickly set into action."

Ou Ke Feng was taken aback. So, he hesitated a bit. Meanwhile, Chu Yang slipped away like an agile fish. Then, he turned his head and laughed, "Old bastard! You got tricked again!"

Ou Ke Feng almost vomited blood. He simply stopped talking,

and pursued Chu Yang with all his might. He wouldn't believe Chu Yang from here-on... no matter he would say. [Those two-hundred King Level Experts are still on the ground. They're just looking up like they were before. They aren't coming up. Then, why should I be scared?]

[The most important thing at present is to teach this evil boy a lesson. As for later on... I'll just flee. Who can stop me?]

Chu Yang quickly went two-hundred feet away. Then, he again shouted loudly, "Attack!"

Ou Ke Feng laughed fiendishly; he didn't get scared this time. Then, he stretched out his hands to grab, "Brat! Do you think that I'll fall for it again... huh?"

A pair of big hands came out of the void in a flash at this moment. They came with the destructive power and the tremendous momentum of a thunderbolt, and pounded on his chest with a loud bang.

...

Chapter 627: Destruction of Ou Clan!

The power of this attack was far greater than the defensive capability of Ou Ke Feng's body. Moreover, Ou Ke Feng had been caught off-guard. Consequently, all of Ou Ke Feng's ribs broke one after another with snapping sounds. And, his internal body parts also sustained serious injuries.

He raised his head, and threw up blood with a 'poof' sound; chunks of his entrails were also mixed with the deep-red blood.

Ou Ke Feng felt ice-cold in his heart. In fact, he couldn't even feel the pain in his body at this moment. He only felt one thing; [I was tricked. This is the real ambush! A fatal ambush!]

[It turns out the enemy truly had a Monarch Level Expert on their side!] Ou Ke Feng's heart filled overwhelmingly with regret within an instant. [Who could've stopped me if I had run away in the beginning?]

[This ambushing expert is strong. However, it should've been impossible for him to kill me if I had run away. That's why this expert had no choice but to wait for an opportunity to sneak attack and strike me violently.]

But now, Ou Ke Feng couldn't do anything even if he had figured it out...

He had sustained fatal injuries from just this one strike!

And, Chu Yang had done all that acting so that this strike from Xie Zhi Qiu could be successful.

Ou Ke Feng had been very careful and timid the entire time. In fact, he had always been an excessively cautious kind of man. So, it wasn't easy to kill him no matter who tried...

And, that was because he wouldn't give anyone any opportunity to deal with him.

It could be said that Chu Yang had put his life in danger by going up to provoke Ou Ke Feng on the rooftop. There were more than two-hundred King Level Experts below. But, no one had dared to come up. Why? Ou Ke Feng would've run away if they had gone up!

And, he would've become the biggest hidden danger in case he ran away. In fact, it would've made people so worried that they wouldn't have been able to live their lives in peace.

Therefore, Chu Yang had no choice but to make him mad and keep him engaged.

It was true that being cautious had been beneficial for Ou Ke Feng. But, being excessively cautious had also become his weak point.

Therefore, Chu Yang took great pains to provoke him. He deceived Ou Ke Feng, played tricks on him, and finally succeeded in inciting his rage bit by bit.

In fact, Chu Yang had become hundred percent assured when he had struck that slap on Ou Ke Feng's face; [Ou Ke Feng won't run away now... no matter what!]

[He won't endure such an insult even if he can.]

Ou Ke Feng had indeed become extremely furious.

But, Chu Yang still wasn't able to rest assured. So, he continued to played tricks on him. And, this had worked towards dispelling Ou Ke Feng's final misgivings. Ou Ke Feng's demise only became a matter of time after he started to believe that there wasn't truly an ambush.

This process might've seem tedious, but it was very important. This plan couldn't have been successful if Ou Ke Feng was even a bit careful in his heart!

The plan was to play tricks on him, and enrage him. Then, again trick him, and make him furious. Then, trick him again, humiliate

him, and make him even more furious. After that, Chu Yang would probe him again and again to check whether he was still scared. Then, Xie Zhi Qiu would strike Ou Ke Feng after the latter had lost his senses and become completely careless... Chu Yang had taken a great risk to do all this. In fact, he had been in fatal danger at every moment.

After all, the disparity between the strengths of the two sides was too big. The disparity between a ninth-grade King Level Expert and a ninth-grade Emperor Level Expert wasn't as small as that between a ninth-grade Revered Martial Artist and a ninth-grade King level Expert.

In fact, the disparity between a first-grade and a second-grade Emperor Level Expert could be favorably compared with the disparity between a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist and a ninth grade King level Expert. After all, the disparity scaled up with increasing levels.

Chu Yang was provoking such a formidable existence using such small strength... How can such a danger be described in few words?

Moreover, even the Nine Tribulations Sword had failed to hurt Ou Ke Feng. Therefore, it was obvious that Chu Yang's current level wasn't enough.

Xie Zhi Qiu had charged-up his power for a long while in his palms. And then, he had unleashed it all on Ou Ke Feng's body. Consequently, Ou Ke Feng had felt as if lightning had struck him... He had violently thrown up blood, and had been sent flying.

At present...

A sword light came flying from the left side; it was a man united with his sword. The sword had issued a cold, brilliant, and swift sword-light. It then heavily crashed into Ou Ke Feng's body.

Then, a saber-light glittered on the right side. It seemed as if the

man and the saber were one entity. The saber-light was fierce, powerful, and overbearing. It then heavily banged on Ou Ke Feng's battered body.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang – Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor – had attacked together!

The Black Dragon Sword pierced Ou Ke Feng's body from the left side, and came out from the right. And, the Black Saber slashed down from the right side, and the saber point appeared out from the left side of his body.

Consequently, a saber and a sword had seemingly been installed in Ou Ke Feng's body in a crisscrossed manner.

Then, saber-light and sword-energy erupted inside Ou Ke Feng's body at the same time.

Ou Ke Feng screamed loudly, and unceasingly spat out blood clots and fragments of his entrails. However, he was still struggling... He issued a pitiful scream, and then firmly gripped the sword and the saber with his remaining strength. He then slammed both his palms with two 'bangs'. And, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang shouted as they both were sent out flying like rubber balls.

However, a man's shadow flashed at this moment... Xie Zhi Qiu had suddenly appeared in front of Ou Ke Feng. His palms carried a great amount of power... as if they would chop down a mountain. Then, he pounded his palms on Ou Ke Feng several times.

Ou Ke Feng's body swayed from side to side as a result. Simultaneously, the flesh on his body was constantly falling apart, and this was exposing his white bones. However, he had tightly clenched his teeth, and had been holding himself back from collapsing. He then ferociously glared at Xie Zhi Qiu with his will-o'-the-wisp like eyes. He didn't draw back. Instead, he ferociously thrust his arms towards Xie Zhi Qiu's eyes to pierce them.

He was clearly aware that his breastbone was broken at the

moment. Moreover, his internal organs were also damaged. So, he knew that he was certainly going to die with these injuries. Moreover, he couldn't even take down his attacker with him. Therefore, the only possible thing that he could accomplish was to attack the enemy's eyes since they were the enemy's most fragile part.

Therefore, he didn't try to dodge or avoid any of these dozens of palm attacks. Instead, he resolutely counterattacked.

All the timidity and cowardice in Ou Ke Feng's heart had miraculously vanished at this moment of definite death. The only thing that remained was the determination to counterattack... to land a final desperate blow on the enemy!

He was exhibiting the prominent demeanor of an expert in this final counterattack.

The dozens of palm attacks of the attacker had already hit him, and left him exhausted. So, the least he could do was blind his attacker's one eye now that he had set into action.

[It's just an eye... But, it's enough!]

He had changed his entire body's poison power into corpse miasma in the moment when the saber and the sword had pierced him. He had done this because he had realized that he would die without a doubt. [The poison may be ineffective on you. But, you'll certainly die as long as I can jam my fingers in your eyes.]

[It is because this is corpse miasma. It comes directly from hell!]

Xie Zhi Qiu put his entire martial power into a gigantic palm attack, and pounded his palm on Ou Ke Feng's body. Meanwhile, Ou Ke Feng's hands arrived in front of his eyes with lightning speed.

Xie Zhi Qiu raised his face... He was about to receive Ou Ke Feng's strike. And, this attack was going to ruin his life energy the moment it would strike.

However, Chu Yang's sharp eyes noticed a bluish glow on Ou Ke Feng's face at this moment. He couldn't help but shiver in his heart. He then subconsciously threw the Nine Tribulations Sword.

Sword Spirit warned him the moment he threw the Nine Tribulations Sword, "It's Corpse Miasma! Be careful!"

Then, a snapping sound came. Ou Ke Feng's fingers were about to touch the masked face of Xie Zhi Qiu when they were suddenly chopped off by the Nine Tribulations Sword.

Ou Ke Feng screamed in desperation. And, his eyes emitted a dim bluish glow.

Chu Yang dashed over quickly. He then held the hilt of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and maliciously inserted the sword's tip into Ou Ke Feng's mouth. Ou Ke Feng's head exploded with a bang! His skull scattered in all directions. His body still hadn't fallen on the ground when it changed into a skeleton with no flesh and blood!

Then, his body dried up in the blink of an eye. It changed into a deathly pale skeleton... In fact, it seemed as if it had been decaying for hundreds and thousands of years. It scattered with a thunderous sound as soon as it came in contact with the wind. And, the Black Dragon Sword and the Black Saber fell on the roof-tiles with a crash-bang sound.

Ou Ke Feng's skeleton had withered rapidly. The wind blew, and the bone ashes scattered in all directions. The surrounding area began to corrode rapidly wherever the remnants fell. And, green smoke emitted out from those places. The corrosion was rapidly spreading out...

"Quickly get away!" Chu Yang shouted. He wrapped up the Black Dragon Sword and the Black Saber in the sleeves of his robe, and then kicked Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang down. Then, he himself jumped down. Xie Zhi Qiu also followed closely behind him, and jumped down.

These people had just arrived on the ground when they saw that a small hole had formed by the corrosion of the tiles; the hole was emitting a faint glow. This hole was getting bigger and bigger; it was slowly expanding.

"Such a fierce poison!" Xie Zhi Qiu was dumbfounded.

"This is Corpse Miasma. Our antidote can't resist this type of poison. Everyone, quickly disperse," Chu Yang shouted at the top of his voice. And, those more than two-hundred King Level Experts instantly scattered in all directions as if they had seen a ghost.

Xie Zhi Qiu immediately issued an order, "Everybody, search for the surviving members of the Ou Clan. Don't let even one of them run away."

Everybody complied in unison. And, all of them dispersed one after another.

Chu Yang merely sighed. He didn't speak anything.

[There is no place for a soft heart in the Middle Three Heavens. We can't be even a bit careless towards the Ou Clan anymore. We can't let someone who knows the poison technique run away. After all, they might come back to take revenge after a few years of laying low.]

[Poison is truly the most dreadful thing.]

Chu Yang couldn't let his compassion cause the crisis of annihilation for his allied clans.

Pitiful screams echoed from all directions...

Chu Yang and the others looked over there. The top of the main hall had slowly eroded. However, the corrosion speed had gradually slowed down after that big hole had been opened in the rooftop.

Everything that had corroded... had vanished into thin air; even the dust hadn't been left behind!

"That was such a potent poison!" Xie Zhi Qiu gasped in surprise. He suddenly recalled that Ou Ke Feng was about to insert his fingers in his eyes. And, he couldn't help being terrified. He then turned around, and grabbed Chu Yang's hand. Then, he emotionally said, "Minister Chu! You saved my life again!"

"Don't mention it, Old Xie," Chu Yang humbly smiled.

However, Chu Yang was also shivering in his heart upon looking at this potent poison.

Xie Zhi Qiu wiped his sweat and said, "A thank you isn't enough for the favor you did. But, I won't say so since Little Brother doesn't want me to. But, I hope you remember one thing — My Xie Clan will always remain an ally of Minister Chu. Even a thousand deaths won't prevent me from helping Minister Chu."

Chu Yang blinked. Then, he suddenly smiled and said, "Old Xie, you're so grateful to me... Please allow this shameless person to make a request."

Xie Zhi Qiu laughed heartily and said, "Just say whatever it is. I'll comply with it."

"Then... please betroth your great-granddaughter Xie Dan Feng to my Junior Brother — Tan Tan," Chu Yang said with a smile.

"No problem at all!" Xie Zhi Qiu replied with a smile, "The two are each other's sunshine. I would've blessed them even if you hadn't mentioned this. So, how can it be regarded as a request?"

Chu Yang said with a faint smile, "But, I only have this request."

They looked at each other, and started to laugh upon realizing that they had a tacit understanding.

Then, Xie Zhi Qiu started chatting with him purposelessly. [Tan Tan and Xie Dan Feng indeed share a little affection. However, they are far from being 'each other's sunshine'. They are more like a pair of rivals that fight whenever they meet.]

Some things seemed to be troubling Tan Tan of late. So, he hadn't mentioned about this matter for a long time. But, he would sometimes expose that pain of longing in his eyes. So, how could Chu Yang feel relaxed when he would see that pain in Tan Tan's eyes?

After that, everyone started to collect the assets of the Ou Clan. And, they started loading carriage after carriage with all that stuff.

Finally, they set a large fire in the entire Ou Clan after their convoy left the main gate. The raging flames stretched far and wide for several hundred miles. And, the sky on that side turned red.

"There will be no Ou Clan in the Middle Three Heavens after this," Chu Yang was walking behind the troops. He turned around, and looked at this majestic and endless fire. And, he sighed in his heart.

Then, he turned around, and silently caught up with the troops.

[Ou Clan is exterminated. Meng Clan is exterminated. The next target... should we deal with the Tu Clan or the Black Devil Clan?]

....

Chapter 628: Such a Quarrelsome But Loving Couple

"You, you, you... How could you do this without my consent?" Tan Tan was scurrying about. He looked somewhat flustered and exasperated. He had raised his brows so high that it seemed as if they were about to fly off his face, "You went too far! Too far! You just went and blabbered on with that mouth of yours, and promised away the lifelong happiness of your only junior martial brother. I, I... I'll fight you!"

Chu Yang just rolled his eyes. He said nothing in response... In fact, it was as if he hadn't heard anything.

Tan Tan had started to behave like this ever since he came back and found out that his marriage had been fixed. He would jump up and down, and would keep chattering on and on. He had started to cause this commotion in the early morning, and was still at it... even though it was afternoon already.

Chu Yang accompanied Sword Spirit inside his consciousness when this guy wasn't around to bug him. Then, he devoted himself to sort the harvest of this time. All of the gold and silver goods were given to the Xie Clan, while the rest were randomly distributed amongst the several experts that had come from other clans to provide backup. However, all of the rare and precious martial treasures remained with Chu Yang.

Sword Spirit was excited inside the Nine Tribulations Space.

However, Tan Tan was certainly panicking.

He was pacing back and forth in the room. He looked very troubled. He would dramatically turn around, and go over to the end of the room. Then, he would dramatically turn around again, and come back over. He looked miserable with a combination of anxiety, delight, and frustration on his face. His face was so

wrinkled at the moment that it looked like an eggplant. One could tell that he was extremely anxious.

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, Rui Bu Tong, and Ao Xie Yun were watching Tan Tan pacing back and forth. All of them couldn't help but restrain their smiles.

[Is this guy truly unwilling to marry?]

"Why?!" Tan Tan faced upwards, and let out a long sigh, "Senior Brother, Chu Yang! Aargh! This is something that concerns my entire life. You, you didn't even discuss with me. You made this decision on your own? I, I... I'll go insane..."

Chu Yang again rolled his eyelids. He then switched to a sitting posture.

"Senior Brother, you must take responsibility for me," Tan Tan turned his head to face towards Chu Yang while pacing back and forth.

"Aren't you done complaining yet?!" Chu Yang glared at him angrily and shouted, "Sit down!"

Tan Tan was startled by this. He looked dumbstruck as he stared at Chu Yang. Then, his buttocks crashed to the floor with a 'thud' sound.

Chu Yang finally finished making inventory of the harvest. Then, he stood up in one leap, and said with a fierce look on his face, "Who was talking in his sleep at night the day before yesterday? Who was saying something like — Little Girly Xie Dan Feng, this Young Master wants to spend the night with you in the bridal chamber? Huh?"

Tan Tan's face turned black, and he panicked, "I was sleep-talking? I talked in my sleep? You... you heard it?"

"Humph!" Chu Yang snorted, and then said, "A certain someone was sleep-talking at night three days ago. He had been saying — Little Girly Xie Dan Feng... Fortunately, I don't have a fever

anymore, or else... I would've turned you into barbecue after marrying you..."

Tan Tan was bewildered. He blinked, and innocently said, "Is this truly what I said?"

Chu Yang ignored him and continued, "The other day on the journey... someone was passing by a certain someone's tent, and heard him saying in his sleep — Xie Dan Feng, I miss you so much oh~~~"

Tan Tan was baffled. He pointed a finger at his own nose, and asked, "Was it truly me?"

Chu Yang nodded seriously.

"This... This is so embarrassing!?" Tan Tan covered his face.

A burst of laughter erupted in the room.

"But, it's still out of question," Tan Tan took off his hand, and became very serious, "Senior Brother, I can't marry her."

"Why?"

There was a trace of sadness on Tan Tan's face, "It's not like you aren't aware of my circumstances... Now, I... am a monster... a monster that hurts people..."

"Shut up!" Chu Yang shouted loudly, and approached him with a dangerous expression in his eyes, "Say it one more time, and I'll kill you!"

"But I..." Tan Tan said pitifully, "I truly feel it a little in my heart..."

"Shut up! Our master isn't here. So, I'm in-charge of anything that concerns you," Chu Yang snorted. He then pointed a finger at himself, and suddenly said in a commanding tone, "I have the final say! Got it?!"

Tan Tan heaved a deep sigh.

"As for... the strange changes you have undergone... we'll obviously let her know," Chu Yang snorted and said, "I believe that Xie Dan Feng won't care about all that. After all, she has already accepted someone with your face."

There was a burst of laughter in the entire room as soon as Chu Yang said this.

As Xie Yun had a heavy load on his mind lately, but even he couldn't help but smile.

Tan Tan scratched his head in puzzlement at first. He then said with a sigh, "I'm afraid that Little Girly Xie Dan Feng won't understand. She wouldn't..."

He had spoken until here when suddenly a sharp and clear voice angrily said, "Who are you calling 'Little Girly'?"

Tan Tan became speechless, and started to gape.

Everyone's gaze followed the sound, and saw that a graceful girl clad in a red dress was standing outside the door. However, her eyes were shooting flames at the moment. She then suddenly came in like a gust of wind, and knocked Tan Tan down to the floor. Then, she started raining fists on him. She clenched her teeth and asked, "Who's the 'Little Girly'? Who's the 'Little Girly'?"

Tan Tan realized that he was in the wrong here. So, he didn't dare to retaliate. He just screamed repeatedly.

Bang Bang Bang~~

Numerous beating sounds were heard as Xie Dan Feng's fists thrashed Tan Tan's body. All the brothers were stupefied. And, their faces got covered in cold sweat.

[So... valiant...]

[Such a wife... Everyone present here would politely decline the proposal... apart from Sir Tan Tan of course... After all, we wouldn't be able to bear such a loving wife.]

Ji Mo's eyes had opened wide in a stare. Then, a look of terror flashed on his face as he pondered in his heart, [That Aobo wouldn't be the same as this woman, right? Would she be the same? Or, would she be different?]

Then, he suddenly sighed in grief... He had recalled that time when he had fallen into Huyan Aobo's hands and had gotten ravaged. It almost made him tearful. He grieved in his heart, [It seems they are the same... same, same... ah!]

Seeing Tan Tan cope with this was like learning a lesson from the mistakes of one's predecessor. The expression on Ji Mo's face made it seem as if he was seeing a fellow comrade dying a martyr's death. In fact, Ji Mo felt like going forward, hugging Tan Tan, and crying loudly; [Brother, we are the same... same, same... Ah!]

Meanwhile, there stood two similarly dumfounded people at the entrance.

They were the old ancestor of Xie Clan – Xie Zhi Qiu, and the Clan Lord of Xie Clan – Xie Guangen. Both of them had the same expression on their face. They both were staring with their eyes and mouth wide open... They were blankly looking at this daughter of their clan as she crazily beat up her fiancé.

Moreover, she was doing so in a public place with numerous people around.

Xie Zhi Qiu's face turned dark on the spot. He ferociously glanced at Xie Guangen and angrily said, "You've raised a fine daughter!"

Xie Guangen felt wronged. He lowered his head, and stammered, "This has come from the damned genetics... It has nothing to do with my upbringing..."

Xie Zhi Qiu immediately got furious and shouted, "Both mother and daughter are vixens."

Xie Guangen then obediently lowered his head, and no longer said anything. He just secretly curled his lips, and said in his heart,

[Ancestor... you were also not necessarily that strong in the past... It is said that there were times when you've had to spend the entire night in the toilet squatting on the chamber pot... You think I don't know this?]

The beating sounds kept coming out from inside the room in succession. Then, Tan Tan finally lost it.

"You get off me quickly. Aren't you satisfied yet? Aren't you? A petty girl like you thinks she can embarrass this Sir Tan, and teach him a lesson...? Don't try to reach out for a yard after taking an inch!" Tan Tan furiously said, "Otherwise, it won't be pretty if I flipped out!"

Xie Dan Feng's original anger had almost vanished, and she was considering stopping the beating. However, she got even angrier as soon as she heard this. So, she shouted, "You think I'm scared of you flipping out? Very well, I'd like to see you flip out."

"Ugly woman, Little Girly!" Tan Tan shouted.

"Ugly freak! I'll kill you!" Xie Dan Feng also didn't yield one bit.

Xie Zhi Qiu and Xie Guangen could no longer just watch from the sidelines when they realized that this fight was about to escalate. So, the two shouted at the same time, "Stop..."

However, they could only shout out this one word. They turned quiet, and just opened their eyes wide.

It turned out that Tan Tan had twisted his waist with a bellow. He had then exerted physically with his arms, and had gotten up. Then, he pushed down Xie Dan Feng, and placed his buttocks on her small belly. He then laughed fiendishly and said, "I'm a majestic Great Lord. A Little Girly like you can't tame me."

Then, he clenched both his fists, and rained them down on her. His fists hammered on her indiscriminately... no matter if it was her face or her head.

Bang Bang Bang, Bang Bang Bang...

Xie Dan Feng let out a loud and sharp scream, "Ugly freak! You ugly freak! You dared to hit me... You dared to beat me... You you..."

However, Tan Tan ignored her. He had beaten her up enough on the front side of her body. So, he turned her over, and started to smack her plentiful and bouncy buttocks.

This smacking suddenly sent meat-waves rolling!

Chu Yang and others inside the room... and Xie Zhi Qiu and Xie Guang'en outside the room... Everyone collectively closed their eyes...

[This sight is truly improper... highly improper!]

Ji Mo had closed his eyes, but his facial muscles were twitching nonetheless. A surge of adoration had emerged straight up from the bottom of his heart, [Idol! He's a genuine man! He's fu*king... beating her into subjugation! I would die without complaints... if I could also do this to Aobo...]

Xie Dan Feng screamed loudly. However, Tan Tan's current cultivation was far superior to hers. So, she felt as if a huge mountain had been placed upon on her body. She was helpless while being beaten up wildly.

Xie Dan Feng finally couldn't take it anymore and shouted, "I surrender! I surrender to you! Bastard, hurry up, and release me already!?"

Chu Yang closed his eyes, and his cheeks twitched. [This... love interest of Tan Tan is truly no ordinary woman. Needless to say she was valiant and outstanding when she was in the advantageous position. However, she started begging for mercy as soon as she fell into the disadvantageous situation... Other women in her place wouldn't have begged for mercy under these circumstances.]

[A rare and marvelous couple!]

However, Tan Tan wasn't willing to spare her. He scowled, and

stared down at her, "Do you truly surrender?"

Xie Dan Feng replied while panting heavily, "I surrender! I surrender!"

Tan Tan finally stopped beating her. However, he still vigorously rode on her as if with the power to tame a tiger. He then asked valiantly, "Who'll have the final say at home after we get married?"

"I'll have the final say!" Xie Dan Feng gnashed her teeth in defiance. [This is a matter of principle. I can't yield an inch!]

"Bang Bang Bang..." there was another set of beating. Then, Tan Tan asked again, "Say it one more time... Who has the final say?"

"I have the final say! I have the final say!" Xie Dan Feng looked at him resolutely... as if she would rather die than submit. She said, "You ugly freak. I will still have the final say even if you kill me!"

"I'll keep beating you until you obey me," Tan Tan angrily said, and his two iron fists pounded with rumbling sounds. Then, he asked again while panting, "Who has the final say? Who has the final say?!"

"Boohoo... you ugly freak!" Xie Dan Feng wept, "You have the final say for the time being... But later, the one whose fist would be stronger would have the final say! I'll have the final say again when I become strong enough to beat you."

"Humph, you want to beat me? There's no chance of that happening in your entire lifetime," Tan Tan raised his brows, and said fiendishly, "Are you sure you want to marry me... and be my wife?!"

Dong Wu Shang slammed his head on the tabletop with a 'thud'. Then, his head bounced back, and pounded again like a free-falling object. His head moved several times back and forth like a plucked string. [I give up! Xie Dan Feng didn't give up first. It was I who gave up first...]

[Damn, who asks the bride such a question?]

"Humph!" Xie Dan Feng turned her head away and pouted. Then, she said in a bold and vigorous manner, "You'll remain a bachelor for a lifetime if I don't marry you. I'm doing this out of kindness. So, don't develop some wild fantasies that I like you or anything."

Gu Du Xing and Ao Xie Yun also slammed their heads on the table... Tears streamed down their faces, [We also give up...]

"Very well!" Tan Tan loudly said, "I've got many defects. Are you sure that you won't regret this?"

Xie Dan Feng wiped her tears, and said while sobbing, "I'm already regretting this..."

"You're not allowed to have regrets!" Tan Tan furiously said, "Say that you won't have regrets later..."

Chu Yang and the others rolled their eyes back at the same time. Their bodies turned weak, and they collectively fainted...

...

Chapter 629: The Best Husband and Wife

"Highly improper! This is way too improper!" Xie Zhi Qiu got angry. His aged face turned black like charcoal, "She's a disgrace to the clan. This is making me furious."

Xie Guangen was standing perfectly straight in front of him. He was continuously wiping his sweat while he suffered the Ancestor's anger...

On the other side, there were Tan Tan and Xie Dan Feng with their bloody noses and swollen faces.

Chu Yang and the others were sitting upright with serious faces. They weren't even glancing sideways.

"I didn't supervise the clan for several years. But, I hadn't expected that you would educate the children of our clan so badly," Xie Zhi Qiu had pointed his finger towards Xie Guangen. His finger was continuously trembling, "You've done a terrific job!"

Xie Guangen hung down his head, and didn't dare to utter a single word.

Xie Dan Feng bit her lips, and timidly walked over. She then held Xie Zhi Qiu's arm, and started rocking it to-and-fro. Then, she said while acting like a spoiled kid, "Ancestor..."

Chu Yang and the others got goose-bumps all over their bodies. [This vixen can act like a brat as well?]

It was becoming more and more unbearable for Xie Zhi Qiu. His body trembled, and his face turned ashen, "Don't call me out, Xie Dan Feng..." Xie Zhi Qiu's entire body shivered. And, teardrops rapidly came out from his aged eyes, "You were adorable during your childhood. I was always very fond of you. But, I hadn't expected that your father would teach you in a way that you would become so reckless... I'm bitter and sad..."

Xie Guangen fiercely opened his mouth. [How is it my fault?

This... do you think that I don't want my daughter to act like a lady? But, this girl is such a spoiled brat... What can I do?]

He had opened his mouth, but he couldn't dare to speak anything.

After all, the consequences would've been extremely serious if he had spoken out these words... His daughter and her mother would've skinned him alive even if the Ancestor hadn't gotten angry...

"Minister Chu..." Xie Zhi Qiu looked at Chu Yang in shame. His aged face had turned as red as a monkey's butt, "She's a disgrace to our clan. This is so embarrassing..."

Chu Yang gave a hollow laugh, "No, no... it's fine. Young Miss Dan Feng is straightforward, carefree, and easy-mannered by nature. In fact, such a disposition is very rare in the Jianghu..."

Xie Zhi Qiu's aged face turned red. He coughed several times. [This girl is shrewish, barbarous, and dumb. How do you see her as straightforward and easy-mannered...]

He blinked his eyes and said, "Does it mean that... this marriage... Is it on board?"

His aged face had turned a deep shade of red as he asked this.

He said in his heart, [I was originally not too satisfied with this marriage. I had thought that a beautiful and talented woman was marrying an ugly person. But now, it seems that this is in fact the other way round. I should burn incense sticks in front of this guy for agreeing to marry this insane girl. After all, this is a golden opportunity. And, we mustn't lose it. Perhaps this granddaughter of mine will die in her maternal house if this Tan Tan doesn't agree to marry her...]

"Of course, it's on board," Chu Yang replied righteously and decisively.

"This is good. This is wonderful!" Xie Zhi Qiu felt relieved from a

burden. He then smiled, and became more cordial. Then, he squinted and said, "Now, this Old Man feels as if God had set these two up. This couple is bestowed by the heavens. This being the case..."

He turned his head, and said in a dignified manner, "Guangen, can you put out the marriage token now?"

Xie Guangen became sullen. [When has it ever happened that the bride's side has put out the marriage token first to settle a marriage? First, the groom's side sends a matchmaker to the bride's family. Then, they discuss the proposal. Then, the bride's side has to refuse even if they are very much willing to agree to the marriage. Then, a second matchmaker is chosen and sent... then a third one. Then... the marriage is finally fixed. After that, the groom's side offers monetary gifts. Six betrothal gifts are arranged for the three matchmakers. Finally, their horoscopes are matched. And only then, the bride's side gives the marriage token...]

[This is how a marriage is finalized.]

[How come you're asking me to put forward the marriage token first for my daughter? What kind of logic is this?]

"Um... this..." Xie Guangen traced his body. He indeed had some stuff with him. However, he wanted to pretend that he didn't.

"Father!" Xie Dan Feng stamped her feet. "What's the matter? How could you forget to bring such an important thing for such a big matter?"

Xie Guangen's face turned black. He felt helpless. So, he had no other choice but to say, "Let me look for it."

"I'll help you find it," Xie Dan Feng rushed over with big and sudden strides. Then, she extended her hands, and put them in her father's pockets. She then complained, "Jeez... this is the matter of your daughter's lifelong happiness. How can you be so careless...?"

Xie Guangen almost fainted out of anger.

[This girl isn't even engaged yet, and she's taking the side of other people instead of her own family? Can't you see I'm putting on airs? Is this not for your own good? But, you just can't wait. You had to come to fish things out of my pocket, huh?]

[Look at you. You still haven't gotten married. You got badly beaten up by that man. But, you're still in such a hurry to get married? Didn't you just get beaten?!]

[This is absurd!]

Xie Dan Feng had already flipped her father's pockets upside down before he could prevent her from doing so. Consequently, a bunch of items fell on the ground with crashing sounds. Xie Dan Feng grabbed all the items, and held them in her bosom. Then, she happily ran to Tan Tan, pulled at him, and they both sat down.

"Take a look. Take a look. Take a good look. Which ones are good? Which ones are suitable?" Xie Dan Feng happily nudged him. She conveniently picked up a Purple Crystal Jade Pendant, and started to fiddle with it in order to to examine it, "I think this piece is suitable for me..."

She then stuffed that pendant into her pocket. Then, she grabbed another item, "This one's for you... Um, this one I want. And, this one's for you... This one..."

All the items from Xie Guangen's pocket were divided up like ill-gotten gains among Tan Tan and Xie Dan Feng within an instant.

Tan Tan's arms were full. He somewhat hesitated and said, "This... looks wrong, okay?" Tan Tan didn't have worldly wisdom, but he still felt somewhat awkward... because he knew that he was plundering things from his future father-in-law before he had even gotten married.

"What's wrong in this?" Xie Dan Feng chuckled. Then, she scolded him, "You idiot, I'll marry only once in my lifetime. This is just a ritual for fixing marriages. You can take maximum dowry

only this time... because you'll certainly watch helplessly the rest of the times. My father – that miserly king – won't give you even a penny if we delay. So, don't come crying to me at that time."

Tan Tan's eyes lit up. He stroked his chin and said, "That makes sense..."

Xie Guangen's entire body shook up. He angrily said, "You, you, you... you evil creature! Can't you behave a bit like a girl? You... you even dared to..."

He was so angry that he started foaming at his mouth. In fact, he was on the verge of fainting.

"Father!" Xie Dan Feng resentfully said, "Your daughter will have to live on her own after she gets married. Do you have the heart to see your daughter living a difficult life and starve because of it...?"

Xie Guangen's complexion turned pale. He coldly snorted, but didn't speak anything further. Then, he furiously went out while brushing his sleeves.

He had become dizzy out of anger. He didn't even greet the Ancestor before leaving; he disappeared from there.

Chu Yang put his hand into his own pocket, and pulled out something with an innocent face.

He wanted to give presents to the bride's side from the groom's side. However, he hadn't expected that his sister-in-law would settle this all by herself. Not only did he not have to spend a penny, but also she made her father leave with almost bare buttocks...

Xie Zhi Qiu felt relieved in his aged heart. [Finally, this scourge of my clan has been sold out.]

He twirled his beard and said, "Minister Chu, you see... there is an upheaval in the Jianghu. So, it would be good if we married them off as soon as possible..."

This was music to Chu Yang's ears. So, he repeatedly nodded in

agreement and said, "Ancestor is right. We must get done with it as soon as possible."

Xie Zhi Qiu laughed heartily, "It suits me. You see, let Tan Tan stay here with me. Dan Qiong will return after fifteen to twenty days. Then, we'll organize the wedding. What do you say?"

Chu Yang jumped in fright. [So quickly?]

[I must inform Master about this matter no matter how.] Chu Yang was certain that Meng Chao Ran would beat his buttocks until they swelled like a wash bowl if he didn't get to attend Tan Tan's wedding...

"I must report to Master about this matter as soon as possible," Chu Yang hurriedly said.

"Well, so that's it. I'll wait for the good news from you," Xie Zhi Qiu stood up in a dignified manner. He was just about to leave, "Dan Feng, let's go back."

"No, I'll stay here." Xie Dan Feng didn't comply.

Xie Zhi Qiu knitted his brows, "That's highly improper! You must prepare for getting married. How would your mother teach you to become a wife and a mother if you don't return home as soon as possible? Moreover, it is said that the couple shouldn't appear before each other before getting married."

Xie Dan Feng raised her neck in defiance and said, "Your great-granddaughter belongs to someone else now that her marriage has been fixed. So, I must stay here with Tan Tan's family... Ancestor, you haven't even given the gift of first meeting to your new great-grandson-in-law..."

Xie Zhi Qiu finally realized what Xie Guangen must've felt a moment ago. And, his aged face instantly turned as black as charcoal.

He snorted with a look of embarrassment across his entire face, "Minister Chu, this is truly embarrassing."

Chu Yang forced a smile. Then, he cupped his hands together across his chest, "There's nothing to pardon. Let Young Lady Xie have a bit of chit-chat here. Cough cough... We'll send Young Lady Xie back afterwards."

Xie Zhi Qiu shook his head, and heaved a long sigh. Then, he again shook his head, and again heaved a long sigh. He was obviously at a loss. He sighed dozens of times in this manner. Then, he suddenly disappeared without a trace.

Xie Dan Feng chased after him, "Ancestor, you haven't given the gift yet. Do you think that you can go back on your responsibility?"

A thud came from a distance. It seemed as if something had fallen down from a height... or so to say... 'Someone' had fallen down...

A burst of laughter was heard afterwards.

Xie Dan Feng suddenly turned her head, and wiped her sweat. Then, she patted her chest and said, "Phew, I finally got rid of them." Suddenly, her shapely eyebrows erected as she opened her round eyes wide. She then shouted, "Tan Tan! You bastard! Why don't you tell me everything?!"

She approached him step by step with her teeth clenched, "How are you different from ordinary people? You even said that you were a 'monster'?"

Tan Tan jumped in fright and said, "You... how do you know?"

"Humph! We had already been outside for a while. So, I heard more than half of what you said," Xie Dan Feng roared, "Why do you think I enraged Ancestor and Father, and made them go away so quickly? Do you think it wasn't because I was afraid that they might ask why you're abnormal? You don't know how to use this slow-witted brain of yours, do you? What if you had messed things up...?"

Gu Du Xing and the others were startled. [So, this girl... isn't truly retarded.]

They saw that Xie Dan Feng had clutched Tan Tan's ear, and was taking him to the inner room. "Come, come. You come with me. Tell me everything properly..."

"Awesome!" Ji Mo wiped his sweat, and gave a thumbs-up, "Big Brother, this to-be-wife of your junior brother is a terrific lady. She's truly remarkable."

Chu Yang coldly snorted. He rolled his eyes to reveal the whites of his eyes as he said, "Nonsense! You juniors of the aristocratic clans have outstanding talents. Which one of you is a real fool?"

Everyone laughed together.

They heard Xie Dan Feng's piercing voice coming from the inner room, "What's wrong in this? You don't eat normal food? You only eat the inner cores of spirit beasts?! You can't stand eating something else! This shows that you're a gifted man...!"

Chu Yang and the others became dizzy after they heard till here.

Sounds of 'pat' came through. It was probably Xie Dan Feng patting on Tan Tan's shoulder, "Relax. I don't care what you eat as long as it's not shit. I don't mind! You eat inner cores of spirit beasts, right? I'll go to the treasure house of the clan to fetch some when I go back. We won't demand anything else as dowry. We'll only take the inner cores of spirit beasts."

Tan Tan cheered as soon as he heard this, "Long live my wife!"

Outside... the seven brothers rolled their eyes... and collapsed on the spot.

[Best husband and wife ever!]

...

Chapter 630: The Respective Highlight of One's Life

Tan Tan's matter was finally settled.

Chu Yang also felt relieved in his heart.

[I initially thought that Xie Dan Feng would probably find it difficult to accept Tan Tan's bizarreness. However, it now seems that my fears were groundless. There was basically no need for us to do anything. Xie Dan Feng has already grasped the entire situation. She has thought it through, and has accepted it. In fact, she's nonchalant about it...]

[She even added the complement 'gifted man'...]

This made Chu Yang's heart sigh with emotion as he muttered, "In the past... we would have scruples about giving a try to something we thought of as very difficult to do, and we wouldn't dare to do it as a result. So, we would make it a challenging task ourselves... thereby making it even more difficult to do. However, we would've found that it was a smooth road from the get-go if we didn't think anything, and just went with the flow... by presuming that everything was bound to be successful. In fact, the task can be accomplished even without making a great deal of effort in that case!"

He breathed a long sigh of relief, "The matter of Tan Tan's marriage is just like this, and the road of our martial arts is also the same."

The brothers were initially laughing, but they all fell silent when they heard these words. They all began to slowly ponder over these words... It seemed as if they were trying to comprehend the meaning in their hearts.

Gu Du Xing slowly nodded and said, "Right! Becoming a Revered Martial Artist is undoubtedly an unattainable goal for a Martial

Warrior. Similarly, the Emperor Level is unattainable for a Revered Martial Artist, while the Monarch Level is a fable. Meanwhile, the Supreme Level is simply a myth for a Martial Monarch!

"So, you can never climb a level if you think of it as a myth... because you've already treated it as if it were insurmountable. This is one's inner demon..."

Chu Yang nodded and said, "Correct! So, we just need to keep practicing... one step at a time. And, we don't have to worry about how many grades we have achieved in King Level or Emperor Level. All we need to do is to keep going forward step by step. That's it! In fact, it's just like life... We must always keep going forward. So, why care about what the next step is going to be if we have to keep going anyway?"

Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, and the others lowered their heads, and pondered carefully.

[This logic is very simple. However, it's hard to grasp, and even harder to put into practice.]

[However, as Chu Yang said — it will forever be impossible if one doesn't even try because of the difficulty. Stop thinking about the next step, and keep moving forward... One must always take the next step no matter what it is.]

[Why care about whether the goal should be Monarch Level or Supreme Level?]

[A person may have remained a Martial Warrior their entire life. But, they have to pass away when their life reaches its conclusion. And, it's the same even if one had managed to become a Supreme Expert...!]

[Is there any difference?]

The atmosphere in the room turned quiet.

"Now, we're going to discuss the next step of our plan," Chu Yang

clapped his hands and said, "You two, come out."

Xie Dan Feng and Tan Yan came out at the same time; both of them were blushing hard. Xie Dan Feng realized that she was blushing when she saw Chu Yang and the others. So, she hurriedly left behind a sentence as she dashed out, "I'm going back."

She then fled away at a flying speed.

"Take care...!" the brothers spoke-out in unison.

The sound of her coquettish protests came from outside in reply...

"We've exterminated the Ou Clan. And, I believe this news will shake the Middle Three Heavens within three days," Chu Yang slowly said, "It can be said that the extermination of the Ou Clan will make the Jianghu explode. So, we must be prepared to face this storm when it arrives."

Everyone remained silent, but their eyes flashed brightly with determination.

"This time's storm in the Middle Three Heavens is an opportunity for our clans," Gu Du Xing pondered and said slowly.

"Yes, it is the biggest challenge that all our clans have had to face in the past 100 years; this assessment obviously excludes the Ao Clan. However, this biggest crisis is also the biggest opportunity," Luo Ke Di no longer showed his usual frivolous attitude.

Ao Xie Yun took a deep breath and said, "This is a fierce battle, and retaliation for my Ao Clan. It's not an opportunity. However, our Ao Clan has no other choice but to participate in this battle. We must vent off our rage. And, we must take revenge!"

"Wrong!" Chu Yang said lightly, "This is indeed an opportunity for us. However, it is also the biggest opportunity for your Ao Clan. Therefore, I suggest that you lay low... not just so that your Ao Clan participates in the battle, but also for one other reason."

"One other reason?!" Ao Xie Yun knitted his eyebrows.

"Yes, your Ao Clan is like a big organization. How many direct-in-line descendents are there in your generation in total?" asked Chu Yang.

"There should be more than 100 people if my close cousins and the children of the previous generation's descendants are counted."

"How many of them are outstanding?" Chu Yang asked.

Ao Xie Yun had apparently realized something. So, he answered without the slightest hesitation, "There are six other people besides me." He had understood the meaning behind Chu Yang's line of questioning. He then took a long breath and continued, "Old Ancestor once said — there are seven tigers in the Ao Clan. Xie Yun is the strongest among them, but the rest can also take on the duty of the Clan Lord. However, make sure that Ao Clan's reputation doesn't decline."

"Well, do you think that the remaining six people would engage in a power struggle for the position of Clan Lord if you were to die?" Chu Yang insipidly asked.

"That's inevitable," Ao Xie Yun heaved a long sigh. Then, he said somewhat bitterly, "They're always eyeing me covetously. Those six would definitely engage in a deadly struggle as irreconcilable adversaries if I passed away. In fact, I'm afraid that will severely damage the vitality of the rich and powerful Ao Clan."

"So, it can be said that this is an opportunity for you as well as the Ao Clan," Chu Yang insipidly said.

"But, these storms can be suppressed in an instant if I go back at this time," Ao Xie Yun heavily said. He suddenly had an urge to overthrow his initial decision to lay low.

"The Ao Clan will be done for if you go back now!" Chu Yang flatly opposed.

Ao Xie Yun stared blankly. However, he had immediately

understood what Chu Yang had meant. So, he said nothing in response. A long time passed. Then, he muttered, "True, Ao Clan will be finished if I go back. In fact, it would eventually be destroyed in my hands even if it survived at first."

Chu Yang nodded.

Ao Xie Yun sat down while feeling dejected. He then whispered, "Don't tell me that I can only watch from the sidelines?!"

Chu Yang looked at him profoundly and replied, "You'll have to suffer in the future if you don't just watch for now."

Ao Xie Yun just sighed. He didn't speak further.

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had heard this exchange from the side, and they had been feeling puzzled. So, they asked Gu Du Xing, "What are these two talking about? How come we are unable to make sense of what we are hearing?"

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang looked at Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di, and simultaneously revealed an envious expression.

[These two don't have the slightest desire for power. They don't participate in the struggle for fame and fortune in their respective clans. They just lead a chill life.]

"The human ambition is without limits. Seven candidates for the position of Clan Lord in a clan... This is the biggest crisis of this clan! Ambitions will inflate with the gradual increment in strength. And, Ao Clan will be divided into seven parts once this inflation reaches a certain extent... Then, it'll be done for! So, the best thing one can do under these circumstances is making these candidates expose their hidden ambitions as soon as possible."

Gu Du Xing slowly explained.

"So complex..." Ji Mo curled his lip and said, "That lazy bastard Ji Zhu nearly knelt down before me, and requested me to come back to the clan to be the Clan Lord. But, I ignored his request, and ran far away."

Dong Wu Shang sighed.

"Ao Xie Yun can't go out. He'll stay here in the Xie Clan. Tan Tan, what's your plan?" Chu Yang asked.

"Me? I'll stay here," Tan Tan considered for a moment... which was a rare sight to behold in-itself. He then made a decision, and issued it, "I've been feeling tremendous spiritual fluctuations around here these days. So, I'll stay here, ok? I'll follow the Xie Clan's actions. I think there shouldn't be any problem."

Chu Yang looked anxiously at him, and said, "Very well."

"Du Xing needs to go back to the Gu Clan. Wu Shang, Ji Mo, and Ke Di must also go back to their respective clans. And, I'll go to the Mo Clan to meet Mo Tian Ji," Chu Yang said, "Bu Tong, you stay here in Xie Clan. First, keep a watch over Tan Tan. Secondly, help Ao Xie Yun in hiding his identity. Thirdly, it'll be more reassuring if you guys are here to discuss our course of action with Xie Dan Qiong when he returns."

Rui Bu Tong agreed.

"But, you guys must bear in mind these two things," Chu Yang looked at Ao Xie Yun and Rui Bu Tong, "First, the cultivation must not drop. And second, the Xie Clan mustn't set into action... It is necessary to wait until the Middle Three Heavens is comprehensively enveloped in flames of war. Only then can we make a decision to begin!"

"Ok!" Ao Xie Yun revealed a look of contemplation on his face, "We'll wait for your instructions."

"Alright."

Chu Yang turned around, "There's no time to delay. Let's head out. We five brothers can travel together for some time. We would be able to avert a lot of troubles by doing so."

Chu Yang had said the last few words very profoundly... as if there was some hidden meaning to them.

Dong Wu Shang remained silent for a moment. But then, he said, "Big Brother, I want to go alone."

Chu Yang's gaze turned into a stare, "Are you sure?"

Dong Wu Shang took a deep breath and replied, "I'm sure!"

Chu Yang looked at him with a conflicted look in his eyes. But then, he nodded and said, "Well, have a safe trip."

"Big Brother, I think that all of us should go alone," Gu Du Xing insipidly proposed, "Travelling together doesn't work well with cultivation. Besides, each one of us has their own stuff to face. We can avoid a lot of troubles if we work together. However, there are some troubles which just can't be avoided. They eventually surface no matter what. So, it's better to resolve these troubles as soon as possible, and avoid future headache."

Chu Yang was silent for a long time. Then, he said, "But, this journey spans across 5000 Km, and it's going to be riddled with crises. After all, the big clans are waiting for an opportunity to strike. In case..."

"Big Brother, weren't you the one who had rushed along a distance of 6500 Km in the Lower Three Heavens? Have you forgotten that?" Gu Du Xing smiled heartily. He then suddenly said in a solemn manner, "Big Brother, you're kind intentioned. But... you can't always protect us like an old hen guarding her chicks. That... will spoil us rotten."

"Everybody has their own inner demons and stories. And, they all have their own destiny to face. The so-called 'crisis' is the respective highlight in everyone's life," Gu Du Xing looked at Chu Yang and said somewhat carefully, "Big Brother, we can't be together forever!"

Chu Yang was silent for a long time. But then, he finally nodded and said, "I worry too much. This is the weakness in my disposition. I'm afraid to lose the things that I have. But, having

something for a long-long time... can sometimes make us lose that kind of deep attachment. Alright, I've talked enough. You guys can travel on your own."

Gu Du Xing stood straight, and solemnly replied, "Thank you very much, Big Brother!"

Chu Yang smiled, and patted him on the shoulder, "There's no need to be so formal. I've understood what you said."

Everyone laughed.

Then, Chu Yang suddenly began to reflect upon himself; [I had lost too much in my previous life. I had lost my family... as well as my lover... In fact, there was nothing left to lose in the world. But, this has paved the way for my success in this life. However, it has also given birth to this other extreme nature of mine.]

[I worry way too much to protect the people around me! I fear that it would be too late for regrets if any one of them met with an accident.]

[I don't want to lose the things that I have!]

[We can call this as 'taking responsibility', but it is also a malpractice. It is the most responsible thing to do for mediocre people. However, this so-called 'ultimate responsibility' is another level of extreme irresponsibility as far as the geniuses are concerned.]

Chapter 631: Parting Ways

The consequences of doing so would only strangle each brother's personality. For instance... the kind of personalities Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang have... They wouldn't be able to reach higher achievements if they were to grow under someone's protection.

All of them would inevitably encounter a crisis of life and death after separation. In fact, they would encounter it more than once. However, they must still part ways.

Gu Du Xing had said it right — because this crisis is the respective highlight in their lives...

...no matter if they were to die facing it...

And, Gu Du Xing had intentionally brought about this idea of learning from experiencing extreme dangers at this time of turmoil and war.

"Alright, then. All of us will go our separate ways," Chu Yang finally made up his mind and smiled.

"Um, I'll go and check on Aobo first. Then, I'll go back to my clan from Aobo's place," Ji Mo's eyebrows trembled in excitement.

Luo Ke Di said while making fun of him, "Meeting Xie Dan Feng is the same as meeting Aobo. That is... they both are cut from the same cloth... They both are reckless and fierce. However, your Aobo isn't as fierce as Tan Tan's fiancé."

"This isn't necessarily true," Rui Bu Tong retorted with righteous indignation, "Aobo is much fiercer than Tan Tan's fiancé'. After all, her one thigh is thicker than Third Brother Ji's waist!"

Everyone burst into laughter.

Ji Mo glared at him. Then, he rolled his eyes as if thinking about something, but it was unknown what exactly. He then sneakily pulled Chu Yang to one side, and asked mysteriously and secretly,

"Big Brother, does that medicine of yours work on normal people too?"

"Medicine?" Chu Yang looked at him in confusion.

"Yeah..." Ji Mo looked all around. Then, he moved closer to Chu Yang's ear and whispered, "The one you gave to Luo Ke Di to treat his condition... Would it be useful for me as well?"

"They say it is... They say that it can double the length," Chu Yang looked at him in an alert manner. "Why are you asking this?"

Ji Mo jumped in excitement, "Big brother... Big brother, give me one bottle. Give me one bottle... I'll tame that tigress..."

Chu Yang's face turned black, "No!"

Ji Mo put on a defeated look on his face, and started to beg, "Big Brother..." He threw amorous glances while begging...

Chu Yang's entire body shivered, "Okay, okay. I'm giving..."

He took out a small jade bottle as he spoke. Then, he handed it over to Ji Mo and said, "You first... try it... cough cough... if it works... then... ok? Understand?"

"I understand! I understand!" Ji Mo beamed with joy. He looked at the jade bottle as if he was looking at some precious treasure. Then, he put that bottle into his pocket. He couldn't wait for the moment to come.

Ji Mo turned his head, and saw that everyone was looking at Chu Yang and him with a suspicious look. So, he snorted, and lowered his face. He then coughed several times. He cupped his hands together in front of everyone one by one, and then said in a stern voice, "Fellow brothers, the journey ahead is going to be difficult for all of us since everyone is going our separate ways. So, allow me to be the first one to head out. Ha ha ha..."

He put down his hands while saying this. He then rubbed the crotch of his trouser without letting anyone notice. Then, he

dashed out while issuing a whooshing sound.

Chu Yang shook his head. [How impatient! He truly has future prospects...]

Then, another impatient guy came over jumping, "Big Brother and all the brothers, I'm also heading out early," Luo Ke Di smiled like a Buddha. This guy's 'bulging tent' had remained erect for several days. And, it had made him more and more uncomfortable each day. So, he jumped out when he saw Ji Mo leave.

"Along the way, Coyo..." Luo Ke Di's shadow disappeared without a trace before Chu Yang could finish his sentence. Only an obscene and overexcited laughter was heard from the distance...

Chu Yang and the others remained dumbstruck.

Gu Du Xing felt emotional in his heart at this moment. He realized that he was now a Sword Emperor. And, he recalled that he had made a commitment to his Sister Xiao Miao. So, he couldn't help but burn with impatience in his heart. His heart was set on speeding home. He licked his lips and said, "Big Brother... I'm also leaving then."

Chu Yang looked at him strangely. But then, he said with a smile, "Eh? Don't tell me your Sister Xiao Miao has made you unable to restrain your emotions?"

Gu Du Xing's cold and stern face turned red like a ripened tomato. Even his scalp emitted heat. He got extremely angry, "Definitely... definitely..."

He wanted to say 'definitely not'. But, he couldn't deceive his heart after all. He finally said in anger, "I'm leaving!"

He then changed into a sword-light and whooshed away.

"Big Brother... please take care. I'm also going." A warm feeling flashed in Dong Wu Shang's eyes.

"Wu Shang, be careful... on the way." Chu Yang was most

worried about Dong Wu Shang.

"Yes, I know." Dong Wu Shang deeply nodded and said, "Don't worry! I'll be alive the next time we meet."

Dong Wu Shang then turned around; he was carrying the Black Saber on his back. He looked majestic from behind as he walked out step by step.

Ao Xie Yun saw them all leaving. And, he couldn't help but sigh, "You brothers share genuine brotherly feelings among you."

He smiled in envy, "They find an excuse for leaving while bidding farewell... just to minimize the parting sorrow of others at the time of separation. It is surely a trivial matter. However, it can be seen that they have placed their brothers in their hearts. They're always thinking about their brothers no matter what. Those people are brothers in the genuine sense."

Chu Yang looked outside the door in a blank state of mind. He said, "He-he... Your Ao Clan wouldn't have to worry about any domestic or external problems... if you had even two such brothers out of the seven..."

"That's right!" Ao Xie Yun forced a smile, "Even the possibility of having one such brother... is something I'd yearn for day and night. They have always only cared about the Young Clan Lord's seat my ass sits on. I've never been just 'Ao Xie Yun' to them."

Chu Yang silently murmured, "Great clans are like royal empires. It's a big relief for the emperor if there is only one crown prince; especially if this crown prince also embodies enough talent to lead the empire. But, let's presume that there's a country with several princes, and all of them are talented... They all have the ability to rule the country. They all have the ability to bring peace to the country. They all have the wisdom and ambitions to actively work for the nation — such a country would be on the verge of deterioration despite having talented heirs."

"Your Ao Clan has seven geniuses at once. So, the seniors of your clan are probably feeling content. They must be thinking that Ao Clan would reach new heights, and would never collapse. But, let me tell you... it's the exact opposite. Your clan is already on the path of decline!

"Your Ao Clan would perhaps be destroyed soon enough if you — Ao Xie Yun — aren't willing to get your hands dirty and take control of things from the beginning," Chu Yang softly stated.

Ao Xie Yun trembled in fright. He couldn't help but bow down, "Thank you for the advice!"

"Well, I'm going now. I must go and have a look at what mischief Mo Tian Ji is up to," Chu Yang waved his hand, "Xie Dan Qiong should be coming back from the Ao Clan soon enough. You two have a chat and discuss about the things going on."

Ao Xie Yun nodded with a serious look.

"Tan Tan, you must take care of yourself," Chu Yang went to the door. He then said while standing upright, but without turning his head.

Tan Tan nodded with all his strength. He knew what Chu Yang meant by 'take care of yourself'. Or so to say, only he and Chu Yang could understand what it meant.

This 'take care of yourself' didn't mean 'take care of your life'.

"Moreover... Tan Tan, you help Bu Tong promote his strength," Chu Yang said. Then, he quickly went away while leaving behind a few more words, "Say goodbye to everyone in the Xie Clan on my behalf. Tell them that I had to leave early."

Ao Xie Yun looked at Chu Yang's back profile. And, he pledged in his heart; [Rui Bu Tong won't be the only one to promote his strength. I will do so as well!]

However, he hadn't noticed that Rui Bu Tong had almost cried after Chu Yang had said those words.

However, Rui Bu Tong had noticed that Ao Xie Yun also wanted to participate in the special training. So, he immediately became excited, "Are you ready?"

"Of course, I am!" Ao Xie Yun said in an upright and bold manner.

"That's great!" Rui Bu Tong hugged him. However, he was crying in his heart. [Finally, there's someone who will court death with me...]

Ao Xie Yun felt that there was something wrong. So, he asked to probe, "This training won't cripple me, right?"

Tan Tan gave a simple and honest smile. He uprightly and honestly said, "He he he... you'll become more efficient after this training."

Ao Xie Yun felt relieved in his heart as he looked at this guy's honest and considerate face. He saw Tan Tan's innocent appearance, and felt that this guy wouldn't go too far while training...

...

Not even one-third of the time had passed on the first morning of this 'special training'. But, Ao Xie Yun was already regretting it. This bastard Tan Tan had torn down the clothes of those two. He had then made them cultivate after tying both of them together. Moreover, he had set targets that were nearly impossible to achieve. And, he would smear honey on their private parts, and would throw them into a cluster of flowers if they couldn't achieve those targets...

Ao Xie Yun collapsed after only the first time.

However, Ao Xie Yun soon realized that he had so much potential. So, he genuinely practiced with all his might... [Such fast progress?]

They practiced in the afternoon in the same manner. However, Eldest Young Master Ao completed his training target in only two-

third of the time provided. After that, he gloated as he saw Rui Bu Tong being tied up with his hands and legs opened up... honey smeared on his penis... and then thrown into a cluster of flowers... left to scream pitifully...

Tan Tan's training method was monotonous. It was undoubtedly far less interesting than Chu Yang's methods. But... its results were outstanding.

They again trained in the same manner the next day...

Ao Xie Yun – the Eldest Young Master of the number-one clan of Middle Three Heavens – looked at Tan Tan's simple and honest face after undergoing this training. And, his entire body couldn't help but tremble. His face had also turned blue...

Tan Tan's most scary words were, [I'll throw you two naked in the cluster of flowers if you don't achieve today's target. Then, I'll make Dan Feng come along with her sisters to look around. And then, they'll see you, and practice drawing...]

Tan Tan had smiled in a pure, honest, and very sincere way when he had spoken these words. He even had hope and expectations in his words. And, his eyes were shining with excitement.

The hair on Ao Xie Yun and Rui Bu Tong's entire body had stood on end.

Ao Xie Yun had scolded himself thousands of times within only two days of training. [You fu*ked up! Why did you have to participate in this kind of 'special training'...? Now, I want to cry... but the tears won't come...]

The Ou Clan had been destroyed. And, the news of this major incident had spread throughout the Middle Three Heavens like a hurricane!

Dozens of clans began to stir things up at the same time.

Ao Clan got the news that Ou Clan had formed alliances with other clans to hunt down Ao Xie Yun a couple of days before they got to know about the destruction of the Ou Clan. An urgent discussion had been going on in the clan; the results of that discussion hadn't even come out yet. And, that was the time when the news of the Ou Clan's destruction had come...

The only worry of Ao Clan was Ou Clan. So, the Clan Lord of Ao Clan – Ao Tian Xing – immediately decided that their most powerful enemy had been destroyed, [Dispatch the troops!]

Everyone in the Ao Clan set into action as soon as he issued this order. And, groups of troops spread in the Jianghu one after another.

They wanted the debt of blood to be paid in blood!

All the allies of Ou Clan started to feel insecure after they came to know about Ou Clan's destruction. They all surrounded themselves with armies in order to protect themselves. In addition, all these clans did their utmost to send people out to find reinforcements...

However, three words were surging incessantly in the Jianghu – 'Heavenly Armament Pavilion'!

"What organization is this? Is it truly so powerful that it destroyed the entire Ou Clan overnight? Is it that strong?"

"You don't know about this...? Come, come. I'll tell you..."

....

Meanwhile, Mo Tian Ji jumped up from his chair as soon as he received this news. He rushed out bare-footed while yelling and shouting. Then, he immediately invited Dong Wu Lei and the others to come over...

A big storm had truly taken shape now. And, the might of this storm would affect each and every individual in the Middle Three Heavens.

Chapter 632: Warning

"Search the Jianghu. The first thing to do is to find out whether Ao Xie Yun is dead or alive. Bring back his body if he's dead. And then, we'll take revenge! Bring him back if he is alive. And then, we'll take revenge!"

Ao Tian Xing had said all of this at the time when the juniors of the clan were about to go to battle. He had basically meant, [Ao Xie Yun must be brought back... dead or alive! And, the people who attacked Ao Xie Yun must pay the price... no matter what.]

"You six people, your entire cultivation would be discarded after you return if any of you dares to play any dirty trick out of your pettiness. Don't think that we don't know what you're thinking."

This was Ao Tian Xing's warning to his six nephews.

The military forces set-off on the journey. Ao Tian Xing asked, "How is Young Master Xie doing?"

"Young Master Xie took his leave," a servant reported, "Young Master Xie was still unwell. But, he took his leave seeing the present situation of our Ao Clan. He had said before leaving — Clan Lord will obviously feel sad if I say goodbye to him under the present circumstances. So, I'm leaving right away."

Ao Tian Xing nodded. His thoughts were in turmoil at this time. Xie Dan Qiong had certainly left without saying goodbye. But, he had understood Ao Tian Xing's state of mind.

Ao Tian Xing went into the inner room once all the arrangements were done. Then, he took a secret path, and went all the way down. It wasn't known how far he went... He went through several twists and turns along the way, and finally arrived in front of a peculiar underground stone-chamber.

"Ancestors, why did you insist on sending those six out when you know that the Jianghu is in turmoil?" Ao Tian Xing was somewhat

puzzled. He was also somewhat resentful.

There was a big room opposite to him; its walls were built of white crystal. The quality of this white crystal was so high that it was almost transparent. Three vague silhouettes could be seen through the crystal wall.

"Are you sure that Ao Xie Yun hasn't died?" an aged voice transmitted from the inside after a long time.

"Yes!" Ao Tian Xing answered, "We have made discreet inquiries about the various aspects of the news. It is true that Ou Clan, Black Devil Clan, and the other clans had chased down Ao Xie Yun. But, it didn't come off. Some rumors say that Xie Yun was rescued by King of Hell Chu. And, I'm sure that these rumors aren't groundless..."

There was silence on the opposite side.

Then, a sudden sigh was heard. And, another voice slowly said, "We three brothers have been hidden here in seclusion for fifty years now. Our lifelong accomplishment will halt right here if we can't break through the barrier of the fifth grade Monarch Level in a few years."

He paused for a while, and then continued, "In other words, we three will die in twenty or so years if we can't break through... After all, we'll have hit the terminus of our lifespans."

Ao Tian Xing opened his eyes wide in astonishment, "How could this..."

"We can't protect all the generations of the Ao Clan through the ages. The future of the Ao Clan is in the hands of the younger generation," another voice coldly said, "But, these youngsters would be useless despite being highly talented if they aren't obedient and have wild schemes to destroy their own brothers.

"There are seven highly talented youngsters in this generation, and Ao Clan has been overjoyed because of this. They think that

the restoration of the clan is hopeful. But, we three old men have been anxious about it," that cold and stern voice continued, "It must be borne in mind that there would inevitably be wild ambitions and desire for power when many talented men appear together."

"Let Ao Xie Yun use his strategy if he hasn't died yet. Let him subdue these six people... Let him tame them. Or, let him kill them! But, let these six men struggle amongst themselves first if he has already died. Let it be... even if it causes some damage to the clan. After all, it'll be better than the division of the clan in the future."

"But, it won't be fair if Ao Xie Yun died by their hands."

The Ancestor who had been the first one to speak-up said in an indifferent manner, "This is an aristocratic clan. So, it may be said that there's nothing fair here. All of them are sufficiently fledged now. So, they must prove to be worthy if they want the leading position."

Ao Tian Xing opened his mouth. He exposed a distressed look on his face. [How many of these seven outstanding juniors of the clan would remain if they engaged in this kind of struggle?]

"We three won't meddle no matter what. We'll only wait for the results. As for you people... you can also use different methods. However, the Clan Lord's guards and the neutral Emperor Level Experts of the clan mustn't set into action. The Black Star Guards and Proud Eagle Assassination Squad must not be mobilized. These are the basic rules which mustn't be broken.

"This is an opportunity. The Ao Clan's strength will indeed be greatly damaged after this. And, it is possible that there may come a period of stillness in the clan. However, the strength of the clan will be condensed henceforth."

One of the Ancestors said, "Tian Xing, you must remember... The thing that makes a clan rise to power and fame isn't numerical

strength. In fact, even having a lot of property doesn't make a clan great. However, unity does!

"Ao Clan has lots of assets at present, and ranks first in the Middle Three Heavens. But, there is no unity in the clan."

Then, Ao Tian Xing walked out with a heavy load on his mind.

[Xie Yun, where are you? Are you still alive?]

....

Outside the gate of Ao Clan... six troops were ready and waiting to set out. The six youngsters who were each leading a team had warm and gentle smiles on their faces. They had gathered together. And, all six of them were handsome youngsters. All of them looked dashing, and had a cool and calm bearing. Their statures were tall; they all were good looking and well-built.

They were the six Young Masters of the Ao Clan.

"Qing Yun, you can probably make an extra effort, and find Eldest Brother. It would be a great accomplishment. Ha ha," one of the youngsters warmly laughed.

"Meng Yun, you must make an extra effort. Maybe, this great accomplishment will be yours," Ao Qing Yun modestly smiled.

....

These brothers were amiably chatting and laughing among themselves. Each one of them was friendly to the other. But, a strange coldness would occasionally flash through their eyes. And, this coldness was fierce and scary.

Everyone knew that this was an opportunity for them. In fact, it was a once-in-a-blue-moon opportunity!

"Let's go!"

It wasn't known who had said these words. But, everyone instantly dispersed in confusion since all of them were already impatient. They quickly mounted their horses; their long robes

fluttered in the air amidst loud laughter. And, six long cavalries set out under the blue sky and above the green grass.

...

"They're back!" Mo Tian Ji looked at the two men in front of him.

Only three of them had gathered this time – Dong Wu Lei, Luo Ke Wu, and Mo Tian Ji.

They were in an isolated teahouse.

"I believe that you both got the news. Heavenly Armament Pavilion has returned, and it has destroyed the old nest of the Ou Clan. Now, only less than twenty people of the Ou Clan are left in the enemy alliance... This is the residual power of Ou Clan. It isn't worth fearing."

Mo Tian Ji slowly said with a calm face, "This thunderous attack from King of Hell Chu has solved our biggest problem. The Ou Clan was the reason why we were unable to make a move. It was our biggest concern.

"Trailblazer!" Mo Tian Ji indifferently said, "This is what I had meant when I called him a trailblazer. Only King of Hell Chu could have pulled this off without letting anyone find out."

Dong Wu Lei and Luo Ke Wu didn't say anything. They knew that this wasn't what Mo Tian Ji had called them for. Everyone knew about these things. After all, these things weren't a secret anymore.

"I want to remind you that..." A ray of light flashed in Mo Tian Ji's eyes. He then gently put his hands on the top of the table. He seemed to be a bit uncomfortable to say something. But then, he finally said, "What we need is unity. Otherwise, we'll be doomed in case a battle breaks out within our alliance.

"Ji Zhu, Xie Dan Qiong, and also Gu Clan... There won't be any problem with them. It's just the two of you I'm worried about.

"It might look as if the enemy is in the downwind at present. But... you must know that Tian Clan and Black Devil Clan haven't shown their true potential yet. And, Tu Clan is even more covert. It hasn't yet set into motion," Mo Tian Ji swept his vision. He looked at both of them with his spear-like sharp vision. "I believe that you two realize and understand all this."

Dong Wu Lei and Luo Ke Wu pondered.

A long while passed. Then, Luo Ke Wu slowly said, "I've never had any such idea."

"You haven't. But that doesn't mean that your subordinates haven't... your die-hard supporters haven't." Mo Tian Ji snorted. He looked at the two of them, "I want to let you know that Luo Ke Di is now a ninth grade Martial King. He is just half-a-step away from becoming an Emperor Level Expert.

"And, Dong Wu Shang is now an Emperor Expert. Moreover, he's a pure first-grade Saber Emperor," Mo Tian Ji looked at Dong Wu Lei and heavily said, "Our great clans need such strength at present."

Dong Wu Lei's complexion changed, and he slowly nodded. Then, he deeply said, "You rest assured. I know what to do."

Mo Tian Ji deeply looked at him, and slowly said, "I hope so."

....

Dong Wu Lei and Luo Ke Wu went out of the Mo Clan while riding their horses. They both remained silent. All they did was sigh deeply.

A long time passed. Then, Luo Ke Wu cupped his hands together, turned his horse around, and rode away. He didn't speak anything.

Dong Wu Lei looked at the grass under his feet. His eyes somewhat froze there. He had a complicated and conflicted look in his eyes. His facial muscles were compressing and stretching. And, his eyebrows were tightly wrinkled together.

He just randomly pulled on the horse's reins to make it go forward. A very long time passed. Then, he heaved a long sigh, and started to muttered, "Saber Emperor... Saber Emperor..."

A radiant light flashed through the eyes of the four old men behind him.

A long while passed again. Then, Dong Wu Lei lightly tapped his legs on the belly of the horse. The fine steed issued a long neigh, and dashed away with clip-clop sounds. It left behind a tangled mood that soon got stamped into dust.

....

There was a cloud of gloom and sorrow in the alliance of Ou Clan, Tian Clan, Tu Clan, and the other clans. In fact, the atmosphere was so heavy that they were nearly unable to breathe.

They had received a bunch of news a while ago; [The forces of Tu Clan encountered an attack from Ao Clan from all sides.]

[The forces of Tian Clan encountered an attack from Ao Clan from all sides.]

[Li Clan encountered an attack from Ao Clan.]

[Zhao Clan encountered an attack from Ao Clan.]

These attacks included attacking their military forces, blocking their trades, destroying their shops, and warning and attacking their business partners.

It was an omnidirectional kind of attack.

Two sub-branches of Black Devil Clan had been uprooted by the Ao Clan.

The six brigades of the Ao Clan were like six raging tides which were sweeping across the boundless earth.

And, on this side... they had gotten caught up in internal strife even before the war had started. Their ally... Meng Clan had been uprooted by their allied forces. And now, Ou Clan didn't exist

anymore. Only Ou Cheng Wu and Ou Du Xiao were left along with a residual team of twenty.

Therefore, both of them had become like two generals without an army.

"Ao Clan has dispatched six troops. These troops are being individually led by Ao Qing Yun, Ao Cheng Yun, Ao Meng Yun, Ao Yu Yun, Ao Feng Yun, and Ao Lang Yun."

Tian Bu Hui gently tapped his hand on the table. Then, he slowly said, "The Ao Clan's retaliation has begun. Moreover, Mo Clan, Xie Clan, Ji Clan, Luo Clan, Dong Clan, and Gu Clan have also begun to stir. This matter has reached the situation that we didn't want created at any cost. It has truly reached a dire situation. So, I request everyone to suggest some countermeasures to deal with the current situation."

Nobody spoke for a long time.

Then, the Young Black Devil coldly snorted.

Tian Bu Hui raised his head, and threw an ice-cold glance at the Young Black Devil, "I want to remind everyone that we are presently in a critical life and death situation. And, we'll be doomed if we don't stay united. Therefore, I want everyone to be patient, and watch their words."

He then turned his head, "Brother Tu, how long would it take for the reinforcements that you promised would arrive?"

Tu Qian Hao confidently smiled and said, "My father and Ancestor have gone in person. I think we should get some good news in a few days."

Tian Bu Hui slowly nodded. He sighed, "I hope so... the sooner the better."

...

Note: There are two Li Clans in the Middle Three Heavens. One

of the 'Li' Clan means 'Strict' Clan and the other Li means 'Plum'. They are written and pronounced differently in the native language. But, they come out to seem the same in English. So, we're going to use Li Clan for Li Xiong Tu's Li Clan. And, Plum Clan for the other one. Let's hope this keeps the confusions away.

Chapter 633: People of Ao Clan

Ou Du Xiao had been the spokesman and manger of this alliance before. But, it was Tian Bu Hui now.

It was obvious that the Ou Clan had lost the authority to speak in this alliance after its destruction.

"Moreover, the people of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion have already dispersed. They are now hurrying back to their respective clans," Tian Bu Hui got serious and said, "We mustn't let these men return to their clans.

"First, these people destroyed our important plan. So, we must take revenge for this intense and bloody hatred. Second, they'll certainly attack us after they return to their clans. After all, they have the help of the intel they have on us."

Tian Bu Hui squinted. And, a cold light shot from the slit in his eyes, "Who knows what that bastard Meng Luo has told them? Things are going to be bad if he had told them about our military deployment and plan of action. Therefore, we can't take the risk of allowing them to return to their clans.

"So, our top priority is to stop these people."

Tian Bu Hui and the Young Black Devil looked at each other as Tian Bu Hui said this.

"Our Ou Clan takes the responsibility to deal with King of Hell Chu," Ou Du Xiao gritted his teeth. His eyes were bloodshot at the moment. Both father and son had fainted on the spot when the news of their clan's destruction had come through.

And now, they both loathed this person King of Hell Chu the most... There was no one else in the entire world who they hated more than him.

"Um, should I send some people with you?" Tian Bu Hui asked as a symbolic gesture.

"No need!" Ou Du Xiao gnashed his teeth, "I'll kill Chu Yang, and come back with his head. Or, we both father and son will die trying. As they say... death ends all the troubles."

A mysterious color flashed in Tian Bu Hui's eyes. He then nodded with a smile, "Brother Ou will certainly succeed."

Ou Du Xiao snorted. He felt as if there was a sense of ridicule behind Tian Bu Hui's remark. However, he wasn't in the state of mind to care about it.

"Our Tu Clan takes the responsibility of taking care of Gu Du Xing," Tu Qian Hao had a deep-seated hatred towards Gu Du Xing because of his last fight with him. And now, he had an opportunity to slaughter that guy, and tell the world, [I – Tu Qian Hao – am the true number-one expert of this generation.]

"I've heard that Gu Du Xing has broken through to Sword Emperor," the young Black Devil somewhat accidentally... and somewhat intentionally said in a casual manner, "Tu Qian Hao, what grade King are you?"

Tu Qian Hao's entire face turned red. He then lowly exclaimed, "I'll kill him even if he's a Sword Monarch."

However, Tu Qian Hao had shot a threatening glance to the young Black Devil when he had said this.

The young Black Devil mischievously laughed and said, "This being the case... I'll get rid of Dong Wu Shang."

"Get rid of Dong Wu Shang?" Tu Qian Hao snorted, "He's a Saber Emperor. Which grade King are you?"

The young Black Devil glared at him in reply. He shot cold light from his eyes, "Tu Qian Hao, do you have a death wish?"

Everyone rushed to to mediate.

"Our Li Clan (Plum Clan) will ambush and kill Ji Mo," the Clan Lord of Li Clan said.

"Our Zhao Clan will kill Luo Ke Di," the Clan Lord of Zhao Clan declared.

"Each of you is going to be far behind the enemy lines. So, don't forget to wrap things up quickly," Tian Bu Hui nodded and reminded them.

He then said, "Li Xiong Tu once owed me a big favor. So, I'll personally go to see him this time."

Everyone's eyes lit up.

[The chances of our success would become very high if he manages to involve Li Clan (Strict Clan).]

"There's no time to lose. We must set into action."

...

Gu Du Xing was going swiftly along the way. He was shuttling through the mountain forest. His heart was on fire.

He knew that the enemy was bound to intercept him on the way. However, he was confident that he could easily break through all interceptions, and rush back to his Sister Xiao Miao.

Then, he would tell her; [I want to marry you! I want to marry you right now!]

[I'll always be at your side from now on. You don't need to fear anything anymore!]

Gu Du Xing didn't feel lonely due to such fiery mood despite being on this dull and dry journey of thousands of miles. In fact, this journey seemed like a beautiful landscape to him.

However, Gu Du Xing didn't relax and lower his guard because of this.

After all, he clearly knew that this was the best opportunity for his enemy to kill him.

Moreover, he needed to learn through this experience.

Therefore, Gu Du Xing wasn't the least bit startled when three people suddenly appeared before him in the forest and blocked his way. He gently took out his Black Dragon Sword and coldly asked, "Tu Qian Hao's men?"

The three men opposite to him didn't say a word. They only rushed over.

Gu Du Xing coldly snorted, and quickly made up his mind to attack. He then jumped up, and bent his body in mid-air. Then, he suddenly straightened it up... just like a bent-sword springs back straight. The sword-light scattered randomly. He then united with his sword, and rushed forward.

The three men separated up. They then again assembled together, and blocked Gu Du Xing. Then, they attacked brutally.

Gu Du Xing changed into a black lightning, and rushed past them. He flew out of the encirclement of those three people. He didn't even turn back his head, and quickly disappeared into the forest with a 'whoosh' sound. He vanished without a trace. In fact, he only left behind these few words, "Not Tu Qian Hao's people..."

Those three who had blocked his way kept standing there with expressionless faces. Suddenly, thin blood streams spurt out from their throats at the same time. Then, a fountain of blood rose up from their heads.

All three collapsed lifeless at the same time.

Gu Du Xing's single sword blow had slaughtered three King Level Experts. And then, he had gotten far away.

A long time passed. Then, a rustling sound rang in the forest. Ten people appeared, and looked at the corpses of the three King Experts. The white-clothed youngster in the middle gently breathed out. He then muttered, "Such a dreadful Sword Emperor!"

The several people behind him had solemn looks on their faces.

Then, one of them said, "Sixth Young Master, I'm afraid that it would be very difficult to execute our plan... if everyone in the Heavenly Armament Pavilion has such strength."

The white-clothed youngster slightly tilted his head and pondered. Then, he insipidly said, "What do you think would happen... if you all were to have a fight with this Sword Emperor?"

Everyone behind him looked at each other. They remained silent for a while. Then, they said, "Perhaps, no one but Big Brother can withstand him in a one-on-one fight."

The body of the white-clothed man shook up, "The lowest among you is a second-grade Emperor Level Expert. And, the highest among you is a fifth-grade Emperor Level Expert. So, how can you not defeat even a first-grade Sword Emperor?"

His voice was full of disbelief.

"We might be able to take him on by going all-out at the risk of our lives if we were to take into account all of our cultivations put together. But... he's a Sword Emperor! Sword Emperors are entirely different from ordinary Emperor Level Experts," an old man said in a sinking voice; this man stood in the middle, and had three wisps of long beard, "I can probably attack and defeat him. But, it's impossible to kill him."

The white-clothed youth remained silent for a while. He then said, "Send a message to Third Brother. Tell him — the non-emperors can't deal with Gu Du Xing."

The old man behind him shivered in shock, "This..."

"I lost three King level Experts. So, Third Brother must surely be very happy. But, I'll make him lose a few Emperor Level Experts," the white-clothed youngster warmly smiled and said, "Ao Qing Yun and I have joined hands for the time being. But, that fellow has prepared a second ambush. He wants our strength to be exhausted first... humph humph..."

He waved his hand while saying this. He then added, "Bury the corpses at once, and then let's go!"

He turned around while saying this. Then, he further said, "Our Clan has come out to take revenge for Ao Xie Yun this time. But, that is just a pretext. So, it would be better to take advantage of the chaos in the Jianghu, and recruit forces since everything would ultimately depend on the accomplishments of us brothers... Only the strongest will survive in this process.

"What other option do I have apart from recruiting someone as incredible as Gu Du Xing?" he softly said, "Otherwise, wouldn't Ao Feng Yun remain a nobody in the Nine Heavens?"

This youngster was Ao Feng Yun of the Ao Clan!

Everyone thought that he was dealing with Tian Clan, Li Clan (Plum Clan), and the other clans. Nobody could've imagined that this ambitious youngster would come here with his wild schemes.

"Sixth Young Master, this old man thinks that we should give priority to the matters of the clan. I'm afraid that we would be overtaken by the other contenders if we keep engaging ourselves in external affairs..." that old man with long beard slightly sighed and advised.

"No! The chaos of the Middle Three Heavens can't be stopped in any way at this time. The battles of all the great clans have already begun. And, no one can stop it now. Those several clans will naturally set into action even if we remain motionless. So, our top-most priority must be to nibble away and watch from the sidelines... And, expand our strength while we watch other people weakening in this process. This is how you rule!"

Ao Feng Yun then indifferently said, "But... Gu Du Xing is sharp. We lost three King Level Experts in just probing his strength. He has turned out to be beyond my expectations."

He turned around and said, "Anyway, it's better this way. We'll

exert pressure on the Gu Clan while Gu Du Xing returns to the clan. It'll make the entire Gu Clan come over seeking shelter."

The group followed him, and they all disappeared in the forest.

A long time passed. Then, a man's shadow flashed in the forest with a 'whoosh' sound. It was Gu Du Xing. He should've already left the forest by now. However, he had stealthily come back after having left this area at first.

"So, they were the Ao Clan's people. So, that's why I found the attack to be so strange..." Gu Du Xing's complexion was as cold as steel. He then disdainfully thought aloud, "It's just Ao Feng Yun. You want to exert pressure on the entire Gu Clan...? Good... I'll wait for you to exert pressure. This will be a big gift to Ao Xie Yun from my side.

"Well, they said that there's another brother waiting for me ahead..." Gu Du Xing wrinkled his brows. "Has Ao Clan gone insane? They are targeting me at such a crucial time?"

He then rushed through the forest with a rustling sound.

He covered 250 Km. Then, someone from the woods in front of him lightly said, "So, Gu Du Xing of Gu Clan has arrived..." Gu Du Xing knitted his brows. He then saw the next wave 'waiting' for him. He stopped his steps and shouted, "Who is it?"

There remained silence in the forest. However, two shadows quietly appeared from both sides; they were wearing wide robes with long sleeves. Their visions were indifferent.

"Two Emperor Level Experts!" Gu Du Xing's pupils shrank. Two Emperor Level Experts had appeared in front of him!

"Gu Du Xing, I've come to bestow an enormous fortune upon you today," The man on the right side had an expressionless face. He insipidly said, "Join us, and I'll ensure that your Gu Clan stays safe and sound."

Then, the man on the left mischievously laughed, "And, Gu Clan

will be thoroughly destroyed within an instant if you reject this proposal."

Gu Du Xing suddenly raised his sword-like eyebrows. And, his murderous aura swept across like tides.

He didn't say a word. He just ferociously emitted bone-chilling sword-energy from his body. It seemed as if he had changed into a heaven-startling sword. His body emitted such dazzling light that it that could leave people incapable of looking up to him.

He then put his right hand on the hilt of the sword on his waist, and slowly clenched his fingers. The Black Dragon Sword issued a sword cry in excitement with a 'clang' sound in the sheath.

Simultaneously, the swords in the sheaths of those two men also issued crisp sword cries. Their sounds seemed to be respectful and submissive... as if a subject had seen their emperor... as if they were kneeling down, and performing the ritual of kowtowing.

Suddenly, the color of the two men opposite to him changed. They then clenched the hilts of their swords, and coldly stared at Gu Du Xing, "So, you don't want to join us?"

Gu Du Xing coldly snorted. He then took out the Black Dragon Sword from its sheath, and his figure turned into a sword-light the next moment.

He had killed those three people a while ago without even knowing the circumstances. So, there was no way he would spare these two now that he knew.

He didn't speak a word from the beginning to the end. [What's the difference between speaking to the dead, and not speaking at all?]

Then, the sword-light moved like dragon!

...

Chapter 634: I'm the Emperor of A Million Swords!

"You don't know how to appreciate favors," The two men hadn't imagined that Gu Du Xing would launch an attack without saying a single word. So, they furiously shouted at the same time, and pulled out their swords to face Gu Du Xing's attack.

Gu Du Xing snorted. He then suddenly accelerated his speed. After that, he finally opened his mouth.

He coldly and sternly shouted, "I am the Emperor of a Million Swords!"

Then, his body turned into a streamer of light!

Both the Emperor Level Experts were full of confidence. They whole-heartedly believed, [We both are Second Grade Emperor Experts. We have to attack in collaboration, and deal with just one guy who has broken through to the first grade of Emperor Level only recently. Shouldn't it be a piece of cake?]

Moreover, a scornful feeling had risen from the bottom of their hearts when Gu Du Xing had just attacked. They had thought, [Is he truly a Sword Emperor? He indeed has ample power, but his speed is too slow.]

This thought had risen in their hearts right before Gu Du Xing had suddenly accelerated in midair.

However, both the men became startled when this happened. [He's facing his enemies by rapidly changing his velocity.] The two men disorderly moved forward — one from the left and one from the right. These two were experts in mounting joint attacks. First, the one in the front would block the enemy. And then, the one in the back would deal the fatal blow.

This tactic had never been detrimental for them.

But then, Gu Du Xing had spoken a few words with an ice-cold look as if he was the monarch of the world, "I am the Emperor of a Million Swords!"

Both of them almost laughed out loud. [Are you an Emperor Expert with such a pathetic speed? Calling this guy an Emperor Expert would be an exaggeration!]

But then, they became terrified and panic-stricken.

It was because Gu Du Xing had again accelerated his body after shouting those words. In fact, his speed had increased to several times more than his initial speed.

Both of them could only block the attack by putting their swords horizontally. Suddenly, they heard a snapping sound. Gu Du Xing had already rushed past from between the two like a hurricane. However, Gu Du Xing didn't even turn his head... Instead, he rapidly disappeared in the forest that stood behind the two of them along with a sharp whizzing sound.

Rumbling sounds came from several hundred feet away behind. It turned out that Gu Du Xing had passed through the seventy or eighty trees that had come in his way, and had made them all fall in disorder. Consequently, dust had risen up to the sky, and had blocked the view of the direction in which Gu Du Xing had gone.

The two Emperor level experts stood motionless.

A long while passed. Then, the one in the front tried to move his hands. [It seems that nothing has happened to me. But then, why had I felt cold a moment ago?] He then decided to turn his head to take a look at his younger brother. Then, he asked without much effort, "Are you alright?"

The Emperor Expert behind him couldn't help but smile, "He is just too fast, that's all..."

However, he suddenly opened his eyes wide before he could finish his sentence.

It was because he clearly saw this — his brother's back had been facing him at first. Then, his brother was about to turn his head to look at him when he had spoken these words — 'Are you alright?'

After that, his elder brother had twisted his neck to turn back his head. But, this younger brother had found that only the upper half of his brother's neck had turned... In other words, his head had turned in a way that the lower half of the neck hadn't moved...

The fact was that his neck had been sliced into two sections — upper and lower. His neck had become like two grinding millstones placed together... It had turned since someone had rotated the upper millstone, but the lower millstone hadn't moved...

Moreover, a red line had faintly appeared on the intersection between the upper and lower sections of his neck when he had turned his head.

The younger Emperor Expert was dumbfounded as he looked at his elder brother. He then lifted his hand, "You you you..."

The Emperor Level Expert who had turned his head back to look at his younger brother was puzzled by this. So, he asked, "What's wrong with... me?"

However, a blood column suddenly gushed out from his neck after he spoke the first three words. And, this column of blood had sent his head up in the air. Therefore, his face had carried an expression of astonishment on it when he had said the last word, "...me?"

The Emperor Level Expert in the back screamed in fright. Then, he felt as if his own neck was a bit wet as well. So, he touched it with his hand. But, he couldn't help but cry out in fear as he lowered his head to look down.

Blood burst out from the cavity of his neck as he lowered it. And, his head was ferociously thrown forward the next second.

However, he could still see that a big tree was heading towards him...

Bang!

His head heavily crashed into the tree. And, the train of his thoughts stopped.

Both of these men truly had bad luck today. They had high cultivation and high level of military accomplishments. So, they shouldn't have died so quickly even if they couldn't be a match for Gu Du Xing. They could've at least brought the fight to a lose-lose situation. Though, they would've had to engage in a desperate struggle in that case. But, they wouldn't have lost their lives...

However, there had been a series of misunderstandings. And, these misunderstandings had cost the two Emperor Level Experts their lives.

It had been Ao Qing Yun and Ao Feng Yun's decision to deal with Gu Du Xing.

The Ao brothers that had come out on the clan's mission were all ambitious and vigorous. And, how would they replace Ao Xie Yun if they weren't willing to build a faction for themselves? Therefore, each the brothers' sight was focused on the Jianghu even if they hadn't clearly talked about it.

This was a big opportunity!

This chaotic situation was a heaven-sent golden opportunity! The next step for them would be the position of the Clan Lord of Ao Clan... as long as they could gather enough benefits and show enough means.

But, these things needed — Strength and Influence!

Therefore, they must rope in some forces that they could use for their own good. However, they couldn't look for allies among the clans affiliated to Ou Clan's alliance because the Ou Clan was their personal enemy. Otherwise, they would be scolded to death by

their ancestors even if they succeeded. Furthermore, the clans outside the range of the crisis wanted to stay far away from the crisis. They weren't interested in participating in the power struggle. So, seeking their alliance would only lead to wrangling...

Therefore, they could only choose one from Xie Clan, Gu Clan, Luo Clan, Dong Clan, and the others.

And, Gu Clan was the weakest among these clans. Or so to say... Gu Clan's situation was the most dangerous in this storm of the Jianghu.

Therefore, Gu Clan would certainly look for supporters. After all, its so-called 'allies' would be of no help if it were to be truly attacked.

Therefore, they thought of drawing-in the Gu Clan first. Gu Clan was indeed the weakest. But, it wasn't that weak a force for the Ao brothers. In fact, having the Gu Clan alongside would be equal to doubling their strength. Consequently, the chances of being successful would increase by a lot.

Ao Qing Yun and Ao Feng Yun had been fighting openly, but maneuvering covertly. However, they were still headed roughly in the same direction. They basically belonged to the same family. After all, these two were related by blood. Moreover, they were born of the same mother.

Therefore, the two brothers had been together from the first beat. Moreover, they had decided to deal with the Gu Clan first in order to succeed.

[Gu Du Xing is the key to dealing with the Gu Clan!]

[It's because Gu Clan's responsibility has now fallen into Gu Du Xing's hands. Moreover, Gu Du Xing also has a special status. After all, he's the second-in-command when it comes to the Heavenly Armament Pavilion.]

[We would hopefully be able to draw the entire Heavenly

Armament Pavilion into our faction if we can rope in Gu Du Xing! He he he... And, our future prospects would become very good when that happens.]

Therefore, the two hadn't discussed this with anyone in their clan. Instead, they had right away decided to block Gu Du Xing — one from the front and the other from the back.

They had thought that they would first capture Gu Du Xing, and then slowly convince him...

However, they hadn't expected that the three King Level Expert that had been sent by Ao Feng Yun would be beheaded by just one move of Gu Du Xing. This had obviously left Ao Feng Yun to feel very embarrassed...

Therefore, Ao Feng Yun had thought that they must face the disaster together since they both were sharing the fortune as well. One's bad luck must be the bad luck of both. It was his principle. Therefore, Ao Feng Yun had sent the news, [Non-Emperors can't deal with Gu Du Xing.]

Strictly speaking... these words were in fact true. They weren't false by any means. He had put emphasis on Emperor Experts because Gu Du Xing was a Sword Emperor now. He was a low level Emperor Expert. So, a ninth grade Emperor Expert would obviously be able to deal with him! But... there was difference between the Emperor Experts of different grades!

However, these words had seriously misled Ao Qing Yun as well as the two Emperor Experts that were now dead.

Non-Emperor Experts couldn't deal with Gu Du Xing... This obviously indicated that Emperor Level Experts could!

Therefore, Ao Qing Yun had felt relieved after he had learnt this. [Emperor Level Experts can deal with him. So, I'll send two Emperor Level Experts instead of just one. Wouldn't they be able to capture him alive with ease?]

The two Emperor Level Experts had also been misled. Therefore, they had confidently come out to capture him.

Then, they had gotten misled a second time when they saw Gu Du Xing, [He's so young!]. They had gotten misled a third time when they saw Gu Du Xing's movements, [He's so slow!]

Therefore, both of them had scorned in their hearts. They naturally hadn't been intending to go all-out. However, Gu Du Xing had unexpectedly accelerated his speed. Then, he had accelerated his speed one more time. And, he had accelerated his speed to such a level in the end that the two men didn't even get enough time to react.

The Black Dragon Sword had become one of the few top-tier heavenly weapons after Chu Yang had reformed it. So, it could now cut-off a head with one touch. Moreover, the two Emperor Level Experts weren't even able to launch their domain-shields. Consequently, they just died while being confused...

It could be said that they had died unjustly. It was extremely aggrieving.

Gu Du Xing had disappeared without a trace.

Ao Qing Yun came out with his ambush team. He was feeling a bit angry in his heart. But, he also wanted to ask one thing, [There are two Emperor Experts here. How did they let him go? Why didn't they stop him?]

Then, he saw the heads of those two falling down.

This Young Master Ao had always lived like a prince. However, he became dumbstruck when he saw this scene. In fact, he could only feel the chaos in his brain.

[How can it be possible?]

[Two Emperor Experts were dealing with just one person. And, he cut their heads off so neatly... so much so that they didn't even feel any pain. They could still speak even after getting their heads

cut off? They could still move?]

"Such quick sword!" An old man next to him couldn't stop the corner of his eyes from twitching repeatedly. He had a kind of feeling of trepidation. Simultaneously, there was a lingering dread in his heart.

This old man was a seventh grade Emperor Expert. It could be said that there were only a few experts of that level in the Middle Three Heavens.

However, he introspected, [Perhaps, I would also get seriously injured... if I didn't die... in case I had been misled into thinking that Emperor Experts could deal with him. After all, I too would've been caught off guard by this sword]

[Moreover, the enemy could easily and calmly leave.]

[This sword can keep the meridians of the human body intact after cutting the person. And, the meridians continue to provide vitality to the body...]

[Just how fast is this sword? And, how sharp is this sword?]

"Third Young Master, we can't deal with this Gu Du Xing." That old man hung down his head in listlessness. "This Old Man suggests that we mustn't make an enemy out of him. This man is less than twenty years old, and has achieved such a realm. We can't afford to have such an enemy... since he can grow further..."

Ao Qing Yun clearly hadn't thought like that. He pondered for a while, and then said, "You mean to say that he can achieve Monarch Level? Saint Level?"

"I can't say for sure about Saint Level. But, reaching Monarch Level shouldn't be difficult for him," the old man hesitated for a while, and then said with uncertainty.

"Then, it can be said that we would have at least one Monarch Level subordinate if not many... if we are able to capture him, right?" Ao Qing Yun's eyes lit up.

"Monarch Level subordinate? You want to subdue him?" That old man was startled. [Could it be that Third Young Master still wants to stick to the plan? Doesn't he understand what I'm saying? Offending such a formidable enemy will most probably lead to the destruction of the entire Ao Clan.]

"I obviously know the gains and losses of this. But, a man can always find a way. Even Supreme Experts have a weak point. And, he's only an insignificant Sword Emperor," Ao Qing Yun objected by waving his hand back and forth, "He's only a human after all. There has to be a circumstance that he wouldn't be able to defy."

The old man smiled bitterly. He touched his nose, and spoke no more. He said in his heart, [Then, you should've brought out this so-called circumstance a moment ago, ok? Ah...]

...

Chapter 635: You Will Pay the Price for Daring to Provoke my Black Devil Clan!

"Go and find Sixth Brother. That bastard has deceived us," Ao Qing Yun finally remembered about that sly dog, and his complexion changed. He said, "This bastard said 'non-emperors can't deal with Gu Du Xing', and made me lose two great experts by doing so. This is preposterous!"

The old man smiled bitterly, and said in his heart, [You're his competitor. So, who would he trick if not you?]

However, he didn't have to wait for his subordinates to find Ao Feng Yun since Ao Feng Yun had already come looking for him and his party.

"Third Brother, how did it go? Was that guy very difficult to deal with?" Ao Feng Yun's white clothes were fluttering in the wind. His refined appearance looked flawless as he eagerly asked. However, he then noticed the two corpses, and his eyelids suddenly bounced, "This this... what the hell is this? Didn't I warn you in advance? Then, how... did these unnecessary casualties occur?"

Blue veins popped on Ao Qing Yun's forehead, "Sixth Brother, you, you... how can you be so despicable?! What warning are you talking about? That was a cheap trick, ok?"

Ao Feng Yun's complexion changed, "Third Brother, what you're saying is absurd. I was kind enough to warn you. But, you're blaming me instead?!"

Ao Qing Yun snorted. He was about to speak, but he was stopped by the old man behind him. The two brothers looked at each other, and fiercely exhaled a breath from their nostrils... like mad bulls.

"What do you plan to do with the Gu Clan?" Ao Feng Yun asked very politely.

"I naturally have my plans," Ao Qing Yun replied in a bad mood.

"Don't tell me that Third Brother wants to break his partnership with me?" Ao Feng Yun narrowed his eyes, "Third Brother, I want you to understand that our partnership would benefit both of us. Similarly, both of us would incur losses if we broke up. It's not like you aren't aware of this fact. Moreover, we're brothers from the same mother. So, why allow a minor matter like this to hurt our brotherhood?"

Ao Qing Yun snorted, and pondered in his heart, [We two indeed have the weakest background out of the six brothers who have come out on the clan's mission. So, it certainly wouldn't be good for either of us if we separated. So, I have no choice but to hold back my resentment and agree to keep the partnership going.]

"Gu Clan has a weakness... It's their weak foundation. They can't last long relying solely on a single Sword Emperor – Gu Du Xing." Ao Qing Yun heaved a muffled sigh, "I believe that we should drop the plan of capturing Gu Du Xing first since it's not a feasible plan. Instead, we'd better target the Gu Clan first, and in-turn coerce the Gu Du Xing into join us. This is the best course of action..."

"Third Brother's wisdom is off the charts. Such a brilliant plan...!" Ao Feng Yun praised, "Such being the case... we better not delay. Let's rush to the Gu Clan."

"Let's go!"

The two groups of people mixed together, and started with the journey.

However, this exchange between the two made the Emperor Experts following them feel secretly disappointed.

[What do you mean by 'a minor matter like this shouldn't hurt your brotherhood'?]

[You mean to say that the lives of five loyal and devoted individuals — two Emperor Level experts and three King Level

experts — is only a trivial matter in your eyes?]

...

Gu Du Xing had gone far away like a whirlwind. However, vigilance was rising in the secrecy of his heart; [It seems like the happenings these days have gone somewhat out of hand.]

[As per the original plan... the Ao Clan should've used their forces to launch attacks on Tian Clan, Li Clan (Plum Clan), Tu Clan, and the other clans in this alliance after setting out... But now, it has clearly deviated from its intended direction.]

[The forces of Ao Clan didn't launch attacks on the enemy clans immediately after the Ao Clan dispatched them. Instead, they began a power struggle in the Jianghu? It seems like those brothers are scheming against one another.]

[It wasn't expected that such a situation would occur at the outset.]

[I don't know what plan Chu Yang would come up with once he finds out about this development.]

[However, the urgent matter at the moment is that I must deal with these two Young Masters of Ao Clan since they are clearly planning to go after my clan first... Therefore, I must deal with this mess.]

[But, how would I do that?]

Gu Du Xing sped along the way while racking his brain.

[Gu Clan is too small and too weak. It simply can't afford to offend... or have a head-on collision with the Ao Clan. Moreover, that would go against Chu Yang's established strategy. After all, clashing with these two little bastards and killing them... would only hurt their parents, and give quick birth to enmity with the Ao Clan. On top of that, I'll end up providing a big boost to Tu Qing Hao and the others.]

[Also, Chu Yang and the other brothers wouldn't stand by idly... They would stand on my side. And then, they would also be in trouble.]

[I can't involve Chu Yang and the others in this mess. So, I can only solve my problems myself...]

Gu Du Xing was rushing and thinking all the way... so much so that it gave him a headache. However, he still couldn't come up with any solution. He truly realized his shortcomings at this moment, [I'm a trailblazer who can attack a city with impenetrable defenses and succeed regardless. However, I would fall far short if I were to be made in-charge of the present situation... Especially if I have to protect myself in such a complex circumstance situation without involving my brothers... or my allies, and still manage to withstand Ao Clan's pressure...]

[It's going to be very very difficult for me.]

Gu Du Xing sighed and said in his heart, [Perhaps, Chu Yang would've already come up with countless moves to deal with them if he were here. But, I feel so helpless in this situation.]

Then, a thought popped up in his heart, [What would Chu Yang do if he were to be placed in my position?]

He kept rushing forward while thinking about this matter...

...

Chu Yang was rushing towards the east alone. He had unleashed an incredible mental concentration along the way. He was hurrying on with his journey on one hand. And on the other hand, he was keeping a look out for enemies. Meanwhile, he would also release the Nine Tribulations Sword to sense elixirs. He was making good use of time during this journey.

A great distance of a thousand miles passed smoothly without any obstacles.

However, Chu Yang found this strange. [It is reasonable to say

that someone ought to attack and kill me, right? However, I've come so far, but nothing has happened? Moreover, I had crossed 3 or 4 dangerous spots along the way... What is going on?]

[It's a long route. But, I'm equally accustomed to going not too fast and taking my time to enjoy the scenic beauty.]

[Are they afraid of me?]

He was thinking all this when the Sword Spirit suddenly said in alarm, "There's a bit of a situation ahead."

"A bit of a situation...?" Minister Chu was startled by this. So, his black figure quickly sneaked into a thick patch of underbrush with a 'whoosh' sound.

"Cough Cough... 10 Km ahead... There's a bit of a situation 10 km ahead." Sword Spirit was somewhat speechless; [This guy didn't wait for me to finish talking, and acted like a rabbit which sees a hound and conceals itself thereafter; it disappears without a trace...]

"Hey! You should've said so earlier," Chu Yang furiously crawled out and said, "I'm just too cautious..."

"You're truly a scaredy-cat," Sword Spirit mercilessly ridiculed him.

Chu Yang rolled his eyes, "I'm travelling alone now. You expect me to not be extra careful? Wouldn't it affect you as well if something were to happen to me? I'm just thinking of your safety... You're unable to recognize others' good intentions."

Sword Spirit was rendered speechless for a while; [The reason why he's so careful is obviously his own safety. But, he's saying that it's for my sake...?]

[I've seen shameless people before, but I've never seen someone who was this shameless.]

"Who are these people up ahead? Can you make out their

appearances?" Chu Yang asked in his mind as he cautiously and stealthily advanced forward.

"Get closer... It isn't perceivable from this distance," Sword Spirit replied.

Chu Yang fully immersed himself in rushing ahead... He displayed his stealth and sneaking skills to the peak. In fact, one would only see green grass swaying gently in the underbrush and leaves rocking on the trees even if they were to look closely...

And, one would be able to see him swiftly scurrying about from time to time even if they switched to slow motion... sometimes leaning down... sometimes moving sideways... sometimes going in reverse... and even sometimes somersaulting continuously a few times...

It's worth mentioning that he had exploited the shadows of the grass blades on the ground and the refraction of the sunlight in the sky to camouflage his figure, and become invisible when he made all these movements.

So, he had turned into a ghost in broad daylight!

The journey ahead shortened little by little.

7.5 Km...

5 Km...

Finally, the Sword Spirit issued a warning when he approached a distance of 1.5 Km, "Listen! The other side has experts. So, be careful or you'll be detected."

Chu Yang was startled by this. So, he started taking light footsteps, "I'm still thousands of feet away, right? And, you're saying that I might get detected...? Do they have a super Emperor Level Expert?"

"Well, the people who have laid out an ambush ahead are the most tyrannical enemies so far in terms of strength. But, that's

only the case if we don't count that Ou Ke Feng of the Ou Clan we faced earlier!"

Sword Spirit's voice sounded prudent.

Chu Yang took a deep breath, "So... powerful?"

"Moreover, they've clearly got the accurate news. And, their goal is obvious – to deal with you." Sword Spirit sensed carefully and said, "However, their aura seems very familiar. Several of them have auras similar to Ao Xie Yun's."

Chu Yang was shocked. His breathing almost became disordered, "Are you sure?"

"Yes!" Sword Spirit affirmed.

Chu Yang became perplexed. He then said in frustration, "People of Ao Clan? Why would the people of Ao Clan want to deal with me? They should be dealing with Tian Clan, Tu Clan, Black Devil Clan... Why would they come to deal with me instead? Haven't I provided them a big assistance? Shouldn't they be rewarding me or something?"

Sword Spirit also remained puzzled despite much thought. The Ao Clan shouldn't have any reason to bear its fangs at Chu Yang regardless of which aspect one would think of.

"Could it be that... they are trying to find you to make inquiries about Ao Xie Yun?" Sword Spirit made a guess.

"Absolutely not! They should've approached me frankly and honestly if that were the case. They shouldn't have prepared this sinister ambush." A cold light flashed in Chu Yang's eyes. Then, he reached out with his hand, and placed it on his face. Then, both his arms spread out; popping sounds came from within his body as a result. And then, he reached out and wiped his face, his arms stretched out, inside the body. A burst of general sounds of beans broke out.

His slim figure unexpectedly turned three inches shorter, and

became a little sturdier. He now had round eyes and well-formed forehead. His face looked fierce.

He searched inside the Nine Tribulations Space for a while, and pulled out a broadsword.

He thought for a moment, and then pulled out a face mask and covered his face.

"You've already changed your appearance. Why still put on a mask?" Sword Spirit asked.

"This is the ingenuity of the plan that I've come up with." Chu Yang grunted. He knitted his brows and thought hard, but still found this disguise to be lacking. Then, he said, "You've also seen the appearance of Young Black Devil, right? His face is always masked, but is it possible for me to imitate him... just the tiniest bit?"

Sword Spirit frowned and replied, "I can assist you with the spiritual power... but it will last only for half-an-hour."

"Half-an-hour? That'll do!" Chu Yang was overjoyed, and immediately restored his just-changed appearance to its original state.

A dusky mist emitted out of his body. Now, the black robe and the mask made him look just like the Young Black Devil. He just stood there, and his entire body exuded a gloomy aura.

"The most important thing is the eyes," Sword Spirit reminded.

"No problem!"

Chu Yang focused his gaze. Then, his eyes turned cruel and ruthless like the gaze of a vulture in the desert. He looked just like the Young Black Devil... no matter how one looked at him... The physical appearance, the charm, the temperament, the look in his eyes, and even the traits of martial arts had all been imitated to perfection.

This imitator let out a rough and sinister laugh and said, "The trivial Ao Clan dares to oppose my Black Devil Clan? They have a death wish. See how I assassinate them like dogs."

Then, he dashed forward with a 'whoosh'.

"Don't be reckless! First, check thoroughly. What if they don't hold any malice...?" Sword Spirit hurriedly reminded.

"There's no need to check thoroughly. They've dared to provoke my Black Devil Clan. So, they must pay the price!" Minister Chu had thoroughly gotten into the character. He ferociously dashed forward.

... ..

Chapter 636: The Ones Who Bite the Hand That Feeds Them Must Be Killed!

Chu Yang had blown his top!

[There's no justification for Ao Clan wanting to deal with me. But, they've still come to cope with me. This is like 'biting the hand that has fed them'!]

[The news that I've rescued Ao Xie Yun has already spread far and wide in the Jianghu regardless of whether it is true or false. And, this news must've reached their ears as well. So, they mustn't have come to deal with me.]

[Shouldn't they express thanks to me now that they've come looking for me? But, why have they set up an ambush instead?]

The honorable Minister got angry in an instant.

He then decided that he must teach these people a good lesson regardless of what their motives were.

He hid several hundred feet away. He calmly lied down, and restrained all the vitality signs. Everything vanished in the blink of an eye; his heartbeat and pulses were no exception. In fact, he looked like a piece of decayed log in the forest.

It was because Sword Spirit had told him in his mind, "Three people are talking over there."

"What did they say?"

"The first one said, 'How come he hasn't come yet?' Then, another one said, 'He didn't pass by, right...?'"

Sword Spirit relayed.

Chu Yang clenched his teeth and asked, "How was their manner of speaking?"

Sword Spirit said in a heavy voice, "It was cold, and was filled

with killing intention."

Chu Yang heavily snorted in his heart.

This group of people belonged to one of the six troops of Ao Clan; this group was led by Ao Lang Yun. He was the second best expert in the younger generation of Ao Clan after Ao Xie Yun.

Ao Lang Yun had quickly led his troops to this place in order to block King of Hell Chu once they had resolutely attacked the Tian Clan's business estates.

"Third Brother and Sixth Brother have had a confrontation with Gu Du Xing. Fifth Brother had a fight with Dong Wu Shang. But, Dong Wu Shang escaped from their hands. We haven't yet gotten any news from Fourth Brother who has gone to intercept Ji Mo. Seventh Brother had attacked Luo Ke Di. And, Luo Ke Di got injured. But, he also managed to run away..."

Ao Lang Yun knitted his brows, "This explains that the intelligence we've received is correct. However, why has their Big Brother King of Hell Chu still not arrived here? Could it be that this guy is walking leisurely, and enjoying the scenic beauty along the journey?"

Two old men were standing next to him; they were dressed in embroidered robes. Their eyes flashed, and a radiance overflowed the vicinity. Then, one of them said, "Second Young Master doesn't need to be worried. You must relax your heart for the time being, and wait for a while. King of Hell has definitely not passed through from here. We don't know... he may have faced some issue along the way... which is why he's late."

The other man said, "But, dealing with King of Hell Chu is somewhat inappropriate given the circumstances. This matter must remain strictly confidential. Otherwise, the tag of 'biting the hand that feeds one' would be placed on Ao Clan's forehead if word of this leaks out."

Ao Lang Yun snorted faintly. Then, he explained his motivations without concealing anything from his confidants, "First, King of Hell Chu meddles in others' business. The rumor has spread in the Jianghu that Chu Yang had rescued Ao Xie Yun. This could either be true or false. But, there's no smoke without fire... There must be a reason behind these rumors. And, I speculate that these rumors are most probably true. This alone is his capital crime.

"Second, it isn't necessary that King of Hell Chu has saved Ao Xie Yun out of good intentions. In fact, he might have done it so that the clans in the alliance opposite to Mo Clan, Dong Clan, and the other clans would have to bear the brunt of it. After all, the Mo Clan's alliance hasn't taken any action from the beginning to the end. So, it is clear that their intention is to force our Ao Clan into making the first move. Then, they would watch in safety whilst others fight, and make profits at their expense in the end. And, someone with a heart that bears such evil motives deserves death.

"We had been unsure about whether some major clans had been hunting down Ao Xie Yun... But then, the news of King of Hell Chu rescuing Ao Xie Yun had spread and affirmed that suspicion. And, this had made Ao Clan have a clear goal of taking revenge. This shows that King of Hell Chu has been exchanging information with Mo Tian Ji and the other Young Masters. They all are in collusion.

"Third, the Heavenly Armament Pavilion destroyed Ou Clan overnight under King of Hell Chu's leadership. So, the Heavenly Armament Pavilion's power can't be underestimated. They may have taken the Xie Clan's help. However, anyone can see their military strength. And, this will become a big problem over time. The ambitions of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion seem to be clear... especially in the current turmoil of Jianghu. So, we must eliminate or disintegrate it as soon as possible. Otherwise, it'll become Ao Clan's greatest enemy once it's fully-fledged.

"In fact, it's probable that it'll turn into the next Black Devil Clan!

"Fourth, his five brothers – Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the

other three – are all outstanding talents of this younger generation. They have great future prospects. I want to become the next Clan Lord. So, I must have such promising young experts at my side. The Jianghu is in great chaos at this time. So, this is a heaven-sent opportunity. We must seize this opportunity, and subdue them. However, King of Hell Chu is their Big Brother. So, they wouldn't change their allegiance if King of Hell Chu doesn't die. Therefore, King of Hell Chu must die.

"If they can be used by King of Hell Chu — they can be used by me too."

Ao Lang Yun coldly snorted. He then indifferently continued, "What can King of Hell Chu give them? I can give them ten times of what King of Hell Chu has to offer! Even more than that...!"

"These are the reasons why I want to kill King of Hell Chu. In fact, King of Hell ranks first in my list of people that must be eliminated," Ao Lang Yun indifferently explained, "I don't care if you call me an 'unjust ingrate'. I don't mind if you call me the one who bites the hand that feeds it. But, King of Hell Chu mustn't be allowed to live!"

The two old men tightly wrinkled their brows next to him. They thought for a while, and then finally let out long sighs.

[King of Hell Chu has rescued Ao Xie Yun. This equals to him opposing Ao Lang Yun.]

[These things are just Ao Lang Yun's speculations. However, they aren't necessarily untrue.]

[It seems that Chu Yang truly needs to die.]

They then looked at each other, and stopped their dissuasion.

Ao Lang Yun said with a smile, "I've brought a team of a hundred experts to kill this King of Hell Chu. So, King of Hell Chu should feel much honored even if he has to die."

The two old men bitterly smiled.

Naturally, not a word from their conversation went unheard by the Sword Spirit's ears. And, the Sword Spirit obviously passed these words onto Chu Yang's ears.

King of Hell Chu immediately blew his top.

[You are engaging in a power struggle for your selfish desires. But, why must you push all the blame on me? Isn't this matter as insane as a prostitute wanting to set up her memorial arch?]

[Those big clans chased down Ao Xie Yun to deal with your Ao Clan. What do I have to do with this? I would've only been glad to see them succeed, you know.]

[Even that Mo Tian Ji would've thought of adding fuel to fire, ok?]

A murderous aura rose up around Chu Yang's body. It immediately made Sword Spirit understand, [The fight is inevitable now!] He gently sighed, "Be careful. There are two eighth grade Emperors, and ten fourth and fifth grade Emperors among the enemy. In addition, there are eighty other people. And, all of them are King Level Experts."

Chu Yang gently nodded. He withdrew the surging tides of murderous aura and anger from his body, and regained his ultimate calmness.

[This is probably going to be the most difficult and arduous fight since I've started my life's journey.]

[But, it's not my style to run away from a fight.]

[I'll kill and kill until all of you die. I'll hack your group of ungrateful bastards to death. What do you think your Ao Clan is? Are your necks not made of flesh?]

A burst of cool breeze blew... Chu Yang's body floated along with the wind, and he entered the forest ahead of him with lightning speed. This meant that he had sneaked into Ao Clan's ambush circle.

This was a dense Ancient Pine Forest. The canopy of dense pines had covered the sky. It was broad day-light, but there was gloominess in this Ancient Pine Forest. The people's shadows made them seem like ghosts in this darkness.

"There seemed to be some sound of movement just now, right?" The two old men in embroidered robes wrinkled their brows. They then turned at the same time, and started to look around.

Suddenly, a pitiful scream was heard from the periphery of the ambush circle.

The sound had come from the south.

The complexion of both the men changed. One of them stayed behind, while the other instantly disappeared from his original position.

"Let's go over there, and take a look," Ao Lang Yun calmly said.

Ao Lang Yun and the other old man also went in that direction.

They couldn't help but shiver on seeing the scene when they finally arrived at the spot from where the scream had sounded. They saw that a King Level Expert of Ao Clan was facing towards the outer side of the forest. However, his body was off the ground... He was firmly pinned to a branch of a pine tree. He was dead, but his eyes were still wide open. He had a frightened and despaired look in his eyes.

The trousers of this man had fallen down from his legs, and were drooping on the ground. The lower half of his body was completely naked. However, there was a thin mark of a sword-slash on his throat.

"He must've been attacked when he was taking a leak. The sword cut his throat, and then cut off a section of the pine tree in order to sew his body to the trunk of the tree," the vision of that Emperor Expert in embroidered robe flickered as he heavily said.

The other Emperor Expert in embroidered-robe went forward to

examine carefully. He then said, "Whoever killed him has to have a divine weapon. The cut seems to be very fine. In fact, his Adam's apple and neck bone have also been accurately cut in half. Moreover, this person's skill should be no less than that of a fifth grade King level Expert. He must be a master assassin!"

"Well!" Ao Lang Yun's complexion became serious. He held out his hand, and waved, "All personnel — stand on guard. Be sure to intercept and kill this assassin once you find him."

Many people complied in unison from their hidden ambush positions.

However, both the Embroidered-robed Emperor Experts became anxious in their hearts. One of them shouted, "Everyone, leave your original positions. Immediately switch to new positions in correlation with each other."

However, his voice hadn't even faded when another hoarse scream was heard... It came from the north this time.

"Damn it!" One of the Embroidered-robed Emperor Experts stamped his foot on the ground since his heart had filled with helplessness.

"Second Young Master, how could you give a command at this time? You should've at least told them not to make any noise along with the order. They are bound to acknowledge your order. And, that is equal to providing their locations to this hidden killer."

Apparently, this embroidered-robed old man had a very high position in the Ao Clan. He had dared to lash-out at Ao Lang Yun to his face. The blaming tone in his voice was obvious even though his manner of speaking was tactful.

"Yes, yes... I messed up." Ao Lang Yun readily accepted his advice. He then bowed his head, and admitted his mistake, "I don't have much understanding of such military strategies. So, I ask Uncle Cai to take full authority, and command the troops."

This Uncle Cai was named Cai Xiao Cheng. He had been one of the eight great protectors of the Clan Lord Ao Tian Xing along with the other old man named Li Chang Long. Four out of these eight great protectors had been with Ao Xie Yun, while two were with Ao Lang Yun. The remaining two guarded the five other brothers. They separately stayed with them... one brother at a time.

In addition, these great protectors were also in-charge of the protection of the Ao Clan's juniors.

Cai Xiao Cheng wasn't being polite to his Young Master. After all, this was not the time to show modesty. He repeatedly issued orders from his mouth, "All of you, listen to my orders. Leave your original ambush positions. Then, slowly crowd around towards the middle of the ambush circle. You don't need to be too quick. Just don't make any sound."

Then, he instantly turned around towards the north to take a look. There was a King Level Expert sitting paralyzed on the ground as expected. There was a big hole in his chest, and he had lost all of his vitality.

"So ruthless!" Li Chang Long clenched his teeth and said, "This killer clearly had the capability to kill him in one strike. He didn't even let him utter a sound while doing so. But, the killer made him let out a pitiful scream at the point of death... This killer is vicious and merciless. He seriously makes my blood boil."

"Who's this person?" Ao Lang Yun asked, "Is it possible that it is King of Hell Chu?"

Cai Xiao Cheng and Li Chang Long looked at each other. However, they only saw uncertainty in each other's eyes.

Some rustling sounds rang in the pine forest. Many ambushing experts were rushing over to the middle.

The enemy wouldn't have any method to silently assassinate these experts as long as all of them were gathered closely in a

circle.

However, screams rose up in quick succession at this moment. Cai Xiao Cheng bellowed. Then, he flapped his arms, and flew over in the direction of the sounds like a big bird.

....

Chapter 637: "Black Devil! So, It Turned Out To Be You!"

He saw four men's bodies. They had been chopped off into eight pieces, and were lying on the ground several hundred feet away. Everyone was headed towards the middle. So, it was obvious that the enemy had attacked them from behind.

He had killed four people in one strike!

A faint smell of blood spread in the Black Pine Forest.

It was approaching afternoon already. The wind entered into the pine forest with whistling sounds. And, rustling sounds were issued as a result. Branches and leaves were gently swaying in the Black Pine Forest. Simultaneously, countless shadows were swaying on the ground. It was daytime, but there was an increasing sense of gloominess in the forest because of the shadows.

Cai Xiao Cheng had such an angry look in his eyes that his eyes almost cracked open. Suddenly, he shouted with his spring-thunder-like voice, "Who's using such evil schemes in secrecy? Come out and face me if you're a man."

His voice spread far and wide like spring-time thunder. It vibrated the top of the pine trees, and numerous leaves fell down with rustling sounds.

A light flashed in Li Chang Long's eyes as if he had figured something out. He then suddenly said in a sinking voice, "King of Hell Chu, it's you, right? What's wrong? Don't you have the guts to face us?"

The voice spread out, but Black Pine Forest remained silent in response. No one replied.

Cai Xiao Cheng quickly scanned the vicinity with his lightning-fast gaze.

Suddenly, a golden light flashed. Cai Xiao Cheng bellowed, "Watch out!" He then dashed towards that golden light. He grabbed it before it could dig into the back of a King Level Expert, and received it in his hand. It was a small and exquisite dagger; it was only half-a-palm long. There weren't any fancy designs on its body. In fact, the only thing to praise was its sharpness.

Cai Xiao Cheng jumped up in an instant. And, everyone's gazes subconsciously followed after his silhouette. However, three black lights silently emitted out from another direction in this split second.

And, these three black daggers got inserted into the vests of three King Level Experts.

Li Chang Long bellowed, and rushed over with giant steps. He rushed like lightning in the direction from where those three black lights had been shot. However, he found no soul in sight there. In fact, there wasn't even the least bit of sound.

Nine experts of their team had been silently killed in such a short period of time, and they hadn't even been able to trace the shadow of the enemy.

It was like fighting a spectre in dense fog!

Ao Lang Yun tightly joined his hands together. Cold sweat was dripping from the hollow of his palms, and he could only feel the chill emitting out of his vest.

Had he ever experienced such a spooky and terrifying fight in his entire life?

Then, sudden sounds transmitted out very rapidly. The sounds had traveled suddenly from the right side one moment, and then from the left side the next moment. Then, a cold and sinister voice said, "He-he. That's right. You seem to be somewhat knowledgeable and insightful. You're right. I'm King of Hell Chu!"

There seemed to be dark and sinister vibes in his voice... as if it

had come straight from hell. It made the listeners feel uncomfortable in their ears.

Cai Xiao Cheng and Li Chang Long focused the cultivation of their entire body to heighten their senses. However, they still couldn't find out where this voice was coming from. They only thought that the voice was faint and untraceable. It would resound from the south one moment, and then from the north the next moment.

However, these two sources where the sounds were coming from—south and north—were separated by a distance of approximately thousand feet!

[Formidable enemy!]

These two words suddenly emerged from the bottom of the hearts of Cai Xiao Cheng and Li Chang Long. Li Chang Long also overthrew his previous conclusion, [This enemy is not a King Level Expert. He is at the very least an Emperor Level Expert!]

"You're not King of Hell Chu!" Cai Xiao Cheng stayed calm. He shouted in a cold voice, "King of Hell Chu is indeed ruthless, sly, and fierce. However, he doesn't have an excellent cultivation like Your Excellency. Who are you after all? And, why are you set against my Ao Clan?"

One thing that he didn't say was, [King of Hell Chu by no means has this ghost-like gloominess!]

There was absolute silence in the Black Pine Forest.

There was a deathly silence!

Suddenly, a dense and gloomy aura was issued out. Then, it was promptly restrained.

Cai Xiao Cheng's eyes turned cold. He then silently drifted out towards the source of the aura. He had already moved from this side like lightning without making any noise, and had arrived at the opposite side. He then brandished his hands, and several trees

were crushed by his palm with loud 'bang' sounds.

A piece of black cloth fluttered in the air.

Cai Xiao Cheng's body floated like a ghost, and grabbed that piece of black cloth in his hand. He then attentively looked at it, but couldn't make out anything. Then, he returned clenching that piece of cloth in his hand while being puzzled. But, that sinister and dense aura that he had felt a moment ago was lingering in his heart. He felt that it was very familiar. However, he couldn't remember where and when he had sensed it before.

"What did you find?" Li Chang Long quickly came over to him.

"Take a look," Cai Xiao Cheng handed the black cloth over to him.

"A piece of black cloth?" Li Chang Long was puzzled. He brought the piece of cloth near to his nose as he spoke, and sniffed it.

"Beware of poisons!" Cai Xiao Cheng hastily warned.

"It's all right. It doesn't have any smell," Li Chang Long smiled, and flipped this piece of cloth. He then said, "This seems to be an ordinary black cloth. Apparently, it got torn by your palm attack."

"However, I didn't see a person's shadow when I tore this piece of cloth. This fact is extremely strange!" Cai Xiao Cheng knitted his brows, "Moreover, I felt a strange aura just a while ago. It was very..."

He spoke till here, and then suddenly shouted, "Get away!"

Then, he rushed forward quickly. His speed was so fast that he suddenly drew a green smoke trail behind his body.

A golden light had arrived near Ao Lang Yun's vest!

Cai Xiao Cheng shouted loudly. He then went all-out in a desperate attempt to grab that golden light in his hand. The tip of the dagger wasn't even an inch away from Ao Lang Yun's vest at this moment.

Li Cheng Long bellowed, and pounced towards the direction from

where the golden light had been shot. Simultaneously, forty-to-fifty men also set into action, and rushed over to attack from all sides.

Suddenly, several black lights silently appeared once again from another direction. Then, a knife-light of almost the same color as that of air flashed out of nowhere. It simultaneously struck the vests of five people while they were rushing towards that direction.

Several pitiful screams were heard. The five people fell down on the ground, and started to roll back-and-forth in pain. However, the attacker had shot too many hidden weapons at once this time. So, the strength in those weapons was lacking, and the attacks weren't fatal. But, one of the experts had gotten stabbed straight in the middle of his back. So, he had died on the spot.

Beads of sweat were unceasingly dripping down from Ao Lang Yun's forehead.

He had almost marched into Hell a moment ago.

He had missed it only by a bit!

His complexion had turned deathly white. He was using all his might to keep his calm, but a look of horror had already appeared in his eyes.

The rapid movement of the attacker was just like that of a ghost. Two eighth grade Emperor Experts couldn't catch even the shadow of this attacker. This dark forest seemed to have turned into a place of death! And, Ao Lang Yun could only watch in helplessness as his people died one by one.

"Run out of the forest!" Cai Xiao Cheng bellowed. The blue veins could be clearly seen on his face. He had already realized that the attacker was a super-talented assassin.

[Confronting this attacker in such a forest is equal to fighting with a crocodile in water. This place is a home ground for the

attacker.]

[So, we must rush out. We must dash to an open area under sunlight. Only then can we make the enemy reveal himself.]

Li Chang Long had immediately come to this realization. So, he repeatedly shouted. He then led everyone to crowd around Ao Lang Yun, and run out of the forest.

Everyone had been in full confidence in the beginning that they would capture King of Hell Chu as soon as he would appear. But, who would've thought that they would land in a difficult situation, and would have to assume such a stance – to run out of the forest?

This was undoubtedly highly ironic.

A golden light flashed again. Li Chang Long joined his hands, and extremely quickly received the golden light in them. He then looked at it, and crooked his nose. It was merely a piece of crushed gold.

He threw it on the ground without giving it much thought. He then looked from his peripheral vision, and found that three more golden lights were coming from another direction. Li Chang Long leapt up hurriedly, and grabbed them one by one. He became aggrieved in his heart, and cursed, [Dammit! All of them are pieces of gold!]

But then, a black light densely flashed from another direction. Li Chang Long's heart jumped in fright. He knew that the attacker had finally launched his killer attack. So, he roared and brandished his hands to deflect the attack. Then, he immediately thought of charging in the direction of the men to the left side.

He had already understood the pattern of this attacker's attacks. [He leaves if he misses a shot. In fact, he leaves his hiding position as soon as he attacks.]

[Now, this person has shot three times in succession. So, his current position is probably in this direction.]

[It doesn't matter even if it isn't. The route I have rushed towards is situated in the middle of three directions from where he has made attacks. So, I'll definitely intercept him once he makes a sound!]

But, sharp sounds of 'pew' aroused continually when his body had just flown to a distance of around seventy feet. More than a dozen golden lights were shot out from the place of the previous attack.

[The power of this attack has a sense of urgency to it!]

[He didn't change his position this time.]

"Damn it!" Li Chang Long gave a hateful look. He wanted to change his direction, but it was already too late.

Thirteen golden lights were scattered as if they had been arranged properly. They were targeted at one person each. Cai Xiao Cheng was next to Ao Lang Yun, but he had been caught off-guard. He desperately turned around to intercept these thirteen golden lights, but he could only block off five of them.

Some screams orderly resounded as eight people got injured at the same time.

Cai Xiao Cheng's fine beard pointed like a halberd as he vigorously commanded, "Don't worry about anything. Just rush out of the Black Pine Forest!"

Even this eighth grade Emperor Expert felt frightened in his heart now. [What is the exact position of this attacker after all? He's so sinister... and uses such a superb assassination method?]

Cai Xiao Cheng was unwilling to admit in his heart, but he had to do so, [The assassination level of this attacker is at the top in the present age.]

He vigilantly looked in all directions. Then, he drew back step by step, and personally took cover from behind.

Suddenly, a frightened scream was heard. The troop at the back was in panic. Cai Xiao Cheng got furious and shouted, "Why are you panicking?"

"Poison! There is poison on the short knives and daggers. They released poison the moment we pulled them out," a man exclaimed in misery.

Cai Xiao Cheng felt shocked in his heart. He hurriedly took a look, and a chill ran down his spine.

Those twelve wounded King Level Experts had clenched their teeth and persisted for the quarter of an hour. In fact, they hadn't even frowned. However, poison spread in their bodies as soon as the knives were pulled out. And, they instantly died on the spot. They couldn't even leave behind a few words.

Twenty-two people!

The attacker hadn't even made an appearance yet. And, twenty-two experts had died on this side!

The dead were only King Level Experts, and no Emperor Level Expert had sustained any harm. However, it was still a gigantic loss.

Cai Xiao Cheng had never seen such a sly and ruthless enemy in his 30 years of experience in Jianghu!

Everyone could see the sunshine in front of them. All of them had almost rushed out of the forest.

However, the mood fluctuations of the hidden enemy seemed to be getting intense. He was reluctant to let them escape. Suddenly, a sinister and dense aura spread out. Then, it seemed as if it was retracted forcefully.

Cai Xiao Cheng had a sudden thought in his heart, [Very familiar! It is truly very familiar... his name is on the tip of my tongue. How can I not remember?]

Suddenly, there was a flash of golden light... Dozens of golden lights had been thrown at the same time.

Cai Xiao Cheng let out a loud shout, and jumped up to intercept.

Meanwhile, a black light spread out from another direction like an inescapable net.

Li Chang Long let out a long roar, and his body whirled about in midair like a dragon.

Cai Xiao Cheng was unable to restrain his anger, and crashed into the place from where the black light had come.

He was hundred-percent sure this time, [The attacker hasn't left that place... because I'd locked on him with my tracking energy just now.]

[He shouldn't have attacked being this close.]

Cai Xiao Cheng's heart filled with pleasure as he quickly threw himself forward.

Suddenly, a shadow flew out from the umbra with a sighing sound. It flew out swiftly like a bird!

"You still want to run? Stop right there!" Cai Xiao Cheng bellowed. He circulated all of his martial power, and shot both his palms with all his might.

It was too late for that person to dodge. He had been forced into a dire situation with no way out. However, he suddenly let out a sinister and grim laughter. Then, his sword flashed out a sword-light, and he threw the sword to fly together with it. That sinister aura once again spread out. However, its range was much greater this time around.

Then, a brilliant light of realization flashed in Cai Xiao Cheng's mind. He had finally understood why this dark and dense aura seemed so familiar to him. The incoming flying sword crashed into his palm with a bang, and shattered into pieces. He blew his top,

and shouted crazily, "Black Devil! So, it's you! So, you pretended to be King of Hell Chu! You're so shameless!"

....

Chapter 638: Mean and Shameless Black Devil!

Cai Xiao Cheng finally remembered why this aura felt familiar to him. [Such a dense and sinister aura... Isn't this the distinctive aura of Black Devil?]

[This monster has killed so many people of ours. He would mysteriously appear and disappear, and assassinate them. Perhaps, only the core assassins of the Black Devil Clan have the ability to use such a method of assassination in the entire world!]

That man was sent out flying by the impact of his palm. Then, his figure clad in black-robe finally presented itself; he was wearing a black mask as well. However, he immediately turned around, and leaped up a big tree like a meteor. Then, he said with a sinister smile, "I've changed neither my name nor my surname. I'm King of Hell Chu. I'll never pretend to be someone else. What Black Devil? Are you senile or something?!"

Li Chang Long quickly rushed over while this man was speaking. He angrily shouted out loud, "Black Devil, you're despicable and shameless! You're exposed now, but you still want to deny?! The debt of blood must be paid with blood. Die for this old man!"

He smashed the entire tree with a bang.

A black silhouette flew out floating in the wind. It flashed under the setting sun. Then, he gloomily laughed and said, "Ao Clan, you're so mediocre! You're laughable... truly laughable!"

He then suddenly flew up in the sky, and rushed away before Cao Xiao Cheng could catch up with him again. He leisurely floated high up in the sky, and soared for 170 feet. Then, his toes finally landed on a big tree branch. He was about to fly out again with all his strength using this support.

However, a silhouette flashed, and Li Chang Long appeared in

front of him out of nowhere like a ghost. Li Chang then shot his palm...

The body of that black shadow took a big hit, and fell backwards towards the ground like a meteorite. His mask was struck by the strong palm-wind, and shattered into pieces as a result. The cloth pieces fluttered in the air like black butterflies. That man choked and coughed at first. He then said with difficulty, "Your palm strength is good!"

Li Chang Long had already seen the appearance of this man with his keen vision. That man had eagle eyes, sharp nose, and long sword-like eyebrows. His entire face was exuding a malicious and intense aura. Li Chang Long couldn't help but become furious on seeing this, "Black Devil, it's truly you! Do you still have something to say in denial?"

That person coldly snorted, and his figure landed on the ground.

Then, Li Chang Long and Cai Xiao Cheng quickly rushed over at the same time.

Suddenly, a 'bang' was heard. And, a pink fog rose up from the place where that man had fallen. Cai Xiao Cheng was comparatively at a distance. So, he hastily halted his steps. However, Li Chang Long had already rushed into the faint pink fog.

He only heard seven-or-eight continuous clashing sounds of 'bang' that had been transmitted out from inside the fog. A black shadow flashed a few times, and it seemed as if the space itself was distorting. Then, he puffed out blood whilst being high up in the air, and disappeared without a trace.

Then, Li Chang Long rushed out from the pink fog. His entire face had turned red.

Cai Xiao Cheng was about to pursue. But, Li Chang Long loudly shouted, "Don't pursue him."

Cai Xiao Cheng turned his head in amazement. He was startled to see Li Chang Long's body tottering. He was about to go over, and support him with his hands.

"Don't come here! Don't touch me!" Li Chang Long loudly shouted.

"Huh?" Cai Xiao Cheng was startled.

Li Chang Long distressfully smiled. "That cruel and vicious Black Devil...! That Black Devil was so obscene! I finally got caught in his trap."

Cai Xiao Cheng was gob-smacked, "What happened?" He suddenly realized something, "What's that pink fog?"

Li Chang Long exposed an expression that made it seem as if he didn't know anything. He clenched his teeth, and said with an intensely ashamed and resentful look, "This is the lust poison of the Lust Dragon! That's why I'm stopping you. We'll be done for if both of us get infected by this poison..."

"Eh?!" Cai Xiao Cheng became dumbfounded. He felt as if his entire person had been petrified.

He had understood why Li Chang Long had such blushing facial expression. Cai Xiao Cheng couldn't help but face upwards, and start to rain curses. He cursed that man in vulgar language, but he still couldn't suppress the hatred in his heart.

Who could've thought that the Black Devil would be carrying the lust poison of Lust Dragon along with him? Who could've thought that he would use such a sinister method?

The poison of the Lust Dragon didn't have an antidote. This lust poison could only be neutralized through copulation between man and woman. Moreover, the entire body of the person that had been affected would fester up, and they would eventually die... if it wasn't neutralized within 3 hours!

Li Chang Long was more than sixty years old. Moreover, he was

an eighth grade Emperor Expert. So, how would he bring himself to do the deed even if he were to find a woman? After all, this was a matter of his lifelong reputation and integrity.

Moreover... where would he find a beautiful woman in this mountainous area? He could at best find a village girl. But, even that would be considered an unusual fortune around this area.

Going back to the Ao Clan was out of the question!

Li Chang Long's face had turned green and white. He said in a hoarse voice, "I can suppress it for 5 hours using my cultivation. After that, it'll be incurable..."

"Brother Li, let's just hurry up and look for a... look for a..." Cai Xiao Cheng firmly stamped his feet on the ground. He couldn't bring himself to complete the sentence.

"How can this old man lose his honor...?!" Li Chang Long's lips were quivering. He suddenly cursed using all the strength of his body, "Black Devil... I'll fu*k your ancestors!"

Li Chang Long felt an urge to cry after he had cursed out loud.

[This poison is even fiercer than a highly toxic poison that causes instant death. This poison would simply make a person toss and turn in agony... It would torment them to death. Therefore, it kills a person in the most humiliating way possible!]

[This hatred is indeed big and unshakable.]

"Brother Li, a true gentleman mustn't care about minor matters. Life is important. Where there is life... there is hope!" Cai Xiao Cheng anxiously persuaded, "Moreover, nobody knows about this matter. Only you know and I know. The sky knows and the earth knows. I – Cai Xiao Cheng – pledge to the heavens... May I die a dog's death if even a little bit of this matter leaks out! May all my descendents be slaves and prostitutes...!"

"Brother Cai! You..." Li Chang Long stamped his feet and sighed, "You didn't need to take such a serious oath!"

"We've got no time to lose. We should go on a search right this moment," Cai Xiao Cheng said, "You've injured that Black Devil. So, he won't dare to come back. We'll make the Second Young Master wait here with the others for a while... And, we both will go together."

"It would be better if I went alone," Li Chang Long refused. He obviously didn't want to die. But, how could he make someone else see... this kind of matter? It wouldn't be right even if they had been brothers for several decades.

It was very embarrassing.

"You deal with your matter, and I'll keep watch..." Li Chang Long's face turned red as soon as Cai Xiao Cheng finished this sentence. Both of them had equally good reputation and moral standing in the Ao Clan. So, they both felt embarrassed while discussing over such a topic.

"There is the Li Clan's domain 350 kilometers towards the west from here. There are cities and towns there. So, there will definitely be brothels there," Cai Xiao Cheng lowered his head, "5 hours are enough to reach there with our speed."

"Brothel..." All the muscles of Li Chang Long's face twitched. "You, you... you want me to visit... visit prostitutes?"

Cai Xiao Cheng's face flushed as he replied in anger, "You've been abstaining for so many years. And now, you've been infected with the lust poison of Lust Dragon. So, do you think that one woman would be... would be... able to satisfy you?" he said while blushing hard, "I'm afraid that... you might kill... your partner if you couldn't hold back."

Li Chang Long's face turned stiff. The color of his face had turned purple, and his face had swollen like an eggplant. He muttered, "Then... do I have no other choice but to visit prostitutes?"

"Where would you find so many women... apart from brothels?"

Cai Xiao Cheng took in a deep breath.

Li Chang Long bitterly smiled, "It's very hard to imagine for me. I – Li Chang Long – have never visited a prostitute in my life. But now, I have to do so at such an old age... alas!"

He heaved a long sigh.

Cai Xiao Cheng anxiously urged him, "Don't sigh. Let's go quickly... before it's too late...!"

The two hurriedly ran over to Ao Lang Yun. They told him that something important had come up. And, they would have to leave for now because of this matter. They told him to make everyone wait in the open area, and not allow them to go far away...

The two eighth grade Emperor Level Experts explained a few things in a hurry, and then rushed off to look for brothels without waiting for a reply...

Li Chang Long clenched his teeth, and then took a vow which transmitted in the void, "I'm not a true man if I don't slaughter the entire Black Devil Clan in this life...!"

Ao Lang Yun looked in confusion towards the direction in which both the Emperor Experts had left. He was at a loss.

[What urgent matter could they have at such a critical moment? What can be more important than the plan here? You two have gone... What would we do if King of Hell Chu arrived in your absence?]

[They are ignoring the larger issue!]

He felt dejected in his heart. So, he sat down in a sullen mood. Then, an intense feeling rose up in his heart. He felt a thirst for attaining absolute power and authority over his personal subordinates as soon as possible.

...

Chu Yang was flying like a meteor. He was sticking close to the

land, and was flying out just like a stream of black smoke.

He had covered a distance of more than fifty kilometers in a breath. The sky had finally turned dark. Chu Yang was grazing through the forest with 'shua' sounds. Finally, he spurted out the blood that he had held back with two 'blargh' sounds.

He had racked his brains to come up with this plan, and had implemented it with all of his strength. He had finally taken Sword Spirit's help, and had gotten out of the Black Pine Forest. But, he had taught the enemy a lesson of blood. And, he had also successfully placed the blame on the Black Devil Clan. However, he had paid a very big price for that.

That Li Chang Long's final hit had made him suffer ample loss!

In fact, he had already consumed two incomplete versions of the Nine Tribulations Pill because of that brief collision.

Then, he had needed one more to flee till here.

This meant that Chu Yang had encountered three deadly crises in this confrontation of such a short period of time. Li Chang Long had used half of his martial power to block the invasion of the pink smoke at the end of the fight. And, Chu Yang might've been forced to let Sword Spirit take over his body to escape from there if Li Chang Long hadn't done so.

[However, all of that was worth it.]

[The hatred of Ao Lang Yun and the others towards the Black Devil Clan would probably see a new revival after this incident. It would increase little by little. But, it would be better if that Emperor Expert started to rot by the lust poison...]

Chu Yang hurriedly took out an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill, and popped it while spurting out blood. Then, he thought maliciously in his heart, [How much fun it would be... if Li Chang Long didn't know what poison it was and called out everyone to get close to smell it...]

[The crotches of everyone's trousers would become erect, and they all would look for brothels. Seventy-to-eighty men going around with erect tents at the same time... I think that scene would be spectacular...]

Sword Spirit in Chu Yang's mind saw that Chu Yang had finally recovered. So, it finally got the opportunity to ask, "There is one thing that I'm very puzzled about. As per your cultivation... it should've been impossible to make your voice vague to such an extent that it got concealed from eighth grade Emperor Experts. How did you manage to do that?"

Chu Yang snorted and replied with a smile, "Didn't you see that I had gently patted on many trees in each direction that I went after entering the forest. I'd basically patted on every one out of hundred trees."

"I had noticed that. But, what does it have to do with what I'm asking?" Sword Spirit was puzzled.

"I used Yin energy when I patted on the trees. Consequently, the trunks of the trees got crushed on the inside... They became hollow by my smash. Then, I deliberately aimed my voice at those several trees whenever I spoke. So, the sound would automatically echo. That's how my voice echoed in all directions."

Chu Yang said with a smile, "You have to have cleverness in the Jianghu. You need to be more cautious; especially at crucial moments. Sword Spirit, you must learn this thing from me!"

Sword Spirit didn't speak anything.

[This guy had been taking the help of my spiritual power all the time. He even saved his life with the help of my Nine Tribulations Pills. But now, he's trying to teach me instead...]

...

Chapter 639: Poison!

"I was obstructed only by the Ao Clan on this journey. So, there's obviously something fishy," Chu Yang muttered, "I massacred the Ou Clan. But, Ou Du Xiao and his father are keeping their composure? They haven't come to take revenge?"

Sword Spirit said gloomily, "It's not that they don't want to take revenge... It's just that they're waiting for the right time."

"Fu*k!" Minister Chu snorted and stood up, "Let's get going!"

He thought in his heart, [Du Xing and the others have already passed through Ao Clan's ambush. But, it appears that Luo Ke Di has sustained injuries. I don't know how grave his injuries are...]

[Ao Clan is taking such unexpected actions at a time like this... This has surpassed all of my expectations!]

[It's a calculation mistake on my part as well as Mo Tian Ji's. How should we deal with this contingency?]

[Ao Clan is causing chaos without the slightest bit of reason. They're stirring things up so unreasonably. Consequently, it seems as if the entire Jianghu is being pushed towards doomsday!]

[Everyone is trying their best to cause trouble. Everyone is trying wholeheartedly to just sit idly on the sidelines, and watch the fire take its course. Everyone is waiting to benefit at others' expense. And, their wild ambitions are surging in the Jianghu.]

Chu Yang looked up to the sky, and heaved a deep sigh; [Perhaps, not even half of the original clans will survive after this storm... Perhaps, even fewer...!]

[Countless King Level Experts and Revered Martial Artists will perish in this storm.]

Chu Yang had never felt such a sense of urgency to see Mo Tian Ji!

The current situation had become tangled to the point that it could make one's hair stand up. Chu Yang believed that there were only two people in the entire Nine Heavens who could skillfully deal with such a complex situation.

[One is Diwu Qing Rou, while the other is Mo Tian Ji!]

[Even I can't deal with it on my own.]

...

In another direction... at night...

Cai Xiao Cheng and Li Chang Long finally came out of the brothel, and raised their head to look up. There were stars twinkling in the sky even though the break of dawn was approaching. Seven or eight prostitutes were lying down naked here-and-there in a room on the top floor of the brothel behind them. They had so little strength left in them that they couldn't even turn their head or move a finger.

All of them were faintly blushing. And, their limpid eyes were hazy.

[So satisfying... so fulfilling... I truly hadn't expected that an old man would turn out to be so fierce. He was at it for three hours straight. So energetic! Extremely ferocious! Which young guy can have such stamina...? Damn, I'll especially pick older patrons while welcoming guests from now on. I won't even charge money...]

[Besides, this customer was so generous...]

[Look at all those gold ingots on the floor... Ah, I'm so blessed...]

...

Emperor Expert Li Chang Long's legs had turned somewhat limp. He didn't care about the shocked onlookers after he came out of the brothel. He just lowered his head, and dashed forward for dozens of miles.

[Too disgraceful!]

"Brother Li, Brother Li..." Cai Xiao Cheng came over rushing from behind, and caught up with him. He asked while blinking, "... you okay?"

Li Chang Long's complexion turned dark, "...okay!"

"Eh, cough cough... Brother Li is old but vigorous..." Cai Xiao Cheng gave him a thumbs-up, "This Old Man was listening to the constant cries coming from upstairs the entire night... Many people had gathered downstairs. And, all of them were betting..."

"Betting...?" Li Chang Long's face turned red as he angrily asked, "What were they betting on?"

"Everyone was betting... on how long you would be able to keep going on so vigorously... Everyone lost in the end..." Cai Xiao Cheng coughed a few times.

Li Chang Long's face turned black like charcoal... as if he couldn't help but recollect that experience in his heart for some reason...

"Brother Li... Um... how did it feel?" Cai Xiao Cheng smiled mischievously.

"Feel..." Li Chang Long's daydreaming eyes suddenly woke up to reality. He then immediately became furious, "What feeling?!" He rushed ahead first...

Thereupon, it seemed as if some taboo had been shattered. This Emperor Expert Li Chang Long would mysteriously disappear for some time at every place he visited...

Cai Xiao Cheng was greatly puzzled by this. So, he trailed him several times. And, he discovered that Li Chang Long would change his appearance, and then hastily burst into a brothel at every place he visited...

He had become addicted...

Henceforth, the world had one fewer honorable gentleman, and one more old lecher!

This was the evil created by King of Hell Chu...

...

Chu Yang was swiftly rushing the entire way. Two days had passed. It was noon time when he finally saw chimney smoke rising at a distant place.

He was startled in his heart. He trod to the hilltop, and looked around. [There's no sign of human habitation here. So, how come there's chimney smoke?]

He then proceeded along the main road, and saw a fully-loaded caravan of carriages and horses coming his way.

There were twenty people in this caravan. And, all of them were covered in sweat. They looked exhausted from their faces. It seemed at a glance that they had had a long and difficult trek.

Chu Yang felt something strange in his heart. And, he halted his footsteps as a result.

The old man in front of the caravan saw Chu Yang coming head-on, and ran over to him while wiping his sweat and panting, "Young Master, Young Master... cough, cough. Excuse me... may I ask how far Song Clan's Fort is from here?"

"Song Clan's Fort?" There was no way Chu Yang would know where Song Clan's Fort was. So, he replied, "I'm so sorry. I'm just a traveler who's passing by. I don't know where Song Clan's Fort is."

The old man looked simple and honest. He nodded and bowed. "Never mind... Thank you very much, Young Master. You are indeed a very kind and nice person..."

Chu Yang nodded, and then asked casually, "You're delivering goods on such a hot day?"

"Yes," The old man was clearly very talkative. A bitter expression appeared on his face as he said, "This poor old man is trying hard to make a living by delivering goods. Sigh... There's no other way.

There are many elderly and children in my family... So, I have dozens of mouths to feed."

Chu Yang nodded and said sympathetically, "It must be hard."

Suddenly, it seemed like the old man would burst into tears, "There's no other way. Life forces us to persevere."

Then, he politely said, "Young Master hasn't eaten yet? Moreover, you aren't carrying a water bottle on such a hot day? This mountain road is very-very long. It'll prove to be a long and difficult trek with the scorching sun in the sky. It won't be easy."

Then, he shouted, "Hey Sonny, hurry up, and bring a water pouch. This Young Master here needs to moisten his throat."

Then, he turned towards Chu Yang, "Young Master, we've met by chance... that is... we've been brought together by fate. This might seem like a trivial gesture, but I still request you to not blame me for being presumptuous."

Chu Yang gently smiled and said, "Of course, not. Sir, you're showing kindness. And, I appreciate your kindness. So, why would I want to blame you?"

The old man laughed gently and said, "Young Master, you're truly a good person. This humble old man has been travelling through the Jianghu and delivering goods to make a living. I always make it a point to be of service to others. I tell you... there are still many good people in this world."

Chu Yang nodded repeatedly, and said, "Sir, you're truly a good person."

Chu Yang received the water pouch from that 'Sonny' as he said this. He then nodded to express his gratitude.

The old man looked at the water pouch in Chu Yang's hand with his turbid eyes, and said politely, "Young Master, please drink."

Chu Yang smiled warmly and said, "I'm not thirsty right now."

But, I've firmly engraved your kindness in my heart, Kind Sir. I'll drink when I will feel thirsty."

The old man smiled joyfully, and said in a gratified manner, "That would be wonderful. That would be awesome. Alright then! Young Master, you take care of yourself on the way. This humble Old Man will take his leave now."

Chu Yang gratefully smiled and said, "Thanks a lot, Sir. Have a pleasant journey."

The old man then yelled loudly, and the caravan set out on its journey once again. Chu Yang slowly stopped on the roadside. He then noticed that the carriages were exuding lingering fragrances in the air. He could tell that each of these carriages was carrying spices.

The old man would constantly turn his head, and wave his hand.

Chu Yang smiled, and waved back. He then turned around, and walked on. However, his entire body suddenly started to shiver after he took just two steps. In fact, it had begun to shake violently. Then, a look of hatred appeared in his eyes, and he let out a loud scream, "You... who are you?"

The old man looked this way from afar, but didn't seem to have heard what Chu Yang had said.

Chu Yang snorted. His body violently shook a few times. And, his eyelids seemingly came to a close. Then, his tongue burst out a thunderous bellow as he tried hard to open his eyes, "Who are you?!"

He then sat down, and his head started to spin in an instant.

The old man saw that Chu Yang had collapsed. Suddenly, he slowly ran back, and stopped 30 feet away from Chu Yang. He then cautiously asked, "Young Master, what... what happened to you?"

Chu Yang shook his head with all of his strength... as if to shake the dizziness off his head. Then, he powerlessly threw the water

pouch to one side, and muttered, "How can... how can I get poisoned? I was clearly very careful... how did I get poisoned?"

His eyes seemed to have lost their light. He was muttering to himself; he was acting as though nobody else was present there. Apparently, he was having regrets.

The old man gathered around along with the 20 carriage drivers. They were cautiously watching Chu Yang on the ground. Then, the old man said with an uncanny laughter, "Poisoned? Ha ha, Young Master, this Old Man forgot to tell you... You were highly vigilant, and didn't dare to drink my water. However, you couldn't have expected that the water pouch itself would turn out to be poisonous. So, you were going to get poisoned as long as your hand touched the water pouch."

Chu Yang weakly said in rebuttal, "Nonsense... there was clearly no poison on the water pouch... I completely made sure of... this point..."

"He he, there was a certain medicine on the water pouch, but it isn't poisonous," The old man's eyes shot an ominous glint, "But... that medicine would blend with the fragrance from my caravan, and turn into a potent poison as long as you touched the water pouch and passed by my caravan! Now, this poison will paralyze your entire body... and there's no antidote for it! King of Hell Chu, can you close your eyes and die contentedly now?"

"So that's how it happened..." Chu Yang sighed sadly, and closed his eyes. Then, he opened them again, and asked feebly, "Who are you? He he... I, Chu Yang have been invincible my entire life. I've even used my power to overturn the Nine Heavens alone. So, it's just hard to imagine that I would truly die here... today... Tell me who you are... Let me have some peace of mind before I die."

The old man laughed grimly and said, "King of Hell Chu, you naturally can't die so easily. You massacred about 8000 members of my Ou Clan! Don't tell me you still think that you can die so

painlessly? He he, you're dreaming!"

"So, it turned out to be the Ou Clan..." Chu Yang smiled bitterly and said, "It's indeed a natural cycle of... divine judgment... I killed your entire clan, and I finally die at your hands now... You are Ou Cheng Wu, aren't you?"

The old man burst into loud laughter. However, his laugh had a bit of sadness to it. He then exclaimed loudly, "Correct, it's me!" he wiped his face and removed the disguise as he said this. And, his true face appeared as a result. It was indeed the Clan Lord of Ou Clan — Ou Cheng Wu!

Then, the youth who had handed-over the water pouch to Chu Yang also removed his disguise, and transformed into the valiant and formidable-looking Young Lord of Ou Clan, the Poison Spirit – Ou Du Xiao!

Ou Du Xiao's complexion was pale at this moment. He looked at Chu Yang with extreme resentment, "King of Hell Chu, you couldn't have imagined that you'd meet a pathetic end one day when you had attacked our Ou Clan so viciously and mercilessly, right?"

Chu Yang choked and coughed as he laughed-on. He nodded repeatedly, "Ou Du Xiao... you're right. I hadn't imagined this ending. But I – King of Hell Chu – am neither dying an unjust death... nor did I have a loss. Close to 10,000 lives of Ou Clan perished in-exchange of my one life. So, what did I lose? Ha ha ha... Instead, I earned... I earned 8,000 times over! He he, Ou Du Xiao, you've killed me. But, I'll go and terrorize them in the underworld now, wa ha ha..."

...

Chapter 640: Beats Them At Their Own Game, And Exterminates to the Last Man!

Ou Du Xiao became so angry that it seemed as if blood would come out of his eyes, "You damned son of a bitch! I'll execute you right now!"

He pulled his sword out to attack as soon as he was done speaking.

"Stop!" Ou Cheng Wu extended his hand, and stopped his son. Then, he said with an evil laughter, "Minister Chu, your schemes are very deep! You're at your last moments, and you still want to die with a content heart? How can things be so convenient?"

Ou Du Xiao immediately regained his composure. He then clenched his teeth and said, "Chu Yang, I'll make your life worse than death! I want you to go down to the 18th layer of hell. And, I want you to stay there for eternity so that you can repent for all the sins that you've committed."

Chu Yang couldn't help but burst into laughter, "You hate me so much... So, why don't you come over, and catch me without wasting time? What is the use of standing so far away from me? Could it be that you want to make my life worse than death by using only your words?"

Ou Cheng Wu chuckled, "Minister Chu, I admit that you have great wisdom. Your eloquence is exceptional as well. However, you're trapped like a turtle in a jar now. Do you still think that you can escape?"

Chu Yang indifferently said, "Keep in mind... You mustn't... praise the day before sunset..."

"But, you won't live to see the sunset!" Ou Cheng Wu ferociously said, "I know that you're vigilant. I know that you're sly. Therefore, how could I have dared to use excessive poison? This

reckless poison can make one lose their mobility, but it's making you fight like a trapped beast at this moment. However, it'll show its real effect after a quarter-of-an-hour!

"This poison has the potency to make a person lose their mobility on the spot. But, I had made discretionary reductions in the amount of poison in this dose. I had done so because I was afraid that you might notice it," Ou Cheng Wu sneered, "But, it'll take effect in fifteen minutes. And then, your entire body will turn limp. So, why should we take risks?"

"Moreover, your reinforcements are thousands of miles away at present. So, they can't rush here by any means," Ou Cheng Wu said with an evil smile, "King of Hell Chu... you're doomed!"

Chu Yang angrily glared at him, "You...!"

"Ha ha ha..." Ou Cheng Wu looked up to the sky, and pleasantly laughed, "King of Hell Chu, accept your fate!"

Chu Yang was gasping for breath with sounds of heavy breathing. He tried to take support in order to stand up. But, he rose to halfway, and then sat down again. He then said with a grieved smile, "It's no use...!"

Then, he closed his eyes!

Ou Cheng Wu and the others still surrounded him. However, they didn't act. It was clear that they wouldn't attack him before it was time. After all, they couldn't allow this hateful King of Hell Chu to counter-attack at the time of death. And, that's because they want him to shed even a single extra drop of blood of the Ou Clan's people!

Fifteen minutes passed...

Chu Yang's vitality had become increasingly worse. And, there were faint traces of sweat on his forehead.

"Waiting for death is very unpleasant, isn't it? Ha ha ha..." Ou Du Xiao wildly laughed, "Brother Chu, get ready to come with us. Let

this little brother entertain you properly, and repay you for your big favor on my Ou Clan!"

He had clenched his teeth while speaking the last few words. But, every word had squeezed out one by one from the gap between his teeth.

Chu Yang weakly opened his eyes, and looked at Ou Du Xiao disdainfully, "Ou Du Xiao, you and the Xie Clan had the same chances of having good or bad fortune. But, do you know why I hadn't gone against them instead? It's because your Ou Clan was blinded by greed. It was avaricious and insatiable. It was despicable and shameless. You people are filthy and low class. We all know whose is at fault here."

Ou Du Xiao became angry and said, "Death is near at hand, but you still aren't ready to admit your sins... Go and capture him for me."

It was clear that Chu Yang didn't have the least bit of ability to move. But, Ou Du Xiao still didn't dare to take any risk himself.

After all, King of Hell Chu was renowned for being extremely vicious... Who could dare to take him lightly?

More than twenty experts orderly crowded around with Chu Yang in the center as soon as the order was issued. Everyone wanted to capture King of Hell Chu in order to do a great service for the clan. Therefore, each one of them had an eager and cruel expression in their eyes.

Over twenty experts threw themselves at him at the same time.

Ou Cheng Wu closed his eyes and muttered, "All the ancestors from all generations... the great hatred of the Ou Clan is finally going to be recompensed today!"

Ou Du Xiao slightly tilted his head. And, two lines of teardrops streamed down his eyes. He then loudly roared, "Catch him. I'll chop his head with my own hands. Then, I'll take out his internal

organs, and offer them as sacrifice to the spirits of the eight-thousand martyrs of my Ou Clan!"

But then, an indifferent voice suddenly said, "One ray of cold light... pierces ten-thousand fathoms!"

The voice was indifferent. However, it still had a majestic killing intention in it.

A radiant sword-light suddenly and ferociously broke out from the center of the crowd along with this sound. It looked as if the dazzling radiance of the ardent sun had blossomed on this flat ground!

Ou Cheng Wu and Ou Di Xiao – both father and the son were startled by this. And, their attention got fixed at this scene as result. They couldn't help but stare in hate.

Screams echoed all around. And, a loud 'clang' also resounded.

Then, the entire ground turned into a sea of blood before their eyes!

Every single expert that had rushed forth was killed. Their dismembered limbs were sent flying in all the directions. Even the weapons on their waists were no exception. They were also snapped in two.

These people had gotten too close to Chu Yang. In fact, they had reached to a distance of just ten feet away from him. Moving to such a close distance in front of such a peerless sword move of the Nine Tribulations Sword was equal to throwing their lives away! After all, the Nine Tribulations Sword was the sharpest sword in the world.

They had effortlessly thrown their lives away!

Only the King Level Expert who had been rushing ahead of everyone had clearly seen that... Chu Yang had suddenly straightened up even though he had been wearily sitting cross-legged on the ground. Then, a sword-light had burst out from his

palm. And, ten-thousand sword-beams had mystically erupted from that sword-light afterwards!

It had seemed as if a volcano had suddenly erupted. It had been a magical and frightening scene!

But, that King Level Expert's thoughts had stopped here!

"What harm is there... in slaughtering the entire world..." a dragon-like sword-light was issued along with this recitation. It streaked across the legs of dumbfounded Ou Cheng Wu like a meteor, and then disappeared with a 'clang' sound!

Ou Cheng Wu let out a cry. His legs were separated from his body, and he fell on the ground with a splashing sound. However, he was still looking at the scene with a look of disbelief in his eyes... as if he wasn't feeling the pain in his own body.

The dismembered bodies and limbs were littered in a gory mess in the field.

Meanwhile, Chu Yang straightened his back and stood up with a cultured and gentle expression on his face. His eyes looked bright as he looked at Ou Cheng Wu with a smile on his face, "Clan Lord Ou, you look surprised!"

The present Chu Yang seemed to be bursting with energy. Where had his previous 'about-to-die' appearance gone to?

Blood was flowing like a spring from the lower half of Ou Cheng Wu's body. And, his face looked like dying embers. He was in a daze... His lips were opening and closing, but not even half-a-word had come out of his mouth. Also, there was a look of despair in his eyes.

The more-than-twenty remaining experts of the Ou Clan had been wiped out by King of Hell Chu's sword. Not a single one of them had remained. All of them had died in an extremely miserable way. Moreover, their corpses were weirdly crumpled.

It seemed as if someone had extracted all the energy from their

bodies. These were fresh corpses, but they seemed like piles of rotting flesh instead.

This was due to the Nine Tribulations Sword's power of devouring life energy!

"Ou Du Xiao, I'm sorry to disappoint you," Chu Yang faintly smiled. He was trying hard to breathe evenly since he had erupted all of his martial power in the sword move. That was how he was able to kill twenty King Level Experts without a hitch in a split second. Not a single one had survived!

So, he was very exhausted at the moment.

Ou Du Xiao's entire body trembled, and he finally woke up to reality. He was sorrowful and indignant, "You... weren't you poisoned?"

"No shit!" Chu Yang rolled his eyes and said, "Wouldn't I have been at your mercy at this moment if I had been poisoned? Moreover, all of your men have been killed by my hands. What else is there to doubt?"

Ou Du Xiao felt as if he had been dropped in an ice cave. His entire body turned ice-cold within an instant. His hands and feet felt numb.

[This damned butcher wiped out Ou Clan's residual strength in just one move!]

Then, a doubt swept past his heart, [Why didn't Chu Yang set about to kill us – father and son — earlier on? Could it be that he still wanted to humiliate us?]

However, Ou Du Xiao didn't know that Chu Yang's power was completely exhausted at present. He had issued his second move 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world' with one last strong push. So, he didn't have the least bit of power left at this time.

Consequently, Chu Yang would inevitably fall in a difficult

situation if Ou Du Xiao were to attack him at this moment. Similarly, Chu Yang wouldn't be able to chase after Ou Du Xiao if the latter decided to run away.

Otherwise, Chu Yang's nature would've already driven him to kill them with his sword, and be done with it. After all, what was the use of humiliating an enemy who's about to die anyway? This would be an idiotic thing to do.

What if the enemy suddenly restored his strength or his reinforcements arrived while one was humiliating them? Wouldn't it be useless to repent afterwards?

Chu Yang would never handle a matter like that. He had always believed in the lesson that his master Meng Chao Ran had taught. In fact, he had found that lesson to be most reasonable, [Kill your enemy if you want to ensure that they aren't the least bit of a threat to you.]

[Humiliate them if you feel like doing so. But, do it after they're dead. They won't even be able to resist you in that case... not even if you take a shit on their faces.]

[What's the point in humiliating them before their death?]

Ou Du Xiao had great wisdom. So, he would've been able to notice this anomaly if his mind weren't in chaos. And, he could've run away from there as a result. However, his entire body had frozen at the moment. He had become utterly confused due to the sudden turn of events. There was still time to think over this situation... However, he had even lost the ability to that.

"King of Hell Chu... King of Hell Chu..." Ou Cheng Wu wriggled on the ground. He had a look of intense unwillingness on his face. Ou Du Xiao came back to his senses, and hastily went to lend a hand to his father. But, Ou Cheng Wu put out his hand, and pushed him aside.

Ou Cheng Wu had fixed his eyes on Chu Yang's face, "You... how

did you find a flaw in our plan?" He extended his hand, and sprinkled a light-yellow medicine on his chopped legs. And, the bleeding immediately stopped as a result. However, he was still staring at Chu Yang, "This old man had examined this plan himself. It didn't have the least bit of oversight. How did you find out? How did you... beat us in our own game?"

Chu Yang looked at him amused, "It didn't have the least bit of oversight? Clan Lord Ou, you're too self-confident! I think there were at least four loopholes in your plan," he quickly circulated his martial power to restore his strength as he said this.

"Four loopholes?" Ou Cheng Wu was startled by this. He suddenly let out a hissing sound as he said, "I don't believe it! I don't believe it!" He had racked his brain to come up with this plan. Moreover, he had practiced this plan several times along the journey. That had obviously led to the death of several innocent experts. After all, all of them had become scapegoats in Ou Cheng Wu's experiment. Thus, Ou Cheng Wu had been fully confident that he could deal with Chu Yang using this plan. So, he spiraled into utter denial when he heard Chu Yang say that there were many loopholes in his plan.

"First, your brows were beaded with sweat. However, I found out that only you people were sweating when I looked carefully. Why were the horses not sweating even though they were pulling the carts? The horses should've been more tired than the people, right?" Chu Yang snorted as he stretched out one finger.

"Second, the goods should've been very heavy since the people were so tired. But, I saw the ruts left behind by your carriages. They weren't deep at all! They were so shallow that they were almost invisible. So, how did the people become tired? It was clearly fishy!"

....

Chapter 641: I Regret It A Lot!

Chu Yang smiled in a ridiculing manner, "Third, the cultivations of none of you were visible. All of you had perhaps eaten some kind of medicine to conceal them. Anyone could have lost their vigilance by seeing that. However, an expert is an expert. You're an expert no matter how you hide your cultivation. I realized it when I saw that dust wasn't rising from under your feet."

Chu Yang laughed out loud, "But, this is a dirt road. And, the weather is also dry at this time. Clouds of dust blew up and filled the air when the horses stepped on the ground. However, it seemed as if the road was made of stone when you people did the same... How wouldn't that be odd? And, do you want me to believe that King Level Experts have started delivering goods nowadays?"

"Fourth, we've never met before. We were complete strangers. But, you gave me a water pouch..." Chu Yang smiled, "I've never seen such a nice person in the Middle Three Heavens. You may be kindhearted by nature. But, you must ensure that the stranger you've met doesn't loot you, right? However, you approached me with full enthusiasm, and looked at me as if I was your blood relative. Didn't you act like a fool?"

"There were so many loopholes. So, wouldn't I have been a greater fool if I had fallen in your trap?" Chu Yang indifferently said, "You must know... I had caught many spies who had been hidden internally for over a decade when I had arrived in the Iron Cloud in the Lower Three Heavens. I had caught them relying solely upon these tiny hints and clues, get it?"

"But, you wanted to deal with me using such a childish method?" Chu Yang burst into loud laughter, "Ou Cheng Wu! Had you been kicked in the head by a donkey?"

Ou Cheng Wu's eyes burned with anger. He pointed his trembling finger at Chu Yang. Then, he spat out a mouthful of blood with

'puff' sound.

Chu Yang's vitality had almost restored. He slowly exposed a killing intention in his eyes. "You two, your time is almost up. I should send you both on your way to hell. Moreover, eight to nine-thousand people of your Ou Clan must be waiting with their raised heads in the hope of reuniting with you. So, I won't make them wait too much. After all, doing so would be a sin."

"Wait!" Ou Du Xiao shouted loudly. He stubbornly looked at Chu Yang, "I want to know something... You had seen through our disguise. However, that doesn't change the fact that you did indeed touch the water pouch. This mixed poison is the original creation of our Ou Clan as far as I know. And, there's no antidote in the world that can counter it. In fact, nobody knows how to counter it. Even a Monarch Level Expert can't resist this poison relying on his cultivation. So, how did you do it?"

Chu Yang snorted, "You don't need to know this!" Then, the Nine Tribulations Sword in his hand issued a 'clang' sound as he coldly shouted, "Ou Du Xiao, now it's your turn!"

Ou Cheng Wu bitterly smiled on the side. Simultaneously, a black smoke emitted from his body. Chu Yang squinted as he noticed that. Then, he slashed his sword horizontally. The sword-light flew over like a meteor, and chopped off Ou Cheng Wu's head. Then, the Sword Point slashed open the lapel on Ou Cheng Wu's chest, and a book dropped out. Black smoke emitted out of this book like an unending stream.

However, Chu Yang's vitality spread everywhere, and the black smoke immediately disappeared.

"I knew that you had this thing on you. No wonder I couldn't find it when I searched in the Ou Clan," Chu Yang sneered. He saw that five words were printed in black on the cover of this book – 'Ten-Thousand Poisons Evil Book'.

Ou Clan had become famous relying solely on this secret book. It

was so thick that it looked like a piece of brick!

Ou Du Xiao hatefully stared at Chu Yang. His father had just died a tragic death in front of his eyes. So, he couldn't help but seethe with anger. He shouted out loud, and rushed over. His figure moved swiftly and erratically. And, his body emitted a dense black fog that had a foul smell!

It was the magical technique 'Poison Spirit Evil Technique' which was only allowed to be practiced by the direct descendants of Ou Clan's Clan Lord! However, Chu Yang's present cultivation was far above that of Ou Du Xiao. So, he turned his body and fearlessly rushed into the black fog. He then vigorously shot the Nine Tribulations Sword head-on!

Ou Du Xiao let out a pitiful scream as the sword inserted into his chest. Then, a blood stream gushed out of his chest as the sword's point was pulled out. But, he hadn't fallen yet; he was still staggering. He firmly covered his chest with his hands, and asked with difficulty, "You... why does the poison not affect you?"

Chu Yang's crystal clear eyes looked at Ou Du Xiao in the black fog. Then, he slowly said, "The poison doesn't affect me because I'm... the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword! No poison in the world can have any effect on me!"

Ou Du Xiao's eyes almost popped out of his eye-sockets. He felt blood rushing with a great speed in his body at this moment even though he had received so many injures.

"So that's how it is... so... so..." Ou Du Xiao listlessly looked at Chu Yang. He then suddenly faced upwards, and bitterly smiled as if he had gone completely insane. Then, he yelled, "I regret it a lot! I regret it a lot!"

Finally, he fell down with his face upwards with a thud sound, and stopped moving. Thereafter, he didn't make any sound.

His eyes were wide open even though he had died. However,

those rigid pupils didn't have any sorrow or resentment in them... Instead, there was only endless regret!

His body gradually began to crumple since all of his vitality had been sucked out.

Chu Yang looked at the wide open eyes of Ou Du Xiao. It was evident that he had died with a remaining grievance. Chu Yang sighed in his heart when he noticed this. After all, he could understand the meaning of Ou Du Xiao's last words, 'I regret it a lot! I regret a lot!'

Master of Nine Tribulations Sword!

The Master of Nine Tribulations Sword appeared once in ten-thousand years. And, this signified that everything in the Upper Three Heavens was on the verge of turning upside down. The existing Nine Great Ruling Clans would be dethroned. And, nine brothers of the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword would form new dominating clans, and rule over the Nine Heavens!

This pattern hadn't changed since the Nine Heavens Continent was formed ninety-thousand years ago.

Some people would obviously wish to resist this pattern. Consequently, an unending war would break out between the original nine great clans and the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword every time the world experienced this change in power structure. And, the Nine Tribulations Sword Master would win and change the framework of the Nine Heavens every time!

Ou Du Xiao had also gotten this opportunity at first!

He could've become friends with Chu Yang only if he had treated Chu Yang with honesty just like Xie Dan Qiong's clan had done. He could've obtained a favorable impression from Chu Yang. Then, wouldn't the Ou Clan have had an acknowledged place in the future Nine Heavens?

The Ou Clan may not have become one of the nine dominating

clans of the Nine Heavens. But, it still could've become one of the big clans of the Upper Three Heavens. In fact, there would've been no two ways about it.

All the generations of the Ou Clan had yearned for this in their dreams. This had been their ultimate goal since Ou Clan's formation as they wanted to achieve paramount honor in the Nine Heavens.

And, this would've been extremely easy to obtain for the Ou Clan! After all, the God of Destiny had arrived at the Ou Clan for doing this big favor. But, Ou Du Xiao had ruined this once-in-a-ten-thousand-years opportunity for their momentary greed! He had also taken his entire clan into the abyss of death!

He had led his own clan to a situation where the entire clan had been exterminated.

So, how could Ou Du Xiao not have regretted it?

Ou Clan had clearly decided to become friends with King of Hell Chu back then. In fact, they had already held a meeting and prepared the money that they had to return to King of Hell Chu down to the last penny. They would've had a fair deal with King of Hell Chu...

Ou Du Xiao had felt conflicted in his heart even when the clan had decided to renege on the promise. Moreover, the clan's determination hadn't been that strong at that time. So, Ou Du Xiao could've reversed the present situation only if he had firmly opposed it.

However, greed had risen in his heart due to some inexplicable reason at that critical time. He had become angry and ambitious. And, that had eventually led to this irremediable tragedy...

So, how could Ou Du Xiao not regret?

Perhaps, his spirit would also harbor endless regret for eternity after his death!

Chu Yang also heaved a deep sigh when he saw Ou Du Xiao shouting 'I regret it a lot' at the time of his death.

[He was one of the twelve up-and-coming influential figures of the Middle Three Heavens! He hadn't even started to grow when he died at my hands. I remember that the Ou Du Xiao of my previous life had moved unhindered in the Middle Three Heavens. His poison technique had given him an awe-inspiring and heroic persona which had made the entire Middle Three Heavens tremble.] Chu Yang incessantly sighed as he thought of all this.

[You regretted it a lot. But, it's not that I don't regret it either.]

[Your clan was so proficient in using poison. It could've assisted me in the road to the future of the Nine Heavens if you could've wholeheartedly been my friend. How good would that have been for my journey — the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword?]

[How many enemies would've been deterred with the word 'poison' in the war of the Nine Heavens?]

[It could've avoided so many casualties of the brothers fighting on my side.]

[It's a pity that you chose the other road!]

[I had already thought that this Poison Spirit would either be a formidable enemy or a great help when I was in the Continent Center Citadel of Great Zhao in the Lower Three Heavens.]

[And, I had already showed my goodwill to you at Mt. Dingjun in the Middle Three Heavens. I had sent off the intention to be friends with you. Otherwise... why would I have extended the time limit for you...? Why would I have put forward such favorable conditions for you?]

[I – King of Hell Chu – have a lot of money, but I'm not a spendthrift who just casually throws away his money.]

[You were still a man of character despite being vicious when I saw you in the Continent Center Citadel in the Lower Three

Heavens. You were still pure-hearted when I met you at Mt. Dingjun in the Middle Three Heavens. But, why were you suddenly blinded by wild ambitions at the critical time?]

[You eventually chose the other way.]

[You did regret it. But, you realized your regret only in your final moment. Now, there's no use of you regretting, right?]

[Farewell, Poison Spirit!]

[Farewell! There will be no Poison Spirit in the world of Nine Heavens from now on!]

Chu Yang gently sighed. Then, he extended his hand, and gently closed Ou Du Xiao's open eyes. After that, he silently thought in his heart; [This is your final journey. I'm closing your eyes in this world so that you can open your eyes in the afterlife. The legends say that the one who dies with their eyes open becomes blind after arriving in the Netherworld. I don't want you to be blind. However, I'm not doing this for the Ou Du Xiao of this life. Instead, I'm doing this for that world-shaking Poison Spirit from my previous life!]

[The Ou Du Xiao of this life doesn't deserve this favor from me. But, the Poison Spirit of the previous life was indeed worthy.]

[Who could've imagined that the twelve influential figures of the Middle Three Heavens from my previous life would become nothing but a dream in my head?]

[...especially the ones at the top... Dark Bamboo, Black Devil, Gu Du Xing, Poison Spirit, Ao Xie Yun, and Tian Bu Ru!]

[They are only my dream now!]

...

Chu Yang stood up. He let out a faint shout. Then, he shot his palm on the ground. A big hole was formed in the ground with a bang. He then put the corpses of Ou Du Xiao, his father, and the

twenty-or-so experts of the Ou Clan into the hole. Then, he pushed continually with his hands, and made a grave.

The Nine Tribulations Sword flew out with a 'swoosh' sound. It cut off the roots of a big tree at the roadside. Then, the sword-light produced some whistling sounds, and turned the tree-trunk into a smooth grave-marker within an instant. Chu Yang then set it up in front of the grave.

Chu Yang thought for a while. Then, he moved his sword like the wind, and carved a few words on this simple and crude grave-marker.

He then deeply sighed. He got up, and left with flying speed. He didn't turn his head until his figure disappeared.

The light of the setting sun shone on the grave-marker, and illuminated the words written on it.

There was no name of the deceased. There was no introduction. Only a poem was written on it...

The Jianghu is an entanglement of gratitude and grudges,

There is no hero or champion;

Whether you regret or I regret,

Wins and losses are all but dreamy clouds'

Why bother thinking about this life or previous life,

Who has remained innocent since ancient times?

Outstanding heroes will dance in heaven and hell;

Nine Heavens are now poison-free!

This poem was either to commemorate the Poison Spirit of his previous life or just Chu Yang's realization. However, Chu Yang's undying obsession with his previous life had suddenly vanished in thin air after this.

It was just like Chu Yang had written in his poem — there is no

hero or champion... Wins and losses are all but dreamy clouds... Why bother thinking about this life or previous life...? Who has remained innocent since ancient times?"

After all, his previous life didn't exist anymore.

.....

Chapter 642: Guide to the World of Poisons

Chu Yang's silhouette was speeding along the main road. A long time had passed, and his heart had finally calmed down. Moreover, he hadn't met with any ambush along the journey. However, he had seen several scenes of people fighting in the Jianghu.

The more he approached the places where the great clans would gather, the more frequently he saw those fighting scenes. Corpses were lying everywhere along the way...

The great chaos of Jianghu had already arrived!

Chu Yang had been researching and studying the entire way. He had been thoroughly going through the 'Ten-Thousand Poisons Evil Book'. He felt that he had understood a few things from it.

[It seems like this 'Ten-Thousand Poisons Evil Book' isn't necessarily useless.]

['Ten-Thousand Poisons Evil Book'... Chapter one —'Poison Spirit Evil Technique'... Chapter two —'Ten-thousand poisons of the world'... Chapter three —'Use Poison to counter Poison'... Chapter four —'World's poisonous creatures'... Chapter five —'Indissoluble poisons'... Chapter six —'All the poisons of the world'...]

[The names and pictures of Poisonous Flood Dragon and Lust Dragon are impressively presented in detail in chapter four —'World's poisonous creatures'.]

[And, the lust poison of the Lust Dragon is categorized under the 'indissoluble poisons'.]

Sword Spirit inside Chu Yang's mind frowned. He had felt some unusual fluctuations in Chu Yang's energies. So, he couldn't help but ask, "What are you doing?"

"Reading a book," Chu Yang replied while looking over the book.

"What book?"

"Ten-Thousand Poisons Evil Book!"

"Ten-Thousand Poisons Evil Book?!" Sword Spirit was startled. So, he said, "Let me take a look."

Chu Yang used his intention, and put this book which was full of strange methods into the Nine Tribulations Space.

Sword Spirit's entire face turned serious. He read the book page by page, and finally closed it once he was done. He then heaved a long sigh, and shut his eyes. He seemed to be thinking deeply about something.

A long while passed. Then, Sword Spirit finally opened his mouth and said, "So it turned out to be that... this book isn't called 'Ten-Thousand Poisons Evil Book'. The correct name of this book is... 'Guide to the World of Poison'..."

"'Guide to the World of Poison'?" Chu Yang was puzzled as he asked.

"That's right." Sword Spirit took a deep sigh, "This Guide to the World of Poison contains the methods of using various effects of poisons to poison people as well as the special methods which had made the 'Poison Doctor' Wu Jue Cheng famous in the past."

"Poison Doctor Wu Jue Cheng?" Chu Yang racked his brain. However, he realized that he had never heard this name before.

"Poison Doctor Wu Jue Cheng was one of the nine brothers of the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword forty-thousand years ago. And, Wu Clan used to be one of the nine dominating clans of the Nine Heavens thirty-thousand years ago. Wu Jue Cheng would move unhindered in the Jianghu in those days relying upon his poison techniques. He would kill people, but also save them. However, he never lifted a hand or used any weapon. In fact, he would kill people while chatting and laughing with them. Even outstanding heroes would become helpless in front of him. Their valor would be of no use.

"The most thrilling fight of that time was Wu Clan's battle with the Heavenly Wolf Gang of the Upper Three Heavens. The Heavenly Wolf Gang had their foundation high up in the mountain forests. So, they stubbornly resisted. However, Wu Clan gained complete control of the battle after Wu Jue Cheng arrived and unleashed a plague. The area within a radius of fifteen-hundred kilometers had turned into a dead zone! No human or animal had survived!

"Wu Jue Cheng was indeed a highly proficient poison-expert. But, he was also a highly skilled divine doctor. He could heal any injury and counter any disease using poison. In fact, he could eradicate the illness while leaving no future worries. However, he subsequently started to develop an evil character. He started to do whatever he felt like doing. He was truly a 'monstre sacré' of that time!

"However, Wu Jue Cheng disappeared ten-thousand years later. A new Master of Nine Tribulations Sword had been born, and the Wu Clan had started to decline. It slowly disappeared from the Upper Three Heavens. After that, the 'Guide to the World of Poison' never appeared in the Jianghu.

"However, some people of the Wu Clan had managed to escape. I suspect that Supreme Expert Chen Feng who had once shaken the world was a descendent of Wu Jue Cheng."

Sword Spirit told the life history of this legendary character bit by bit... as if he was very familiar with the story. And, Chu Yang became fascinated only by hearing it.

"I see." Chu Yang silently heaved a sigh.

"However, the book in your hand isn't complete. It doesn't contain the most important methods of using poison to counter poison. Moreover, it is clearly visible that the poison technique has undergone some tampering..." Sword Spirit smiled in a strange manner.

"Oh?" Chu Yang immediately noticed that Sword Spirit's tone had changed. He asked, "How do you know?"

"Ha ha... It's because... I've rewritten this book!" Sword Spirit didn't have any expression on his face as he replied, "However, I hadn't expected that I'd see this book after thirty-thousand years."

"You rewrote this book?" Chu Yang jumped in fright this time.

"Yes. I had obtained the Guide to the World of Poison at that time after the Wu Clan was exterminated. The Sword Lord of that time had said — this book can leave a mark on the generations to come in the hands of a noble person. But, it can lead to great suffering for the common people if it falls into the hands of a person with evil intentions. I want to destroy this book, but I hate to part with it. So, tamper this book, and then keep it with you. Remove all the evil and cruel methods that violate humanity, and decrease the might of the poison technique to the minimum. Also, separate the book into two volumes — first and second."

"This book in your hand right now is the first volume," Sword Spirit said.

"So, you still remember everything?" Chu Yang's eyes lit up.

"Yes, I remember everything. But, this martial art can do great damage. You can't let someone else practice it since they might not be able to have a good control over it... Moreover, who'll ensure that it doesn't get used for harming people after you and your brothers are gone from this world?" Sword Spirit meaningfully looked at Chu Yang.

"There isn't any martial art in this world that is necessarily good or evil. Even the so-called prestigious clans don't have any shortage of nasty people and disciples with wild ambitions. It's like that saying — 'even those who follow the demon's crooked path aren't necessarily the monsters that cause torment to common people'. In fact, great men and true heroes also emerge in abundance from among these monsters." Chu Yang indifferently said, "Besides, you

destroyed the book at that time because you and that time's Master of Nine Tribulations Sword had already seized the Nine Heavens. However, I haven't even started my journey."

A solemn expression appeared in the eyes of Sword Spirit, "You want to practice it?"

"I have the 'Nine Tribulations Transcending the Nine Heavens Technique'. So, why would I bother to practice this poison technique?" Chu Yang said, "However, I need to know some of the methods no matter whether they save or harm people. This would only be useful in the future... It won't be harmful."

Sword Spirit hesitated for a long while, and then said, "I don't mind letting you know as long as you don't circulate it... Alright, I'll give you the complete Guide to the World of Poison!"

Chu Yang was overjoyed to hear this. So, he said, "Your brain is indeed loaded with a lot of good stuff. Let's do it this way... How about I give you a big pile of papers and a pen, and you write down everything you have in your mind for me? After all, it must be troublesome to squeeze information out of your head when things come to a head like this."

Sword Spirit became angry and said, "I was able to remember things because this book evoked my past memories. Do you think that I can retrieve everything from my memory by just trying to remember? You don't have any catalyst to evoke my memories. Anyway, what would be the use of it? Would you study all of my memories of ninety-thousand years if I wrote everything down? It would be equivalent to the learning obtained from the meticulous lifetime study of tens of thousands of people! You're truly the greediest. You're never satisfied!"

Chu Yang touched his nose, and forced a smile.

...

[This guy definitely has a lot of good stuff hidden inside his mind!

I can know many suitable ways to help my brothers upgrade their strengths if I can dig out more. But, where can I go to find so many catalysts?]

Chu Yang was thinking all this as he watched the Sword Spirit trying hard to recall his memories. However, Chu Yang's feet had never stopped moving during this time. He had climbed to the top of a mountain by this time... He could only see green grassland in front of him at the moment. The trees seemed to be verdant and lush. In addition, there were buildings stretching endlessly into the distance. And, a crystal-clear river was flowing in a zigzag manner. The residential areas were in the surroundings of this river.

The river looked like a beautiful belt of crystal-clear water. Its waves were gleaming with the reflection of the sunlight. In fact, it seemed as if this stretch of land had come straight from a painting.

He had arrived at Mo Clan!

...

Gu Du Xing was passing through a forest. He suddenly felt that there was something fishy. Then, an aura came through from his front. It was carrying some kind of oppression along with it.

[But, taking the detour at this moment won't do. After all, the Gu Clan is just a hundred kilometers ahead from here.]

[I have to take this road. Otherwise, I'm afraid that I would have to go around for a few thousand kilometers... if I take the long route... The timing and terrain that the enemy has chosen is truly impeccable!]

Gu Du Xing suddenly thought in his heart as he strode over.

[I can't go around. So, I'll just have to kill!]

Gu Du Xing saw a man when he came out from the forest. This man was standing upright and unafraid in the narrow seam between two mountains that were pressed together. The tassel of

the sword on his shoulder was waving in the wind.

This man's figure looked like a sharp sword at the entrance to the gap between two big mountains... In fact, it seemed as if this sharp sword had cracked-opened that gap between those mountains.

This man's stature was tall and sturdy. He had a towering figure. He also had fine beard on his face. He looked like a black-iron tower. He stood high and mighty like a mountain in the middle of the road. Wide sections of road were left on both sides of his body. But, it still felt as if he had blocked the entire road.

It seemed as if not even a drop could trickle through.

"Brother Gu, long time no see!" This man grinned as soon as he saw that Gu Du Xing had arrived. Then, he softly said. Simultaneously, an imposing aura of dominating the entire world suddenly spewed out from his shoulders.

Tu Qian Hao!

"Brother Tu?" Gu Du Xing's body landed like cotton wool and stopped. His complexion was cold! He insipidly said, "There's a scorching sun in the sky. However, Brother Tu looks lively and pleasant. Taking a leisurely sunbath under the blazing sun, are we?"

Tu Qian Hao spread a smile on his face. He then shook his head and said, "Brother Gu, you haven't seen this old friend for so long. But, you're still showing a poor attitude to him."

Gu Du Xing sneered. He then said without showing any trace of politeness, "Tu Qian Hao, you're blocking my way. Are you telling me that you have good intentions behind doing this? Just tell me... What do you want today?"

Tu Qian Hao took a deep breath. He then slowly pulled out the sword from the sheath behind his back. Then, he seriously said, "I had suffered a crushing defeat at Brother Gu's hands in our last fight. So, I've come to ask for some advice from Brother Gu."

Gu Du Xing took a step forward. And, cold sword energy emerged from his entire body. He then slowly swept his eyes around. After that, he lowly shouted, "Have you come by yourself?"

There was disdain in his voice. And, not even a bit of it was concealed.

Tu Qian Hao coldly snorted. He stared at him and said, "I won't hide the truth from you. Twenty people from my Tu Clan have come with me. So, we are twenty-one in total. And, our goal is to kill you!"

"He-he. You have a plan!" Gu Du Xing gave a false smile and snorted, "But, why haven't you ordered them to set into action? Why has this Great Young Master been left alone here to wrangle with me?"

Tu Qian Hao's face turned red. He fearlessly said, "Because... I want to fight with you before besieging you. A battle of life and death...!"

It seemed as if Tu Qian Hao's eyes would shoot flames. He then continued in a heavy tone, "I want to have a fair fight with you. Either I'll kill you... or you'll kill me...! And, I'll commit suicide on the spot if any of my men dares to set into action before this decisive battle is over."

Then, he turned around and fiercely shouted, "Did you guys hear? Come out for me!"

Several 'shua' sounds were heard as twenty men came out from behind a boulder in quick succession. They then stood behind Tu Qian Hao.

Tu Qian Hao's complexion turned as stiff as iron. He then shouted in a strict voice, "The one who dares to set into action before the fight ends will be responsible for my death! Understood?! I've been wild, arrogant, mean, and sly for my entire life. But, I've never been called 'spineless'. We can't allow anyone

to call our Tu Clan spineless. Understood?!"

...

Chapter 643: Gu Du Xing, Let's Fight!

"Yes! Young Master will definitely win!" the Tu Clan's twenty people shouted in unison. Two old men were standing in the front. They were dressed in embroidered-robos. However, they had revealed deep worry on their faces.

"Gu Du Xing, do you feel relieved now?" Tu Qian Hao turned around. His two blazing eyes looked at Gu Du Xing as he called out in a stern voice.

The scornful look on Gu Du Xing's face slowly subsided. And, it was replaced by a kind of respect instead... a respect for a true warrior! So, he got serious, and asked, "Tu Qian Hao, why are you doing this?"

Tu Qian Hao gave a bleak smile as he insipidly said, "I had undergone a thorough internal cleansing of my meridians as soon as I was born. Then, I began practicing martial arts at the age of two. And, I began sword-practice at the age of three. I was hailed as the best martial genius of the Tu Clan in the past several hundred years when I was seven years old! After that, even I began to think that I was very amazing. I had become very self-confident and conceited.

"I was very wild prior to the battle between you and me. I used to think that others were inferior to me. Therefore, I simply refused to accept it when you and the others were ranked above me. However, I found out that I was mistaken after I fought with you."

He said in a gloomy voice, "You shattered my illusion, and made me realize where I stood. And, you've become a demon in my heart since then! I'm crazily practicing my sword just to defeat you... to beat you fair and square in a one-on-one battle!

"I absolutely won't be able to reach the peak of martial arts in this life even if I go on living... Especially if I can't accomplish this first! However, reaching the peak of martial arts is my lifelong pursuit.

So, I might as well die now and be done with it if it's preset that the road ahead is going to be without prospects!

"After all, I won't be disgraced if I die by your sword."

Tu Qian Hao burst into loud laughter. Then, he exclaimed loudly, "Gu Du Xing, do you understand my motivation? Do you understand? You! Are you willing to fight me?!"

Gu Du Xing's complexion seemed dreary like the autumn breeze as he replied in a clear voice, "I understand... I fully understand! Tu Qian Hao, I'll fulfill your wish, and give you the fight you desire."

Tu Qian Hao let out a thunderous laugh. He then unsheathed his long sword, and slashed it against the wind. It immediately issued a humming sound, and myriads of densely-packed afterimages of long sword simultaneously appeared in front of him. He then said in a loud voice, "It's the battle of life and death today! Gu Du Xing, you have the ability to kill me. I don't need your respect... I only need your life!"

"You can rest assured. I won't show any mercy!" Gu Du Xing let out a long and loud cry. The Black Dragon Sword seemed like a sentient as it issued a clear cry. It then voluntarily parted from from its sheath, and flew out. It flashed brilliantly in midair, and fell into Gu Du Xing's hand.

"I'll kill you. But, I'll let you die in a fighting stance," Gu Du Xing deeply said. He then raised his head, and opened his eyes. It seemed as if his eyes had fiercely shot out two brilliant and seemingly tangible rays of light.

The Black Dragon Sword's dragon cry echoed in the sky for a long time.

The long sword in Tu Qian Hao's hand also issued a loud and fierce humming cry.

Tu Qian Hao burst into loud laughter, "Sword Emperor! Sword

Emperor! I saw a Sword Emperor in this life!" He then issued a loud roar. And, the muscles throughout his body became tight. In fact, his whole person seemed to have grown bigger, and become bold and powerful.

His entire face turned red, and his eyes shot a look of extreme excitement. Every pore in his body had gotten stimulated with happiness, and had expanded as a result. The intense thrill of battle had thoroughly melted into Tu Qian Hao's blood and soul!

The lifeless sword in Tu Qian Hao's hand had already expressed its submission when the Sword Emperor had emerged. However, this Young Master — Tu Qian Hao — had only felt an intense and uncontrollable fighting intention instead.

"Gu Du Xing, let's fight!"

Gu Du Xing let out a long and loud bellow, and the sword-light started to move above in a crisscrossed manner.

Tu Qian Hao quickly moved and attacked while laughing loudly. Suddenly, countless sword points came out whizzing from all directions. They turned into life-seizing sword energy, and attacked Gu Du Xing.

The whizzing sound of the sword-wind overshadowed the mournful sound of the north-wind passing through this mountain pass.

Gu Du Xing's turquoise-clothed appearance flickered within Tu Qian Hao's sword-light. The Black Dragon Sword was hacked and slashed swiftly... and a slick cold light was launched. It then attacked Tu Qian Hao in full swing!

The two figures — one clad in black clothes and the other in turquoise — clashed again and again amidst the two masses of sword-lights. Afterwards, only a ball of dazzling light could be seen... The two silhouettes couldn't be seen at all.

Suddenly, the loud clanging sounds of clashing of swords rang

unceasingly in that mass of sword-lights... just like the wind blows the lotus leaves, or the rain hits the banana leaves. Soon, one could only hear the sword energy whizzing around; unhindered. The sword-lights were bright and splendid, but they didn't have the least bit of collision.

"I'm delighted!" Tu Qian Hao heartily laughed like a madman.

Tu Qian Hao was unexpectedly giving an extraordinary performance even under the oppression of a Sword Emperor like Gu Du Xing. Tu Qian Hao's 'slaughtering spirit sword technique' had been displayed to the acme. His attacks would be like a violent storm one moment, and like a gentle breeze or drizzle the next moment. The transformations in his fighting style were multifarious in nature.

He only felt that the blood in his body was flowing rapidly. His entire person was getting increasingly excited. It was indeed a type of excitement that had nearly reached the ethereal state!

He had already forgotten everything by this time... He had forgotten that he was fighting. He had forgotten that he was Tu Qian Hao. He had even forgotten his sword. He had forgotten everything in this world!

He had only asked for a battle... a battle in which he could fight to his heart's content without caring about life or death.

Therefore, he felt very joyful. It was the type of unrestrained joy that one would feel on suddenly breaking into a dance... or like the feeling of soaring to the clouds. He was laughing wildly while facing upward. In fact, he was crazily bellowing to the heavens. It seemed magical to see his tall and sturdy body jump vertically upwards. He soared in the sky like an eagle, and then suddenly dived down like a dragon in the sea. Then, he suddenly roared like a tiger... "Ha ha ha ha..." Tu Qian Hao's crazed laugh was dripping with the feeling of contentment. He then fiercely roared, "I got to engage in such a battle in this life. I may die... But, I'll die content!"

Gu Du Xing was as cool-headed as an ice-covered peak as he faced Tu Qian Hao's crazy onslaught.

However, there was an evasive look of pity, hesitation, and indecisiveness in his eyes.

[Kill? Or not kill?]

[The Tu Qian Hao from before might have been a vile, unbearable, and obnoxious fellow. However, the current Tu Qian Hao is truly an opponent worthy of respect from anyone.]

[Let's presume that I was in his place, and he was in mine. Perhaps, I would be so ashamed that I would cut my throat on the spot, and die with regrets if he showed me mercy and let me go.]

[The only way to respect your honorable opponent is to fight him using your full strength.]

[Showing any sort of hesitation, pity, or mercy will only bring extreme dishonor to my opponent.]

A bright light flashed in Gu Du Xing's eyes as he shouted, "Brother Tu, watch out!" The Black Dragon Sword let out a cry, and jumped up. It just briefly slashed, and a long and thin cold light slipped out from the sword-blade and went rolling away. This sword-light was cold. It was jumping about and flickering. It looked just like a will-o'-the-wisp in the dark world. It was constantly sparkling, but it contained a cold and dense killing intent!

"Very well; come!" Tu Qian Hao let out a big roar, and crazily attacked. The sword-light gradually burst out little by little like the drops of blood. Then, it suddenly glittered like a sprite and rushed out. It jumped into the incoming resplendent and radiant sword-light of Gu Du Xing, and then immediately vanished like a drop in the ocean.

Gu Du Xing heaved a sigh amidst Tu Qian Hao's loud laughter... He had already stabbed the Black Dragon Sword in a rock-firm and

unyielding manner.

Tu Qian Hao's laughter stopped abruptly... so did his movements! He just stood still on the spot. He was still holding the sword in his right hand. And, the sword-light was still flickering and rippling on it.

He slowly lowered his head, and saw half of a long sword glittering on his chest with a cold and serene glow.

The tip of the sword had already penetrated deep into his heart!

The expression on Tu Qian Hao's face looked very strange as he looked at the long sword that was pierced deep into his chest. He seemed to be pondering over this peculiar feeling since there was a look of deep thinking on his face.

Gu Du Xing was holding the hilt in his hand. His grip was rock-solid. He was looking at Tu Qian Hao's face with a profound look in his eyes. He then whispered, "I went all-out... couldn't hold back."

Tu Qian Hao's face showed a smile of understanding. He then frankly said, "I wouldn't have been content at the time of my death if you hadn't gone all-out!"

Then, he lowered his eyes, and looked at the sword in his chest. He didn't want to die just yet. So, he said in low spirits, "First... First... don't... pull out the sword!"

"Ok!" Gu Du Xing said with a gloomy expression in his eyes.

The people of Tu Clan screamed in anger, and suddenly dashed over.

"Halt!" Tu Qian Hao stood upright and unafraid. He then roared angrily, "The business between the two of us isn't done yet. Who dares to interfere?!"

His heart had already been pierced. So, he was undoubtedly going to die. However, his roar was still majestic. It was full of tyranny!

The twenty experts of Tu Clan halted at once. Their deeply

worried eyes were still looking at their Young Lord. All of them looked extremely anxious, but there was also deep sorrow and powerlessness on their faces.

"Draw back!" Tu Qian Hao's voice was muffled, but it was firm and full of authority. He repeated, "Draw back!"

The twenty experts slowly fell back at the same time. Many of them already had glistening teardrops in their eyes.

However, Tu Qian Hao didn't seem to be feeling anything. He closed his eyes, and then opened them again. Then, he looked at the white clouds drifting in the distant sky. His eyes seemed to have no expression at all. However, the look in his eyes still somehow seemed very complicated... as if it was filled with countless emotions.

"You know, Gu Du Xing... I – Tu Qian Hao – could've become a famous swordsman... I could've roamed unhindered in the Nine Heavens. I have this feeling... I have this feeling that I definitely could...! However, I've ruined my future prospects with my own hands. I've ruined my own life...!"

Tu Qian Hao laughed hoarsely, "I was always going to be under you and your brothers... even if I had become a swordsman and an Emperor Expert. I would've never been able to surpass you guys! But, we are the people of the same era, and the starting point for you all is far behind mine. So, it was a type of shame for me to accept the fact that I had been thoroughly suppressed by you guys. I – Tu Qian Hao – couldn't accept this!

"After all, I... wouldn't be Tu Qian Hao if I accepted this." Tu Qian Hao looked sharply at Gu Du Xing and proudly said, "Only a death like this makes me Tu Qian Hao!"

Gu Du Xing remained silent for a long time. Then, he gently nodded and said, "You're indeed worthy of such pride!"

Tu Qian Hao smiled. He had grown a beard across his entire face.

However, his smile had given Gu Du Xing a very pure and sincere feeling for some reason... like he was looking at a child who was showing-off his little achievement.

Innocent and pure...

"I didn't wish to die at first!" Tu Qian Hao said slowly, "But, I participated in the alliance organized by Ou Du Xing because of my hatred and obsession with you. After that, I just wanted to kill you the entire time. However, I suddenly became disheartened afterwards.

"Too selfish... too dishonest! Each one of those people is a genius. However, each one is manipulative as well. They keep fighting and scheming against each other. That kind of environment..." Tu Qian Hao sighed deeply. Then, he clenched his teeth, and uttered the next sentence from the bottom of his heart, "It truly fu*king suffocated me to death!"

He had exerted himself to utter this deriding statement. In fact, it seemed as if he had used even the strength of his beating heart in doing so. Anyone who would hear it would be convinced that 'this sentence had definitely come straight from the bottom of his heart'!

Chapter 644: Tu Qian Hao's Epiphany!

"Especially when I found out that you've already become a Sword Emperor..." Tu Qian Hao miserably laughed, "Ha-ha... I lost my heart at that instant. Afterwards, I had said that I'd go and kill Gu Du Xing. And, Black Devil had commented on this — he's a Sword Emperor. What grade King are you?"

Tu Qian Hao mimicked Black Devil's tone as he said these words. In fact, he had vividly imitated that ridiculing tone to perfection. This showed how greatly those words had stimulated him at that time.

"I had realized that I couldn't overtake or kill you at that time itself. However, I could always die at yours hands, right?" Tu Qian Hao snorted, "I – Tu Qian Hao – will die. However, I'd still be a thousand times better man than those bastards who only speak behind others' back and never dare to face the enemy!

"And, I'd be ten-thousand times prouder than them!" Tu Qian Hao had roared while saying this.

This sentence was clearly very powerful. He was feeling very sentimental... His emotions were rising and falling like waves as he endured with difficulty. Blood had started to spurt out from his chest because of the sword.

Gu Du Xing was shocked. He extended his knife-like fingers, and pressed on his chest for a while to stop the bleeding.

Tu Qian Hao's complexion turned golden. He then said with a warm smile, "Don't bother... I had come here to seek death! Could it be that you truly believed that I – a mere seventh grade King Level Expert – could win against a Sword Emperor?"

Gu Du Xing remained silent and sighed. Then, he said with disappointment, "You can't die."

Tu Qian Hao gave a carefree smile, and suddenly said, "But, I now

have this infinite confidence in myself that I wouldn't necessarily lose if I got another chance to have a fight with you!

"...because I had suddenly comprehended my own Sword Way when the death was near at hand... In fact, I had comprehended my very own realm-realization for becoming a Sword Emperor!" Tu Qian Hao's complexion turned serious as he filled with pride. He panted as he said, "I would've become a Sword Emperor in the future if I didn't die today!"

Gu Du Xing knitted his brows. He somewhat anxiously looked at Tu Qian Hao's increasingly pale complexion.

Tu Qian Hao chokingly coughed. He then strangely laughed at himself, "Do you know when I came to this epiphany?"

"When?" Gu Du Xing couldn't help but ask.

"An infinite feeling of death had welled up in me when the tip of your sword pierced through my heart. And, that was the exact moment when I realized my Sword Way!" Tu Qian Hao exposed a bright smile. "I had broken through at the exact moment when the tip of your sword entered my heart... Ha ha ha... This is fu*king ridiculous! It's truly fu*king laughable!"

Gu Du Xing couldn't help but become speechless...

He didn't know what to say.

Tu Qian Hao had broken through as soon as the tip of the opponent's sword pierced into his heart! Anyone who would hear of such tragic fate would become speechless.

"It's rightly said that one has their biggest breakthrough at the time of their death," Tu Qian Hao was done laughing. He sighed in disappointment and frustration. Then, he muttered, "I remember that a senior had once told me — 'the aura of death is the omen of breakthrough'. I had never understood this. But, I've finally comprehended it today... ha-ha..."

He muttered, and then smiled while being spellbound. Then, he

suddenly turned his head, and looked at Gu Du Xing with luminous eyes. He said, "Gu Du Xing, I'm dying. But, my Sword Way can't go to waste. Please do me a favor."

"What favor?" Gu Du Xing had already made a vague guess as to what it could be.

"Only you have the ability to understand my state of mind of that time. Therefore, I want to tell you my Sword Way." Tu Qian Hao's pupils suddenly expanded wide, and he exposed a fanatical look in his eyes. "Gu Du Xing, I wish that my Sword Way would become famous in the entire world! I wish that its prestige would awe the entire Nine Heavens! Please... I request your help."

"My help?" Gu Du Xing had guessed it correctly. However, his entire body still trembled when Tu Qian Hao personally said these words.

"I can call over the experts of your clan. You can pass it on to them," Gu Du Xing indifferently said.

"It won't do!" Tu Qian Hao resolutely and decisively said. Then, he coldly snorted, "They aren't good enough. They won't understand! Gu Du Xing, you mustn't let my life go to waste!"

Tu Qian Hao didn't wait for Gu Du Xing to reply after he said this. Instead, he selfishly continued, "My epiphany is called 'Unruffled by Sentiments'. Forget everything! Forget the sword... Forget yourself... Forget the sky... Forget the earth... Just remain unruffled!

"Forgetting everything is the highest realm of my sword-play..." Tu Qian Hao said with difficulty, "You listen carefully..."

He then started to explain. His voice recounted little by little, and Gu Du Xing gradually became immersed no matter what he said...

Gu Du Xing's cultivation and temperament had enabled him to feel the incredible power of this realm right when he had heard the first sentence.

Therefore, he concentrated all his mental power, and tried his best to listen to every sentence and every word as carefully as he could.

[Tu Qian Hao has come very close to the end. He has a quarter-of-an-hour at the most. And, he needs to finish telling everything before that. This is the only opportunity in this life and age to listen to an epiphany that has come in-exchange for someone's life!]

[So, I'd be letting myself down if I can't memorize this. Moreover, I'd feel sorry for Tu Qian Hao.]

[Tu Qian Hao's fear will perhaps come true if can't memorize this. And, he'll die with a remaining grievance if that happens...]

The two people stood face-to-face. A sword's hilt was glittering and issuing a cold light in between them. The sword hilt in Gu Du Xing's hand was motionless like a ten-thousand years old boulder. And, the sword tip in Tu Qian Hao's chest was still slowly soaking with bloodstains.

'Unruffled'!

Chu Yang would've perhaps heaved a long sigh if he was here. It was hard to say what he would've been feeling in his heart.

After all, Tu Qian Hao had become one of the twelve influential figures of the Middle Three Heavens in Chu Yang's previous life. He had learned the 'Unruffled Sword-art' using his 'Unruffled Sword'. And, he had comprehended the 'Unruffled Sword Cultivation Method' and 'Unruffled Secret Sword Technique' on the basis of that. In fact, Tu Qian Hao had rushed to the peak of the Middle Three Heavens just by this word –'Unruffled'!

He had stood in the Jianghu whilst wielding his sword with a proud smile after slaughtering myriads of heroes!

Such was Tu Qian Hao...

Tu Qian Hao had recorded all of his realization in a book in the

same year that Chu Yang had died. And, he had been preparing to march to the Upper Three Heavens. Chu Yang didn't know whether Tu Qian Hao succeeded or not in doing so. But, he knew that the book that Tu Qian Hao had written was named 'Unruffled Heavenly Book'.

The Tu Qian Hao from this life had comprehended the 'Unruffled Sword-Play'. And, he had done it twenty years earlier than when he had done so in Chu Yang's previous life! However, this matter was still worth sighing over since this 'Unruffled Sword-Play' would never be used by the hands of its inventor — Tu Qian Hao.

The book 'Unruffled Heavenly Book' had shocked the entire Middle Three Heavens in Chu Yang's previous life. But, this storm was impossible to appear in the Jianghu in this life.

This was truly regretful!

There were twelve influential figures in the previous life. Among 'Meng Luo, Jasper Flower, and Tian Bu Ru'... Meng Luo had already been destroyed in this life. Not even his skeleton remained... Among 'Poison Spirit, Tian Ji, Li Xiong Tu'... the Poison Spirit had been eliminated. The Nine Heavens were now poison-free...! And, among 'Black Saber, Qian Hao, and Young Master Xie'... Qian Hao's life journey was about to end ahead of time.

A long while passed...

"Memorized?" Tu Qian Hao's voice was weak. But, he still eagerly asked.

"Yes!" Gu Du Xing took a deep breath.

"You... repeat it thoroughly. I'll listen..." Tu Qian Hao's pupils expanded a little. He then muttered, "Whosoever uses the Unruffled Swordplay in the future would think of me – Tu Qian Hao, right?"

"Unruffled Sword..." Gu Du Xing knew that Tu Qian Hao didn't

feel at ease in his heart. So, he softly and clearly recited the theory of Unruffled Sword in one go.

However, Tu Qian Hao exposed a strange look of loneliness on his face, and it seemed as if he wasn't even hearing what Gu Du Ding was saying. Instead, he had tilted his head to one side. In fact, it seemed as if he was listening to something else as he muttered, "Very dull!"

"What?"

Gu Du Xing hurriedly asked, but didn't hear a response. He stared at him, and saw Tu Qian Hao's body standing erect. Both his eyes were filled with bleakness. And, there wasn't any breath left in him.

The final words at the point of death of the founder of the 'Unruffled Sword'... and one of the twelve influential figures were...

[Very dull!]

A splendid and magnificent hero of this generation had lived a colorful life. In fact, he had run amuck in the Jianghu. So, it was ironical that his final words were 'very dull'!

No one knew what was 'dull'? And, why was it dull?

He had perhaps come to a new realization in his final moments. However, no one would ever know about it...

Gu Du Xing heaved a deep sigh. Then, he gently pulled out his sword.

The Black Dragon Sword looked like deep and clear water as it separated from Tu Qian Hao's chest. Gu Du Xing retreated two steps. Then, he looked at Tu Qian Hao with rapt attention, and sincerely bowed while holding the sword with both of his hands. He then earnestly said, "Brother Tu, you can pass on with a relieved heart now. The Unruffled Sword will certainly blossom in the Jianghu!"

Tu Qian Hao's body hadn't fallen down. It still stood upright; the beard on his face was rustling and trembling in the air. The hollow of his eyes contained limitless pride. However, there was also a feeling of self-ridicule in them along with traces of loneliness and desolation.

It seemed as if he was ridiculing the irony of his life. After all, it had been truly ridiculous and very helpless. He also seemed to be mocking the millions of people in the world for being so dull as well as unbearably stupid and disgusting.

His hands naturally dangled down. However, he still held a sword. The sword-light was still flickering and flashing erratically.

He was dead... He was just a corpse. However, he was still standing straight in a way that made it seem as if a lone heroic man had blocked a mountain pass in a such a way that even ten-thousand people wouldn't be able to pass through. He still had a cold and elegant demeanor.

Blood was dripping drop by drop from Gu Du Xing's Black Dragon Sword. It seemed as if the blood was reluctant to part with the sword, but was still sliding down along its tip. It was dripping on to the dirt below. And, the splashes were making the dust fly off in curls.

"This is Jianghu..." Gu Du Xing exhaled a long breath. He had held in this breath for a long time. And, he had finally let it out. However, he felt a sense of loss at this moment.

"There are so many clashes between right and wrong in the Jianghu. And, there are so many things that should happen or shouldn't happen. So, who can calmly claim to be innocent when it comes to life and death?"

Gu Du Xing heaved a sigh. Then, he moved back a dozen or more steps, and stood with his hands crossed behind his back. He seriously looked at Tu Qian Hao who had already lost his entire aura. Gu Du Xing had an extremely complex expression in his eyes

as he gently said, "Brother Tu, the road to the underworld is very long. So, please take good care of yourself along the way."

"Young Clan Lord!" the twenty experts of the Tu Clan screamed in grief. They hurriedly rushed over. However, they immediately found out that there was no breath left in Tu Qian Hao... that he had died!

They couldn't help but scream wildly as a result. They turned around like whirlwinds, and firmly looked at Gu Du Xing. Then, they said in grief and indignation, "You Gu's Clan's man... you dared to kill our Young Clan Lord?"

Gu Du Xing indifferently looked... An old man with a full beard had overheard the entire conversation. And, he had tears in his eyes as a result. However, he was angrily looking at Gu Du Xing. So, Gu Du Xing couldn't help but coldly reply in a sharp tone, "Why? Hadn't Brother Tu explained all of this to you people beforehand?"

[Tu Qian Hao had already planned everything. In fact, he had even planned his certain death clearly. Then, why hadn't he explained everything to these people?]

Gu Du Xing couldn't believe it!

...

Chapter 645: Already Unruffled by the Time I Want to Look Back!

There was hesitation on a few people's faces as these words came out of Gu Du Xing's mouth. And, that's because they obviously remembered what Tu Qian Hao had said.

Then, an intense light flickered in that full-bearded old man's eyes, and he yelled, "I'll kill Young Lord's murderer, and take revenge for him... even if he had confessed everything to us. Young Lord's death mustn't be in vain!"

Five or six men clamored at the same time as soon as he shouted, "Yes, Young Lord's death mustn't be in vain! Young Lord is dead now. So, how will we show our faces to our clan If we don't kill this murderer — Gu Du Xing? It would be better if we dropped dead while fighting you here!"

The atmosphere immediately turned tense because of the clamor of these few men.

Gu Du Xing heaved a long sigh. Then, he put his hand behind his back, and pulled out the sword with a clanging sound. He then said with a sigh, "Brother Tu, your spirit mustn't be too far away. Look... I'm going to eliminate these wicked slaves for you!"

There was still the same emptiness and loneliness in Gu Du Xing's eyes. But, there was a ridiculing feeling as well, and it seemed to have become more intense...

Gu Du Xing knew, [Tu Qian Hao has shared his last-moment realization with me. So, he certainly didn't want me to die. Moreover, he must've made some other plan as well.]

[I don't know what his plan is. But, it must have something to do with me. And, it is certain that I was in no way his enemy.]

[Therefore, these people clearly have a hidden agenda of their own. Tu Qian Hao definitely wouldn't have allowed them to act as

they wished if he were alive. In fact, Tu Qian Hao's strong personality would've driven him to kill all of them for going against his will.]

[Tu Qian Hao is dead now. But, I – Gu Du Xing – am still here!]

[Tu Qian Hao, I – Gu Du Xing – approved you as my friend in your final moments.]

[We had always been hostile towards each other. But, that doesn't prevent me from recognizing myself as your friend. I knew your habits. I knew your disposition. And, I know what you would've done in this situation if you were here.]

[So, I'll do it on your behalf.]

Gu Du Xing stood upright like a javelin. He then muttered, "Brother Tu, I finally saw the bleakness in your eyes. I also saw your loneliness. And, I'll now use my Lonely Swordplay by merging it with your Unruffled Swordplay. Then, you and I will kill these degenerates together, alright?!"

His voice hadn't even fallen when the sound of a sharp blade slashing through the air resounded from behind him. Consequently, a trace of anger floated on Gu Du Xing's icy-cold face. Then, his straight body moved forward while floating. And, his sword silently flew out from under his arm with a whooshing sound.

The sword was silent. But, it was as quick as lightning!

This sword was extremely lonely and quiet... just like Gu Du Xing's own demeanor... In fact, it seemed as if it was aloof above everyone, and was overlooking the world.

It was the Lonely Swordplay that Gu Du Xing had recently comprehended.

The sword attacked, [the world is lonely!]

It was the outstanding and supreme skill of a Sword Emperor!

Gu Du Xing then said in a low voice, "Tu Qian Hao, did you see? This is the Lonely Sword!"

The sword went into the chest of a King Level Expert behind him with a 'puff' sound. That King Level Expert's body swayed for a while. Then, it collapsed to the ground.

Gu Du Xing hadn't even turned back, but his sword had stabbed into that King Level Expert's heart. It had consigned a living human's life into nothingness with just one touch!

The sound of wind arose again. And, Gu Du Xing's upright body suddenly flipped over as light as a feather. He then recited, "A sword sails across the sky towards the peak!"

Then, he quickly turned around. There was an ethereal loneliness on his face as he slashed out with his melancholic sword. Then, he insipidly said, "Life or death... victory or defeat – everything disappears at a head's turn!"

He rushed forward, and his blue robe fluttered in the air. He then asked with an intense sense of bleak loneliness, "The faraway places where close friends are appreciated?"

Then, he turned around while pulling out dozens of afterimages. His longsword changed into a curtain of light in a flash, and he faintly said, "I'm already unruffled by the time I want to look back!"

Clang!

Gu Du Xing put his sword back in the sheath. He then solemnly said, "Brother Tu, this is my Lonely Sword. In fact, the last move was the combination of my Lonely Sword and your Unruffled Sword... half of each. I hope you liked it!"

Four thumping sounds were transmitted in a row. And, four King Level Experts fell on the ground behind Gu Du Xing... one after another. Two of them had slash marks on their throats, while the other two had them on their chests.

Everyone had been left dazzled because they hadn't gotten enough time to set into action. Gu Du Xing had seemed like a quick and agile lone man performing a silent and lonesome sword dance. The desolate mood still hadn't disappeared. However, the five King Level Experts who had attacked him had already turned into corpses!

And, Gu Du Xing hadn't gotten a single bloodstain on his blue clothes!

[A sword sails across the sky towards the peak.]

[Life or death... victory or defeat – everything disappears at a head's turn.]

[The faraway places where close friends are appreciated?]

[I'm already unruffled by the time I want to look back!]

Gu Du Xing heaved a long sigh of relief. He had been puzzled since he had been facing difficulties in his sword way for nearly ten days. But, he had finally gotten a thorough understanding today. This made him feel that the vital energy was beginning to stir up within his body. Apparently, it was slowly becoming sharper and sharper.

Gu Du Xing had a feeling; [Apparently, the fundamental power in my body is showing the tendency of slowly changing into sword energy.]

[Moreover, the vitality in my body has been continuously increasing as a result of the constant high-pressure practice these days. And, this is giving me a vague feeling of restlessness when coupled with my recent realizations and breakthrough.]

This had given Gu Du Xing a clear feeling, [My cultivation level has already been pushed forward to the peak of first grade Sword Emperor. And, it is slowly moving towards the second grade of Emperor Level.]

[Moreover, there isn't any bottleneck!]

[I only need to wait for the right time. Then, I'll be a second grade Sword Emperor! This feeling has no basis, but it exists nonetheless.]

Two fourth grade Emperor Level Experts of the Tu Clan were just about to rush over. However, Gu Du Xing's Sword Emperor Level imposing aura suddenly climbed up to the peak, and abruptly burst out.

An invisible storm of wind blades suddenly spread in all directions!

The sword energy behind this storm was like the emperor of this generation... someone who would rule the entire world.

The emperor of the swords mustn't be disrespected! The Supreme of the swords must be inviolable!

The swords those two fourth grade Emperor Experts held suddenly issued a loud and clear sword cry, "Clang!" It seemed as if they were diligently trying their best to break free from the control of those Emperor Experts in order to go and pay respect to their own Emperor.

These splendid fourth grade Emperor Level Experts were almost unable to control their swords; they were barely able to stop their swords from flying away. The two Emperor Experts couldn't help but become overwhelmed with shock. In fact, they turned so pale that it seemed as if they wanted to flee away in any direction they would see first. They were in an indefinite state of panic!

Gu Du Xing slowly turned around with his hands behind his back.

There was a strange expression in his eyes. He had expressions of recollection, nostalgia, contemplation, and melancholy. But, a careful examination would still make it seem as if there was nothing in his eyes.

Just emptiness!

The people opposite to him made eye contact with him. And, their bodies suddenly shivered!

Gu Du Xing's imposing aura appeared completely changed at this moment. That sharp and dominating aura that he had exhibited before had completely transformed. And, it had changed into half lonely and half unruffled!

Half lonely and half unruffled!

His straight figure was currently giving off a feeling as if he was standing alone on the summit of the entire world... as if he had forgotten everything! He had forgotten the myriads of living things in the world, and was just standing alone!

[The Unruffled Lone Traveler!]

That's right... Gu Du Xing had suddenly had a realization when the sword energy was crazily surging within his body — Tu Qian Hao's 'Unruffled Sword' also touched upon the notion of forgetting!

Gu Du Xing had blended two different core techniques when he had said the last sentence — 'I'm already unruffled by the time I want to look back' while brandishing his sword.

This had led to the rebellion of the vital energy within his body. And, this had caused it to change into sword energy.

He had fully comprehended this at such a critical time.

Gu Du Xing slowly turned around. The expression in his eyes was like electricity, while his gaze was like a sword. He looked at the two fourth grade Emperor Level Experts as he stood there in silence...

He was only at the peak of first grade Sword Emperor. But, the invisible imposing aura that he was sending out at the moment was suppressing thirteen King Level Experts and two fourth grade Emperor Level Experts... all at once!

Both the Emperor Experts had a cultivation three grades above his own. But, they couldn't help but cower in front of his thunder-like vision.

Their complexions changed. And, they couldn't help but involuntarily retreat step by step.

Gu Du Xing's hands were crossed behind his back at the moment. But, both the Emperor Experts still felt as if they were facing a dangerous situation. So, they withdrew five steps; cold sweat was already seeping out from their foreheads.

They only felt their entire bodies turning cold!

Both of them clearly felt, [Our fate is no longer in our hands! It entirely depends on the whim of this Sword Emperor who stands in front of us.]

[We'll live if he wants us to live. However, we'll be consigned to eternal damnation if he wants us dead!]

Gu Du Xing looked at them with a cold and desolate expression. Then, he indifferently said, "What did Tu Qian Hao confess to you before I arrived here?"

It seemed from his voice as if the Gods were questioning. This question must be answered!

It mustn't be shown any resistance.

Both the Emperor Experts felt as if a heavy mountain was pressed on their heads.

Moreover, that mountain was a mountain of swords!

The expression in the eyes of that bearded old man among them tightened, but he stubbornly kept his mouth shut. However, another King Level Expert in the crowd said, "Young Master had once told us that... he wanted us to return to the clan and inform the Clan Lord that.... Tu Clan must seal itself off if he died by your sword today. And, it mustn't come out until... until..."

"Until what?" Gu Du Xing fiercely looked at him.

"Shut up!" that bearded old man finally shouted out after much struggle. He loudly bellowed, "Gu Du Xing, I'll be taking your life!" A sword light flashed and broke through the blockade of Gu Du Xing's imposing aura. It then crazily rushed towards Gu Du Xing like a tiger!

A bright light flashed in Gu Du Xing's eyes. And, he exposed an astonished look in them at first. However, he then coldly snorted, "Get lost!"

The sword seemed to fly out freely. It was the essence of his Lonely and Unruffled Sword! He only needed to unleash its power now, and everyone would be deterred at one fell swoop.

The sword-light gracefully and lithely flashed... In fact, it flashed high in the sky like a lightning! The bearded old man just shouted a word, "Come~~"

He suddenly shut his mouth, and exposed a terrified and hopeless expression on his face. His head rolled down from his neck the next moment, and fell on the ground with tumbling sounds. It then went rolling out.

It happened to roll up to Tu Qian Hao's feet, and then finally stopped. It seemed as if he had done something wrong, and was now admitting his mistake while postulating himself before his Young Lord.

The other Emperor was just about to set into action. But, his summoned courage deflated when he saw this scene... It seemed as if a big hole had been pricked in a balloon; his courage had disappeared without a trace. So, he withdrew two steps instead of stepping forward.

"Go on!" Gu Du Xing casually said, "Until what?"

"Young Lord said... until... until the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword changes the power structure in the Nine Heavens. Then..."

then... come out in the Jianghu again!" that King Level expert lowered his head after he was finished speaking; his brows were beaded with sweat.

Gu Du Xing let out a sigh. He couldn't help but raise his head. A long time passed. Then, he silently said, "You people may leave. I hope you'll bring Tu Qian Hao's words to the upper brass of your... Tu Clan!"

"Yes..." That King Level Expert seemed as if he wanted to say something. But, he restrained himself, and lowered his head without speaking anything further.

"What do you want to say?" Gu Du Xing lightly asked.

"I want to say..." That King level Expert suddenly summoned his courage. Then, he loudly said, "We aren't a match for you today. And, you and our heroic Young Lord admired each other. But, Young Lord has died by your hands at the end of the day. So, our Tu Clan will never forget this enmity and hatred. There will certainly come a day when we'll look for you, and ask you to repay the debt of this blood!"

Gu Du Xing was startled by this. But then, he suddenly burst into happy laughter. Then, he said with gratification, "The Tu Clan truly has some courageous men!"

....

Chapter 646: Sister Xiao Miao, I Came Back!

Gu Du Xing suddenly leapt up, and let out a long and loud cry, "Tu Qian Hao, I hope you're listening from the afterlife. I – Gu Du Xing – vow to you that I'll ensure that your sword way becomes famous in the Nine Heavens! Farewell!"

"The people of Tu Clan... I'll be waiting for you to come and seek revenge for Tu Qian Hao."

The sword-light flashed with a loud thunderclap. And, Gu Du Xing's body burst into the mountain pass like a meteor. Then, it flashed once more, and he vanished without a trace.

The only remaining Fourth Grade Emperor Expert suddenly let out a miserable scream behind him. Then, his body instantly fell apart, and blood splattered out from it. There was a look of extreme disbelief on his face as he slowly collapsed.

"Gu Du Xing!" a King Level Expert yelled out in an angry voice, "You were leaving anyway... Then, why did you..."

He hadn't even finished what he wanted to say when another person covered his mouth, "Are you stupid? Gu Du Xing just saved our lives! Do you think that this elder would've been kind-enough to take us back to report to the clan after Gu Du Xing left?"

"Why?" That man was puzzled.

"The two elders had said that they would kill Gu Du Xing no matter what when they had been setting out. And, the two of them had firmly opposed our Young Lord when he had explained us everything. They had even instigated us to attack Gu Du Xing a moment ago..."

The person next to him heavily said, "The Young Lord is no more. So, would these two have been willing to go back to the clan and report honestly? You know... Young Master Tian has given them a lot of purple crystals in secret. I've seen it with my own

eyes."

"You mean to say that they had secretly collaborated with the Tian Clan?" another person asked in astonishment.

"I don't know... But, this needs to be reported to the Clan Lord. We shouldn't be afraid of death. After all, not a single one of us would've gone back alive if we had fought Gu Du Xing. But, we must pass on the final words of Young Lord. What is the worst that can happen...? The clan will decide to take revenge on Gu Du Xing? Big deal! We'll just come back to stake our lives once again if that happens!"

"Right! Let's first carry Young Lord back home."

The remaining thirteen people discussed among themselves, and collected the seven corpses. Then, they made a stretcher, and carefully placed Tu Qian Hao's upright corpse of on it. They then lifted it up, and darted away.

A long time passed. Then, Gu Du Xing's figure flashed, and he appeared at this place again. He then raised his eyes to look at the figures of the people departing into the distance. He muttered, "Tu Qian Hao... Tu Qian Hao... what a pity..."

He then turned around, and moved forward step by step. He passed through the mountain pass while looking at the verdant and lush scenery spread into the distance. He suddenly felt his chest heating up, and a pretty figure appeared in his mind. He instantly had a strong urge, and his blood started to boil...

This urge even dispelled the melancholy that had been brought about by Tu Qian Hao's death!

[Sister Xiao Miao! I came back!]

[Hadn't I told you that I'll become an Emperor Level Expert, and lead the Gu Clan to glory?!]

[I had also said that I'll save you after I become an Emperor Expert... Then, I'll marry you, and make you my wife!]

Gu Du Xing let out a long and loud shout as he hurried forward. He only felt that his heart was getting hotter and hotter... until it had turned scalding hot. His heart had soon become so hot that it seemed like it would burn through his skin, and dig out.

He even had the urge to take off his shirt, and then crazily rush back home like a gust of wind.

He kept running at an increasingly fast speed, and eventually turned into a hurricane grazing through the ground. He was constantly issuing loud shouts from his mouth while going as fast as lightning. It seemed as if he was chasing the wind. In fact, he dashed the entire route to the Gu Clan in this manner!

[Sister Xiao Miao, I came back!]

...

Inside Gu Clan Residence... in the garden... Lotus pond

The lotus pond was full of lotuses. Those lotuses were in full bloom, and were full of fragrance... It seemed as if they were welcoming the autumn breeze. These lotuses flower were an abnormal breed of lotus. People would say that lotuses bloomed in June. However, the lotuses here were blooming in this cold wind of September.

In the center of the pavilion...

There was a girl with a graceful figure. Her beautiful and thick hair looked luxuriant like the clouds. She was sitting leisurely on a stool, and was holding a needle and thread in her hand. She seemed to be doing embroidery.

The pond was in front of her; next to the pavilion. There were two Autumn Wind White Jade Lotuses in that pond. These lotuses were in full bloom, and looked splendid. The lotus leaves seemed like boats as they floated on the water surface. Also, the petals were very thin and exquisite... like snowflakes.

There was a brocade-scarf in the girl's hand; it hadn't been fully

embroidered at this time. However, it already had these two tender, beautiful, and exquisite-looking lotus flowers embroidered on it.

"My little brother and I had found these two Autumn Wind White Jade Lotuses when we had gone out to play together that year. Little Brother had noticed that I was very fond of them. So, he had secretly plucked them up, and transplanted them here. Then, the entirety of the pond here had unexpectedly gotten filled with these Autumn Wind White Jade Lotuses in the blink of an eye...

"There used to be only these two back then. They are twins... They are like a couple..." the girl muttered until here. Then, her indescribably beautiful face turned red through and through. She had apparently ended up speaking the secret of her heart out loud. Consequently, she became bashful for a moment as she couldn't bear it.

"Miao Ling," a calm voice sounded. Then, an old man in an embroidered robe slowly walked into the pavilion.

"Father..." This woman was none other than Gu Du Xing's beloved... the woman he yearned for day and night — Gu Miao Ling. And, the person who had just come-in was her father... as well as the Clan Lord of Gu Clan — Gu Yun Lan.

"You're doing embroidery again? Alas! You had started doing embroidery when these twin lotus flowers had just started to swell into buds. They are now in full bloom. But, you're still doing embroidery... you still aren't done?" Gu Yun Lan looked at her daughter, and all sorts of feelings welled up in his heart. His daughter had been disobedient and mischievous since childhood. She would often steal elixirs from the clan to assist Gu Du Xing with his practice. So, one could well imagine how she must've been as a child...

Gu Yun Lan could've never thought at that time that his daughter

would one day quietly sit and do embroidery.

Gu Miao Ling's personality had undergone a big change after she was released from the Dragon Prison Cave. She had started to pay particular attention to a lot of stuff... whether it was the mannerisms of a lady, having an elegant demeanor, the conduct of a wife and a mother, or mothering skills...

She had unexpectedly started to study all of this with diligence.

And, this had left Gu Yun Lan amazed for a long time.

It was just that Gu Miao Ling knew one thing in her heart; [I'll be Little Brother's wife... Therefore, I want to be the best wife in the world! I want his brothers to be envious of him!]

[I may not be the most attractive among his brothers' wives. But, I must do my best!]

"Father, look at this lotus. Isn't it very pretty?" Gu Miao Ling smiled gently as she said, "I had made a braid on Little Brother's head when he was small. Then, I had tied up two flowers to it. Doesn't this lotus look like that?"

Gu Yun Lan was stunned. But, he twirled his beard, and nodded, "Yes!"

The fact was that he was bewildered in his heart; [You went as far as to braid Du Xing's hair when he was a kid? How did I not know?]

"Little Brother has been gone for a long time. I wonder how he's doing now..." Gu Miao Ling looked at the lotus flower, and seemed entranced. A long time passed. Then, she turned her head, and looked at her father. She only felt her heartstrings being plucked. Her heart ached as she said, "Father, your hair is turning white so fast. I remember that your hair was jet-black when I saw you around this time of the season last year."

Gu Yun Lan chuckled, "My daughter has reached a marriageable age. So, how can the father not be old?" He said in his heart, [My hair... has been white for a long time now. My hair had turned

white the day the corpses of your two good-for-nothing elder brothers were brought back...]

"Miao Ling, wait for the time when Gu Du Xing returns. I'll fulfill my duty... I'll get you two married. And then... I'll transfer the family authority to Du Xing, and comfortably enjoy my remaining years in retirement. I'll spend my days leisurely and care-freely. What do you say?"

Gu Miao Ling's rosy cheeks blushed hard. She then lowered her head slightly, and angrily said, "Father, why are you asking me if you've already planned?"

Gu Yun Lan smiled mischievously, and teased her, "It can't be helped. After all, I can't overlook my daughter practicing hard every day to be a good wife and loving mother, can I?"

Gu Miao Ling instantly became bashful, and pouted playfully.

"Miao Ling, you won't hold any grudges against your father for keeping you imprisoned for several years, right?" Gu Yun Lan hesitated for a while before he was finally able to ask.

"Of course... there are no grudges!" Gu Miao Ling lowered her head, and replied. She then said in her heart, [I don't hold any grudges against you. Instead, I'm somewhat thankful. I don't know when that stupid goose would've noticed my feelings for him if not for those years...]

Both the Father and the Daughter were speechless. Then, they faintly heard a long and loud shout from a distant place. This shout had come-in like a blast. It had swept past a distance of dozens of miles before falling into their ears. And, it was getting closer and closer...

The Father and the Daughter stood up at the same time. Gu Yun Lan wrinkled his brows, and thought, [Why does this voice sound so familiar?]

However, Gu Miao Ling's body had started to shake. In fact, she

was finding it difficult to stand still. Then, the brocade-scarf in her hand fell to the ground with a thud sound, and she muttered, "It's him! Little Brother has returned!"

She suddenly burst into tears!

This shout was getting closer and closer... It seemed as if this person was running very fast. It seemed as if he had been dozens of miles away one moment, and had already reached the clan's entrance the next moment!

Someone slammed the gate, and came-in with a bang sound.

Then, the guard's yell was heard from afar, "Young Lord, you're back!"

The guard's voice was full of excitement.

Gu Du Xing gave a smile to the guard. Then, he disappeared like a gust of wind.

The Father and Daughter saw a thunderbolt-like sword-light flash in midair as they stood in the garden. However, this sword-light disappeared the next instant. They then looked in the direction in which it had disappeared. It was hastily and impatiently rushing in the direction of the Dragon Prison Cave.

An excited shout was heard the very next moment, "Sister Xiao Miao!~~"

Gu Miao Ling's heart filled with happiness. And, her entire face turned red.

"This silly boy... He thinks that his Sister Xiao Miao is still imprisoned in the Dragon Prison Cave." Gu Yun Lan snorted. Then, he said in an annoyed manner, "This rascal! He hasn't come back in such a long time. But, he didn't come to greet me first now that he's finally back... He went straight for the one his heart is set on... his dear Sister Xiao Miao..."

Gu Miao Ling looked very bashful. She angrily said, "Dad! What

are you saying?"

Gu Yun Lan smiled mischievously, and rubbed his beard. But then, he suddenly became startled, "How could that sword-light be so fast? A King can't possibly have such fast speed... Even I don't have such speed... And, I'm a Seventh Grade Martial King..."

Gu Miao Ling said in a consoling manner, "Father, I think that it has nothing to do with high cultivation. And, don't fret... You've only crossed 50 this year. So, the cultivation of Seventh Grade King Level can also be considered as a great achievement..."

Gu Yun Lan's face turned black, "Are you complimenting me? Or, are you mocking me? Gu Du Xing is 20 years old, but he has already broken through to the King Level. But, I'm over 50 now. And, Seventh Grade King Level is great achievement for me?!"

Gu Yun Lan's impression of Gu Du Xing was still stuck at the rumor which said that he had just broken through to King Level... And, that's because they had only received news of him when their troops had returned from the Northern Wilderness.

Gu Miao Ling's eyebrows curled. She couldn't help but smile.

A person's figure flashed, and Gu Du Xing came over while dashing with a 'whoosh' sound. Then, he called out in a pleasantly surprised manner, "Sister Xiao Miao, I've come back! Sister Xiao Miao... did you come out?"

[That was a bit stupid. You're standing here... So, is there a need to proclaim that you're back?]

[And, I'm in front of you... So, can't you see that I've come out?]

Chapter 647: Where Am I Fat?

Gu Miao Ling pursed her lips, and looked at this youngster who had suddenly appeared. She was unable to control the glistening teardrops that were twinkling in her eyes. She felt her throat choking, and was unable to say anything. So, she just lowered her head, and softly groaned.

"Ahem, ahem, ahem..." Gu Yun Lan felt somewhat unhappy. So, he coughed several times. Then, he thought in his heart, [I — such a big and living person — is standing here. Can't you see?]

"Khaff... khaff... Foster Father... you're also here?" Gu Du Xing moved his eyes away from Gu Miao Ling. Then, he rubbed his hands together, and smiled awkwardly.

"What do you mean 'I'm also here'?" Gu Yun Lan angrily said, "This is my home. Where else would I be if not here?"

"Ahem, ahem... I meant... shouldn't you be in the study room at this time?" Gu Du Xing hastily gave an explanation.

"Huh? What's the matter? Is this Old Man interfering in your matter?" Gu Yun Lan rolled his eyes, "Gu Du Xing, what do you mean?"

Gu Du Xing was flabbergasted by this, "No..."

"What 'No'?! " Gu Yun Lan angrily said, "You unfilial child! You disobedient brat! Shameless little rascal, you didn't even pay respects to me after you came back. You only shouted 'Sister Xiao Miao'..."

Gu Yun Lan snorted. This old man's anger had become as high as a mountain, "Is it that this Old Man is no longer your foster father? He's only your father-in-law now, huh? How can you be so dissolute? You ran into my house, and went straight for my daughter. Then, your first sentence after you saw me was — 'you're also here'?"

Gu Du Xing's face turned red; through and through. He admittedly felt guilty.

Gu Miao Ling's cheeks turned red like a tomato as she blushed. She then jostled her father who had been talking unreasonably in her opinion, "Father... you go out first..."

Gu Yun Lan became dumbfounded. However, he unconsciously nodded, "Fine... I'm leaving..." But then, he suddenly came to a realization, and shouted in a blaming tone, "Daughter, you're also driving me away?"

The faces of the two young people turned black.

"Fine... I'm leaving. It seems that I'm in the way. I'm of no importance here..." Gu Yun Lan was furious on the outside. But, he was happy on the inside as he was walked out. He thought in his heart, [I wouldn't have been here in the first place if it hadn't been so long since I had last seen my daughter. I just wanted to see how my daughter was doing... Humph.]

He arrived at the exit of the pavilion. Then, he casually asked, "Du Xing, what cultivation level are you at now? Have you become a second grade King Level Expert or not?"

However, he thought in his heart, [It's almost impossible to reach that level so quickly. He had broken through to the first grade of King Level last year... His speed is already very quick. So, I shouldn't be too demanding...]

Gu Du Xing respectfully replied, "I've luckily fulfilled my mission. I'm now at the peak of the first grade of Sword Emperor Level! I'll break through to the second grade soon."

Gu Yun Lan nodded since he believed that he had over-anticipated. He then twirled his beard with his fingers, "The peak of first grade Sword Emperor is not bad. Put more efforts, and you'll soon break into the second grade of King Level. And, I hope that you'll rush to the Emperor Level in ten years..."

He stepped outward while saying this. He was walking very calmly.

However, he had taken only three steps when his entire body suddenly shivered at first. Then, his body stiffened. He was at a loss of words. He suddenly turned around, "What did you just say? First grade Sword Emperor? At the peak...?"

Gu Du Xing scratched his head. He felt somewhat puzzled as he replied, "Yes."

He thought in his heart, [Foster Father is very funny. I'm a first grade Sword Emperor. But, he wants me to try harder so that I can break into the second grade of King Level... Won't I have to work in the backwards direction for that?]

"First grade Sword Emperor... the peak..." Gu Yun Lan hissed. The hand he was stroking his beard with... was shaking. So, he clutched his beard, and his face contorted as a result. He then absentmindedly turned his head, and walked outward while staggering.

He suddenly yelled, "Sword Emperor?!" It must be mentioned that he was completely sober. But, he still felt as if he was in a daze. He then leant to one side, and fell into the lotus pond with a 'plop' sound. The pond's water splattered everywhere as a result.

[Am I dreaming...?]

[Did he truly say that he's a Sword Emperor...?]

Gu Du Xing and Gu Miao Ling were startled by this. They hastily acted in confusion, and pulled the old man out of the pond. Gu Yun Lan's body seemed like a drenched chicken. He shivered as he asked, "Are you... truly a Sword Emperor? You mean the Sword Emperor from the so-called Emperor Level?"

"Yes," Gu Du Xing earnestly nodded.

"Sword Emperor..." Gu Yun Lan pushed away Gu Du Xing's hand. He was in a daze... In fact, he was out of his wits! He walked out

while swaying the entire way. Simultaneously, he kept repeating, "Sword Emperor... Sword Emperor... Sword Emperor..."

Gu Miao Ling anxiously looked at her father as he walked away. She didn't speak for a long while.

Gu Du Xing wanted to talk to her. But, he instead scratched his head for a long time. He was foolishly smiling. He didn't know what to say...

Finally, Gu Miao Ling asked in a whisper, "Have you truly become a Sword Emperor?"

"Do you think I'm lying?" Gu Du Xing foolishly giggled, and said, "I can deceive anyone. But, I can never deceive Sister Xiao Miao."

"You look hilarious!" Gu Miao Ling couldn't help but pucker her lips and smile as she looked at Gu Du Xing's foolish appearance.

An earthshaking yell was heard from a distance at this moment, "Sword Emperor!!!" The pitiful Clan Lord of Gu Clan had finally come back to his senses.

"Father finally sobered up..." Gu Miao Ling moved her fluid glance around, and happily laughed.

However, she then awkwardly became silent.

The two had met after a very long time of separation. So, they had thought that they would have thousands of things to tell each other. However, they found their mind to be blank at this moment when they were finally facing each other. They couldn't utter even a word; let alone a lengthy speech.

Gu Du Xing scratched his head anxiously. He fidgeted with the tip of his toe, and made a circle on the ground. He then raised his head. He opened his mouth, and then closed it. Then, he again scratched his head...

Gu Miao Ling held the brocade that she had been embroidering earlier. She lowered her head. She seemed to be embroidering, but

she hadn't done a single stitch for a long time. Her heart was hopping like a little deer... Thump, thump, thump...

"Khaff, khaff... Ahem, ahem... Ahem, ahem..." Gu Du Xing repeatedly coughed. He wanted to find a topic to talk about. But, he couldn't think of anything. So, he repeatedly coughed for the lack of a better choice.

Gu Miao Ling lowered her head. Her heart was jumping like a deer. She bit her lip, and thought; [I wonder what would be the first thing to come out of this silly guy's mouth...]

"Ahem ahem..." Gu Du Xing finally thought of a topic, "... Sister Xiao Miao, do you feel cold?"

Gu Miao Ling was startled. She raised her head, and looked at the mid-autumn sunshine. [It seems very hot these days, right?]

"No, I don't feel cold," Gu Miao Ling lowered her head, and replied.

"Ahem... then... do you feel hot?" Gu Du Xing was chiseling away at the task at hand.

"Not hot either."

"Ahem Ahem..." Gu Du Xing started to cough again. He was truly hoping at this moment, [I wish Chu Yang's eloquence could come into my body... Ji Mo's or Luo Ke Di's would also do! This is bad. Even Tan Tan can easily open up a conversation despite his eccentric personality.]

He racked his brain for a long while. Then, he finally thought of a topic. He then blissfully said, "Sister Xiao Miao, I see that you've become a little fatter than before. He-he...!"

"What?" Gu Miao Ling's face turned black. "A little fatter...?"

'Fat' was generally the most taboo word for women. So, how could Gu Miao Ling be an exception?

"All right!" Gu Du Xing rejoiced in his heart. [I've finally opened

the deadlock.] He nodded with infinite confidence, and said, "Yes... Yes... It seems that your waist has also become a little thick..."

Gu Miao Ling's pretty face instantly got covered with dark clouds. Also, a storm seemed to have gathered at the tip of her brows and the outer corners of her eyes. Her loud breaths became heavy and hoarse. She then firmly pinched the brocade cloth with her slender lily-white hands. And, the joints of her fingers turned pale as a result. It seemed as if the embroidering cloth was Gu Du Xing, and it was being tortured maliciously by Gu Miao Ling...

[You deserve death...]

Gu Du Xing had realized that it was looking worse. So, he hastily recovered by giving her a smile. He had suddenly become very cautious. He then said with an insipid smile, "In fact, you're not fat... you're just healthy. Right... That's right... You're healthy... He-he..."

Gu Miao Ling stamped her feet on the ground, and stood up. She then maliciously looked at him; it seemed as if her face was sinking in water. Then, she started to walk outward whilst stamping her feet.

She was exerting her strength while stamping her feet. Even the water in the lotus pond rippled because of the shocks.

Gu Du Xing was at a loss. He blinked his eyes in confusion. [How did I offend her? Why did she become so angry all of a sudden?]

"Sister Xiao Miao..." he then cautiously said.

"Don't talk to me!" Gu Miao Ling restrained her anger as she replied.

"Sister Xiao Miao..." Gu Du Xing innocently asked, "What happened?"

Gu Miao Ling weakly closed her eyes, and stopped walking; her chest was repeatedly moving up and down. Then, she suddenly turned back, and coldly looked at Gu Du Xing. She forcibly drew

out a faint line of smile from the corner of her mouth, "Little Brother, am I fat? Am I truly fat? Where am I fat?"

A deadly radiance was glowing in Gu Miao Ling's eyes!

Gu Miao Ling appeared to be elegant and supple as she stood there. She seemed to be graceful... Her stature seemed tall. Her front and back were bulged out. Her little waist could be gripped in one arm. Her figure looked extremely graceful; so much so that even the biggest nitpicker among the brothers – Chu Yang – might not have been able to find the least bit of flaw in her if he were here.

Gu Du Xing stared at her. He smelled a lingering fragrance in the wind. And, he felt dreamy for a moment as a result. He was carried away by her bewitching glance. In fact, he was fascinated. However, he also thought that Sister Xiao Miao had asked this question seriously. So, he glanced at her from top to bottom. Then, he honestly and seriously answered, "It seems to be a little fat... here..."

He had a dull look in his eyes as he gestured at Gu Miao Ling's plump chest...

"Here too... seems a little fat..." He gestured at his Sister Xiao Miao's bulged up buttocks.

Gu Du Xing fell in the pond with a plop...

And, the water splashed, and scattered everywhere.

On the shore of the pond... Gu Miao Ling retracted the leg with which she had kicked a moment ago. Her face had turned red. She gnashed her teeth in anger, "Bastard~~~"

Gu Du Xing was in an extremely difficult situation. He stuck out his head from the lotus pond, and wiped the water droplets from his face. He then said with grief and indignation, "Why would you do this? Why would you do this?"

Gu Miao Ling coldly snorted at first. Then, she started to walk

outwards step by step.

Gu Du Xing jumped out of the water with a thunderous sound. He was drenched as he followed behind her. He thought in his heart, [No wonder Sister Xiao Miao got angry... Her big buttocks look very attractive now that I'm looking from behind ...]

"Why are you following me?" Gu Miao Ling's pent-up anger hadn't disappeared yet. [This damned guy... He dared to call me fat...]

Gu Du Xing had gotten soaked in cold water. So, his brain had started to function well again. He hastily said, "You're my wife. Who else would I follow if not you?"

"Who... who's your wife?" Gu Miao Ling's face turned red, and her body seemed to have become weak. She weakly resisted, "I... I haven't agreed to it yet!"

Gu Du Xing didn't say anything further. The two silently walked on the road. One of them was walking ahead, while the other was behind. They soon reached Gu Miao Ling's lady chamber. Gu Miao Ling finally stopped her footsteps, "You've just come back. There are so many matters in the clan that you have to deal with. So, why are you following me? Besides, your body is soaking wet. But, you still haven't changed your clothes."

She felt somewhat sorry for him after she said this.

"Where are they soaking wet? Aren't they dry and clean?" Gu Du Xing said. He was a Sword Emperor now. So, he could easily dry his clothes using his martial power.

Gu Miao Ling silently turned her head. She couldn't help but pout and smile as she saw that his clothes were indeed dry and clean. She then said, "Quickly go... Father must be waiting for you."

"No. I want to speak with you first." Deep affection flashed in Gu Du Xing's eyes. "Sister Xiao Miao, you don't know how much I've

missed you in all these years..."

....

Chapter 648: This Kind of Happiness Doesn't Come Easy!

Gu Miao Ling's eyes were dim. And, tears were almost coming out of them.

It was unknown when these two had silently held hands.

They both had a vague and strange relationship of little brother and elder sister. Gu Miao Ling had always treated Gu Du Xing as her little brother in the past. She had always showed meticulous care and concern towards him. And, she hadn't held back in sacrificing herself for him even until later. However, Gu Du Xing had been unknowingly ignorant towards her sacrifices in the past. He hadn't had the least bit of idea that he was a perfect husband in his Sister Xiao Miao's mind.

Gu Du Xing hadn't gotten enough time to respond to her feelings, but Gu Miao Ling had still stolen an elixir to assist him with his martial arts practice. However, the clan had gotten very enraged due to this... They had locked up Gu Miao Ling in the Dragon Prison Cave. And, she had endured myriads of pains and hardships there...

It had already been too late to regret when Gu Du Xing finally became aware of Gu Miao Ling's deep affection towards him... In fact, he didn't even have the permission to meet her at that time...

Afterwards, the clan had settled a marriage for him. So, he had abandoned his clan since he hadn't had a better option. And, that was when he had run into Chu Yang!

After that, he had gone through lots of twists and turns, and had eventually returned to the Middle Three Heavens. Then, he had finally advanced his strength by leaps and bounds, and in-turn gained the recognition of the clan. This had then enabled him to visit Gu Miao Ling.

They had seen each other in the front of the Dragon Prison Cave, and had realized that they both were in love with each other. It was their first meeting after having realized each other's feelings.

She had become thin and pale in that world of ice and snow inside the prison... The ice-cold metal bars had gotten in their way during their meeting back then... They had been separated for more than a year since then.

However, these two had exchanged love vows at that time!

However, these two lovers had been able to hold hands only today. Moreover, they didn't have any worries at this time; this was happening for the first time in their lives.

All sorts of feelings welled up in their hearts as they passed through this section of road while holding each other's hands. Gu Miao Ling recalled that her legs had been broken at that time. And, she had been thrown into the Dragon Prison Cave even before her injuries could heal!

Her experience had been worse than death during those years in the Dragon Prison Cave. In fact, she would've committed suicide out of depression if she hadn't been concerned about Gu Du Xing.

Her whole body had become stiff in the Dragon Prison Cave... In fact, it was a place which could even freeze the will of people. However, her heart had remained warm. And, this warmth was intended for her little brother Gu Du Xing. [The heavens have shown mercy... We're finally meeting each other today!]

Gu Miao Ling's eyes became fuzzy as she thought about it. [The heavens have luckily shown mercy. I've finally got what I wished for. I'm finally walking shoulder to shoulder with my little brother under this sunlight...]

Gu Du Xing was also thinking about those few years as he walked. He was thinking how insensible, how stupid, and how dense he had been... [Sister Xiao Miao had always shown her affection

towards me without holding back. But, I only noticed that once Sister Xiao Miao had been imprisoned because of me...]

[And, I've felt as if a knife was twisting in my heart every day and night for so many years ever since. I would dream of her late in the night... I would even hear her calling me, "Little Brother~~"]

[I'd laugh happily in my dream. But, I'd feel as if my liver and guts had been cut into pieces when I'd wake up...]

Both of them had never pledged undying love earlier. In fact, they didn't even know that they had feelings for each other at that time. However, the years of separation due to Gu Miao Ling's imprisonment in the Dragon Prison Cave had made them eternally faithful towards each other... And, this stood true regardless of life and death.

Gu Du Xing had been the glimmer of hope for Gu Miao Ling during her sufferings... Gu Miao Ling had already been secretly in love with him. But, the intense longing she had felt during all those years in imprisonment had made her feelings stronger than any metal!

Gu Du Xing had lived in regret during those years. He had been feeling guilty and deeply distressed in his heart. And, this had made his feelings towards Gu Miao Ling so deep that he didn't want to look at another girl in his entire life.

They hadn't shared any romantic moments before the day they had vowed undying love. However... their feelings towards each other had still reached an extent where they couldn't be shaken even by thunder!

Or, it could be said that... their heartbreaking reunion in the Dragon Cave Prison had enhanced their relationship to a whole new level! It had made this couple eternally faithful towards each other.

But... how many lovers are there in this day-and-age who can

withstand such kind of torment for their love?

It hadn't been easy for these two to be here like this. It hadn't been easy at all! Perhaps, all the lovers of the world would be overwhelmed with emotions if this love story was spread. And then, they would feel blessed. They would feel gratified!

....

The two slowly entered the lady-chamber hand-in-hand. They felt as if their feet were as light as feathers... as if they were walking on clouds. Their minds were in disarray... as if they were in a dream...

This kind of happiness was hard-won...

"Sister Xiao Miao..." Gu Du Xing's voice was shaking.

"Hmm..." Gu Miao Ling lowered her head, and gently replied. She was feeling her heart beating more and more wildly.

"I've missed you so much." Gu Du Xing muttered. The voice of this steel-faced swordsman was shaking at the moment. Even his eyes had suddenly become moist. He was feeling sour, sweet, bitter, and spicy-hot... all at once.

He was clearly very happy. But, he still couldn't help his desire to cry.

He also felt a kind of pain in his heart. His heart was beating loudly for the fear that all of this was just a dream. It was because this was too beautiful... It seemed too good to be true!

"Me... too..." Gu Miao Ling gently said, "I'd been thinking for the past few years... my little brother is out there in the world. What if he is being bullied... or being treated unjustly? Nobody is there to take his side... Does he miss me or not...?"

Gu Miao Ling was speaking as if she was sleep-talking. She fondly looked at Gu Du Xing. Then, she muttered, "Little Brother, you've lost a lot of weight..."

Gu Du Xing felt his heart burning with passion... He couldn't hold it back anymore. A muffled groan came out from his throat. Then, he finally took a step forward. He hesitatingly extended his trembling hand to embrace this tender girl in front of him.

He felt that Gu Miao Ling's body was trembling a little. However, she didn't resist him. Instead, she gently and agreeably snuggled up into his arms. Gu Du Xing tightened his grip little by little after this hesitant embrace... until there wasn't any gap between their bodies...

Suddenly, a feeling of infinite satisfaction emerged in their hearts.

Gu Miao Ling issued a gentle sound. She was apparently choking with emotions. Her body had been stiff a while ago. But, it was completely relaxed now. She had surrendered herself to the man standing before her...

It had nothing to do with lust. It was only the whole-hearted devotion of a woman...

Gu Du Xing felt warm in his heart. And, this warmth suddenly welled up in his body. He extended his head without thinking about anything, and his lips kissed Gu Miao Ling's delicate earlobe. Gu Miao Ling issued a delicate sound, and her entire body became weak. She then felt that an overbearing and big mouth had already covered her soft lips...

Gu Miao Ling felt an explosion in her head... as if a galaxy had suddenly exploded therein. Then, everything happened so swiftly that she couldn't understand anything...

She found herself in bed by the time she regained her consciousness. She was in her little brother's arms. His muscular and strong body had tightly pressed her. And, the heat was penetrating into her flesh, and was making her flustered...

A pair of big and mischievous hands had already reached into her

front-piece. Then, she looked at her own body... She didn't know when she had become half-naked...

"Little brother... Don't... Don't do this..." Gu Miao Ling weakly struggled to resist.

Gu Du Xing leaned over her body. He then muttered, "Sister Xiao Miao... I love you very much..."

The present Gu Du Xing was no longer the stern swordsman of the Jianghu. Not the least bit of his ultimate demeanor of a Sword Emperor could be seen at this moment... He was only the man who deeply loved the woman in front of him.

He could loosen himself up to this extent... But, only in front of her!

He was completely relaxed and full of warmth amidst this urge of sensuality. He was in deep love... He looked like a passionate young boy who was eager to make love to his sweetheart. Moreover, he also looked like a dissolute little brother being cheeky in front of his elder sister.

Such complex affection... such complex love... such an uncontrolled deep-attachment... and such a complicated relationship between an elder sister and her little brother was truly indescribable!

However, both of them felt that they most-strongly relied upon each other in this mortal world.

She resisted the numbness and limpness of her body as well as her emotions with great difficulty. She pushed away Gu Du Xing's head from her chest with great effort. Then, she said while gasping for breath, "Hold on... wait a minute... tell me... about your experience of these past years..."

"Experience of these past years...?" Gu Du Xing's mind became sober and calm. He then said, "What experiences?"

"I want to know how my little brother kept holding-on without

his Sister Xiao Miao at his side for all these years."

Gu Miao Ling looked at him with affection, and gently combed his hair with her slender lily-white hands. Then, she said with infinite love, "We're people who practice martial arts... So, I obviously know that the journey from a Martial Great Master to a Revered Sword Artist; then Revered Sword Artist to a Sword King; and then from a Sword King to your present cultivation of peak of first grade Sword Emperor... must have been difficult!

"Even a god-gifted and outstanding martial artist might not be able to achieve this in his lifetime. But, you took only two years to reach to this point?!" Gu Miao Ling spoke till here. Then, she suddenly felt like crying. She was choking with emotions, "How did you achieve it? How much pain have you been through..."

She became increasingly sad as she thought about this. Tears started to stream down her face, "You staked your life... for your Sister Xiao Miao? You little fool..."

"No... I only worked a little harder than an ordinary person," Gu Du Xing recalled his experience of these last few years. And, all sorts of feelings welled up in his heart, "I have a few brothers. All of us have promoted our strength very quickly... because we've decided that all of us will be together. All of us will become legends of the Nine Heavens. None of us dared to be even a little lazy. We practiced martial arts in this way. We would finish our training together during the day. Then, we would again practice during the evening. Then, we would lie down in the bed, and secretly practice again... This wasn't painstaking by any means. In fact, it was joyful."

"Brothers..." Gu Miao Xing thoughtfully asked. "Are you talking about the one who gave me the fire essence?"

"Yes. That's my big brother!" Gu Du Xing got excited while speaking of Chu Yang. He said, "Ninety percent of the credit for the quick promotion of my strength goes to Big Brother! The same

goes for the rest of my brothers."

A color of gratitude flashed in Gu Miao Ling's exquisite pupils. She then said, "Little Brother, you mustn't let down your brother if that's the case. God knows for how long I would've suffered... in that Dragon Prison Cave... if it weren't for him..."

"Yes." Gu Du Xing felt a slight heartache as he tightly hugged Gu Miao Ling in his arms. Then, he started to tell her about his experience of these past two years. It was obviously beyond Gu Miao Ling's expectations. What Gu Du Xing told her wasn't at all giving an intense vibe of helplessness and despair like she had imagined. Instead, it was full of joy.

She felt as if she herself had met these men as Gu Du Xing kept-on telling her about them.

The one who was calm, wise, farsighted, and multitalented was Chu Yang... The one who was steady, imposing, and as majestic as a mountain was Dong Wu Shang... The one who was jocular, humorous, and lazy was Ji Mo... The one who would act mindlessly, but was kind-hearted deep down was Luo Ke Di. The one who was usually shifty-eyed, was as lithe as a swallow, and had the spirit of loyalty and self-sacrifice was Rui Bu Tong... And, the one with a super-eccentric and super-narcissistic personality was Tan Tan...

The living images of these men kept popping-up before Gu Miao Ling's eyes as Gu Du Xing told her about them one by one.

....

Chapter 649: Gu Clan's Jubilation

"I truly envy you... But, I finally feel relieved as well... And, that's because you have such good brothers." Gu Miao Ling gently said, "I'll thank them when I get to meet them. I'll thank them for taking care of my little brother when I hadn't been around..."

"Little brother..." Gu Du Xing was somewhat unaccepting. So, he climbed over, and moved close to her face. He then said, "Sister Xiao Miao, did you not hear Foster Father's words? He has already approved our relationship... So, I'll be your husband in the future... I'll also be the head of the clan. So, how can you still call me 'Little Brother'? Call me something else, okay?"

"Call you something else...?" Gu Miao Ling held his hand. She then asked with a faint smile, "What should I call you then?"

"About this... you can call me 'my husband and master'... No, no... It won't do. This title reminds me of that coyote — Luo Ke Di..." Gu Du Xing scratched his head, "Or, you can call me Lord Husband..."

However, he thought about it, and felt this title to be somewhat disgusting. He then said, "Or, you can call me... Let it be... You can call me by my name – Du Xing. What do you think?"

"That's not intimate enough," Gu Miao Ling fiddled her long hair with her fingers as she discarded this suggestion.

"Then, you tell me. What do you want to call me?" Gu Du Xing hopefully asked.

"I remember that I used to call you 'Lonely Puppy' when you were little," Gu Miao Ling focused her gaze on Gu Du Xing. Then, she narrowed her eyes, "Well... how about I start using that name again?"

"Anything but that..." Cold sweat started to seep out from Gu Du Xing's head. [I'd never be able to look up in my life... if this

nickname reached my brothers' ears by any chance.] He finally gave up while being disappointed, "You can call me Little Brother..."

But then, he thought for a while, and again opposed, "Or, it would be better if you call me 'Small Brother'. After all, calling me Little Brother isn't good."

It was Gu Miao Ling's turn to be surprised. She opened her round eyes wide, "Why isn't it good?"

"Ahem ahem..." Gu Du Xing coughed twice. He then moved close to Gu Miao Ling's ears, and whispered a few words.

Smack!

Gu Du Xing's buttocks were kicked out of the bed... Gu Miao Ling's face had turned crimson. She stared at him in a devilish manner, "Good, Gu Du Xing... You've been away for a few years. And, you've learned to assail a woman with obscenities?! Very good... Come, come... Confess how many girls you've harassed like this?"

"I haven't!" Gu Du Xing touched his buttocks since they had become sore due to the fall. Then, he cried out as he was being wrongly accused.

"You just did!" Gu Miao Ling opened her almond-like eyes wide as she unreasonably and persistently accused him.

Sweat was seeping out of Gu Du Xing's forehead since he felt anxious at the moment. He humbly begged and swore to her. A long while passed. Then, he finally got her to forgive him. He then wiped his sweat, and intimately climbed up into the bed...

The fact was that this one-track-minded man didn't know that Gu Miao Ling wasn't truly offended... It was just that she had been bantering flirtatiously. However, Gu Du Xing had become tensed. And, his heart had thumped wildly for a while...

He felt as if he was young again, and Sister Xiao Miao had

clutched his ears... as if she was fiercely asking, [Lonely Puppy! Where were you a while ago? Tell me the truth. Otherwise, I'll spank your dog ass...]

He couldn't help but feel a painful nerve reflex in his butt...

Gu Du Xing needed time to get over it... even after years and years of acquiring strength...

Gu Miao Ling saw him being extremely honest and taking her joke as if it were a big deal... So, she didn't have the heart to bully him any further. Instead, she snuggled into his bosom, and happily closed her eyes while cherishing the feeling.

The two talked endlessly without getting to any point. It seemed that their talks would never be over. Gu Du Xing had flipped the switch of non-stop talking. In fact, the sum of all the conversations that Gu Du Xing had had with Chu Yang and the other brothers up until now wouldn't be equal to even half of how much Gu Du Xing was speaking today...

Gu Miao Ling kept listening to him with a smile. She would slip in a few words into the conversation from time to time to express her own opinions. She was indicating, [You keep speaking... I love listening to what you say...]

A long while passed...

Gu Du Xing was still endlessly talking about something. But then, Gu Miao Ling stopped him in a gentle way. She then said in a soft voice, "Little Brother... quickly go to the anteroom. Father and the others must be waiting for you... Be obedient... Do as you're told."

Gu Du Xing was reluctant to leave her... He lifted his head from on top of her body, and then looked at her with his crystal-like bright eyes. He then said while hating to leave her, "Sister Xiao Miao, would you wait for me here then?"

"Why do you want me to wait?" Gu Miao Ling pointed her finger to his forehead. Then, she said while biting her lip, "Lonely

Puppy... You little scoundrel...!"

Gu Du Xing foolishly smirked, and then suddenly jumped up. But then, Gu Miao Ling urgently shouted from behind, "Put on your clothes! Put on your clothes, you little idiot!"

Gu Du Xing tidied himself up in a hurry. Gu Miao Ling heaved a sigh. She then covered up her front piece, and got down from the bed. Then, she stood in front of him, and carefully tidied his clothes. Tender emotions of love were overflowing from her eyes...

"Go." Gu Miao Ling withdrew a few steps, and looked at him... She felt satisfied with his appearance. So, she finally released her man.

Gu Du Xing was continuously and foolishly smiling... He was infinitely satisfied.

He then went out the door... Cold wind was blowing, and this made him feel refreshed. He felt the wind passing through his armpits. He was fluttering in the wind... He was happy to be alive!

This was the happiest day of his life! Nothing could surpass the happiness of this day!

He charged towards the hall where the official matters were discussed, but he was continuously skipping about on the way. He was in high-spirits while being oblivious to the flabbergasted visions of the bodyguards around. He was so elated that it seemed as if he had gone crazy. The eyes of the innumerable bodyguards almost fell to the ground behind him. They couldn't believe their own eyes. [Holy fu*k! What am I seeing? This... Is this our stern and cold-faced Young Clan Lord who doesn't let strangers come near him? He looks more innocent and pure than a seven-or-eight year old child...]

He arrived in the hall, and saw that the seats in the hall were neatly and tidily occupied with people; all of them were waiting for him. However, everyone had strange expressions... They all were

looking at him in a manner that made it seem as if they would swallow him whole...

His foster father — Gu Yun Lan's expression was even stranger. His expression made Gu Du Xing and the others jump in fright. In fact, it made their hair stand on end. It gave off a bizarre feeling... as if someone had stolen... and yet not stolen Gu Yun Lan's treasure... Moreover, it was a treasure that he had preserved for more than twenty years... Such a feeling!

There was even some feeling of great bitterness and deep hatred! There also seemed to be a kind of unreasonable yet understandable anger and jealousy...

"Ahem ahem..." Gu Du Xing was somewhat embarrassed, "Foster Father, why are you looking at me like that? Your expression looks weird..."

He almost jumped in fright due to the way he spoke just now, [Why is my throat so hoarse?]

"What happened to your throat?" Gu Yun Lan asked in an interrogative manner, "Why is it hoarse? It wasn't hoarse just a while ago, right?" He pointed his finger to the sky. "It still wasn't morning when you had come back. And, the sun has already set in the west now. You haven't stopped your mouth for these many hours, right?"

The more he looked at this guy, the more unpleasant this guy seemed to his eyes. [The daughter that I've raised for more than twenty years is soon going to be devoured by this guy. It is such a pity... Alas, alas...]

Everyone burst into laughter. Then, an elder among them stroked his beard, and jokingly said, "Clan Lord, please appease your anger. I believe Young Lord has been speaking a lot today... In fact, I think he hasn't spoken this much in his entire life. So, his throat is hoarse... This is excusable."

Gu Du Xing was rendered completely speechless...

"Enough... let's talk decently." The Great Elder stood up to mediate. He then looked at Gu Du Xing with a lustrous expression in his eyes. "Young Clan Lord, are you truly a first grade Sword Emperor now?"

Gu Du Xing nodded. However, speaking was useless in this situation... It all depended on facts and actions. So, he spread his shoulders, and the imposing aura of a Sword Emperor surged forth like tides!

It was incomparably sharp. It was enormous, mighty, and abundant!

The swords around the waists of the people in the hall suddenly issued a loud sword-cry... no matter who it was. It seemed as if a crowd of swords was prostrating itself in allegiance to their emperor!

[The Emperor of Swords!]

[It's the indisputable aura of an Emperor!]

The Great Elder was startled. But then, his eyes suddenly emitted an ecstatic expression... as if he had gone crazy!

Everyone behind him exclaimed loudly in shock.

Everyone was excited beyond description. It seemed to them as if they were looking at a living deity as they looked at Gu Du Xing. There was finally an Emperor Level Expert in the Gu Clan!

No Sword Emperor had appeared in the Middle Three Heavens... for around a thousand years!

Many people's eyes were brimming with tears of joy and excitement. They had an urge to prostrate themselves to their ancestors, [Ancestors... Our Gu Clan finally has a support! We finally got someone to depend on!]

[Our Gu Clan will be able to stand tall from now on!]

Many of them couldn't help but wipe their eyes with their sleeves in secrecy as they thought about the hardships that they had faced over the many years. Everyone was smiling... However, glistening teardrops could also be faintly seen in their eyes.

Clan Lord Gu Yun Lan had always been calm. But, even his eyes were moist from the corners. He was continuously making great efforts to control his emotions from welling out. But, his body was still gently shivering...

There was now an Emperor Level Expert in the clan. This had been an extravagant wish of the Gu Clan since they had been unstable for so many years now. There hadn't been an Emperor Level Expert to keep watch over the clan... There had been no strong backing of the clan. This meant that they would always have to handle every matter very carefully for the fear they might offend this... and offend that... After all, not being careful could've brought-about total destruction of the clan.

The people of the Gu Clan had been behaving themselves for these past years... They had been tucking their tails between their legs. And, they had been so aggrieved because of this that they had been going insane. Gu Miao Ling – the daughter of Clan Lord – had stolen only one elixir. But, it had still incited a thunderous fury of the entire clan. They hadn't shown any tolerance towards the matter... They had mercilessly locked her up in the Dragon Prison Cave!

The reason for all this had just been these words – 'Emperor level Expert'!

The juniors of the clan hadn't had the talent and capability to regenerate or influence the clan's roots when they would grow up. And, the clan hadn't had an expert to oversee it. Therefore, they might have been doomed if they had offended some influential personality.

And, Gu Miao Ling had willfully hindered the promotion of an

Emperor Level Expert. So, how could they not have been angry?

However, Gu Du Xing had fulfilled their illusory wish now. Moreover, he had achieved far beyond everyone's expectations!

There were many Emperor Level Experts in the Middle Three Heavens. Every clan — apart from Gu Clan — had Emperor Level Experts even if the said-clan's strength was only comparable to theirs. So, it could be said that Emperor level Experts were absolutely rare in the Gu Clan, but not in the Middle Three Heavens at-large.

However, what about a Sword Emperor?

There weren't many Sword Emperor in the Middle Three Heavens; let alone a pure Sword Emperor who could give off such an imperial and imposing aura.

Only one had appeared in a millennium – Gu Du Xing!

He was absolutely unique!

Therefore, the Gu Clan had naturally seethed with excitement as soon as Gu Du Xing had unleashed his imposing aura. It could be reckoned that the present atmosphere in the Gu Clan must be a hundred times livelier than the celebration of New Year!

This atmosphere of jubilation had made the people forget the mistake that Gu Miao Ling had once committed. After all, it simply wasn't worth mentioning anymore. Some people had even been dissatisfied with Gu Yun Lan for letting Gu Miao Ling out sometime ago. But, even these people were grinning from ear to ear at this moment.

Gu Clan had been in a predicament for many years. And, this had already strengthened the unity of the entire clan. Therefore, everyone always worked hard for the sake of the clan.

...

Chapter 650: So Passionate and Sincerely Devoted!

Someone had once said that Gu Clan's strongest point was their unity... That's because the Gu Clan would've perhaps ceased to exist long ago if it wasn't so...

Therefore, the strength of such a united clan was bound to erupt once it had a strong leader. This point was something that no one would argue against.

A fist alone can at most smash-open a pit in a vast desert spanning tens of thousands of miles. However, even enemies as vast as a desert would only be like loose-sand once several fists are clenched together!

This was the strength of the Gu Clan!

A King Expert laughed as he jokingly said, "It seems like all of us should thank our Young Miss. After all, our Young Clan Lord wouldn't have had the motivation to go all out if she hadn't been imprisoned in the Dragon Prison Cave. He has jumped from Martial Great Master to Sword Emperor... He's the only one in the history of Nine Heavens who has pulled off something like this."

Everyone couldn't help but laugh when they heard this remark.

However, Gu Du Xing's complexion slowly turned cold when he heard this sentence... It gradually turned as cold as ice. The most unacceptable thing for him was Gu Miao Ling's time in the Dragon Prison Cave.

He couldn't even accept a joke on this matter.

Gu Du Xing's gaze looked cold as he slowly said, "I don't want anyone to mention this matter again. Also, Dragon Prison Cave must be destroyed! Whoever dares to mention it again mustn't blame me – Gu Du Xing – for being disrespectful."

A chilling sword-energy suddenly filled the entire hall along with a whizzing sound as soon as Gu Du Xing got angry. That King Expert who had spoken the sentence trembled in his heart, and his complexion became deathly pale.

Gu Du Xing knew that this King Expert was only joking, and had no evil intentions. So, he took a deep breath, and suppressed the wrath in his heart. Then, he insipidly said, "Actually... I would've done anything for her... I would've gone begging if I had to. I just didn't want Sister Xiao Miao to suffer for all those years... In fact, I – Gu Du Xing – won't hesitate to destroy my cultivation... if I can erase all those painful experiences from Sister Xiao Miao's life at the cost of my Sword Emperor cultivation."

He gently looked around. Then, he sincerely bowed, and said, "So... I don't want to hear this again. I hope everyone will respect my decision."

Gu Du Xing had said these words in an extremely impolite manner. However, everyone still felt a profound respect for him.

There had been countless heroes through the ages. But, who had been willing to make such a sacrifice for their woman? In fact, very few would even bother to mention it as lip service. After all, the status of women in the Nine Heavens was very low.

However, everyone was convinced that Gu Du Xing would do it without any hesitation whatsoever when they heard him say this.

He had broken through to the Sword Emperor Level within two years for Gu Miao Ling. So, he could very well cripple himself for her in a flash!

...as long as Gu Miao Ling would require it!

Everyone knew how much pain and sacrifices Gu Du Xing must've endured to break through to the Sword Emperor Level within two years. That must've felt like suffering the death of a thousand cuts every single day for two years!

Gu Du Xing had still managed to accomplish this feat. He hadn't said it out loud. However, everyone here was an expert... All of them were familiar with that hellish feeling.

Therefore, no one was suspecting that his words weren't sincere!

[This cold-faced boy is ever-ready to set the entire world on fire for the passion in his heart. He won't regret it even if he himself burns in the process!]

[He can do it!]

Gu Yun Lan's eyes lit up. He felt gratified in his heart, [These words of Gu Du Xing are alone enough to show that I haven't entrusted my daughter's lifelong happiness to the wrong person. I can finally rest assured now.]

Therefore, that uneasy feeling in Gu Yun Lan's heart completely vanished.

After all, Gu Miao Ling was his own daughter. Parents get anxious when a daughter grows up, and is about to get married. Moreover, they are reluctant to part with her, and become double minded at that time.

Gu Yun Lan hadn't been able to shake off that sense of worry and unwillingness even if the son-in-law was his own foster son. This was a kind of mentality that was very strange. Moreover, it was extremely contradictory for a father.

[I want my daughter to be happy. I wish for her to start her new life as soon as possible. But, I don't want my daughter to get married...]

However, Gu Yun Lan became overwhelmed with emotion when he heard Gu Du Xing's words. He turned his head about, and secretly wiped the corners of his eyes when no one was paying attention. Then, he silently said, "Dear wife... Our sons are gone, but our daughter can obtain the greatest happiness a woman can get..."

"Moreover, our son-in-law is a strange man who is very affectionate and righteous. He may be our foster son, but he's just like our own son. There's no difference... So, you can rest assured. Wait for me to go back tonight... I'll have a proper chat and a proper drink with you. The netherworld keeps us apart, but I know that you can still hear me...

"I still remember how you had firmly clutched my hand when you were dying. You hadn't been able to utter even a single word. But, I know that you had been worried for us. I know... I hope that you would chide our sons in the afterlife. Don't let them become that sort of hedonistic sons of rich parents like they were while they were alive..."

Gu Yun Lan wiped his eyes. Then, he turned around, and looked at Gu Du Xing with a smile on his face. He felt the joyful atmosphere in the hall, and said in his heart, [My dear wife... how wonderful would it be... if you were by my side at this moment! I wouldn't have any regrets in my life anymore...]

[I remember that you would always be angry and jealous when you were alive... But, you know... I haven't looked at any woman again since you've passed away. I spend my sleepless nights alone. The dream finally comes at midnight when I'm drinking with you in front of your portrait...]

[I miss you so much...]

[I can also achieve the level of devotion that Du Xing has for our Miao Ling! Can you feel it?]

Gu Yun Lan quietly walked out of the hall amidst the jubilant atmosphere, and went away. The loud and happy laughter behind him gradually got farther and farther away... until it couldn't be heard anymore...

Not long after... inside Gu Yun Lan's bedroom...

Gu Yun Lan raised a cup of wine, and stared at the portrait on the

wall. He smiled, and said, "My Beloved Ling, today is a day of great celebration. Everyone is celebrating. But, I came back to celebrate with you... I can't drink without you on this day of celebration. I'll get drunk with you today!"

He stared at the portrait for a long while. Then, he raised his neck, and drained the cup in one gulp.

There was a scent of incense before the portrait; the blue smoke was curling up.

There was also a cup of wine. The wine inside this cup was still... It was like still water.

And, there was also a pair of chopsticks with their ends sticking upright.

There was a middle-aged woman in the portrait... She had a beautiful and gentle face. Her sleeves seemed to be fluttering-about. There was a look of anxiety and unwillingness to let go in her eyes. She seemed to be quietly watching the white-haired man before her. She was apparently consoling, apparently sighing, apparently sobbing... just like a living person.

"Cheers!" Gu Yun Lan's eyes closed-shut, and he drank another cup.

"I can finally unload the burden on my shoulders after today. Thereafter, I'll stay with you.

"You didn't like me working all the time back then. You used to say that I didn't have time to accompany you. However, I'll accompany you every day from now on...

"You didn't like my drinking. But, you would still sit calmly beside me, and fill my cup for me with eyes full of helplessness... every time I drank... I still wish... I could again look at you pouring a cup of wine for me...

"My Beloved Ling, I miss you so much."

Gu Yun Lan muttered. Then, he gulped down another cup of wine while keeping his eyes closed... That's because closing his eyes made him feel as if his loving wife was by his side, and was pouring wine for him... that she was anxiously looking at him with her tender eyes...

He was afraid of opening his eyes... lest that he would only see that lifeless portrait in front.

He also felt as if he could smell a faint but familiar scent...

A long time passed. Then, the wine-pot fell on the ground with a 'slam' sound. Gu Yun Lan then slowly leant over the table, and fell asleep with his eyes closed...

"My Beloved Ling... is everything well over there?" he murmured...

A gust of wind blew-in through the window, and the portrait fluttered. It seemed as if the woman in the portrait was looking at her man. She seemed anxious and worried... It seemed as if she was wishing that she could come out from the portrait, and put some warm clothes on her drunken man...

However, the night wind was cold and desolate...

... ..

The Gu Clan announced to the outside world in the following days — [The current Clan Lord of Gu Clan — Gu Yun Lan has retired behind the scenes. He will now live a simple life in seclusion. Hereafter, he'll never get involved with the clan's affairs!]

[The new Clan Lord is the original Young Clan Lord of the Gu Clan – Gu Du Xing! Henceforth, the Gu Clan will have a transition of power. The new Clan Lord – Gu Du Xing – will have supreme authority in the Gu Clan!]

[It's hereby notified to the entire world.]

[The disturbance caused due to the current turbulence in the Jianghu is dangerous. Therefore, the likeminded people of the Jianghu will be invited to attend the grand ceremony of the new Clan Lord's coronation after this storm subsides].

Meanwhile, there was another news, [The new Clan Lord of the Gu Clan – Gu Du Xing – and the eldest daughter of the previous Clan Lord — Gu Miao Ling have been officially engaged. And, the marriage alliance has been sealed!]

[Similarly... they will formally get married when the storm in the Jianghu subsides!]

It would go something like this if this was said in more fashionable words, [This current Gu Du Xing has made a double harvest of career and love. This may very well be three bumper harvests if this is further coupled with limitless future prospects... And, this wouldn't just be in name, but also in reality!]

... ..

Meanwhile, Chu Yang had finally reached the Mo Clan after a 5000 Km trek across mountains and rivers.

Mo Tian Ji hastily rushed out to welcome when he heard that King of Hell Chu had arrived. He firmly held Chu Yang's hand, and shook it again and again, "You came... You've arrived at the best time. I was worried because there was no one to discuss stuff with me here..."

Chu Yang pulled back his hand, and stared at Mo Tian Ji. He then said with vigilance, "I can discuss with you if it's something nice. However, I'll have to excuse myself from getting involved in advance if it's something bad."

Mo Tian Ji was amazed, [How is this guy so astute?]

Chu Yang was undoubtedly astute. However, Mo Tian Ji didn't know that Chu Yang's reaction today hadn't come from his astuteness... It had come from his experience instead!

These two had been close friends in the previous life. So, Chu Yang was very familiar with Mo Tian Ji's habits.

This familiarity even included the movements of Mo Tian Ji's eyebrows... what it meant when his brows jumped to the upper-left corner... what it meant if they were raised to the upper-right corner... It was like this — [I know you so well that I'll know whether you want to shit or fart by the manner in which you stick out your butt!]

Chu Yang had such a profound understanding of Mo Tian Ji's habits. So, how could he be fooled by his superficial and overfriendly enthusiasm?

Mo Tian Ji's understanding of Chu Yang was only superficial. However, Chu Yang's understanding of Mo Tian Ji stemmed from his cumulative study of two lives.

It could even be said that Chu Yang's understanding of Mo Tian Ji had already reached the point of perfection. Chu Yang could definitely be called a great scholar if this was a subject... In fact, he could be considered an unprecedented one!

For example... Some small habits of Mo Tian Ji were as such — Mo Tian Ji would assume a calm and moderate stance to keep people on tenterhooks if he had a card up his sleeve... to the extent that it would even make those who were best at self-restraint vomit blood and drop dead!

And, this kind of enthusiasm that Mo Tian Ji showed just now... this sort of familiarity at first sight... Chu Yang had already sniffed the smell of a plot from it... [This guy definitely wants to exploit me!]

Therefore, Chu Yang had closed the door shut before Mo Tian Ji could even start to speak!

[You may have a thousand ingenious tricks, dear sir. But, I'll stay motionless like a high and mighty mountain!]

Chapter 651: Scolding You to Vent My Anger!

Mo Tian Ji twice gave a hollow laughter. He then hastily extended his hand to welcome his guest, "Brother Chu, please come in."

"I'll obviously go in since I've arrived at the entrance of your clan... Did you think that I'd keep standing on the street?" King of Hell Chu rolled his eyes. He didn't show the slightest amount of politeness as he strode in. He entered the Mo Clan's courtyard while whimpering.

Mo Tian Ji blinked. He felt very confused at this moment despite his heaven-reaching wisdom. [Has this guy... taken a drug or something today? Or... have I offended him in some way?]

[Why does he seem to argue whenever his mouth opens?]

"Brother Chu... the present situation in the Jianghu..." Mo Tian Ji and Chu Yang sat down on the host's and the guest's seats respectively. Then, Mo Tian Ji started to speak with a smile.

"Tea!" Chu Yang lifted his hand. He then again rolled his eyes, and interrupted him. He put stress in his voice, and said, "The special Tian Ji tea!"

Mo Tian Ji had only said half-a-sentence, but had been interrupted. However, his self-restraint was excellent. He didn't get angry in any way, "Oh, I forgot to offer you tea... It's my fault." He hastily steeped tea.

He put a cup of steaming tea in front of Chu Yang after a short while, "Brother Chu, please." Mo Tian Ji had assumed a low and humble stance. He had no other choice but to lower his attitude since he needed help from Chu Yang.

[I'll make this guy flatter me for a while.]

"There is no... poison in this tea, right?" Chu Yang suspiciously looked at Mo Tian Ji.

The corners of Mo Tian Ji's mouth twitched. Even his excellent self-restraint failed miserably in the face of this verbal attack. His spring-breeze-like smile immediately turned stiff... He gave a dry smile, "No way! He-he... Brother Chu must be joking."

"Oh well, poison doesn't affect me anyway," Chu Yang held the teacup in his hand, and took a sip. Then, he said with a lively smile, "You're right. I was just joking."

Mo Tian Ji became depressed.

[We're not meeting for the first time. So, you don't need to be so cautious of me. I don't understand why you pull a long face every time we meet...]

[This kind of behavior is... senseless.]

Chu Yang sipped the tea. He then narrowed his eyes, and looked at Mo Tian Ji. Then, he thought in his heart, [Oh, you feel wronged? Fu*k you motherfu*ker... I was destroyed by your betrayal in my previous life... Do you love your sister? ... Who the hell are you...? Fu*ker!]

[You both are brothers and sisters for god's sake! You didn't have to go as far as to go after my life...]

[As for me... I'm the one who Qing Wu loves! I'm the man who's going to be with her for the rest of her life!]

[So, I have to teach you a lesson now. Otherwise, I won't be able to get over my grievance of being besieged by you in the last moments of my previous life.]

[You think I'd let you off that easily? I had cried at that time, you know...]

"Brother Chu." Mo Tian Ji gasped for breath... A polite smile was hung up on his face. He was sitting leisurely across from Chu Yang.

He said while confiding in Chu Yang with entire sincerity, "Brother Chu, I don't know why I had felt that you're the kind of person that I can rely on when I had first seen you in the Lower Three Heavens. I had felt that we could be close friends... I became friends with Brother Chu because I admire him wholeheartedly... But..."

"But what?" Chu Yang was clearly playing dumb. However, he was also pretending to be frank and honest. So, he straightforwardly said, "Brother Mo, feel free to share what's on your mind."

Mo Tian Ji swallowed a breath. He hesitated for a while, and then finally said, "But, it seems that Brother Chu is vigilant of me... We had a nice conversation in the Lower Three Heavens. But, I had got a feeling that you were somewhat wary of me. Then, Brother Chu had been even more resentful towards me when we had met at Mt. Dingjun... I feel helpless. I've searched my soul, but I couldn't figure out how I had let Brother Chu down..."

Mo Tian Ji sincerely said, "I request Brother Chu to be generous, and guide me if I've done something wrong. And, I'll right my wrongs!"

He slightly sighed, "After all, we're now in the same boat under the wind and rain... And, it'll naturally lead to destruction if our hearts aren't in-line... We must eliminate the knots in our relation before the war breaks out. Sincerely speaking... I'm opening my heart to you... I'm giving my bare heart into your keeping. I request Brother Chu to not hold any animosity, and tell me frankly."

Mo Tian Ji was an extremely intelligent person. So, he had clearly judged by the few exchanges so far, [Chu Yang has some grievance against me. But, the current phase is very special... We both belong to the leadership class. So, it'll lead to the doom of the several great clans involved if there is any enmity between us.]

Therefore, Mo Tian Ji hadn't started with the formal talks right away. He wanted to resolve this issue first. It didn't matter what was said... Chu Yang had saved Mo Qing Wu, and then gotten rid of Mo Tian Yun with his brilliant scheme. Moreover, he had arranged for Mo Qing Wu to be the apprentice of two Senior Level Experts...

It could be said that Chu Yang had done big favors on the Mo Clan! And, Mo Tian Ji would never forget those favors and violate justice even if he was unhappy in his heart. He would never bite the hand that had fed him. These bonds mattered a lot to Mo Tian Ji. Otherwise, Chu Yang might've been kicked out long ago if he were to put on airs in front of him...

Mo Tian Ji naturally didn't know that Chu Yang was just venting out his anger. Moreover, Chu Yang wouldn't have waited for such a critical time to try to trip Mo Tian Ji even if he had a grudge against him. He only wanted to teach him a lesson... That was all.

Mo Tian Ji naturally didn't know when he had offended this King of Hell Chu. He had apparently offended Chu Yang so much that Chu Yang would try to pull his legs left-and-right every time they'd meet.

Mo Tian Ji believed that he was innocent. So, he couldn't imagine that he had offended Chu Yang... and that too in the most awful manner... as if he had given him a lifetime's worth of offense.

Mo Tian Ji was the 'Master of Calculation and Manipulation'. But, how could he possibly know the load of King of Hell Chu's mind?

"Brother Mo, you're worrying too much..." Chu Yang assumed a frank and open-minded stance. He deeply sighed, "Brother Mo probably knows that my biggest enemy in the Lower Three Heavens was Diwu Qing Rou..."

Mo Tian Ji nodded. However, he thought in his heart, [Why is he suddenly mentioning Diwu Qing Rou?]

"Diwu Qing Rou was a top strategist. He was tranquil and indifferent. He was able to determine the final outcome of a battle from a thousand miles away. I had suffered a great loss at his hands." Chu Yang sighed. Then, he shook his head, "And, Brother Mo's appearance has been like that of a wise man. You've always had a free and easy attitude towards everything. And, you always have a card up your sleeve. So, I can't help but recall Diwu Qing Rou whenever I look at you... He he he... I become like a 'bird startled by the mere twang of a bow'. Brother Mo, don't mind me."

[What kind of reasoning is this?]

Mo Tian Ji didn't know whether to laugh or cry. [You're reminded of Diwu Qing Rou when you look at me? What comparability do I have with Diwu Qing Rou?] However, Mo Tian Ji didn't know that he and Diwu Qing Rou were equal in Chu Yang's mind.

Therefore, he only cursed in the secrecy of his heart. [Going by your reasoning... One would think of the Upper Three Heavens if they were to see a stone here, right? After all, the stones of the Upper Three Heavens and the Middle Three Heavens are all same.]

[This is absurd!]

"Brother Mo, you must be somewhat dissatisfied by this explanation. But, I feel embarrassed in saying this." Chu Yang smiled in a carefree manner, and said, "Drink tea. Drink tea. Please, please."

His mannerisms suddenly switched from that of the guest to that of the host.

"Please Brother Chu, let's talk frankly and openly!" Mo Tian Ji's expression was solemn. "I must admit my mistake if I've made one. In fact, I won't complain even if Brother Chu scolds me."

"You won't complain?" Chu Yang slowly put down the teacup.

"Of course." Mo Tian had a determined look.

"You'll let me scold you?" Chu Yang narrowed his eyes.

"I'm willing to be scolded if I've made a mistake!" Mo Tian Ji seriously said.

"Um... I'll feel embarrassed if I don't scold you now that you've said so. Good... Then, I'll scold you. Um... I say, did your brain fall into water? Huh?" Chu Yang suddenly exploded... He slammed his hand on the table with a bang. He opened his eyes wide, became furious, and thundered without any prior indication, "You tell me, how will you justify what you did! Huh?! Your head may have been clamped between the doors... Your head may have been kicked by a donkey... But , how could you do it? Are you stupid? Are you a retard?!"

Mo Tian Ji became dumbstruck. He hadn't expected that this guy would be so rude. He had only said a few words out of courtesy, and this guy had started to scold him like his heart had been filled with righteous indignation.

This senseless tongue-lashing left Mo Tian Ji gob-smacked. He was left scratching his head. He thought, [Could it be true that I've unintentionally done something that has made this man furious-enough to complain like this?]

A film instantly started to roll in his mind as he recalled everything that he had recently done. However, he couldn't think of anything in particular.

Mo Tian Ji blinked. [Where is this... this scolding coming from?]

However, he didn't know that Chu Yang had been giving him two lifetimes-worth of scolding. Mo Tian Ji hadn't made any mistake in this life. But, Chu Yang was still being rude and was scolding him to vent his anger! Besides, Chu Yang had got Mo Tian Ji's weak-point to pinch.

"Mo Tian Yun wanted to kill you at that time. He wanted to kill Xiao Wu as well. And, you weren't oblivious to this, right? You

knew this, right? Still, you brought along just four King Level Experts? Four King Level Experts are nothing but a fart! Right? You thought you could protect her with just that?

"Then, you were blinded by greed. You threw away your sister, and went on a treasure hunt. Pardon me for being insensitive, but let me ask you this... Was that treasure more important for you than your sister? She's your blood sister... damn it! You're the reason Xiao Wu got injured. She had been depressed up until now because of her injury. She couldn't forget that incident... It gnawed at her mind every day. However, you still haven't realized your mistake? You're still at a loss while I'm scolding you? Is your head filled with shit, huh?!

"Had I not told you to use discretion while talking after you came back? I had told you to brag as much as possible! I had told you to brag with all your strength! Could those old and stubborn farts who 'bully the weak and fear the strong' have dared to do this to Xiao Wu if you had listened to me and bragged in a proper manner?

"You could've turned things upside down. But, you didn't brag. On the contrary, you took away the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber from Xiao Wu, and left her to hold a broken scabbard and cry there every day. Then, you carefreely patted your buttocks, and went to the Cang Lan Battlefield!

"Moreover, you didn't leave any person behind with whom she could talk?! Do you know how cruel this is for a ten-years-old girl? Huh?!

"The most outrageous thing is that you had been gone for a long time since you didn't want to face Mo Tian Yun and wanted to build your team's strength. You didn't come back to see Xiao Wu in a long time... until she finally ran away from her home! It was too much! You keep on saying that Xiao Wu is a piece of your heart and your treasure... Should you have treated your so-called treasure like that? That was simply heartless!"

Mo Tian Ji repeatedly hiccupped. He had a lifeless look in his eyes at the moment. His forehead was sweating profusely because of all the scolding. These words had been bombarded on him like cannon-fire. They had made him so confused and disoriented that he couldn't regain his composure for a while.

[So, King of Hell Chu is angry because of this matter... Now I see.]

[Moreover, I'm indeed at fault for being so inconsiderate in this matter... I had it coming. But... why does it feel on looking at King of Hell Chu that he's using public office to avenge private wrongs?]

"And, take a look at the plan that you had made this time. What kind of a joke was it? You're no Master of Calculation and Manipulation. You're just a dumb-fu*k! You had planned for everything in the Jianghu. But, nothing went according to your plan. What's wrong? Has your brain gone numb? You don't know what to do, huh? Are you at the end of your wits? Are you on the point of death? Are you fu*ked?"

Chu Yang heartily gave vent to his anger, and kept on scolding him. He felt incredibly nimble and refreshed in all 365 acupuncture points, the linked meridians, and his spirit. He raised the teacup, and drained the cup in one gulp. Then, he heavily put it down on the table. He then glared at Mo Tian Ji, and said while scowling fiercely, "Pour more tea! Why are you gawking like that? You're so inattentive that it's aggravating! I can't believe that you're still called the Master of Calculation and Manipulation. Can't you see that my teacup is empty?"

....

Chapter 652: Two Wins Out of Three Matches!

Mo Tian Ji became completely confused and disoriented due to the scolding. Had he ever endured such a tongue-lashing in his lifetime?

He couldn't help but become muddle-headed. He picked up the teapot, and poured the tea in Chu Yang's cup. Then, he blinked as if he had suddenly come to a realization, "Hey, that's wrong... Xiao Wu is my younger sister no matter what is said... And, you're just an outsider. So, why are you poking your nose in our matter? Who the hell are you? What are you fretting over?"

"I just couldn't take it! Isn't that enough? Did you act like an elder brother? You did not! One must work more and talk less," Chu Yang retorted.

"That's my younger sister... What I'd done was for her own good! I've sacrificed my heart and soul for her sake... What do you know about it, huh?" Mo Tian Ji coldly snorted. A faint crafty look flashed in his eyes as he condescendingly said, "In fact, I've already planned my younger sister's lifetime path. Well, what would you know about it anyway?"

"Nonsense! She's indeed your younger sister. But, can you be with her for her entire life...? And, you say that you've planned her lifetime path?" Chu Yang disdainfully said, "Stop exaggerating! Wouldn't she get married?"

"I admit that I can't be with her for her lifetime... But, don't tell me that you want to..." Mo Tian Ji sneered and looked at Chu Yang, "How old is she? And, how old are you? Wouldn't you already be an old fart by the time my younger sister grows up? Don't tell me that you have such a beastly desire for my sister! It'll make me despise you, and look down on you..."

This argument hit a raw nerve of Chu Yang's.

This was the most unbearable matter for King of Hell Chu. After all, it was like an old cow eating young grass. It wasn't pleasant by any means. Chu Yang's face immediately flushed. He jumped up angrily, "Utter rubbish! I've turned eighteen this year. And, your younger sister is eleven. So, there's just seven years of difference in our ages. What's wrong in that? How am I too old?"

"There is 'just' seven years of difference?!" Mo Tian Ji's eyes suddenly became scary. He slammed his palm on the table, and a deafening 'bang' sound echoed, "Great! You've shown your beastly heart! King of Hell Chu, my younger sister is so little. But, you already have your eyes on her... You, you, you're worse than an animal!"

The table trembled with a thunderous noise. Chu Yang was flabbergasted... He felt infinite remorse. [Fu*k! He's blurting out...]

Mo Tian Ji had become furious. This Master of Manipulation and Calculation had always had a calm temperament. He had always had a grip of everything. He would never show emotions on his face; whether he was happy or angry. Therefore, such fury was unprecedented... It had never been seen or heard of before!

Everyone has a raw nerve... And, these points incite their wrath when touched. In fact, they go berserk in rage once that nerve is hit.

It was clear that Mo Tian Ji's raw nerve had been touched, and Mo Qing Wu was the critical point of this raw nerve.

"You bastard! You pervert! You lecher! You extremely filthy man! You know no shame! It's hard to imagine that you – King of Hell Chu – are this kind of man. Fancy that I was ready to give you my absolute confidence... I even wanted to make you a close friend of mine... I hadn't expected that you had such dirty desires towards my eleven-years-old younger sister..."

Mo Tian Ji kept speaking. Then, he suddenly had a realization, "I understand now... I get it... No wonder you were being so cordial in the Lower Three Heavens. You were doing your utmost to help us. It turns out that you had set your filthy eyes on my sister since that time!"

Mo Tian Ji was gasping for breath. He glared at Chu Yang, and bellowed in rage, "King of Hell Chu, you tell me... You have such power and influence... You can get any woman you want. But, you want to harm my younger sister instead?! King of Hell Chu... you, you... she's just eleven years old, damn it! Ah! You! Are you even a human?!"

Mo Tian Ji had become bitter and hateful.

The more Chu Yang listened to him, the angrier he got. Chu Yang's face had turned red through-and-through by this scolding. He couldn't take it anymore... He stood up, "Bastard Mo Tian Ji! You want to keep your sister at home for her entire life just because you have deep brotherly affection towards her? I see now... You have a severe case of sister complex. You're abnormal! You're a psycho!"

Chu Yang lifted his foot, and stamped it on a chair. He then aggressively lifted his finger, and started to rain curses, "Is the difference of seven years so big? What's wrong if I like her? I like her! What's your problem?! Fu*k you! You're just her second brother. Moreover, you're the one who lost her favor by making a blunder. What qualifications do you have to object? You're daring to interfere in your sister's marriage... a matter that concerns her whole life? Her parents will decide this! Who the hell are you?"

"I don't have the qualifications? I don't have the qualifications?!" Mo Tian Ji angrily glared with his round eyes; he was gasping for breath. He started to pace back and forth in his room while panting in anger; he seemed like an irritable donkey trapped in a cage. He suddenly turned around fiercely, "You're an old man who doesn't act like his age! You disgusting King of Hell Chu... Just

wait! I'll make my younger sister accept you as her godfather when she comes back."

He coldly laughed, "I'll see to it pretty soon. I'll report this matter to the clan. I'll make the elders and my parents come forward, and recognize you as the godfather of their daughter. I'll see who Xiao Wu listens to – us or you?"

"Godfather?!" Chu Yang's eyes almost popped out of their sockets. He involuntarily saw Mo Qing Wu in his mind... She was dressed in red from head to toe. She had lifted her little face upwards, and was calling him 'Godfather' in her sweet voice. He imagined this scene, and then shook his head with all his strength. It had sent a shiver down his spine.

[Damn you Mo Tian Ji!]

[This move is too vicious!]

This move had directly hit King of Hell Chu's soft spot... Chu Yang might as well happily commit suicide... if Mo Qing Wu were to become his goddaughter.

"You motherfu*ker! You got me!" Chu Yang yielded. He hung his head down in defeat, "Spit it out. Why did you want to see me so urgently?"

Mo Tian Ji also regained his composure. He then calmly sat down in the chair. However, his demeanor seemed rather mystifying... He seemed to be in complete control of himself. He calmly crossed his one leg on the other like a boss, and then pointed his finger towards the teacup, "Tea! Pour tea!"

A breath got stuck in Minister Chu's throat. He almost fainted.

[This bastard surely has the upper hand at the moment. And, he's surely the same as that man from my previous life who would infuriate a person to death just to get back at them.]

The situation had reversed in an instant. Minister Chu had the upper hand before. But, he had suffered a crushing defeat now. His

weak point had been grabbed, and he had been thrown into a difficult situation as a result.

Chu Yang coldly snorted, and rolled his eyes. He gave up willingly. He feared that this 'siscon' brother-in-law of his might not be bluffing... He might make him Mo Qing Wu's 'godfather'! Therefore, Chu Yang submissively lifted the teapot without having a better option.

"Be quick! Can't you see that the teacup is empty? You're so inattentive!" Mo Tian Ji slammed his hand on the table. A thumping sound echoed. His eyes were blazing with anger. And, he had a sinister look on his face.

Chu Yang gritted his teeth with a clattering sound. However, he was at his wits' end. So, he didn't have any option but to swallow the insult.

"Close the door!" Mo Tian Ji lifted the teacup. He uncrossed his legs, and then blew the tea without lifting his head.

Chu Yang's face had turned black. He waved his hand, and closed the door of the study room with a bang.

"Good. Let's talk about the proper business now." The expression on Mo Tian Ji's face became solemn all of a sudden. He then straightened up his back. It must be said that this guy knew when to stop.

This was beyond Chu Yang's expectation. So, he asked while stammering, "What happened... Won't you discuss further about Xiao Wu's matter?"

"Do you want me to discuss about Xiao Wu's matter?" Mo Tian Ji snorted.

"So, you don't have any objection?" Chu Yang's eyes opened wide.

Mo Tian Ji raised his head, and looked at him in surprise, "What you said just a while ago... was it true?"

Chu Yang flew into a rage. [So, this guy has tricked me again. This guy deliberately used Mo Qing Wu to assault me just a while ago! This bastard forcibly brought the accusation upon me even if I didn't have any such thoughts. Then, he counterattacked me to his heart's content!]

Chu Yang heaved a sigh. [How could I forget that this guy has the ability to change the subject by rambling incoherently? He can then use that to counterattack...]

The situation was very clear now. Mo Tian Ji had been trying to get him mad by giving him scolding. He hadn't even hesitated to make false accusations for this. And, this was also a method to vent his own pent-up anger... That's all!

Chu Yang remained stunned for a long time. Then, he finally let out a breath.

[Damn it! Do you know that the malicious attack that you just spat out has hurt my weakest spot? Godfather... Only you could've come up with something like this.]

However, Chu Yang suddenly rolled his eyes. He then said with a weird smile, "You know what... I think it might work. Let's presume that Xiao Wu acknowledges me as her godfather... But, you're her blood brother... So, tell me Mo Tian Ji... Will you also call me godfather?"

"Puff!" Mo Tian Ji had been drinking tea. He had been calm and composed. However, he choked on the tea, and immediately spurt it out when he heard this. He then continuously coughed for a while. He had fallen into an embarrassing situation. So, his entire face had turned red.

"It will indeed work." Minister Chu had loosened the reins... only to grasp them tighter. "You discuss this with your clan tomorrow."

"Nonsense!" Mo Tian Ji became genuinely angry this time. His eyes turned big like copper bells... They had filled with anger. In

fact, his entire face had turned red. He was panting heavily. "You're three years younger than me... Don't be delusional!"

"You're going back on your word... You've lost my respect!" Chu Yang gave him a middle finger in scorn. However, he heaved a very long sigh of relief in his heart.

[Motherfu*ker, do you think that I value you so much that I'd make you my godson? You're... truly narcissistic if you think that. I'd cut my throat if a fu*ker like you became my godson...]

"Let's be serious now!" Mo Tian Ji finally stopped coughing. However, he had hung up the white flag... He had shown his softer side. He was clearly begging for mercy. After all, he was the one to attack first with this 'godfather' move. He was now being counterattacked with the same, and was unable to parry it.

"Fine." Chu Yang snorted. He put his one leg over that other... He was immensely proud of himself.

The two had fought for three rounds. And, there had been victory and defeat in each battle.

Chu Yang had won the first round. However, Mo Tian Ji hadn't given up completely. He had counterattacked in the second round. Chu Yang had his key point grabbed, and got pushed into a disadvantageous situation... And, it wasn't just in name... It was in reality! Mo Tian Ji had then unreasonably nipped him to some extent. However, he hadn't anticipated that he would fall in his own trap in the next round.

It was because Mo Tian Ji didn't truly believe that a man like King of Hell Chu could have a sexual desire towards a little girl... Mo Tian Ji had said those things only to trap Chu Yang. It was just a way to turn his defeat into victory. However, Minister Chu was well aware that he would lose ...

He truly used to have sensual intentions towards the little girl. However, he had concealed them away a long time ago. He was

now eagerly waiting for the right time...

Minister Chu had seized the opportunity to counterattack in the third round. He had used his opponent's own method to deal with him. He had seized total victory in this way. Mo Tian Ji had finally yielded in the face of superior strength, and retreated.

Minister Chu had secured two victories out of the three rounds. So, he loudly sang the victory song. However, he was constantly sweating in his heart.

This confrontation between the two was just like banter. However, they had also probed each other's mental prowess for the first time. And, the outcome of this probing had been completely satisfying for both men.

That's because both of them had been able to hold the weak nerves of the other almost immediately.

This point was very important.

However, the most important thing was that Minister Chu had vented out much of the grievances of both of his lives in these two rounds of tongue-lashing.

"Brother Chu, the situation is far from good this time!" Mo Tian Ji sighed, "What you had said earlier wasn't wrong... I've added fuel to fire, and caused turmoil in the Jianghu. However, I've been unable to tidy it up.

"My estimation was wrong!" Mo Tian Ji had a look of disappointment and frustration on his face, "I reckoned that Ao Xie Yun would be hunted down. I also reckoned that the allies of Ou Clan would make a move. And, I even reckoned that Ao Clan would set into action. However, I've overlooked one important thing."

He deeply sighed, "I've overlooked that the few young masters of the Ao Clan have wild ambitions. Moreover, they're immature."

...

Chapter 653: Planning Strategies!

Chu Yang sighed, "This is awful!"

Mo Tian Ji sneered, "The fact is that I have overestimated them. That's my calculation mistake!" He disdainfully said, "Even the Ao Clan could've been annihilated this time if I hadn't believed in these rumors. It's lamentable that I've missed such a great opportunity... It's so unfortunate!"

"Oh?" Chu Yang became curious, "Care to elaborate..."

"The Ao Clan has always been the number-one clan of the Middle Three Heavens. And, Ao Xie Yun is the most talented among the descendants of this generation. Therefore, I took it for granted that Ao Xie Yun is the future successor of the Ao Clan... I wasn't wrong about this point. And, Ao Xie Yun is clearly the best choice no matter how one looks at it... I wasn't wrong about this point either."

"Right," Chu Yang puckered up his brows.

"But, I made a mistake... a grave mistake!" Mo Tian Ji remorsefully sighed, "Ao Clan is known to have seven geniuses in this generation. In other words, there are six more geniuses apart from Ao Xie Yun. They are Ao Qing Yun, Ao Meng Yun, Ao Lang Yun, Ao Yu Yun, Ao Feng Yun, and Ao Cheng Yun. These six people aren't that popular. However, Ao Clan recognizes them as geniuses. So, how could they possibly be an ordinary bunch?"

"These six individuals hold the title of 'genius'. Moreover, they hold this title within the number-one clan of the Middle Three Heavens – Ao Clan. Therefore, they should be as capable as Ao Xie Yun... The disparity between them and him shouldn't be that big, right?" Mo Tian Ji said.

"Yes, I would think the same if I were in your shoes," Chu Yang nodded.

Mo Tian Ji stamped his foot in anger, and exclaimed, "This was my mistake! I was gravely mistaken!"

"My original plan was to cause a storm in the Middle Three Heavens, and push the Ou Clan's Alliance to the forefront of the struggle. This would force them to take a risk out of desperation... They would try to intercept and assassinate Ao Xie Yun. However, I knew that they would try to shift the blame of the assassination onto Xie Dan Qiong. Therefore, I sent Xie Dan Qiong to the Ao Clan in advance, and thereby blocked the enemy's escape route.

"Moreover, I reckoned that the Ao Clan would dispatch its troops as long as Ao Xie Yun's fate was uncertain. And, the six geniuses would definitely be the ones leading those troops! This was primarily because of two reasons... First, to take revenge... Secondly, the Ao Clan would need to be prepared in case Ao Xie Yun had truly died. After all, it would become necessary to choose the best, and weed out the worst from among these six individuals in that case. And, that's because they would need to pick out the next heir. This kind of selection follows the survival of the fittest in the Jianghu. And, this is the optimum mode of selection... It constitutes training as well as reading people."

Mo Tian Ji's tone seemed aggravated every time he said the words 'six geniuses'. He would even gnash his teeth in anger while doing so.

"The storm did start as I had planned. Ou Clan and their ally clans were indeed pushed to the forefront of the struggle. And, Ao Xie Yun was hunted down for thousands of miles. And then, the Ao Clan did indeed dispatch their troops. They also sent out those six geniuses as expected... Everything went according to my plan until this point.

"However, things went out of my control after that... Moreover, this frustration is something I can't share with anyone besides you. Otherwise, it would mess up the morale of our troops."

Mo Tian Ji was extremely depressed... He let out a melancholic sigh.

"That's because you – the wise and amazing King of Hell Chu – then employed a stratagem to destroy the Meng Clan... You even joined hands with the Xie Clan, and exterminated the Ou Clan. These two things came as pleasant surprises for me. However, I became somewhat regretful and indignant in addition to being pleasantly surprised. And, that's because you had ruined my plan... and that too an exceptionally big plan!"

Mo Tian Ji insipidly said.

"Ruined your plan?" Chu Yang was puzzled.

"Yes, you shouldn't have destroyed the Meng Clan," Mo Tian Ji sighed and said, "How wonderful would it have been in case the Meng Clan hadn't been destroyed? I had originally planned to wait until the time was ripe... the time when the Ao Clan would move into action! After all, it would be a time of chaos. So, our big clans would fly our flag, and set out to eliminate the root of evil at that time. We would call out to the entire Jianghu to join our noble cause..."

"That's because the Meng Clan would've been the demons if they were still here. And, all those clans associated with them would've been considered as the demon's accomplices! Then, we could've stood at the higher moral ground without any effort. Moreover, we could've command the heroes of the world to fight alongside us... We could've rallied together the masses to attack the evil!"

"Even the Ao Clan would've been left with no choice but to listen to our orders and acknowledge our lead status. After all, our strength would've been strong enough, and we would've advocated ourselves to stand up against the evil!"

"Therefore, I could've used the Meng Clan to catapult our big clans up to the supreme position in one fell swoop... We could've enjoyed a nominal position before the end of this campaign.

However, we would've achieved this position in reality after the end of the battle. That's because we would've been the ones saving the people from evil...

"There aren't any good people in the Middle Three Heavens. However, there must surely be a lot of hot-blooded people who would've rushed over to join this just-cause when this campaign happened. And, such people are usually the most trustworthy... They are the ones that can increase our clans' strength the most. I had even planned on how we'd rope them in... how we'd rally them... how we'd retain them... how we'd... But, all of it got wrecked in the end by your single underhanded move! It destroyed the entire Meng Clan as well as my future plans... Ugh!"

Mo Tian Ji heaved a deep sigh, and ferociously looked at Chu Yang.

"I... Fu*k!" Chu Yang was stunned. [That smug move of mine from had clearly crippled the enemy's power back then. But, who would've thought that it would unexpectedly be more of a hindrance than a help?]

[What is this motherfu*ker yapping about...]

"What I couldn't come to terms with was that... Those enemy clans had voluntarily decided to annihilate the Meng Clan with their own hands... and that too brazenly... in broad daylight. Therefore, there's simply no way for us to justify that these clans are accomplices of the demons as this matter stands. In fact, there's a chance that they would be the standing on the moral high ground, and dealing with us if we aren't careful... You say... Haven't you fu*ked up my big plan?!"

Mo Tian Ji sighed, "This is the first thing that had caught me off guard! That's because I had never anticipated that you would move into action at such a time... And, that too so quickly and so decisively! I hadn't even known anything when you were already done over there."

Chu Yang just lowered his head, and sipped tea. He didn't say anything... It was more like he couldn't...

"The second miscalculation is due to that bunch of bastards from the Ao Clan. They had started to attack the opposing clans immediately after they set out. But, what has baffled me is that... those bastards are delusional. They've engaged in a power struggle after just one strike... How foolish can they be?

"They are fighting amongst themselves for power and profit. But, what was completely unexpected for me was that they would target you guys. However, the reasons seem obvious now. First, they didn't dare to aim for the major clans to gather allies in a direct manner since not every major clan has moved into action to participate in the chaos. Secondly, you and your brothers are almost like straggling and disbanded soldiers. So, it's easy to deal with you guys. Thirdly, you guys have shown potential. So, they want to recruit high-level thugs for a lifetime in order to suppress their own brothers. Fourthly... their real purpose is to use you guys to dispel our plans. In fact, this faintly shows that they have the ambition to unify the Middle Three Heavens..."

Mo Tian Ji let out an incomparably sarcastic laughter, "These brothers are engaged in an internal strife in this time of crisis when there's danger lurking everywhere. Moreover, each of them has pointed their spear at their potential allies... Such people are called the six geniuses of the Ao Clan?!

"I was seriously deceived by this word — 'genius'!"

Mo Tian Ji took a sip of tea, "The situation is like this now... I initially intended to fight for hegemony with two opposing sides. However, it has now become a tripartite confrontation! The Ao Clan alone is a big force on one side. It doesn't attach itself with anyone. Then, there are those clans who have banded together by the Ou Clan on another side. They keep asking for reinforcements everywhere, but are instead very cohesive. And then, there's us on this side... And, we're all flustered as to how to deal with that

bunch of retards from the Ao Clan...

"The most baffling thing is that all six brothers of the Ao Clan want to be the boss even though they have the same goal..."

Mo Tian Ji shook his head, and forced a smile, "This is what I simply hadn't anticipated... their overambitious nature!"

Mo Tian Ji finally concluded the explanation by saying, "This is the current situation... And, it has stemmed from the blunder in my plan."

Chu Yang was already stupefied.

[Mo Tian Ji was able to calculate every aspect to this extent in such a complex situation... His brain must have calculated so many things... Above all, he has come to the conclusion that it was his own mistake after such a long analysis!]

[This is even more impressive!]

[Only an individual who can see his own mistakes is capable of correcting them... And, only such people can reach perfection.]

Mo Tian Ji had been able to calculate to this point. Therefore, Chu Yang believed that Mo Tian Ji must at least have a mental outline... even if he didn't have a comprehensive countermeasure.

"So, what are you planning to do in the face of this situation?" Chu Yang straightforwardly asked.

"I have thought of a countermeasure. But, I'm waiting for the news for now." Mo Tian Ji deeply frowned. His eyes exposed an anxious look. He said, "We don't only have fools on the enemy's side alone, you know... We have... a lot of fools on our side too..."

He sighed, "There's no problem with you. There's no problem on Ji Mo's side too. Therefore, there's no problem with Huyan Clan either. In fact, it can be roped-in without an issue. There's no problem on Gu Du Xing's side. There's no problem with Xie Dan Qiong. These are our established strengths... And, there are no two

ways about it!"

Chu Yang wrinkled his brows. He felt susceptible to what Mo Tian Ji hadn't mentioned, "You mean that there will be issues on the sides of Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di?"

This was exactly what Chu Yang had been most worried about.

Mo Tian Ji took a deep breath, "I hope they don't have any problems. After all, it's going to be a serious issue for us in case there's any problem from their side!"

Chu Yang silently nodded, [Mo Tian Ji is right. Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di's problems — if any — are indeed going to be fatal!]

However, the two of them must deal with that problem on their own. Even Chu Yang couldn't help them now.

"There is one more thing. I've felt all along..." Mo Tian Ji stood up, and slowly paced back and forth. He then said, "The enemy alliance is obviously at a clear disadvantage in terms of strength. But, they are still bearing hardship with equanimity, and biding their time.

"So, I suspect that... they are waiting for someone. They are most likely waiting for reinforcements. And, these reinforcements ought to be so strong that they are resting assured..." Mo Tian Ji frowned and said, "I suspect that these reinforcements will most likely come from the Upper Three Heavens!"

Chu Yang thought for a moment, and said, "There is indeed such a possibility. After all, only such a backhanded strategy can be the reason why they are so calm and collected."

"So, the pressure on us is going to be very big." Mo Tian Ji said in a soft voice, "You've only managed to make friends with the Dark Bamboo. So, we'll need to borrow their power if worse comes to worst. This will guarantee our safety. In fact, we can operate calmly even if problems arise on both Dong and Luo sides."

Chapter 654: Mo Tian Ji's Information Network!

Chu Yang wrinkled his brows... He was somewhat anxious in his heart.

[Will Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di face problems?] There were infinite uncertainties in his heart as he thought of this. He could feel his heart beating wildly at the moment... An ominous premonition had shrouded his heart.

"I've specifically warned Dong Wu Lei and Luo Ke Wu. But..." Mo Tian Ji tightly wrinkled his brows, "...things are very uncertain. After all, power... can make a person go crazy. The most I could do in this situation was to warn them."

Chu Yang sighed.

He then stood up, and walked to the front of the window. He began to looking into the distance, and started to survey the scene from this elevated position. Then, he said in a soft voice, "Nothing would happen to either of them. I believe that they can handle this well."

Mo Tian Ji sighed, "I hope so... However, the other people involved in this matter would surely be up to something in case something happened to Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di... even if it is nothing alarming!"

Chu Yang indifferently said, "I don't care... I just want these two to be safe. As for the other people... how can I take care of these many things?"

Mo Tian Ji remained silent.

A long while passed. He then said, "Li Xiong Tu might participate... Dong Wu Shang is an indispensable link in my plan. Luo Ke Di also has an important role... I've been waiting for news from their sides. After that, the execution of the plan will begin."

Chu Yang nodded as he clearly understood. "It's good as long you as you have a plan ready."

Mo Tian Ji nodded.

Chu Yang hesitated for a while, and then said, "Brother Mo, don't just think about victory and defeat... gains and losses... when you formulate a plan. Take the human nature and desires into consideration as well."

Mo Tian Ji was suddenly startled and flabbergasted. He then carefully pondered for a long time. He repeated this sentence in his mouth several times. Then, he carefully and finely contemplated it. He finally said after a long while, "Thanks a lot Brother Chu!"

Chu Yang nodded with a smile.

Mo Tian Ji's understanding regarding these aspects wasn't too deep. Therefore, he had made a mistake in his treatment of the Ao Clan. However, Chu Yang knew that Mo Tian Ji wouldn't take too long to master these things.

[The 'Master of Calculation and Manipulation' from my previous life used to make foolproof plans. And, this current situation makes me believe that 'he' will finally take shape when this war ends!]

Suddenly, a slight but unceasing sound of flapping of wings resounded in the sky... It seemed as if several birds had flown in at once.

Then, someone hurriedly walked in.

"Clan Lord, the messages have arrived."

"Get them in."

Mo Tian Ji said in a deep voice as he took quick steps towards the doorway.

There were five messages altogether.

Mo Tian Ji unfolded each one of them, and looked over them. He

looked at the first one, and read it aloud. Chu Yang calmly listened to him... He couldn't help but have a look of excitement on his face.

"Ao Yu Yun of the Ao Clan didn't get any fruitful result in ambushing Ji Mo. Plum Clan also attempted to intercept Ji Mo. However, their plan also failed. Ji Mo has disappeared God knows where. He hasn't returned to the Ji Clan," Mo Tian Ji read the first message.

Chu Yang faintly smiled.

Mo Tian Ji also shook his head, and couldn't help but laugh, "These people... have potato brains! Ji Mo had been in the Northern Wilderness for a very long time. And, he has finally come back with great difficulty. So, how could he not go and meet his fiancée first? Besides, he would have to work after he went back home. How would a lazy-bum like Ji Mo be willing to go back to his clan first? These people couldn't analyze Ji Mo's nature. They foolishly waited for Ji Mo on his road back to the Ji Clan...They didn't know that he would always choose pleasure over work."

"It's excusable that Plum Clan couldn't kill Ji Mo. After all, there isn't any outstanding character in the Plum Clan. However, Ao Yu Yun also did such a silly thing. This truly makes me have a whole new level of respect for this so called 'genius'."

Mo Tian Ji once again severely gritted his teeth while saying the words 'genius'. He clearly couldn't stand these so-called 'geniuses' of the Ao Clan.

Chu Yang also gave him a thumbs-up. "Awesome! Your observation was correct after all."

Mo Tian Ji snorted, and said, "Of course, you would know all about that, wouldn't you?"

He picked up the second note, and slowly read it, "Zhao Clan ambushed Luo Ke Di. But, Luo Ke Di easily broke through their

tight encirclement. He then encountered the interception of Ao Cheng Yun of Ao Clan. Luo Ke Di couldn't beat them. However, he managed to break through the besiegement using all his might, and fled into the wilderness. Ao Cheng Yun is currently pursuing him."

Mo Tian Ji had read the message.

Both of them frowned at the same time. This news wasn't particularly good...

"What about the third message?" Chu Yang urged.

"Ao Lang Yun of the Ao Clan intercepted King of Hell Chu. King of Hell has been missing ever since. He hasn't showed up. However, some rumors suggest that Ao Lang Yun and Black Devil got engaged in a fierce battle. Neither side had clear victory or defeat... Ao Clan lost more than twenty King Level Experts, while Black Devil escaped unharmed..."

Mo Tian Ji slightly smiled. He had only read half of the message when he shook the note in his hand, "Brother Chu, this Black Devil must be you, right?"

"Brother Mo's vision is like a torch!" Chu Yang faintly smiled.

"It's not that my vision is like a torch. The fact is that I'm quite familiar with your tactic of killing and shifting the blame onto someone else. Also, Black Devil is in a dire situation these days. So, how would he pick a fight with the Ao Clan? Besides, I know the whereabouts of Black Devil..."

Mo Tian Ji gently smiled. He then continued to read. Suddenly, he opened his eyes wide. "Ou Clan intercepted King of Hell Chu. King of Hell Chu got out unscathed. Ou Clan was completely wiped out. The Clan Lord Ou Cheng Wu and the Young Clan Lord Ou Du Xiao died on the spot! Hiss..."

"Brother Chu, you killed them all?!" Mo Tian Ji raised his head, and looked at Chu Yang in a manner that made it seem as if he was

looking at a monster.

"Mo Tian Ji's intelligence network is seriously one of a kind!" Chu Yang smiled and replied.

There wasn't any doubt in this. One must admit that all of this information was absolutely true.

Mo Tian Ji looked at him, and took a few cold breaths in. Then, he restored the tranquility of his mind, and said, "It can't be helped. You also know my nature. I like to manipulate. And, manipulation needs formidable strength and intelligence. It won't do if either of these points are lacking.

"I haven't been able to recruit too many experts in the past years. However, I've still vigorously built my underground information network under such circumstances. In fact, my network has covered the entire Middle Three Heavens by now." Mo Tian Ji proudly smiled. "I – Mo Tian Ji – might be inferior to other clans in terms of strength. But, my intelligence network is number-one in the world...!"

He confidently smiled, and said, "And, that includes the Upper Three Heavens!"

Chu Yang nodded. He fully believed these words. After all, he had a deep understanding of Mo Tian Ji's intel-capabilities in his previous life.

Mo Tian Ji was formidable in the previous life... However, he wasn't the Clan Lord of Mo Clan in that life. However, he already had the financial power and backing of entire Mo Clan in this life... Therefore, this Mo Tian Ji was just like a tiger that had grown wings.

For instance... It hadn't been too long since Chu Yang had killed the surviving members of the Ou Clan. But, this information was already on Mo Tian Ji's desk.

"The fourth message is that Ao Meng Yun of Ao Clan intercepted

Dong Wu Shang with a large troop. However, Dong Wu Shang resolutely rushed away! It is said that Dong Wu Shang's aggressiveness completely shook Ao Meng Yun's courage."

"The Black Devil Clan's leading assassins had gone to intercept Dong Wu Shang. But, there's no news of what happened afterwards. There is no way to investigate whether the interception occurred or not."

Mo Tian Ji closed the folder. He then anxiously knitted his brows.

Chu Yang had been quietly listening to him... He had been relaxed. He'd had a smile on his face since the beginning. However, his complexion suddenly became solemn.

Interception wasn't scary... What he feared was assassination!

Chu Yang was confident that each of his brothers could at least run away in a fair and square fight. After all, he had made his brothers travel for thousands of miles with a thousand kilograms of weight on their backs... It couldn't be all in vain!

In fact, Chu Yang now believed that his brothers could be included among the most outstanding people of the Middle Three Heavens when it came to the art of escaping, speed, and stamina.

Only a few people could keep up with them once they let loose of their feet.

However, the most fearful thing was a plot of assassination; especially that of a clan of assassins like the Black Devil Clan. The situation might become hopeless if they intended to assassinate. That's because Dong Wu Shang was the kind of person who would prefer death over humiliation or defeat.

Both of them glanced at each other. And, they both saw the same worry in each other's eyes.

"Heaven helps the worthy!" Mo Tian Ji took a deep breath.

"The fifth message is that Ao Qing Yun and Ao Feng Yun tried to intercept Gu Du Xing separately. Gu Du Xing killed their people, and escaped with ease. Ao Feng Yun and Ao Qing Yun are heading towards the Gu Clan at present."

"Tu Qian Hao led his clan's experts to intercept Gu Du Xing. Tu Qian Hao and Gu Du Xing had a one-on-one decisive battle in which Tu Qian Hao died by Gu Du Xing's sword! The original Clan Lord of Gu Clan — Gu Yun Lan abdicated. Young Clan Lord Gu Du Xing came into power, and there occurred a transition of power. Gu Du Xing also announced his engagement with Gu Miao Ling."

Mo Tian Ji carefully placed the note on the desk. Then, he put the notes separately into five folder pockets.

He hadn't heard Chu Yang speak for a long time. So, he turned his head, and looked at him. Mo Tian Ji seemed taken aback as he said, "What happened to you?"

Chu Yang hadn't yet regained his composure.

'Tu Qian Hao and Gu Du Xing had a one-on-one decisive battle in which Tu Qian Hao died by Gu Du Xing's sword!' These words had incomparably shocked Chu Yang.

He had never imagined that Tu Qian Hao would die! Moreover, he would die at the hands of Gu Du Xing...

[Out of the twelve influential figures from my previous life... Meng Luo died in my trap... Ou Du Xiao died at my hands. And now, even Tu Qian Hao has died.]

[One-fourth of them are dead.]

Tu Qian Hao had left a deep impression on Chu Yang. This man looked very carefree and straightforward on the outside. However, he was extremely careful in his heart. He could be the most straightforward person, as well as the most narrow-minded one. He was easy to be friends with. But, he would also easily hold a grudge.

He would sometimes inevitably become mean while handling matters. However, he was open and candid most of the time.

Chu Yang and Tu Qian Hao had never crossed paths in the previous life. Or so to say, Chu Yang hadn't been worthy of being Tu Qian Hao's friend in the previous life. And, they couldn't be friends in this life as well.

However, Chu Yang still felt that it was unfortunate.

It was because he knew that Tu Qian Hao would've created a set of world-class and matchless skills — the Unruffled Heavenly Book!

It would include Unruffled Sword-Play, Unruffled Cultivation Method, Unruffled Footwork, Unruffled Core Techniques...

All of them would be considered as magical powers in the entire Nine Heavens!

The Tu Qian Hao of the previous life hadn't been this outstanding and popular since the beginning. However, he had suddenly advanced by leaps and bounds after he had created the Unruffled Sword. In fact, he had almost replaced Ao Xie Yun and Gu Du Xing who had been at the peak of the younger generation in the Middle Three Heavens at that time.

Tu Qian Hao's cultivation had still been rapidly progressing when Chu Yang had died.

And, Unruffled Heavenly Book was deemed as the number-one book of treasured wisdom in the Middle Three Heavens!

Chu Yang had always been very curious. [After all, what kind of techniques can have such formidable strength?]

[Tu Qian Hao has died! Moreover, he has died so young!]

[Doesn't that mean that the Unruffled Heavenly Book would never appear in this world?]

Chu Yang suddenly sucked in cold air in regret.

"What's wrong?" Mo Tian Ji asked.

"Tu Qian Hao died..." Chu Yang sighed, "He shared the honor with you." Chu Yang had spoken till here when he suddenly recalled that this guy in front of him was Tian Ji among Poison Spirit, Tian Ji, and Li Xiong Tu – three of the twelve influential figures!

Moreover, this guy was well-known for his schemes, intelligence, and tricks. He was extremely clever. He was outwardly kind, but inwardly sly... He was clever and crafty... He was simply a collection of crafty plots and machinations from head to toe.

He was synonymous with 'treachery', and the spokesperson of 'conspiracy'.

Chu Yang couldn't help but think, [I guess this guy will live very long... After all, the evils live for a thousand years!]

"He shared the honor with me?" Mo Tian Ji was startled by this. In fact, he was at a complete loss, "When had he shared the honor with me?"

Chu Yang rolled his eyes, "Hic~~~"

....

Chapter 655: Wu Lei and Wu Shang!

Mo Tian Ji thought for a while. Then, he slowly walked out, and commanded, "Notify the scouts — keep an eye on the movements of Black Devil Clan. Mainly pay attention on the journeys of Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di. Also, keep watch on Ji Mo's side. Disperse at once."

He turned around, and came in. Then, he asked Chu Yang, "Do you want to add anything else?"

Chu Yang thought for a long time, and then said, "I don't have anything to say. It has been the internal matter of their clan up until now. So, I can't meddle."

Chu Yang paused... His complexion became serious as he deeply pondered. He then raised his sword-like eyebrows, and slowly said word by word in a flat tone, "I'll certainly exterminate Dong Clan and Luo Clan with my own hands... if something happens to Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di. I won't spare anyone!"

Mo Tian Ji became frightened in his heart.

Mo Tian Ji felt as if there was 'boundless killing intention' as well as 'determination to destroy indiscriminately without hesitation' in this flat sentence of Chu Yang's!

[He didn't mention Black Devil Clan, Zhao Clan, and Plum Clan. Instead, he mentioned Dong Clan and Luo Clan! This indicates that Chu Yang and I are most worried about the same thing.]

[It would be perfectly justified if these two get killed at the hands of Black Devil or any other enemy clan. After all, one would certainly try to kill someone who wants to kill them. And, one's death would be avenged if they are killed by someone. It's all justified.]

[However, let's suppose that those two died because of their family's internal strife...]

[Then, Dong Clan and Li Clan...]

[Humph, my brothers are your clan's members as long as they're alive. So, it would be inappropriate if I participate in your clan's affairs. In fact, my brothers wouldn't let me intervene even if I wished to. However, let's presume that my brothers died as a result of this... Then, they will only remain as my brothers... They'll no longer be the members of your clan!]

Mo Tian Ji clearly felt that Chu Yang wouldn't hesitate in wielding a butcher's knife against Dong Clan and Luo Clan if something were to happen to Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di.

He wouldn't show any mercy!

Therefore, Mo Tian Ji went out again, and gave a few more instructions. Sounds of flapping wings instantly rang up everywhere in the Mo Clan. Simultaneously, countless invisible falcons soared to the heavens. Then, four cavalry troops rushed out of the clan like hurricanes.

Chu Yang quietly sat down with a cold expression.

His complexion was like iron.

Mo Tian Ji sighed. He looked at Chu Yang's complexion, but didn't say anything in the end. He knew that it would be useless to say anything to Chu Yang at this moment. After all, Chu Yang could explode at the slightest bit of news present in thousands of words!

"I don't care about any important matters of the Jianghu. I don't care about honor or disgrace of any aristocratic clan! I don't care about anything or anyone!" Chu Yang indifferently said, "But, the people who would try to harm my brothers... will have to pay the price!"

He gently smiled, and said in a hoarse voice, "Ten million times the price!"

He suddenly raised his head as if with a flash of understanding.

Then, he looked at Mo Tian Ji's face, and said in a low voice, "Brother Mo, I need your real intelligence this time!"

Chu Yang had especially put stress on the word 'real'. His brilliant vision was illuminating Mo Tian Ji's face... so much so that Mo Tian Ji felt a burning pain.

"... Alright~!" Mo Tian Ji pondered for a long time, and then said this word. He found saying this extremely difficult even though it was just one word.

And, that's because he had understood the meaning and weight of the word that had come out of Chu Yang's mouth — 'real'.

The atmosphere had become silent and stifling.

Both of them sat face-to-face, but neither spoke anything anymore.

....

Dong Clan...

The deliberation hall...

The hall was almost empty... There was only one person inside.

Dong Wu Lei's brows were tightly knitted. He was sitting in a wooden armchair, and had a serious look on his face at the moment. He was struggling with conflicting views in his head.

[Should I do it?]

[Or, should I not?]

He had been hesitant since the time he had come back. And, he had been having conflicting views since then.

Time was passing bit by bit. But, he couldn't make up his mind.

His sharp gaze suddenly fell on the chair of the Clan Lord. His eyes lingered there for a long time. He would look at it again and again till his eyes would start to burn. Then, he would move his eyes away. His gaze suddenly fell on his opposite side at this time –

on Dong Wu Shang's chair. His gaze was filled with confusions and contradictions. But, it also contained a tender feeling this time.

An intense struggle was churning in his mind.

"You must kill him! He's your younger brother, but he is still your rival! A real man doesn't show womanly compassion if he wants to survive. He can't be soft-hearted or lenient. You must remember this... Otherwise, you'll be pulled down from the position of clan successor, and consigned to eternal damnation!"

"You mustn't kill him! He's your rival, but he's still your younger brother. You two have a blood bond! You two have been raised by the same mother. Wouldn't you be worse than a pig if you slaughter your own younger brother for power?"

Beads of sweat were rolling down Dong Wu Lei's forehead...

"Young Lord, this time is crucial. So, you must take the decision as soon as possible! Second Young Master is a Saber Emperor... His cultivation is far ahead of yours. Therefore, the Elders will support him to hold the leading position once he returns to the clan... even if he himself doesn't have any wild ambitions! He's a nineteen-and-a-half years old Saber Emperor. Young Lord, you don't understand what it means..."

This was the voice of a loyal and devoted bodyguard. It was resonating in his head at the moment.

"Dear, I know you have deep brotherly affection towards him. But... have you thought what the future of our children would be if you lose power? They'll never be able to climb to glory... just because of your momentary soft-heartedness. And then, our posterity will reduce to a bunch of hired thugs. They will eventually become slaves of the Dong Clan! Do you have the heart to let it happen?"

These were the words of his wife. Tears had been streaming

down her eyes like raindrops on pear blossoms when she had said these words.

Dong Wu Lei tightly shut his eyes.

"Don't force me! Don't force me, you all!" Dong Wu Lei softly murmured in pain as the muscles of his face contorted.

He had been thinking about it for several days. His wife's gaze was full of hidden bitterness. It would prick him like a needle every time he'd looked at her face.

Therefore, he'd simply hide here. He would hide like an ostrich and close his eyes whenever he was forced and unable to do anything about it. However, images kept on flashing before his eyes.

"Elder Brother, you're awesome! When would I be as talented and awesome as you are...?" the four or five years old Wu Shang had said this when they were young. There had been a look of adoration on his face at that moment.

"My brother is the fiercest!" Wu Shang had said this when he was seven years old... He had had a fight. A few children had held him down, and beaten him up. Therefore, Dong Wu Lei had gone, and beaten-up those few guys. Wu Shang had tears in his eyes, but he also had pride for his elder brother as he had proclaimed this.

"Wa ha ha, this little guy pissed on me." This was when Dong Wu Lei's son had just been born. Wu Shang had gone crazy out of happiness. He would go to Dong Wu Lei's room every day, and wouldn't go out even if Dong Wu Lei's wife or anyone would try to shoo him away. He would carry the child everywhere in his arms. He would play with the child even when he had grown a little bigger. In fact, he would pamper the child even more than his own father.

"Elder Brother, I want to go out, and temper myself. You tell me... Where should I go?" Wu Shang had said this to Dong Wu Lei

the first time he had revealed his martial arts talent to be greater than that of Dong Wu Lei.

"Cang Lan Battlefield!" Dong Wu Lei had replied at that time.

"Cang Lan Battlefield..." Dong Wu Lei repeated the words he had said at that time; his eyes were closed. It seemed as if he was remembering the scene of that time... The brothers had high-fived while bidding farewell at the gate.

"Elder Brother... you rest assured. I'll always be your younger brother," This was when Dong Wu Lei had developed feelings of jealousy towards Wu Shang... Wu Shang had repressed unlimited emotions when he had said this. There had been expressions of sincerity, loyalty, and sadness in his eyes while speaking these words.

"Elder Brother... I'm going out to have fun with my Big Brother." This was when they had been at Mt. Dingjun. Wu Shang had told Dong Wu Lei, "There's no need to inform me if something happens in the clan."

Dong Wu Lei had gazed at the majestic back profile of his younger brother as his brother gradually departed. He had wanted to call him back, and hug him countless of times.

That's because he had understood what Wu Shang's words had meant. [You fear that I'll compete with you. So, I'm leaving the clan. I won't have the slightest of objection even if you take the position of the Clan Lord behind my back. I would rather be relieved.]

"Alas!~~~" Dong Wu Lei slowly opened his eyes. God knows when his cheeks had started to stream with tears.

"Drag... I wanted to drag it until the arrival of Second Brother... but, I don't know what I should do now when it's time. But..." Dong Wu Lei had somehow come to a firm determination at last. But, this determination became so fragile the next moment that he

found himself to be fragile.

"Wu Lei, you're crying even though your name means 'no tears'." a voice slowly came through. Dong Wu Lei turned his head, and looked. He saw that his father — Dong Qi Gong — had slowly entered the hall.

"Father," Dong Wu Lei wiped his eyes. He then stood up to respectfully make his salutation.

Dong Qi Gong sighed. He came close to Dong Wu Lei, and carefully looked at him. Then, he said in a deep voice, "I know your heart must be aching, and your mind must be filled with contradictions. So, I've come to see you."

"Father!" Dong Wu Lei's heart wildly thumped.

Dong Qi Gong sighed, and sat down next to him. He didn't speak for a long time... He heavily said after a while, "You're in a lot of pressure. I can understand. I had also come across such a situation back in the day."

"Being the head of the clan isn't an easy job; especially in aristocratic clans like ours. The entire clan falls if the Clan Lord becomes incompetent. Therefore, he must be vicious and merciless. However, he must have heroic courage as well. He must have the spirit of a real man! It is easy to say. But, how many people can achieve it in reality?"

"I understand your state of mind!"

Dong Qi Gong stood up, and then patted his son's shoulder, "You both are my flesh and blood. You both are my sons... I'm your father. So, I'll always support you both regardless of your choices."

He quietly walked away after he was done talking. He walked to the gate, and then stood still. He didn't speak for a long while. His figure blocked the sunshine that had illuminated the entire room. And, the entire hall immediately got filled with his shadow.

He stood there for a while. Then, he finally said in a deep voice.

"Wu Lei, I named you Wu Lei back then in the hope that you wouldn't have any sorrow in your entire life... that you'll never shed tears in your life! And, I named him Wu Shang because I wanted him to never receive any injuries in his life.

"Your mother hasn't come to see you since the past few days because she is praying in the temple for her two sons. She has been kneeling down since the past three days. Wu Shang isn't her biological son. Wu Shang's mother had passed away just after giving birth to him. However, your mother has brought him up like her own son since then. You know this thing...

"Your mother and I desire that both you brothers never have any injuries or tears in your life."

Dong Wu Lei's entire body shivered. Suddenly, tears started to stream down his face, and his body curled up on the ground. He was shivering fiercely... It seemed as if he had been thrown on the cold ground while being stark naked.

He thought of his mother. He felt as if those kind eyes of hers were right in front of his eyes... as if those eyes were beseechingly looking at him. There was a faint despair in those eyes... [Wouldn't I shatter my mother's heart if I killed my second brother?]

[Father looks strong... But, I'm afraid half of his heart will break!]

Dong Qi Gong silently walked away after he was finished speaking.

And, the sunlight again illuminated the hall.

However, Dong Wu Lei chased out after him, and shouted, "Father!"

Dong Qi Gong stopped in the distance, and seemed to sigh.

Dong Wu Lei tried his utmost to chase after. He started to speak but hesitated.

Dong Qi Gong turned his head, and looked at him. He then softly

whispered with a complicated look in his eyes, "All of your men have disappeared."

After that, Dong Qi Gong walked away without turning his head.

"All of your men have disappeared?" Dong Wu Lei repeated his father's words... as if he was asking himself. Then, his complexion changed.

After that, he quickly turned around, and rushed towards his small courtyard.

...

Chapter 656: A Man's Thoughts are Impossible to Get a Grasp On!

"Bang!" The small courtyard's front door was kicked open by Dong Wu Lei. And, it got shattered into pieces as a result!

He then dashed-in while taking big strides.

His wife — Yu Wen Xiu — and his son were in the room. She was making the child eat his meal. She hurriedly got up when she heard the noise. She didn't get enough time to go out of the room to check what had just happened. She just saw the bedroom door getting smashed, and Dong Wu Lei dashing in while fuming with anger.

The child was about three years old. So, he got frightened, and began to cry.

"What are you doing? You've scared our son to tears!" Yu Wen Xiu suddenly raised her long and shapely brows, and opened her eyes wide to glare.

"Attendant!" Dong Wu Lei violently bellowed, "Take the Little Young Master out. I have to discuss something with madam!"

The maidservant came in stumbling, and was about to hold the child in her arms. But then, Yu Wen Xiu extended both her hands, and blocked her, "What are you going to do?"

"Shut up!"

"Slap!" Dong Wu Lei raised his hand, and slapped his wife on her face. The slap sent her flying... Her ornamental hairpin flew across, and she fell on the ground with her hair disheveled. Her pretty and delicate face turned purple!

The maidservant was so frightened that her entire body began to tremble and shake uncontrollably.

"You still haven't taken the Little Young Master out? Do you

want to die?" Dong Wu Lei turned around, and glared at her as he roared. The entire house swayed twice, and the dust fell with rustling sound.

The maidservant trembled. She hurriedly picked up the child, and ran for her life.

"You dared to hit me?! You hit me?!" Yu Wen Xiu looked at her husband in disbelief. She then suddenly pounced at him like a mad tiger, "I'm always worried sick for you. I gave birth to your child. I've devoted everything to you. Dong Wu Lei, you hit me?!"

"Slap!"

Another slap landed maliciously on the other side of her face. Then, a murderous intent flashed wildly in Dong Wu Lei's eye. He then said in a low and deep voice, "Sit down! Otherwise, I'll kill you!"

His voice was low and deep like always. However, the violent rage and killing intent that had been on the verge of eruption were unconcealed now.

Yu Wen Xiu opened her eyes wide... She was shocked. There was a look of heartbreak in her eyes. She was in utter disbelief as her hands caressed her face. She powerlessly fell to the ground to sit down.

"First, it's your damn problem if you're always worried sick for me... Stop doing it! Second, whose children would you bear if not mine? Third, you've devoted everything to me... But, I still don't know what color your heart is."

Dong Wu Lei dragged over a chair, and slowly sat down. His complexion was like iron!

"Say it! What have you done?" Dong Wu Lei asked in a low voice.

There was a slight trace of panic in Yu Wen Xiu's eyes. She argued, "I haven't done anything..."

"You haven't done anything?! You fu*king haven't done anything?!" Dong Wu Lei heard this, and got up fiercely. He then picked up the chair from under his buttocks, and smashed it heavily on his wife's head without any hesitation. The sandalwood chair got shattered into pieces with a crash-bang sound, and his wife's entire face turned bloody.

Yu Wen Xiu also had the strength of Revered Martial Artist. However, she had been caught off guard. Dong Wu Lei hadn't poured his entire strength in this attack. However, he had still hit her hard-enough to leave her face covered in blood.

Dong Wu Lei towed over another chair after he had broken this one. He took a seat, and then solemnly asked again, "Say it, what have you done?"

Yu Wen Xiu was extremely scared.

She could already feel it, [Dong Wu Lei might beat me to death if I don't talk!]

"I... I..." She stammered while her eyes incessantly glanced towards the door.

"Don't even bother! This is my small courtyard now... Even my father and mother can't get in." Dong Wu Lei bent down, and his eyes looked at her from close up. He then said one word at a time, "The people of your maternal home will come for your funeral tomorrow if you don't talk now."

A cold and ruthless expression flashed in his eyes. He took out a napkin, and gently wiped the blood off of his wife's face. Then, he solemnly said, "Your maternal family won't dare to say anything to me... So, don't think that they are strong! Moreover... I'll re-marry the day after conducting your funeral... So, don't think that you're the only woman in this world! Also, don't think... that you have been doing so well as the Clan Lady of Dong Clan that I don't need to take a concubine. The people who don't value what they have can't achieve anything. I'll slaughter your entire maternal family if

something happens to my Second Brother! Do you understand?"

Yu Wen Xiu opened her eyes wide in fright.

Dong Wu Lei wiped off the blood on her face, and gently said, "Woman, keep this in mind. Don't stick your nose where it doesn't belong. Understood?"

He threw the napkin on the floor. Then, he wiped his hand, and firmly clutched Yu Wen Xiu's throat with his fingers. He softly said, "I like you very much... I give you the worth of someone that I'm fond of. So, I'm willing to bear with you to make you happy. But, you have to keep in mind that it's all because... I like you!

"You could be so presumptuous because I like you. And, you'll be like this if I don't like you." His fingers were tightening like iron tongs as he slowly said, "Don't make me dislike you."

Yu Wen Xiu had her throat clutched by him. It was getting difficult to breathe for her. She felt as if she would suffocate to death the next moment. Her pretty eyes slowly bulged out... They seemed to be begging for mercy.

Dong Wu Lei loosened his grip only when she couldn't bear the suffocation anymore... when she could die any moment!

Yu Wen Xiu collapsed to the ground at once. Her hands started to caress her throat as she gasped for breath. Her eyes revealed a look of relief as well as extreme horror.

"You still want me to continue the interrogation?" Dong Wu Lei's eyes were sharp like a knife. Suddenly, he shouted like a thunderclap, "You sl*t! Kneel down, and start talking!"

"No, no please..." Yu Wen Xiu knelt down before her husband with a thud, "I... I'm talking... I'll tell everything!"

"I... I couldn't accept it, I..."

"Directly state your arrangement!" The look in Dong Wu Lei's eyes got colder and colder.

"Yes... The people of Black Devil Clan came looking for Yu Chengze the other day. Chengze then came to me... I... I made a plan. It just so happens that everyone is feeling insecure even in our clan. They are very much afraid that your position is not secure... So I..."

"People of Black Devil Clan?" Dong Wu Lei suddenly opened his eyes wide. His eyes were filled with rage, "Your Yu Clan has even colluded with the Black Devil Clan? You all colluded with the enemy to entrap my younger brother?!"

"I..."

"Talk about the specific plan! Where is it going to happen? When will it start? How many people of Black Devil Clan are involved? How many people of Yu Clan...? How many people from our side...?" Dong Wu Lei questioned repeatedly.

"They've already been out for two days... at the mouth of the Broken Soul Cliff... about 250 Km away. 60 people have gone from my family; Nine King Level Experts, and one Emperor Level Expert are included among these. 100 people have gone from our side... thirty King Level Experts, five Emperor Level Experts, and seemingly Second Senior Elder as well... I don't know anything about the numbers of the Black Devil people."

Yu Wen Xiu was naturally feeling the imminent death crisis. So, she was talking very fast whilst kneeling hard on the ground.

"The Broken Soul Cliff is the road one must take... if they are coming from the direction from which Wu Shang is coming. There's no detour either. That is to say... at least 400-500 people have gathered at the Broken Soul Cliff to intercept him. There's even a senior elder of Eighth Grade Emperor Level among them! The close relatives who have betrayed him are also among them. They have convinced themselves to be heartless to assassinate their own. Also, Black Devil Clan's super assassins are lurking in the dark there..."

Dong Wu Lei muttered. Suddenly, a look of despair appeared in his eyes, "It has been two days! Two days! Wu Shang is in danger..." He suddenly felt an overwhelming pain in his heart.

"Elder Brother, Dong Clan has us two men made of iron! I'll assist you properly. We two brothers will certainly make our Dong Clan glorious!" Dong Wu Shang's face had been shining.

"My elder brother is the best!" Dong Wu Shang's face had been full of reverence.

"Elder brother..."

"Elder brother..."

Dong Wu Lei faced upwards, and bellowed. Then, he suddenly stood up, and walked outward without looking back.

"Where are you going?" Yu Wen Xiu screamed hoarsely, "Don't go! You'll die with him! Don't go!"

Dong Wu Lei's footsteps halted at the door. But, he didn't turn around.

"I'm not that stupid. I'll make sure that I don't die if Wu Shang is already dead! That's because I must keep my life to avenge him!"

"You'll kneel down at the main entrance, and apologize to my brother if he comes back safely. You'll admit your mistake! However, you'll die if my brother doesn't come back alive... Your entire family will die!"

"I – Dong Wu Lei – swear by the eight generations of ancestors and eight generations of the descendants!"

"Yu Wen Xiu, you better pray!"

"I – Dong Wu Lei – am Dong Wu Shang's elder brother! I scold him, I beat him, I'm wary of him, and I resent him! I'm jealous of him! I'm scared that he'll take my position. It's fine if I banish him, or even sentence him to death in case he does a wrong thing!! That's because I'm his elder brother... We have the same father!"

"This is something between us brothers. Who the hell are you all? What qualifications do you have to meddle?! ...just to make things easier for you all? It's fine if I kill him... However, you can't lay a finger on him... Otherwise, I'll kill you!"

Dong Wu Lei's body rushed out like a gust of wind... It seemed unstoppable like a flooding river. The sound of hoof-beats resounded immediately after that. The hoof-beats sounded like a thunder... They instantly rushed out of the small courtyard, and then out the Dong Clan's main gate... leaving behind a trail of dust and smoke on the road!

In the bedroom... Yu Wen Xiu fell on the floor in a daze... She felt dejected.

Her hair was disheveled, and her entire face was blood-stained. Her elegance from earlier was entirely gone by now.

She finally smiled bitterly after a long time.

She had finally acknowledged that she still didn't understand Dong Wu Lei... or so to say she didn't understand men.

Dong Wu Lei had often been worried because of Dong Wu Shang's sudden rise. He had often been anxious. He would be unable to sleep... He would toss and turn restlessly in bed all night. He would always feel like there was a thorn in his back. He would sometimes get drunk, and rain curses in indignation.

Dong Wu Lei clearly believed that his second brother Dong Wu Shang was a powerful enemy who would challenge him over the clan's authority... and that he was also the biggest threat!

Dong Wu Shang had risen suddenly. So, there was a big possibility that he would replace Dong Wu Lei. Therefore, Dong Wu Lei had been deeply scared... He had even been hateful out of jealousy!

All of this had given Yu Wen Xiu a hint, [Dong Wu Lei wants to eliminate Dong Wu Shang! But, he won't admit it. So, I must solve

this problem for him since I'm his wife.]

[Dong Wu Lei has been hiding in the clan hall these past few days... It seems to make time and space for me to make plans in his place.]

Therefore, Yu Wen Xiu hadn't hesitated to launch the attack.

However, she had never imagined in her wildest dreams that things would end up like this!

She had originally thought that Dong Wu Lei would at most pretend to be furious. She would then admit her mistake... She would kneel in front of the ancestral memorial tablet, and repent for a few days whilst feeling all dejected and sullen. Then, this matter would be over.

However, this intense and violent reaction of Dong Wu Lei's was poles apart from her expectations... In fact, it had defeated the purpose altogether.

It was just like Dong Wu Lei had said, "I can do anything to my younger brother... But, you people cannot! It's fine if I kill him, but you can't dare to lay a finger on him. Otherwise, I'll avenge him... I'll vent his anger for him!!"

"That's because he's my younger brother!"

...

Chapter 657: Wu Shang's Premature Death!

Yu Wen Xiu finally fell in the bed, and burst into tears.

It is said that the heart of a woman is too deep to measure. Though, how many people on earth have been able to understand a man's heart... especially that of a man like Dong Wu Lei whose personality was extremely complicated? Who could understand his heart?

Beating a woman is apparently not the behavior of a real man. But, doing so for his brother's sake made him a real man regardless of anything!

....

Dong Wu Lei hit the horse to make it madly rush out. His heart was burning with anxiety and impatience!

The road before him stretched endlessly into the horizon. He let loose of his horse, and sped along the way.

His goal was Broken Soul Cliff!

[Wu Shang, you must travel slowly! You must wait for me!]

....

Dong Wu Shang had only come across the interception of Ao Clan's Ao Meng Yun along this entire journey. He had firmly rushed out of that situation. He was straightforward on the outside, but had great chaos in his heart!

He had known that it wasn't that time to fight till death with the Ao Clan. Therefore, he hadn't killed anyone. He had instead done what was least expected of him. He had only relied on the sharpness and heaviness of the Black Saber to open an escape route for himself. Then, he had dashed away.

He had quickly run straight ahead for 1500 kilometers. After that, he hadn't faced any other interception.

Such calmness made Dong Wu Shang mutter in his heart.

[How can things be so calm?]

[Could it be that no one has noticed me?]

The scenery ahead soon became familiar. Dong Clan's territory was getting closer and closer.

[The Broken Soul Cliff is 150 Km ahead from here!]

[And, my home is less than 500 Km away from here.]

Dong Wu Shang somewhat hesitantly stopped his steps. He then suddenly started to rehearse in his heart, [This is my final and truest effort to save my relationship with my elder brother.]

"Elder Brother, I'll leave the clan. I'll still be a member of the Dong Clan, but I won't take part in any family dispute. I'm coming back today so that I can get through these difficult times together with the clan. I'll turn-in my resignation to Father after this.

"Henceforth, I'll accompany my Big Brother, and dash to the top of the Nine Heavens!

"I'll leave the Dong Clan in your hands, Elder Brother. However, I'll certainly come back as soon as possible in case the clan needs me. And then, I'll fight for the clan till the end!"

Dong Wu Shang shook his head. [It seems a bit blunt?]

[So, how should I tell him this...? Should I tell it like this — Hey, the estrangement has increased more and more between us brothers during the past years. Even some loyal-to-death subordinates of Elder Brother look at me like they're looking at a foe.]

[Elder Brother, you don't know that I still cherish the memories of past days... when we brothers were so close that it seemed as if we were one. I want to go back to those days...]

Dong Wu Shang sadly looked in front of him. He longed to return home at this moment. However, he was also afraid of going back

home. His family was very warm, but it was also very distant.

Dong Wu Shang rested for a while. Then, he continued with his journey. He wasn't hesitant this time.

The Broken Soul Cliff was in front of him...

He would be in the Dong Clan's territory once he had crossed the Broken Soul Cliff!

However, the Broken Soul Cliff was also the best ambush spot...

There were alpine forests on both its sides. Only a few people could walk here abreast. Dong Wu Shang knew that the people who wanted to deal with him would inevitably do it there in case they had come.

It could be the allies of the Ou Clan. Or, it could be the people of Ao Clan. Or... it could be the people of his own clan!

However, he strode-in like a meteor without the slightest bit of hesitation.

[I'm done hesitating... I'm done thinking... I must move forward no matter what I encounter ahead! I'm willing to face anything... no matter if it is extreme danger or heartbreak. I must face all of it!]

Dong Wu Shang moved forward taking large steps. However, he unconsciously clenched his teeth, and bit his lips.

He was throwing behind the distance of 150 kilometers stretch by stretch.

Dong Wu Shang suddenly became startled when he took a turn at the foot of a mountain.

A man stood upright under the Broken Soul Cliff... There were dozens of men sitting orderly, and waiting behind him. They immediately stood up when they saw that Dong Wu Shang had returned. "Second Young Master, you've come back!"

Dong Wu Shang felt somewhat relieved in his heart.

[They are the people of Dong Clan. Most of them are elder brother's men, but Second Senior Elder is also here. I'm not pleasing to his eyes as per his status. However, he wouldn't stoop so low as to come here just for pretence, right?]

[Moreover, all of them have smiles on their faces. The complexion of Second Senior Elder is ice-cold, but he has always been like that. So, there's nothing serious about it.]

[But, it is still a bit strange. Why are they here? Could it be that they have come to welcome me?]

Dong Wu Shang looked at the smiling faces in front of him after he thought this. He suddenly became excited, and walked over with quick steps.

"Second Young Master, the journey must've been laborious!" A first grade Emperor Level Expert delightfully smiled. He went over to greet Dong Wu Shang, and said, "The Middle Three Heavens is in a dangerous situation at present. So, we have no other choice but to protect you. Also, we got to know that the Black Devil Clan wants to ambush you... and that you have just faced the interception of the Ao Clan. So, we estimated the time, and came here to wait so that we can provide you assistance."

He smiled, "This Broken Soul Cliff is indeed a natural place for ambushing. So, we came here to guard you."

Dong Wu Shang immediately felt relaxed in his heart. [So that's how it is.] He naturally had a straightforward personality. So, he smiled, and said, "I can't thank you people enough for this! Oh, by the way, Elder Brother didn't come?"

"Eldest Young Master is in the clan... He is having preparations done for a banquet in the clan. So, he's overseeing the decorations in the courtyard... to welcome the Second Young Master." That Emperor Level Expert had put-on an awkward look on his face. He then whispered, "To be honest... Eldest Young Master was very angry earlier. He was very angry... He-he... Actually, we were

also... very restless in our hearts. Second Young Master, it's not your fault. Ahem ahem... But then, Eldest Young Master said, 'He's my younger brother in the end'... Therefore, he sent us to welcome you."

Dong Wu Shang felt completely relaxed in his heart after he heard this. [He was able to say this. He's indeed frank and open-minded.]

[Elder Brother has apparently accepted the situation, and moved on.] He sighed, "Ah, Elder Brother is indeed not easy to predict..."

That Emperor Expert wrapped his arm around Dong Wu Shang's shoulder to walk along, and said, "Second Young Master, be a little careful. Second Senior Elder has come to see you this time... His temperament is, ahem ahem, you know."

"Of course," Dong Wu Shang laughed out loud, and walked forward.

They slowly entered the crowd.

Dong Clan had three Senior Elders. The one present here was the second one; his name was Du Liu Feng. He was about a hundred years old.

Du Liu Feng saw Dong Wu Shang walking over, and a strange look flashed through his eyes. He indifferently said, "Second Young Master, I've heard that your cultivation has already reached first grade Saber Emperor?"

Everyone became somewhat tense as soon as he asked this. They all erected their ears one after another, and looked at Dong Wu Shang with their eyes wide open.

"Yes, I've been lucky enough to break through to the first grade of Saber Emperor." Dong Wu Shang humbly smiled and said, "I know my poor performance must make Second Elder laugh."

Du Liu Feng was looking at Dong Wu Shang. Suddenly, the expression in his eyes became even stranger, "Second Young

Master, you're nineteen years old, right?"

Dong Wu Shang scratched his head, and replied with a smile, "I'm nineteen-and-a-half. I'll be twenty in another six months."

Du Liu Feng uttered a long 'oh'. Then, he said, "This entire journey must've been easy, right?"

Dong Wu Shang contemptuously smiled, and said, "There were a few clumsy mischief-doers along the way. But, it's not worth mentioning."

"Clumsy mischief-doers..." Du Liu Feng raised his eyebrows. He forced a slight smiling expression, and said, "Second Young Master has grown up."

"Let's go. The people of our clan must be eagerly waiting for you," Du Liu Feng smiled. He then again restored the blank expression on his face.

Dong Wu Shang smiled. He had entered the crowd... The people in all directions surrounded him with smiling expressions on their faces. He was now in the center of them.

Du Liu Feng tightly wrinkled his brows. He then turned away, and silently moved forward. One could see by observing him from the front that his complexion was very complicated. He had a conflicted expression in his eyes.

[A nineteen-and-a-half years old Emperor Level Expert! A Saber Emperor!]

[What kind of potential does he have? How can this Old Man not understand this after spending a hundred years to climb to the eighth grade of Emperor Level?]

[But, I can't think over this now. The Jianghu is in great chaos, and the Dong Clan will be unable to withstand an internal strife. The Dong Clan would probably get destroyed in the chaos of the Jianghu in case a conflict arises between the two brothers.]

[Dong Wu Shang may not be interested in the position of Clan Lord. However, it's not up to him to decide. That's because Eldest Brother and Old Third have decided that they will push Dong Wu Shang to take the throne of Clan Lord!]

[Shouldn't we be learning from the mistakes of the two brothers of Mo Clan – Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji? The strength of Mo Clan dropped by almost half after the two brothers tried to destroy each other.]

[Mo Clan isn't as huge as Dong Clan, but those several ancestors of Mo Clan aren't weak!]

[But, how can the prosperity of the clan be dependent on a single person? A person with good martial power and high cultivation level isn't necessarily qualified enough for being a Clan Lord, right? Eldest Brother, Old Third, and I have argued on this hundreds of times. But, they both are obstinately clinging to their course!]

[So, I have no other choice. I'll personally settle the matter once and for all today.]

However, he was also hesitant in this last moment. [Should such a young expert with boundless future prospect die a premature death? After all, this will also be a big loss for the clan. We might even lose the hope to rush to the Upper Three Heavens in future.]

Du Liu Feng's face was calm and collected. His eyebrows were wrinkled, and he was silently walking forward.

"Senior Elder!" an Emperor Level Expert anxiously called out... He seemed to be reminding him and urging him to give the order. He had obviously become anxious looking at Du Liu Feng's hesitancy.

"I know!" Du Liu Feng sighed in his heart. He suddenly halted his footsteps. Then, he coldly shouted, "Begin!"

The eight people closest to Dong Wu Shang simultaneously set

into action as soon as this order was issued.

Dong Wu Shang had been walking in the middle of the troop. He was in the center of forty-or-fifty experts at the moment. He had been moving happily along with the troop of his family. He suddenly felt a palpitation at this moment... as if an extremely huge crisis had suddenly fallen upon him.

He subconsciously turned his overbearing body, and suddenly felt an acute pain disseminating from every part of his body!

The eight people who had heard the order hadn't had enough time to draw their swords or sabers. Moreover, the weapons would've produced noise. So, they had simply used their kicks and punches. They had then severely hit Dong Wu Shang at the same time!

They hit him on his back, legs, waist, chest, nape, lower abdomen, Dantian... and his temples.

Dong Wu Shang had been caught off guard. And, he had suddenly encountered a fatal attack! He furiously shouted as his majestic, tall, and sturdy body was sent out flying like a punching bag...

Cracking sounds echoed in the air. God knows how many bones in his body had already been broken. All the seven orifices of his head were oozing blood, and his eyes had become blurry. He could feel acute pain in his whole body.

Dong Wu Shang's body fell down with a thud. And, his bright blood splattered on the ground!

He furiously turned over, and jumped up. However, he felt his right leg going limp when he landed on the ground... He nearly fell down. But then, he hastily took support of his left leg, and stabilized his body. He had realized that his right leg was broken...

The right arm with which he wielded his saber was dangling softly... It had been broken from the shoulder!

The eight experts had hit at the same time. Therefore, Dong Wu

Shang had been caught off guard, and had immediately sustained injuries. This had made him lose the ability to counterattack as well as the ability to escape!

Blood crazily gushed out from Dong Wu Shang's entire body. Two strips of blood were flowing out from his eyes. He looked straight at the people in front of him with a sad look in his eyes. He then asked while muttering, "Is it so? Does Elder Brother... want me dead? He... Does he want me dead?"

Blood was continuously gushing out from his mouth while he was speaking this.

Dong Wu Shang could clearly feel his heart breaking... piece by piece.

The pain in his heart was ten-thousand times greater than the pain in his body!

....

Chapter 658: I'm Heartless Since You're Immoral!

Dong Wu Shang hadn't been cautious!

He had been careful all along...

However, he had let down his guard at the last moment. And, he had been caught off guard as a result! That was because the people of his clan and his elder brother were showing such goodwill. Therefore, this had made him let down his guard in his heart.

In fact, he had deliberately made himself let down his guard.

Nobody knew how much Dong Wu Shang cared about these brotherly sentiments! He and his elder brother had grown up together. And, he had always harbored deep respect for his elder brother. He had always adored and revered his brother. Similarly, his brother had taken care of him in every possible way. His blood brother had always pampered him in every way possible. However, he had now become Dong Wu Shang's enemy. So, one could well-imagine his pain and grief.

His elder brother had finally shown a gesture of conciliation today... He had finally shown goodwill towards his younger brother.

Dong Wu Shang was rather wishful in his heart since he wanted to believe that all of this was true! He had been longing for returning to that environment of brotherly affection. And, he had put his own safety at stake for this reason.

It was a pity that he had lost this gamble!

He had received many injuries in his body. Anyone else in his place wouldn't even have been able to stand. However, he had been firmly standing with difficulty. He was standing on one leg. And, blood was streaming out his body like waterfall. However, he was still able to stand straight!

He was still majestic and formidable as ever!

It was just that there was sadness and disappointment in his eyes. And, that had given his lofty form a seemingly desolate yet elegant demeanor.

He looked around... as far as his eyes could see... However, no one dared to look him in the eye. All of them averted their gazes one after another.

Dong Wu Shang smiled... But, it was a smile of misery.

He had lost all hope for reconciliation!

He suddenly recalled that Chu Yang had told him over and over again just before he had left, "Wu Shang, you must be careful!"

"Wu Shang, you must be careful by all means!"

[Big Brother had already anticipated this. Therefore, he had constantly warned me. But, he had never stated it clearly. He couldn't say this clearly because Dong Wu Lei is my elder brother... my blood brother!]

[After all, it would've inevitably been a provocative behavior of sowing dissension between two brothers if Big Brother had been blunt about it at that time.]

[But, he had been warning me time and again. So, it was equivalent to saying — be careful of your elder brother!]

[I also had the same apprehensions. However, I still foolishly chose to have faith in the end.]

"Second Young Master, we don't wish to do this," Du Liu Feng coughed twice. He then said with a little guilt, "But, our Dong Clan is in an unstable situation at this time. It can't afford to withstand a big storm anymore."

"I understand," Dong Wu Shang slowly nodded. The look in his eyes became hazy. His despair had changed into intentional heartache. He was in so much pain that he didn't want to live.

However, one would be awed if they looked his expression carefully. And, that's because they would find that his vision had gradually become profound. It had been gradually condensing and... gradually becoming cruel!

He had understood... He had truly understood!

Dong Clan needed only one heir... just like there's only one throne in the imperial families. Dong Wu Shang would've been fine if he were a little mediocre. But, he was so outstanding that it was unnecessary!

Therefore, he had ended up becoming the hidden crisis that could divide the clan!

Dong Wu Shang's body swayed a bit. The color of his eyes had changed to that of the Black Saber. He faced upwards, and looked at the sky. He then muttered, "Common people pursue love and romance. But, who would've thought that ruthlessness is the key in this world! Or maybe, the reason why there are so many folklores about love in the world is that it's filled with so much ruthlessness..."

His body suddenly issued an intense saber glow!

His eyes had turned splendid and brilliant.

Epiphany!

The Second Senior Elder was overwhelmed by shock as he looked at Dong Wu Shang. He had great cultivation and vision. Therefore, he could naturally see what was happening to Dong Wu Shang at this moment. [I hadn't expected that Dong Wu Shang's innate talent would be so unimaginable. His mind has received stimulation even in such a hopeless situation. And, he has received an epiphany at such a time!]

"A saber that causes no injuries... how great can it be? The worldly affairs are endless... who can endure to go through so much toil? This single person that flutters all across the Jianghu

changes his way into 'Heartless Saber' from now on!"

Dong Wu Shang faced upwards, and burst into loud laughter. There was endless grief and indignation in his heart even though he was laughing! He suddenly issued a long and loud cry, and slowly recited this poem. But, this wasn't a poem in reality... It was a Secret Saber Art instead!

This was the Secret Saber Art of Dong Wu Shang!

Dong Wu Shang had suddenly experienced an epiphany when he had been attacked and gotten bruised in both body and mind... And, it seemed as if he had become an enlightened being. He had reached to the second grade of Saber Emperor!

His entire body issued intense saber energy. And, the expression in his eyes became increasingly cruel. It became increasingly calm yet increasingly... 'heartless'!

Dong Wu Shang had reached the epiphany of 'No Injuries Saber' at the first grade of Saber Emperor Level. But, the epiphany for his second grade Saber Emperor Level was the 'Heartless Saber'!

His saber would cause 'no injuries'. But, it would also be 'heartless' from now on...

His body then issued cracking sounds. The bone of his chest had been broken, but it miraculously got healed in a split second. He then extended his left hand, and suddenly turned around. Subsequently, he shook his right shoulder. A cracking sound was heard as Dong Wu Shang slowly lifted up his right hand. He then slightly adjusted it.

His shoulder recovered!

He fiercely stamped his right foot on the ground. It issued an earth-shaking loud bang. And, billows of dust flew in all directions like an explosion!

His right leg also recovered...

The overall comprehension of the second grade of Saber Emperor Realm had healed all the injuries on his body. It seemed as if a miracle had occurred. His wounds weren't completely healed, and he wasn't at the peak of his strength. However, he would have no problem when it came to moving his body now. No one – not even Du Liu Feng – would be able to catch him if he were to retreat at this moment.

However, he didn't wish to retreat... He wanted to kill!

His headband fiercely tore open with a bang. And, a head-full of black hair fluttered down, and hung over his shoulder. Dong Wu Shang's tall and sturdy body stood straight and upright. Consequently, everyone in front of him was having all kinds of feelings at once at this time.

It seemed to them as if the person standing in front of them wasn't Dong Wu Shang... He was instead a Demon God who had come from ancient hell. This God was looking down at them disdainfully out of the corner of his eyes... just like he would look down at all the creatures.

Dong Wu Shang looked at these people on whom he had once placed all of his hopes and trust. However, his eyes only contained indifference and mercilessness at this time. He then slowly lifted his right hand... It moved very slowly like an ox climbing a slope. However, his hand left behind a trail of clear afterimages.

Everyone clearly saw that he had lifted his right hand. His right hand was in midair... He then raised it to the level of his shoulder. Then, he further raised his hand up and behind... and then... his right hand grabbed the hilt of the saber.

His hand had grabbed the hilt of the Black Saber that had silently been there on his shoulder this entire time.

The afterimages that his right hand had left were still clearly visible in the front of his body at the time when his right hand gripped the saber hilt. In fact, every level of the afterimages was

clearly visible in sequence!

The fifty-or-sixty people in front of him had felt a sudden jolt in their heart at the time when he had gripped the hilt in his right hand.

It looked as if the boundless sunny and cloudless sky had suddenly turned completely dark!

And, it seemed as if an earth-shaking lightning and thunder had filled up this darkness... It seemed as if the entire sky would be broken by just one lightning strike.

"You're immoral... So, I'm heartless!" Dong Wu Shang bellowed as he suddenly unsheathed the Black Saber.

An earth-shattering black light was slashed out!

The afterimages of him drawing out the saber had still been lingering in front of his chest when he slashed the saber. His saber first smashed those afterimages in front of him. And then, it suddenly pierced through the air in front of him. It streaked across the air horizontally to a distance of eighty feet. The point of the saber went directly to the middle of Du Liu Feng's forehead, and firmly hacked down!

Dong Wu Shang's body arrived in front of Du Liu Feng as soon as he slashed down his saber. However, the blood-drenched Dong Wu Shang was still standing straight and tall eighty feet away! His stature was tall and straight... He was calm like the abyss, and stood as tall as a mountain! It seemed as if he alone could hold his own against ten-thousand people!

Two living Dong Wu Shangs that looked identical seemed to exist between the heaven and earth! However, one was still, while the other was moving...

The 'still' one just stood straight. But, the 'moving' one was killing people!

Du Liu Feng shouted. He instantaneously unleashed his full

strength of eighth grade Emperor Level. However, he didn't move forward... Instead, he fell back. His body fell back three-hundred feet away like a whirlwind along with a sharp whizzing sound.

Dong Wu Shang's saber-blow missed by a bit. However, a deep trace appeared in the ground with a loud bang. It was only one foot in width. But, it was a hundred feet deep... and 250-260 feet long!

The might of the saber was terrifying!

"Attack... all at once! Kill him!" Du Liu Feng shouted in his shrewd voice. A thin and bloody scar had appeared on his forehead, and blood was continuously squirting out of it.

Dong Wu Shang's saber couldn't cut Du Liu Feng. But, the saber energy of Saber Emperor had grazed him. He would perhaps have been chopped into two halves if it had fallen on him a bit more heavily.

Du Liu Feng used his hand to pour his vitality onto the wound bit by bit. However, he couldn't stop the bleeding...

Forty to fifty people of the Dong Clan pounced over crazily as soon as Du Liu Feng shouted. Everyone unsheathed their weapons... All of them had a sharp and murderous aura.

All of them knew, [We all are going to die today if Dong Wu Shang doesn't die!]

After all, they were conducting this assassination in secrecy. And, they would be sentenced to death by the clan in case this matter got exposed.

Dong Wu Shang swept his saber whilst laughing wildly, and said, "No Injuries and Heartless Saber!" Suddenly, a saber light glittered. And, that pitch-black Black Saber in his hand frantically issued a saber-glow... It seemed as if it had issued all the colors in profusion!

The saber-slash swept across like lightning!

Screams repeatedly rose up... The bodies of seven people had already been cut into halves! The smell of blood filled the atmosphere in the battlefield. And, the atmosphere became even more frigid as a result.

Dong Wu Shang wildly laughed. He then took giant steps forward to attack. It seemed on looking at his body as if a towering mountain was moving. He seemed majestic to the point of being insufferably arrogant.

However, a soughing sound gently echoed at this time... Something dark suddenly appeared over his head the next moment. Du Liu Feng had jumped up in the sky... The sword in his hand issued a sharp sword-light. It then fell 'whooshing' upon Dong Wu Shang.

Dong Wu Shang fiercely lifted up his Black Saber. A "buzz~~~" sound was issued as soon as he brandished the saber. And, a jet-black curtain of saber-light was formed from the ground... and, up to the sky! It congealed, and became seemingly tangible.

Clang!

A loud noise was heard as Du Liu Feng was sent out flying into the sky like a bird. He ferociously somersaulted a few times in midair, and then landed on the ground staggering!

Only the sword hilt remained in his hand... The web between his thumb and forefinger had shattered, and was dripping with blood!

However, Dong Wu Shang's body also bent a bit. Consequently, he moved back a dozen or more steps while staggering... He left deep footprints with every step. And, the dust rising from his steps filled the air. This kind of power made it seem as if it weren't two people that had clashed. It instead seemed as if two elephants had rushed at their highest speed, and slammed into each other!

It also seemed as if they had bumped into each other in a desert in which sand could easily arise.

Dong Wu Shang had attacked Du Liu Feng relying upon his strength of second grade Saber Emperor that he had just achieved. And, he had obviously used his more-than-250 kilogram Black Saber as well. However, it had seemed like the clash between two evenly matched opponents. In fact, it even seemed as if Du Liu Feng had fallen into the disadvantageous position. However, Dong Wu Shang's injuries were heavier!

He was a Saber Emperor. So, he should've been far superior to an ordinary Emperor Level Expert.

However, he wasn't strong enough to face an all-out attack of an eighth grade Emperor Level Expert! In fact, the enemy would've posed a serious threat to him if the weight of the Black Saber hadn't counter-balanced the overwhelming strength of the enemy... This strike would've perhaps killed him on the spot in that case.

"Attack right now! He isn't in a good condition! Make his injuries graver! He doesn't have much strength left in him!" Du Liu Feng clenched his teeth and shouted.

.....

Chapter 659: The Assassination of Saber Emperor!

Du Liu Feng couldn't take it... After all, the weapon that had been with him his entire life had gotten destroyed in that collision a moment ago... Moreover, his insides seemed to have been turned over.

The heartless saber energy had wreaked havoc inside his meridians, and had damaged them. In fact, his meridians had been damaged to such an extent that he had dropped the idea to attack again. He just stood there stiff, and tried to melt the saber energy in his meridians. He didn't dare to move even a little.

Du Liu Feng felt afraid in his heart. It was hard to imagine for him that the might of a Saber Emperor could be like this.

Dong Wu Shang had broken through only to the second grade of Saber Emperor Level, whereas Du Liu Feng was an eighth grade Emperor Level Expert. So, Du Liu Feng had initially thought that there wouldn't be a problem in crushing Dong Wu Shang to death.

However, he hadn't expected that Dong Wu Shang's very first attack would be so intense and ruthless that both sides would suffer!

He instantly recalled a legend that he had heard before, [An Emperor Level Expert isn't frightening. What is frightening is a specialist Emperor Level Expert. Saber and Sword Emperors fall into this category. The hegemony of a Saber Emperor and the sharpness of a Sword Emperor allow them to jump levels to kill the enemy. In fact, killing the enemy becomes as easy as cutting vegetables for them!]

[Sure enough!]

The killing intention in Diu Liu Feng's heart increased even more after he thought this. [There's no chance of my survival if Dong

Wu Shang upgrades more... He has only broken through to the second grade of Saber Emperor just a while ago. Moreover, he is seriously injured at the moment. However, he still has such formidable power. What would happen... if he gets completely healed?]

[What if he climbs up to the third grade of Saber Emperor? How powerful would he become then?]

[I can't afford to hesitate even a bit. I must make Dong Wu Shang die a premature death!] Du Liu Feng secretly vowed in his heart.

People are so strange...

He had come to intercept Dong Wu Shang for the Dong Clan. Moreover, he had some intolerance for Dong Wu Shang, but also some admiration. [How rare is it to come across a youngster who is so successful?]

However, he had now discovered that Dong Wu Shang had the ability to kill him. So, he no longer showed that aloof demeanor of a highly talented and experienced individual. His admiration and intolerance had now changed into boundless killing intention!

Such killing intention had nothing to do with the future of Dong Clan. He had such killing intention because his own life was in danger now.

Du Liu Feng had been loyal to the Dong Clan. But, the loyalty of a person gets overshadowed once the dark side of human nature rises!

....

Dong Wu Shang issued a puff sound, and wisps of blood flowed out his mouth and nose. His internal organs had received grave shocks during the sneak attack. More injuries had been added to his previous ones because of the clash between him and Du Liu Feng.

However, Dong Wu Shang didn't stop. He didn't hesitate either...

There was now only one thought in his heart... And, that thought was to kill these people.

[They are the people of Dong Clan!]

[But, I must kill them!]

[That's because my heart is completely broken!]

[I respected you in every way. I didn't encroach on what was yours. Then, why do you still want to kill me?]

[I've been patient and accommodating in all respects. I've revered you since childhood! Then, why do you still wish to kill me?]

[Do you know that I had once pledged that I would risk my life for you if you ever encountered a danger? Do you know that I would've chosen your life if a situation came where only one of us could live? I would've died for you!]

[Elder Brother, do you know it?!]

[Do you know how much you've hurt me this time? You only needed to say one sentence if you wanted me to leave the clan. That's all... I would've obediently left if only you had told me to leave. I wouldn't have fought with you...]

[But, why didn't you say anything? Why did you attack me instead?]

Dong Wu Shang was madly screaming... He was in deep sadness. His eyes had thoroughly turned red. He had almost lost his reasoning. So, he simply rushed forward to face the fifty-to-sixty experts whilst laughing wildly in grief. He rushed over to the experts carrying his big saber!

His long black hair fluttered in the air.

"Die!" Dong Wu Shang bellowed. He suddenly jumped up, and came down whilst slashing his saber! A King Level Expert was cut into two pieces... Blood splattered everywhere!

Dong Wu Shang then slashed his Black Saber horizontally... A

sword in the hand of a King Level Expert shattered with a clanging sound. Then, the expert's hand got smashed... then his arm... then his shoulder... neck, chest, head... He got smashed entirely!

He got smashed into fine pieces by the back of the Black Saber!

Dong Wu Shang wildly laughed, and broke into the crowd in the same manner a maddened tiger breaks into a flock of sheep!

He was confronting fifty to sixty people. Still, he was only attacking... He wasn't defending in any manner!

His former comrades had now become his bitter enemies. And, they were collapsing one after another in front of him. However, a new scar would form on Dong Wu Shang's body every now-and-then. And, blood was unceasingly gushing out of those scars.

However, he was just roaring... It seemed as if he didn't feel pain. He was still vigorously fighting in an extremely heroic and brave manner.

He didn't have the slightest trace of mercy in his eyes!

He had kindness and purity in his eyes initially. However, all of that had changed into indifference and heartlessness now.

He didn't even care about his injuries... He was only recklessly venting his heart's misery.

He suddenly halted the Black Saber with a loud clang! Spark scattered in all directions!

Dong Wu Shang was panting. He then raised his blood-red eyes; they were filled with killing intent.

He looked in his front, and saw that only ten or so people were left... All of them were convulsing with fear while looking at him. He had halted his saber before the Emperor Level Expert who had spoken to him earlier.

That Emperor Level Expert turned his head, and looked. He saw that forty-to-fifty corpses lay on the ground. Those corpses were

mangled... None of them were intact. There was a road dyed with blood behind him!

They had already moved nearly a thousand feet ahead of the Broken Soul Cliff.

The several Emperor Level Experts across from him were scared witless. The present scene before their eyes seemed like a dream to them. In fact, it seemed to be a nightmare!

Dong Wu Shang had brought down forty-to-fifty experts by himself... And, they had been forced to fall back a thousand feet! Moreover, they all had died whilst retreating. Meanwhile, Dong Wu Shang hadn't relaxed a bit. He had chased all the way while killing them!

This slaughter had continued up until now. However, he had now taken advantage of the fact that the enemy's strength had nearly exhausted, and had halted the Black Saber. He was shaking as he vomited blood from his mouth. Only nine people remained out of the sixty people. And, these nine people were shaken or injured... more or less.

They were like a totally defeated army.

[This is Dong Wu Shang's strength in an injured state?!]

Everyone was overwhelmed with shock as they thought this.

Some low-ranked King Level Experts and Revered Martial Artists were in horror. A strange feeling was surging in their hearts, [We would certainly be invincible if... we work as the subordinates of a Clan Lord with such courage, strength, and god-given talent, right? He's so powerful...]

Dong Wu Shang felt that not much strength was left in his body. His vision felt somewhat fuzzy. This was a sign that he had lost too much blood...

He clearly understood that he couldn't go on anymore. However, he wasn't willing to stop. He still hadn't killed all of these men!

He snorted, and slowly retracted the Black Saber. He kept the saber point down, and inserted it in the ground. He held the hilt of the saber with his hand as if the saber was a walking stick. Then, he swept his ice-cold eyes across the several people in front of him.

Then, Dong Wu Shang suddenly laughed out in a grim manner.

The faces of the nine people in front of him had turned deathly pale. Everyone had clearly understood in their hearts, [We nine people would've died by now if Dong Wu Shang had strength left to strike.]

All of them moved a step back... in unison as if by prior agreement when they heard this grim laughter!

[We had miscalculated!]

[Our initial sneak attack was still too gentle. The original plan was...]

[A hundred men of our Dong Clan would come out. Sixty of them would deal with Dong Wu Shang. And, the rest forty people would keep a close watch on the people of Yu Clan. After all, this matter was extremely important. So, we had to be prepared for all aspects!]

[Sixty of our people would ambush here. And, our other forty people would disguise as the people of Yu Clan, and join hands with sixty people of Yu Clan as well as the people of Black Devil Clan to set up an ambush fifty kilometers away. The time and location of their ambush would be different.]

[We would make sure that Dong Wu Shang was left with no strength to move after our assault. Then, we would retreat. And, our people in that other ambush would inform the people of Yu Clan. Then, Yu Clan would inform the people of Black Devil Clan in-return.]

[Then, the Black Devil Clan would come, and tidy up Dong Wu Shang!]

[The people of Black Devil Clan don't know that an internal strife has broken out in the Dong Clan. So, the Black Devil would become the scapegoat when this happened. Our men would then return to the clan. And, we would simply deny if the clan suspected us.]

[We would say — It's true... we didn't kill him! Moreover, Black Devil is wantonly publicizing the fact that they've killed Dong Wu Shang. Can't you hear it?]

[We wouldn't be blamed if everything went smoothly. Eliminating Second Young Master would ensure the Eldest Young Master's position. After that, Dong Clan would outshine others, and develop rapidly.]

[And, Black Devil wouldn't be stupid-enough to betray their ally — the Yu Clan. That's because they would certainly wish to use the Yu Clan to do bigger things... However, the Dong Clan wouldn't give them that kind of opportunity.]

[Therefore, everyone would be delighted, and satisfied. And, no one would suspect us and Yu Clan for Dong Wu Shang's death! We might've had to clash with the Black Devil. However, it wouldn't be a big deal... We would naturally go all-out to kill the enemy...]

However, they hadn't thought that the matter would go beyond their imagination. They had been confident of success. But, they had found themselves in a desperate battle instead!

Moreover, both sides had suffered!

[Dong Wu Shang is so dreadful!] Everyone was regretting their ass-off at this moment!

[We would've killed Dong Wu Shang ourselves, and left his corpse for the Black Devil Clan if we had known earlier...]

[But, it's too late to think all this.]

The nine people of Dong Clan and Dong Wu Shang were facing each other from a distance. Everyone was making the most of their time to regulate their breaths and gather strength. The scene had

suddenly quieted down from the intense battle.

Du Liu Feng had been standing on one side... He hadn't moved in a while, and was still standing in silence. However, the bulged-out muscles on the surface of his body had regained their normal state by now. So, it was evident that he had almost recovered by now.

Dong Wu Shang held the saber's hilt in his hand. He was panting with 'huff and puff' sounds. He circulated his vitality with all his strength. Finally, he firmly looked at the nine people in front of him through his scattered hair. His eyes seemed to be filled with lightening and slaughtering intention!

He heavily stamped his foot, and stepped forward. He pulled out his 285 kilograms Black Saber from the ground with a clang sound, and slowly lifted it up. He puckered up his lips, and exposed a malicious smirk.

The nine people in front of him withdrew a step in synchronized order. In fact, their legs somewhat trembled, and went limp.

Dong Wu Shang's step had revealed the mighty hegemony that could cut through mountains and sweep away the entire world. It was giving them an overwhelming feeling... They felt as if they were facing a God of Death!

Du Liu Feng let out a long cry at this moment... He had finally cleared up the saber energy from within his body. He then suddenly jumped up, "Dong Wu Shang! Second Young Master, may you rest in peace!" His body had jumped up in midair in an instant. He pounced over towards Dong Wu Shang like thunder and lightning!

Dong Wu Shang had lifted up his saber. He exposed a mocking smile from the corner of his mouth.

Suddenly...

A 'shua' sound was heard... It seemed as if a meteor had rushed towards the back of Dong Wu Shang's body! Its speed was so quick

that it issued a sharp sonic boom in the sky. The air friction was leaving a trail of faint white holes because of the dispersion of the wind wherever this meteor was flying over to.

It was a sharp arrow!

Dong Wu Shang felt a crisis approaching his body. And, he didn't have enough time to dodge it since he was too exhausted and weary. But, there was still enough time to turn around. However, the arrow pierced through Dong Wu Shang's vest, and flew out from the right side of his chest with a 'pop'!

The arrow was only half-a-foot long, and as thin as a mosquito. It kept flying out after penetrating through Dong Wu Shang's chest. Then, it deeply penetrated into the middle of the chest of a King Level Expert.

Dong Wu Shang's body shook. He lowered his head, and looked at the blood hole in his chest. He felt somewhat relieved from a burden. He then suddenly let out a long breath, and Black Saber slowly fell... The sword point went down, and got inserted into the ground. He held the hilt with both his hands, and exposed an apologetic smile from the corner of his mouth.

[I'm sorry Big Brother. I'm sorry my brothers. I couldn't go back...]

....

Chapter 660: Black Devil! Lurking Behind like an Oriole!

Du Liu Feng quickly pounced over. His eyes were full of delight and tyrannical cruelty.

However, something happened at this moment when his body had just jumped up...

A black shadow suddenly flashed out of the woods like a ghost in his background! It then took three big strides, and appeared right behind Du Liu Feng's body like a meteor. Then, two iron hands were heavily slammed on Du Liu Feng's back in his most happy moment.

This heavy blow had been executed in midair. However, it still made a loud thunderous noise. It caused an air explosion, and even set off shock waves in the air!

Du Liu Feng screamed. He then used both of his hands to grasp backwards with all his strength. Not enough time had passed since the enemy had hit him. So, Du Liu Feng hadn't been sent flying away yet. He caught the arms of the enemy behind him in that split-second, and made a counter-offensive with all his strength!

The bodies of the two people seemed to have been fastened together as one... That violent attack finally played its role at this moment... Du Liu Feng faced upwards to roar, but ended up spouting a blood rain everywhere.

And, the bodies of the two went flying out together like a meteor.

Or so to say, Du Liu Feng went flying out, but the person who had attacked him was also taken along by him.

That man screamed in alarm... Both of his hands had been caught at the same time. He was trying his best to break free. Du Liu Feng let out a hateful scream at this moment, "Black Devil!" He was in panic because he was aware of the violent storm that had befallen

him.

It was a black-masked man who had been taken away by Diu Liu Feng.

This black-masked man was the Heavenly Assassin of the Black Devil Clan! His cultivation was inferior to an Eight Grade Emperor Expert like Du Liu Feng. However, it wasn't far behind.

Moreover, his stealth skills and his ability to use a sneak attack to assassinate were especially outstanding. He had hidden in the woods, launched an attack from there, and unexpectedly succeeded at the first attempt!

Though, it was a pity that he had ended up getting himself caught.

The two were closely entangled in midair... They were like a pair of hoodlums engaged in a fight. They were wildly hitting each other without the least bit of technique.

Then, the two of them simultaneously released their domain-fields. Consequently, their domain-fields cancelled each other out, and changed into nothingness!

Then, it came down to a sincere brawl. It started with kicks...

Fists, feet, teeth, elbows, knees, shoulders, waist, and hips... all of them were used for attacking... even the head!

The Black Devil expert was trying his utmost to break free. However, it seemed that Du Liu Feng would stake his life to drag him down with himself. Diu Liu Feng had suffered a major blow... So, he would have no martial strength left even if he were to survive. So, it was better go out with a bang!

Some people might ask that Black Devil expert why he hadn't attacked when Du Liu Feng had been regulating his breathing to dispel the saber energy... After all, wouldn't attacking him at that time have been more convenient?

However, it was somewhat hard to say whether it would've truly been more convenient. Du Liu Feng had been regulating his breathing at that time since the saber energy had severely damaged his meridians. However, he would've naturally risen vigorously to counterattack if the enemy had launched a deadly attack at him at that time. He would've staked his seriously hurt meridians just to kill the enemy!

Besides, he was most vigilant during the healing time. And, this meant that this Black Devil hadn't had the assurance of a sure-shot kill. Therefore, he had been silently waiting for the right opportunity. However, Du Liu Feng hadn't been vigilant when he had finally set out after getting fully healed. In fact, he had been rather happy since the victory was within his grasp. The best time to launch a fatal strike on someone is when they are confident of their victory... That's because that is when they are most vulnerable!

The two men's bodies were entangled as they rolled down... The two of them looked badly mangled when they finally crashed on the ground. Both of them fiercely spouted mouthfuls of blood.

Two majestic Emperor Experts — one of eighth grade and the other of seventh grade — had crashed on the ground, and blood had splattered out from all parts of their bodies. The sound of snapping of bones resounded unceasingly. It was hard to tell how many bones had simultaneously cracked in their bodies with the fall.

Both of them let out one last bellow. Then, they both turned their heads, and opened their mouths revealing their eerie blood-stained teeth. They then bit each other's throat at the same time!

Neither of them had bothered to dodge or back off. That's because they both knew that they had no hope of survival. So, they had dragged each other down before dying!

Spurt! Spurt!

Blood gushed out from the throats of the two men at the same time. Then, the two took their last breath at the same time...

They both died a violent death!

Dong Wu Shang just stood motionless... He didn't bother about the blood splashing out of the wound on his back. His face was full of derision.

There was a mark on his chest. This mark had been made by Chu Yang for the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. And, Dong Wu Shang was well aware that there was a medicinal pill in this mark.

[Big Brother had once said that — Take this medicine... as long as the heart is not impaled... and as long as the head isn't exploded or chopped off... and you'll be cured in no time!]

Dong Wu Shang had known this all along, but he still hadn't thought about taking this medicine.

And, that's because his heart was already dead!

It had been broken into pieces!

His elder brother wanted him dead... He had sent all of the experts under his control to deal with him. This had been too big a blow to take. So, the good-will in his heart had been entirely crushed.

"Father, you're the Clan Lord. You don't know about such a big operation?" Dong Wu Shang silently asked. The tears nearly flowed out again, but he forcibly held them in.

"Even you don't want me?"

The Dong Clan had strict rules and regulations. And, the management of the personnel was also very strict. Dong Wu Shang knew this all too well. The clan had to be aware if such a large number of people had come out regardless of the reason behind it.

Otherwise, they couldn't have gotten out of the Dong Clan's front door.

Therefore, Dong Wu Shang was even more in despair.

[What's the point in living-on if it's truly like this? What do I go on living for?]

[The education that I've received since childhood is for the clan. Everything I do is for the clan. My efforts in all these years are for the clan. Even following Big Brother is also somewhat for the clan. After all, Big Brother has told us to take our clans, and rush to the top of the Nine Heavens!]

[I wanted to take Dong Clan to the Upper Three Heavens!]

[It's unfortunate that you people didn't give me an opportunity to do so.]

[Who do I fight for after today? Who do I stake everything for? Who do I work hard for? My very own father doesn't care whether I live or die! Even my blood brother wants to get rid of me as quickly as possible.]

[Is there any reason for me to go on living?]

Dong Wu Shang forced a smile. It was a mirthless smile which contained a trace of despair. It was smile that showed his hopelessness. He could easily take out the medicinal pill at any time, and could get healed up in a moment. In fact, the Black Devils wouldn't be able to stop Dong Wu Shang from reinstating his strength even if they had ten times the manpower!

However, Dong Wu Shang refused to use the pill!

He just wanted to die... That's all!

...

"Ha ha ha... It's very entertaining. I hadn't thought that I'd get to see such a good show of a fierce battle between two evenly matched opponents!" a gloomy and sinister voice came from far away. This voice contained an unmitigated excitement and complacency.

"Moreover, this good show is that of an internal strife! This makes me even more excited."

A black figure came over from far away along with this voice... This person was slowly walking with swagger. He had a sort of proud and carefree air about him. This man was dressed entirely in black... He was clad in a long black robe. He also wore a black mask on his face. He was walking on the road, but it seemed as if his feet weren't touching the ground.

There were more than forty black-clothed men behind him. All of them seemed to be covered in blood... Some of them were wounded as well. However, all of them had a look of triumph in their eyes as they gazed at Dong Wu Shang and the nine remaining experts of Dong Clan standing in front of them.

They were in a position to be proud...

After all, the enemies before them had no power left to fight back. They were basically waiting to be beheaded with their necks outstretched... They posed no threat.

The strongest enemy expert of Eighth Grade Emperor Level had already become a pile of rotten meat on the ground. They had also lost a top-level assassin of Seventh Grade Emperor Level.

However, it was still worth it.

The remaining nine people of Dong Clan were dumbstruck.

There was a look of deep despair on their faces.

That Emperor Level Expert of Dong Clan suddenly shouted loudly as his body trembled once, "Black Devil!"

That black-clothed man let out a sinister laugh. This laughter was indeed sinister. Still, the delight present in it was pretty obvious. He slowly took a step forward, and elegantly said, "The glorious Dong Clan is famous for its fighting prowess in the whole land... So, I hadn't expected that it would have heard the name of Black Devil. You're right... I'm the next Black Devil of the Black

Devil Clan! You people can call me... Young Master Devil."

"Young Master Devil?" that Emperor Expert of Dong Clan repeated. Then, his body suddenly shook as he shouted, "Where are our people? Where are the Yu Clan's people? You... Black Devil, how did you get here? Where are our people?!"

Young Black Devil looked astonished as he said, "Your people? Ah ha ha... So, your people were also there? You should go and search if your people have gone missing. Why ask me? How would I know?"

That Emperor Expert snorted, and bitterly said, "Where are the Yu Clan's people?"

"The Yu Clan's people...? The Yu Clan's people aren't surnamed Dong. So, you don't need to ask about them." Young Black Devil burst into loud laughter, "However, I'll make an exception, and give you a reply since you people look so pitiful."

He then shook his head, and said, "Are you asking about those hundred people of Yu Clan? Humph, they dared to sell out someone from the family of their own son-in-law. And, I've always despised such ingrates. So, I did you people a big favor, and slaughtered them all. I chopped off their heads!"

He chuckled, and continued, "It just so happens that many of them were listed in the hit-list of our Black Devil Clan. So, I brought back their heads as proof of the kill after I butchered them. You... Do you want to have a look?"

That Emperor Expert's body shook for a while, and his face turned deathly pale. He then opened his mouth, but couldn't speak. He only threw up blood from his mouth.

"Black Devil... You! You...!" He pointed at the Black Devil, but couldn't say a word. He just kept vomiting blood.

[It's over... It's all over.]

[Only sixty people had come from the Yu Clan, but the Black

Devil has killed more than hundred people. So, it's obvious that the rest forty people were the ones from the Dong Clan.]

[Our only hope is gone...]

"Black Devil?" Dong Wu Shang seemed to have responded only now. His body sluggishly turned a little. He then looked at the Young Black Devil, and his eyes lit up, "It's you?!"

Young Black Devil sighed, and exclaimed, "Brother Dong!"

Dong Wu Shang had turned around whilst leaning on his saber. He then coldly asked in a calm and steady voice, "You've come to kill me?"

"Correct!" Young Black Devil faced upward, and heaved a deep sigh, "I hadn't thought that I would encounter this situation. However, I feel grateful for this situation, Brother Dong. I had watched your battle from the beginning to end, and discovered that... I'm inferior to you!"

He laughed... This laughter was also sinister. However, it was full of disappointment as well as reverence, "I'm afraid that you would've broken out of our siege unscathed had I been directly pitted against you. Moreover, there would've been serious casualties on my side in that case."

Dong Wu Shan's body just swayed a bit. But, he didn't say anything.

"I'm sorry, Brother Dong. I can't have a fair fight with you... even though I truly wanted that." Young Black Devil said solemnly, "I must kill you today! But, I want to show my respect for you... So, I'll first kill these nine people, and then kill you! That way I'll help you take revenge on your enemies before you die... That way you can die contentedly, and rest in peace in the afterlife!"

Dong Wu Shang was sad, but he still laughed. He then said in a ridiculing manner, "So, the Black Devil wants to take unfair advantage of our internal strife. Ha ha ha... It's laughable... It's

truly laughable! Revenge, you say...? Humph, you think I need 'you' to take revenge for me?"

...

Chapter 661: You're Not a Hero!

Dong Wu Shang was sad, but he still laughed. He then said in a ridiculing manner, "So, the Black Devil wants to take unfair advantage of our internal strife. Ha ha ha... It's laughable... It's truly laughable! Revenge, you say...? Humph, you think I need 'you' to take revenge for me?"

Young Black Devil was startled by this. He then carefully looked at Dong Wu Shang's chest as well as the injuries on the rest of his body... He was sure that there was no strength left in Dong Wu Shang. So, he said whilst being puzzled, "Brother Dong, don't tell me that you want to take the revenge personally in your current state."

Dong Wu Shang chokingly coughed, and laughed... He steadied his body whilst laughing. Then, he raised his head, and disdainfully looked at the Young Black Devil from the outer corner of his saber-point-like eyes.

Then, he fully circulated his primary martial strength... He was continuous bleeding and his vitality was being drained. However, he seemed to be disregarding this fact. His body gradually emitted a unique Saber Emperor imposing aura along with the circulation of his cultivation method!

He was unable to move, but he had still issued an imposing aura at this moment... This frightened the Young Black Devil.

Dong Wu Shang was dying of his severe injuries, but he had still issued such a splendid imposing aura... In fact, this aura was no different from his peak level aura!

He was still looking down on the world from the outer corner of his eyes... as if he was still the tyrannical hero of Jianghu!

His body couldn't stop swaying, but he still looked like an unshakable tall mountain in the eyes of these Black Devil assassins.

This was his innate heroic and indomitable spirit. It was the tyranny that was rooted deep in his bones!

Even death couldn't rob him of these traits...

These cold-blooded killers couldn't help exposing an expression of admiration in their eyes as they faced such a heroic personality.

Dong Wu Shang faintly smiled. Then, he looked at Young Black Devil whilst squinting, and involuntarily gave him a disdainful look. He then said with a little regret, "Therefore, you're not a hero!" There was a hint of mockery in his mannerism.

"I'm not a hero?" Young Black Devil was startled. He muttered whilst repeating Dong Wu Shang's words. He was puzzled, "Brother Dong, please help me understand."

"I'm dying because I want to die. Therefore, I don't need anyone to take revenge for me." Dong Wu Shang laughed out loud, and proudly said, "No one in this world can make Dong Wu Shang die if he doesn't want to! Do you understand?"

Young Black Devil wrinkled his brows. He pondered for a while, and said, "I understand this... I also understand why you haven't escaped from here yet. And, I also understand why you want to die. It's because you've already died in your heart!"

"That's right." Dong Wu Shang laughed at himself, "Moreover, there are some people who will inevitably avenge me even if I don't want anyone's help in this matter! However, they are qualified enough to take revenge for me. But you... you are not!"

Young Black Devil stared at him, and sinisterly said, "I'm not qualified?"

"Yes. You are not worthy! You don't deserve to take revenge for me!" Dong Wu Shang said with a disdainful smile, "You're only a murderer who stays in the dark, and doesn't dare to come out in the light... That's all. I – Dong Wu Shang – have always run amuck in the world whilst being straightforward and upright. So, do you

think that a person like you is qualified to take revenge for me?"

Young Black Devil firmly looked at him... The ominous glint in his eyes was becoming more and more intense. It seemed that he was about to fly into a rage out of humiliation, and attack.

Dong Wu Shang had an unchanging expression in his eyes. There was still pride and disdain in his eyes.

The two were looking each other in the eye... A long while passed like this. Then, Young Black Devil took a few heavy and quick breaths. He then lowered his head in disappointment, and smiled bitterly, "Yes. I'm not worthy."

He somewhat enviously said, "I guess... only King of Hell Chu and Gu Du Xing are qualified to take revenge for you, right? I truly don't deserve it. What you've said is right. That's because I'm just a murderer who remains hidden in the dark and nothing more."

Young Black Devil chuckled, and insipidly said, "However, I can't do anything about it. Dong Wu Shang, you wouldn't have been so heroic and imposing if you had been in my place!"

Young Black Devil seemed to have found a justification for how he was as he spoke. His voice had calmed down as a result.

"One's origins don't determine whether one can be a hero or not!" Dong Wu Shang sneered at him, and said, "You're trying to look for a justification to absolve yourself... This is not the conduct of a hero!"

"Are Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing heroes?" Young Black Devil seemed somewhat unconvinced.

Dong Wu Shang's eyes lit up as soon as he heard him saying the names of Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing. They then turned deep black.

"Yes! They are my brothers. And, they are the best brothers! Therefore, they are worthy to take revenge for me," Dong Wu Shang proudly said.

"He he, but I still don't get it. Why don't you want to live if you have the best brothers in the world?" Young Black Devil asked in a criticizing manner, "Don't you fear that your brothers will be sad and broken-hearted after you're gone?"

"I also want to be with them... But, I can't," these words of Dong Wu Shang were clearly not an answer to Young Black Devil's question. It instead seemed like he was giving an explanation to his brothers... He had said these words to convince himself... He had said these words so that the heaven and the earth would be a testament to his confession.

His voice seemed somewhat ethereal and somewhat sorrowful, "It's because I've already died in my heart... There would only be darkness in my heart if I continue to live. And, I wouldn't be able to get rid of it for my entire life! Therefore, I wouldn't be able to keep pace with my brothers. I know what I care about the most. So, I won't be able to control myself from thinking these things. Therefore, I've lost my will to live. I would only be an endless burden on my brothers if I live further."

Dong Wu Shang faintly smiled. He then looked at Young Black Devil with pity, "You know... my brothers have the potential to fly to the top of the Nine Heavens. So, how can I become a burden for them? Do I deserve to live if I can only be a burden on my brothers?"

"My brothers might not care, but I – Dong Wu Shang – would!"

"Therefore, I sympathize with you Black Devil... because you don't even have real brothers. You wouldn't have asked me this if you had such brothers!"

Dong Wu Shang looked at him with disdain.

Suddenly, the sinister aura around the Young Black Devil's entire body grew thicker... It seemed that Dong Wu Shang's taunting words had hit him directly on his sore spot.

However, he only fiercely panted... He didn't say anything. He just began to ponder.

"My brothers will be sad on my death. But, they will take revenge for me... My death will arouse their fighting spirit. And, it will make them more united. It will make them treasure each other even more. It will make them work harder. It will make them attain bigger accomplishments!" Dong Wu Shang insipidly said, "So, what harm is there in dying if I die content like this?"

"I don't have brothers. So, I can't feel this. But, I'm very envious." Black Devil's voice was somewhat deep and low. He further said in a gentle and reserved manner, "But, I'm an assassin who can't appear in light... Don't you think it would be too weird... if I have brothers?"

Dong Wu Shang looked at him in a strange manner, "Is there a relation between... you having brothers and being an assassin who can't come out in light?"

"Is there a relation you ask...? Is there no relation?" Young Black Devil's heart beat loudly as he slowly said. A long while passed. Then, he lifted up his head. "There may be no relation, and I don't have any brothers. But, what does it have to do with being a hero? Why did you say that I'm not a hero?"

He became somewhat excited, and said, "I'm a killer, and I can't appear in light. But, I can still be a hero. It's just that my understanding of 'hero' might not be the same as yours. Moreover, this is Jianghu. Don't you know what Jianghu is? It's slaughter! It's bloodbath! Why did you say that I'm not a hero?"

"I've taken advantage of someone to kill you. Could it be that it was unheroic? Should I have waited for you to restore your strength and kill me? Would that have made me a hero?"

He asked very anxiously, very quickly, and very incisively.

"You have no idea what 'hero' means," Dong Wu Shang chuckled.

He looked upwards, and sighed, "Never mind... You're the last person I'm speaking with in this world. So, I'll say a few more words to you. Otherwise, I'll have too much silence on my road to the Netherworlds.

"You had said that you would first take revenge for me... He-he," Dong Wu Shang sneered, "You want to kill them? Go ahead! What does this have to do with me? This is the first thing...

"The second thing is that they are the people of my Dong Clan. My clan wants to eliminate me, and they have plotted against me... However, this is still the matter of my Dong Clan! How is this any of your business?

"Third... No one can say anything if I kill them. But, do you think I would condone an outsider killing the people of my Dong Clan?" Dong Wu Shang sneered, "I'll kill you if you want to kill them... After all, I still haven't been evicted from my clan. So, I'm still a man of the Dong Clan. And, I'm their Second Young Master even if they want to kill me!

"You want to kill them for me? Did you ask me?!" Dong Wu Shang continued to sneer, "Its fine if they die under my saber! In fact, I would've taken them down along with me today if you hadn't come. And, I would proceed to kill them even if I kill you. However, they can't die at your hands as long as I'm alive!

"Who the hell do you think you are?" Dong Wu Shang laughed out loud, "You dare to kill the people of my Dong Clan?!"

Young Black Devil's face was covered with mask. But, one could clearly see that he was stunned at the moment. That's because his eyes had almost popped out of their sockets, and a crater had appeared on his mask at the spot covering his mouth.

He absolutely hadn't expected that Dong Wu Shang's reasoning would be such.

[But... what kind of reasoning is this?]

[Those people were about to kill him just a while ago. And, he was also killing them as if chopping vegetables. But, he doesn't allow me to kill those people?!]

[How can such reasoning exist in this world?]

However, he didn't know Dong Wu Lei's view on Dong Wu Shang. Otherwise, he would've probably sighed, and said, [These two deserve to be called brothers!]

Their nature of using flawed justification was exactly the same!

In fact, Dong Wu Shang was even better at it than his elder brother!

Dong Wu Shang's nature of hiding the flaw in his logic was to such an extent that it was simply outrageous!

"You're... such a strange man!" Young Black Devil sinisterly smiled. He continued to heave low sighs. Then, he said, "Anyone would be lucky to have a brother like you."

Dong Wu Shang took a deep breath, and his body stopped shaking. Then, a brilliant light flashed in his eyes as he proudly said, "Indeed... It is because you haven't met my brothers. You don't know what all we have experienced together. Otherwise, you would've known that having brothers like them is the luckiest thing in life!"

Young Black Devil was speechless.

"Anyone would be lucky to be your brother. In fact, anyone would be lucky to be just your subordinate." Young Black Devil remained silent for a long while after he said this... Then, he eventually opened his mouth again, and said, "I'm very touched!"

He lifted his head, and his eyes somewhat flickered, "But, it's a pity that you will die today! I don't want to kill you. But, I have no other choice but to do so!"

The nine experts behind Dong Wu Shang said in a trembling

voice at this moment, "Second Young Master!"

"Shut up!" Dong Wu Shang coldly shouted, "You people will die in any event!"

"We'll die... But, we won't die for nothing." The nine experts behind Dong Wu Shang suddenly stuck out their chest. They had originally thought that they were certainly going to die. But, a heat had started to stream in their bodies when they had heard Dong Wu Shang's words.

[We still have someone to protect us even if we die.]

[He'll kill us... But, he is a man of our Dong Clan at the end of the day!]

Conflicting expressions were continuously clashing in Young Black Devil's fluid eyes. He clearly looked hesitant as he looked into Dong Wu Shang's eyes. He also looked somewhat perturbed.

However, he eventually waved his hand, and shouted, "Attack! Kill!"

...

Chapter 662: Life and Death, Elder Brother and Younger Brother!

Young Black Devil closed his eyes, and turned around after he issued the command. Apparently, he didn't have the heart to witness Dong Wu Shang getting dismembered.

Dong Wu Shang sneered. Then, he slowly lifted up his big saber from the ground... The saber's edge seemed cold and ominous!

[This fight is the last fight of my life!]

He slowly said, "Black Devil, won't you take my life with your own hands?"

A conflicted look flashed in Young Black Devil's eyes. He then sinisterly said, "I don't dare to."

He had said these words in a sinister manner. However, they were very honest... They weren't sarcastic in any way.

He didn't dare... He truly didn't dare! It was because the present Dong Wu Shang could erupt, and launch an attack at any time. Also, it would be his final strike!

Dong Wu Shang might die immediately after that attack. But, Young Black Devil still wouldn't be able to avoid sustaining injuries. Moreover, those injuries would be very severe!

Dong Wu Shang burst into laughter as he slowly lifted his saber to his chest. Then, he faced upwards, and let out a long cry. He then said, "I'm on the verge of departing from life and death. But, I – Dong Wu Shang – am truly honored by these words of yours!"

"You don't dare?!"

"You don't dare?!"

"Hahahaha... then who dares?"

Dong Wu Shang roared. He opened his eyes wide, and then

ferociously stamped his foot forward... A divine ray burst in his eyes! Then, he coldly glanced at the crowd of Black Devil Clan's experts in front of him.

Young Black Devil's face was covered with a mask, but it had turned red in shame!

There were more than sixty high-level killers of Black Devil Clan in front of Dong Wu Shang. But, all of them were afraid of his imposing aura. All of them suddenly found themselves shaking with fear in their hearts. They felt as if their heart had suddenly skipped a beat. They all took a step back in unison... as if by prior agreement. They couldn't help but expose a look of fright in their eyes.

Dong Wu Shang was on the verge of death. But, his prestige was still suppressing more than sixty top-notch killers. None of them dared to take a step forward!

"Who dares?"

Dong Wu Shang again roared. He then again took a step forward! His black hair which had gotten dyed in blood fiercely flew upwards. They danced in the wind with fluttering sounds. He looked like a Devil God at this moment!

The subordinates of Black Devil took another step back...

They desperately wanted to stand firm on the ground... They even wanted to go forward, and face the enemy... These people were killers. They weren't considered as normal people. Who among them had ever feared death? However, they couldn't step forward at this moment; no matter what. They were eager to step forward in their heart, but their feet just wouldn't move. Instead, their feet were moving backwards...

Some of them wanted to let out a battle cry to boost their morale. But, they found that words weren't coming out of their mouth.

Dong Wu Shang's earth-shattering imposing aura was deterring

them from having any thoughts of resistance!

"Who dares?! Who dares to have a fight with me – Dong Wu Shang?" Dong Wu Shang roared. He again took a step forward with a 'bang'. Then, he suddenly burst into loud laughter. "Ha ha ha ha... This is very entertaining!"

Young Black Devil felt as if he was looking at a deity as he looked at Dong Wu Shang. Suddenly, his mind shook... His eyes were somewhat enchanted at this moment!!

[He's a hero!]

[He's an unrivalled champion!]

Black Devil had a feeling about Dong Wu Shang at this moment [Let's say the sky collapses at this moment... Then, Dong Wu Shang would chop it into two halves with his saber!]

[A man who can have a spirit like that of Dong Wu Shang would be a real man... The life of such a man wouldn't be in vain!]

[However, it's a pity that such a hero will die at our hands. Moreover, he would die an untimely death. I must say that I'll regret this!]

"Dong Wu Shang, you're incredible... You have a good spirit!" Young Black Devil completely mobilized his martial power to praise him with a thunderclap-like voice.

This explosive shout severed Dong Wu Shang's rainbow-like imposing aura across the middle!

After all, Dong Wu Shang was already weak and exhausted.

More than sixty experts of the Black Devil Clan seemed to have been awakened from a dream at the same time. Everyone exposed a humiliated and angry expression. Therefore, all of them let out a cry in unison.

"Attack!" Young Black Devil faced upwards, and exclaimed.

More than sixty experts rushed forth towards Dong Wu Shang at

the same time.

Dong Wu Shang burst into loud laughter. "Come on!" He straightened his saber, and rushed out taking big steps. He was seriously wounded. So, he couldn't jump. But, he had such a fearless stance while taking those big steps that it seemed as if a mountain was striding over a sea!

His one step led to creation!

And, the other led to destruction!

Both sides were soon going to engage in a fierce close-quarters fight. An intense look of ruthlessness flashed through Dong Wu Shang's eyes... Then, a sharp saber-beam flashed as he lifted up his 285 kilograms Black Saber!

...

Sounds of rapid hoof-beats suddenly rose up like rolling thunder from far away!

These sounds were rapid like a gale of wind, and dense like downpour!

One could tell only by listening to these sounds that the person on the horseback was anxious like anything at this moment.

All of the people who were just about to fight felt a shock in their hearts... A man was riding over from a faraway place like whirlwind. The man anxiously screamed before arriving at the battlefield, "Wu Shang!~~~~"

This scream came from the distance like a thunderclap, and echoed in all directions.

This voice had anxiety, heartache, fright, worry, love, and doting... It had all kinds of sentiments. And, these emotions were seemingly embodied in this scream.

This scream was simply a fusion of all kinds of good and bad emotions of life!

Dong Wu Shang raised his head. He then incredulously looked into the distance at the man riding over, and his eyes emitted brilliance. The lifeless expression in his eyes immediately regained a little vitality!

The horse arrived rapidly like a dragon, and stopped near Dong Wu Shang. Then, a man jumped off the horse with flying speed. He then turned towards the fifty to sixty people, and insipidly swept his eyes through them. Then, he walked taking giant steps to the middle of the battlefield; it seemed as if he had completely ignored those people.

He acted as though there was nobody else present on the scene.

It was Dong Wu Lei!

Several killers of Black Devil coldly snorted. They were going to set into action.

Young Black Devil issued a dazzling glint from his eyes. Then, he waved his hand, and snorted.

Consequently, those killers of the Black Devil remained still out of fear... They all shrank back.

Dong Wu Shang looked at his elder brother coming towards him from the front... He suddenly became very emotional. It seemed as if this was something he had been hoping for. [Is this real?]

Dong Wu Lei wasn't worried. He passed by the crowd with his nose in the air. He strode over to the front of Dong Wu Shang, and stopped. Then, he swept his sharp vision on Dong Wu Shang's body from top to bottom. Consequently, he swallowed a little saliva with a gulp sound. Then, he averted his eyes. Expressions of heartache and anxiety swept past his eyes. But, he hastily restrained them. He then said in a forcefully controlled and calm voice, "Who did this?! Who injured my brother?"

These words made Dong Wu Shang shiver. He felt a lump in his throat. His frozen heart became warm within an instant! He was

unable to control his overwhelming sentiments now.

He remembered the time when he was young... He would willfully make trouble and lose in fights, and his elder brother would always promptly rush to him to take a look at his injuries. And then, his elder brother would ask in grief... as if he himself had been in pain, "Who did this? Who hurt my brother?"

[I haven't heard these words since I turned 16!]

[But, I've finally heard them again today!]

Dong Wu Shang suddenly felt weak. God knows when the word 'weak' had faded out from Dong Wu Shang's life. However, he suddenly felt like sobbing loudly...

This was simply an unimaginable thing for a guy like Dong Wu Shang who had always been as strong as iron. However, he truly felt a lump in his throat at this moment. He was unable to control the tears welling up in his eyes.

The remaining nine experts of Dong Clan shivered behind Dong Wu Shang. They were somewhat happy and somewhat worried. They were also somewhat puzzled.

[What's happening...? Why has the Eldest Young Master rushed to this place? Enemies are everywhere now. And, Dong Clan doesn't have enough military strength. But, he has still come here alone. Why would he do something like this?]

[Moreover... it's strange. Could it be that Eldest Young Master hadn't known about the ambush for Second Young Master... Could it be that he's against it? But... But, Young Clan Lady...]

They were confused. They were utterly confused!

"Black Devil! I want to dress my younger brother's wounds. Kill us after a while if you wish to do so!" Dong Wu Lei looked at Dong Wu Shang, but remained standing with his back towards Black Devil. Then, he solemnly said without turning his head, "Only I have come from amongst the important members of the clan. So,

you can rest assured... There won't be any issue. You can wait while I hurriedly finish it. Tell me, are you okay with this?"

Young Black devil felt as if he had been put in a spot. He swallowed down saliva. He didn't know why the rims of his eyes had become somewhat moist. However, he still heaved a deep breath, and said in his usual sinister voice, "He's going to die anyway. So, what is the need of dressing his wounds? Would he not turn into a corpse if you dress his wounds?"

Dong Wu Lei tore a piece of cloth from the hem of his robe with a screeching sound. He then hurriedly went to dress Dong Wu Shang's wounds. He insipidly said whilst doing so, "I know that we'll die in a while. But, that's a different matter... I must dress my brother's wounds as long as I'm alive. This bastard doesn't take care of himself. He doesn't know how to stop the bleeding. But, I'll be his elder brother even if we both meet our ancestors in the Netherworlds together. So, what would I do if the ancestors ask me why my younger brother looks so miserable? Wouldn't I — his elder brother — lose face?"

"I have to dress my younger brother's wounds even if we're both going to die soon!" Dong Wu Lei indifferently said, "It is my responsibility to take care of my brother. I can't get rid of this responsibility even after death... no matter if I envy him very much... or if I want him to disappear."

Dong Wu Shang wanted to say something. But, he felt his throat to be completely choked with emotions. He was unable to say a word.

Young Black Devil quietly watched them for a while. Then, he said in a hoarse voice, "Alright! This being the case... you brothers have fifteen minutes."

Dong Wu Lei stopped. Then, he said in a low and deep voice, "Black Devil, you deserve to be called a hero among killers!"

Young Black Devil unexpectedly felt very comfortable in his

heart as he heard these words.

He bitterly smiled in his heart, and thought... [Your younger brother had told me that I'm not a hero just a while ago. He had cursed and berated me. You could've done that too. But, you did the exact opposite of that. You called me a hero. You didn't completely acknowledge me as a hero... You only called me a hero among killers... You clearly held back. But, you were at least more polite than your younger brother.]

He asked after he thought this, "Dong Wu Lei, are you a hero?"

Dong Wu Lei replied without turning his head, "No, I'm not. Heroes die very quickly... just like this stupid Dong Wu Shang! I'm not a hero... I can be considered as a... far-fetched, ambitious, and ruthless personality who isn't qualified enough."

Dong Wu Lei truly wasn't a hero. He had been jealous of his own blood brother, and had pushed him away. He had always fought for power and profit in the clan. And, he had exerted all of his strength to make schemes! How could a person with such behavior be considered as a hero?

However, he wasn't just ambitious and ruthless. After all, ambitious and ruthless people would never insist like he had just done... Dong Wu Shang had been on the verge of death when Dong Wu Lei had approached the battlefield. Also, the Black Devil Clan's people had completely surrounded him... Therefore, Dong Wu Lei should've taken a prompt decision, and retreated at once if he were truly an ambitious and ruthless character... He should've thought of saving his own life first no matter how sad he would've felt at that time.

However, Dong Wu Lei hadn't thought about his life, and had rushed over instead. That's because he had suddenly forgotten everything when he had seen his own brother tottering and covered with bloodstains as if he would die the next moment...!

He had forgotten power... He had forgotten profits... He had

forgotten status!

....

Chapter 663: Dong Wu Lei's Negotiations

Dong Wu Lei had only had one thought in his heart during that moment, [This is my younger brother! I won't let him die even if I myself die! And, I'll die together with him if his death is certain!]

[That's because my younger brother is too young... He can't go alone on the road to afterlife... He might feel scared there.]

Therefore, Dong Wu Lei had impulsively rushed over to his younger brother's side even though he had always been jealous and suspicious of him.

[I want no tears for myself, but I also want him to have no injuries!]

...

Young Black Devil heard Dong Wu Lei's words, and became silent... Any person who understood Young Black Devil would've found out that this future ruler of the world of assassins was silently smiling.

Dong Wu Lei had begun to quickly bandage Dong Wu Shang's wounds. He tore off piece after piece of his soft underclothes, and bandaged his younger brother. Consequently, this immaculately dressed Eldest Young Master of Dong Clan was soon in rags.

The people of Black Devil Clan were silently watching the two brothers in the field... One of the two stood upright and motionless, and had tears in his eyes... The other was busy at work. He was carefully and unceasingly dressing the wounds. He was doing so very gently and with utmost care.

However, Young Black Devil hadn't given any command. Therefore, no one had dared to set into action. Besides, the Dong brothers were already trapped. They just couldn't escape. So, there was no need to hurry for the time being.

Dong Wu Lei's heart sank while he dressed his younger brother's

wounds... A cry of despair had welled up in his heart.

The wounds of big or medium sizes on Dong Wu Shang's body were nearly a hundred in number! The most serious one was the bloody hole in his chest; it had linked his front to his back! Then, there was the injury caused by the fist blow to his waist. The spot of impact had concaved in, and the area around it had swollen outwards.

[This is a serious internal injury!]

Dong Wu Lei's hands were trembling. He'd had some hope initially, [Younger brother is a rare martial arts genius. He's the only Saber Emperor in his generation! He can escape if his wounds are dressed properly. My nine subordinates and I will go all-out to defend the rear. And, this will provide Dong Wu Shang with an opportunity to rush out of here.]

However, he had given up all hope now.

[It's already a miracle that Dong Wu Shang didn't die on the spot with such injuries! He might die if he tries to push himself. Then, there will be no way to save him!]

[He'll undoubtedly die!]

Dong Wu Lei's breathing was getting rougher and heavier. He was snorting more and more heavily... like a bull. He was trying his best to restrain his sadness and heartache, but he still couldn't do so. He only felt more and more tight and sorrowful in his chest. He was so grieved that he wished he were dead.

However, Dong Wu Shang stood content. He now felt joyful in his heart! [My elder brother is still the same old elder brother! I'm so content...]

Dong Wu Lei bandaged Dong Wu Shang's most grave wounds. Only then did he turn his head over. He raised his head to look at the nine remaining people of Dong Clan whilst dressing the less serious wounds of his brother.

Those nine people felt like averting their eyes, but Dong Wu Lei's gaze had already shot over sharply, "Were you the ones who... hurt Wu Shang?!" his voice was serious and awe-inspiring. His voice sounded calm and insipid, but he had spoken with clenched teeth.

Everyone could sense the bitter resentment contained in his words.

"... Yes," the nine people answered in unison. They lowered their heads, and realized, [It's all over now. It seems that all of this was arranged by the Young Clan Lady... Eldest Young Master wasn't even aware...]

However, they weren't afraid of death... What they feared the most was the fact that they might be branded as traitors before death! After all, their wives, children, and relatives would be done for in that case.

The muscles on Dong Wu Lei's face twitched a little. And, this revealed traces of deep fierceness. However, all of that disappeared the next moment... He then heaved a sigh, and indifferently asked, "What about the others?"

"Dead... All of them are dead... Even Second Senior Elder... is dead..." The nine people felt sad in their hearts. [Why would we have bothered to do this if we had known that Eldest Young Master didn't want this? Didn't all those people die... in vain?

"It's good that they're dead! It's truly good that they're dead! It saved me some effort."

Dong Wu Lei nodded his head. He then took a deep breath, and asked, "Were they killed by the Second Young Master... or Black Devil?"

"Yes... by Second Young Master." The nine people didn't dare to hide anything, and nodded at once.

[It's good that they are dead? It saved me some effort? Is this Eldest Young Master's view on those people?] The nine people

nearly fainted.

"It's good that they got killed!" Dong Wu Lei nodded. He clenched his teeth, and said, "They deserved to be killed! They had it coming!"

'It's good that they got killed...' was his next comment.

"You nine... why didn't you die?" Dong Wu Lei's gaze suddenly became cruel and vicious... like that of a vulture gazing at a corpse. He coldly said, "You blocked your Second Young Master, and attempted to kill him... despite the fact that you people are his subordinates. You people are disloyal, unfilial, heartless, and unjust traitors. What are you still alive for?!"

The nine people's faces simultaneously revealed a terrible color of despair and guilt.

"I've already punished that slut, Yu Wen Xiu! And, you people are her accomplices!" Dong Wu Lei coldly said, "When has an order of the Dong Clan ever come... from the mouth of ignorant women and children?"

"You people readily believed it like a bunch of naïve morons. And, we two brothers here will perish together today because of your stupidity. The Dong Clan will be left with no successors, and will soon fall into ruins. You people have no qualms about what you've done?"

The nine people's faces turned ashen... They were on the verge of collapse.

"And, don't even think about saying that you're loyal to me... or that you did it because you're so utterly loyal to the Dong Clan. You men stopped being the people of my Dong Clan the moment you attacked Second Young Master."

Dong Wu Lei's voice seemed gentle. But, it was still somewhat stern.

Bean-sized beads of cold sweat sprouted out on the nine people's

faces. They just lowered their heads, and couldn't say a word.

"Elder... Brother..." Dong Wu Shang was overwhelmed with emotion, and was unable to speak.

Dong Wu Lei heaved a long sigh. Then, he said in a gloomy voice, "Wu Shang, would you believe me if I said that I didn't know anything about this whole matter?"

"I believe you!" Dong Wu Shang nodded again and again. He was truly glad in his heart.

Dong Wu Lei had disregarded his own safety, and had jumped into this certain death scenario just to save him. So, how could Dong Wu Shang not feel reassured? What was there to distrust now?

"Thank you, brother!" Dong Wu Lei smiled in a straightforward manner... He looked like a treacherous guy from his face. So, his face looked somewhat weird now that he had put on such a frank smile.

"I indeed dread you and your accomplishments! I can't wait for you to disappear!" Dong Wu Lei looked at his younger brother with a complex look in his eyes, "But, I'll come to you myself if I can't take it anymore! I'll make you leave the clan. And, I'll kill you if you don't leave! I've been working hard for more than 20 years to become the Lord of the Dong Clan! I won't give up! Do you understand?"

"I understand!" Dong Wu Shang nodded heavily.

"I feel much more comfortable in my heart now that I've said this out loud," Dong Wu Lei smiled, "I wouldn't have said it openly if not for this completely hopeless situation that we're in."

He then looked at his younger brother with a concerned look, and asked, "Can you still go on?"

"I can!" Dong Wu Shang heavily nodded. He still looked weak from his facial expression. However, his spirit was stirred up.

"Good... It's been a few years since you and I have fought alongside." Dong Wu Lei smiled faintly, "I hadn't thought that I would get to fight the final battle of certain death shoulder-to-shoulder with you! I guess I'm somewhat grateful to that slutty sister-in-law of yours for this. But, that's only because she has preserved a root for the Dong Clan."

He smiled, and said in a soft voice, "I had originally planned to banish her so long as I managed to return. However... I'm somewhat reluctant to do it now, ha-ha..."

Dong Wu Shang swallowed his saliva, and said in a low voice, "Elder brother, elder sister-in-law also wants good for you."

"Good for me..." Dong Wu Lei smiled coldly, "But, her reasoning doesn't represent my feelings! Even the most heinous people have a well-founded reason behind their actions. So, I never listen to reasons and explanations... I only look at the outcome."

"Even the biggest or noblest reason would be pointless if the outcome makes me unhappy."

Dong Wu Lei sighed... He felt pain in his heart as he regretfully looked at Dong Wu Shang, "Younger brother, Wu Shang, it's so unfortunate... Today we're going to die... This is so unfortunate for a youthful and unrivaled genius like you. This elder brother has brought harm upon you!"

However, Dong Wu Shang's eyes exuded an earnest brilliance at this moment... Then, his hand reached into his bosom as he said, "Elder brother... we may not die!"

Dong Wu Shang was feeling an intense will to live at this moment... This feeling had suddenly erupted in his heart.

[I don't want to die!]

His hand had tightly gripped that jade card on his chest!

This was the trademark of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion!

Dong Wu Lei felt the rim of his eyes turning hot as he looked at his younger brother's joyful face. He couldn't help but feel as if a knife was being twisted in his heart. He knew full-well why Dong Wu Shang was so happy despite being so seriously injured.

[It's because he has been longing for me this entire time. He has been longing for the recovery of our brotherly sentiment.]

[It has finally happened today. But, it's already too late. However, the happiness that's welling up from my brother's heart is genuine... even if death is near at hand.]

Dong Wu Lei felt a severe pain in his heart. But, he somehow endured this strong sadness. He then slowly stood up, and turned his back towards his brother as he said in a mournful manner, "Yes, we may not die."

The fact was that... he was secretly determined in his heart, [I won't let you die even if I die!]

[I'll make sure you that you don't die as long as I'm alive! I can't stand to see my younger brother being killed in front of me.]

Dong Wu Lei started to walk toward the Young Black Devil after he thought this... The look on his face was tranquil, and his gait was steady.

Young Black Devil seemed to know what Dong Wu Lei wanted as he watched him coming over... He waved his hand to stop his men from interfering. So, Dong Wu Lei went unhindered and unimpeded to the front of Young Black Devil.

Young Black Devil's sharp gaze fell on him. He then sinisterly said, "Have you come to beg for mercy?"

...

The mark in Dong Wu Shang bosom split with a gentle 'pop' sound. There was a flattened and compact purple jade bottle inside it. Dong Wu Shang shook it, and said in his heart, "Big Brother, thank you."

The incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill was popped into his mouth the next moment!

Dong Wu Shang felt a sudden burst of heat in his Dantian. This energy then spread throughout the damaged meridians of his body. This was just like how the rice seedlings would welcome the spring drizzle after a prolonged drought.

The meridians in Dong Wu Shang's body were recovering rapidly in this moment. And, he could even feel that the muscles and flesh in all of his wounds were wiggling about and itching whilst fusing up.

The repair of his meridians was completed in the blink of an eye. The repair of internal injuries was completed the next moment. Then...

His primary power which had dried up suddenly gathered together. The mighty waves of energy gradually surged into his Dantian... just like thousands of brooks merging into a river!

His wounds turned into scars in an instant, and then fell off...

The stab wound on his chest got filled up at a speed that was visible to the naked eye! It slowly turned into a very small hole-wound which eventually got covered and smoothed up.

Then, Dong Wu Shang suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes shot two sharp divine-rays, and they came out just like saber-beams!

Meanwhile, Dong Wu Lei said this to Black Devil, "Let my younger brother go! You can do whatever you want to me!"

...

Chapter 664: Do You Regret?

Young Black Devil shuddered a little. He then involuntarily said, "What?"

He had thought of many possibilities... He had thought that Dong Wu Lei would beg him to spare them. Or, he would come to negotiate. Or, he would swear allegiance. Or, he would do this or do that...

However, he hadn't expected that Dong Wu Lei wouldn't do anything like that, and say this instead.

Dong Wu Shang would definitely die in the present scenario! But, Dong Wu Lei could narrowly escape death if he were to be cold-hearted enough to abandon his brother. He could even return to his clan if he were to rush out of this encirclement by chance.

However, Dong Wu Lei had given himself up to save his younger brother!

"Don't you know that your younger brother won't be able to live long even if he goes back?" Black Devil said in a hoarse voice whilst looking at Dong Wu Lei. "Moreover... let's say that I don't attack him now, and let him leave. But, he still might not be able to reach Dong Clan's entrance... He might die on the way! You know that, right?"

Dong Wu Lei coldly snorted, and said, "What about it? I only want my younger brother to go back... That's all!"

"My younger brother... has been out for almost a year. He hasn't met our father... and our mother for a year," Dong Wu Lei mischievously laughed. He then said with a smile, "Everyone misses him very much. I know this because I see them every day in the clan. They'll be hurt to see him dying. But, it would still be better than not seeing him at all."

"I only have this one request... Do you agree to it?" Dong Wu Lei

insipidly said, "You've come to kill people. Or so to say, you've come to kill Wu Shang... You've already seized total victory. And, you'll have me as a bonus... I'll certainly die at your hands. And, Wu Shang will also succumb to his injuries soon.

"Your goal will be achieved. So, do you agree to it?" Dong Wu Lei asked in a heavy voice.

"Moreover, you'll have much less casualties this way. So, do you agree to it?"

Young Black Devil felt like he was losing his head in confusion.

[Should I agree to it?]

[What Dong Wu Lei is saying is right. My goal has already been achieved to a satisfactory degree. Moreover, we can preserve strength this way since our casualties will be reduced.]

[Should I agree to it? Or, should I not?]

He hesitated.

The assassins of Black Devil looked at their Young Clan Lord with flashing eyes.

They felt that he mustn't agree to it! That's because they believed that there was no joy that could replace the mental satisfaction of killing a powerhouse and a high-positioned person in a battle.

But, what thrill would there be in killing a helpless person who was just waiting for death?

Wouldn't one achieve top-most prestige among the people of Jianghu by stepping upon the corpses of one's enemies... one by one?

"Alright! I..." Young Black Devil's gaze involuntarily went in Dong Wu Shang's direction as he spoke. He was just about to agree... even though he knew that he mustn't agree to it. But, he still was going to do so.

However, he had suddenly seen Dong Wu Shang when he was

about to agree. The words were about to come out of his mouth, but they got stuck in his throat.

It was because Dong Wu Shang had slowly stood up... He was walking step by step, and his big saber stood tall and erect on his shoulder. Moreover, his eyes were glowing with vitality... It was clear that he was now brimming with life!

Young Black Devil fiercely drew a step back. His mouth was opened wide behind his mask, and his eyes were filled with an incredulous expression. However, there was also a faint expression of joy in the depths of his eyes!

It was probable that Young Black Devil himself didn't know about this faint expression of joy...

Dong Wu Lei was about to urge him to give an answer. However, he suddenly felt that something was wrong. So, he turned his head to follow the Young Black Devils' line of sight, and looked... However, he couldn't help but become startled! He even issued a cackling sound.

His entire body became stiff!

[What am I looking at?! I'm seeing my younger brother in a healthy state?!]

Dong Wu Lei blinked with all his strength. He blinked again and again. Then, he lifted his hands, and rubbed his eyes as hard as he could. Suddenly, tears started to make their way through his eye-sockets. He wanted to restrain them. But, he couldn't help it. So, he covered his eyes, and coughed with all his strength.

[This is so embarrassing... I'm shedding tears in front of the enemy like this...]

"Black Devil, I have recovered!" Dong Wu Shang slashed his blade horizontally, and a big tree toppled over in the distance... It had gotten chopped up into pieces!

"Don't put forward any conditions. You can't kill us now! Do you

regret it?" Dong Wu Shang insipidly said.

Dong Wu Shang stood tall and strong in front of Young Black Devil. Young Black Devil's stature would usually seem tall and lean. However, he seemed short in front of Dong Wu Shang at this moment!

Young Black Devil took a deep breath. And, a strange look flashed through his eyes... It seemed as if he had heaved a sigh of relief. He sinisterly said, "Regret? Of course, I regret! I regret that I didn't kill you earlier."

Dong Wu Shang could tell that Young Black Devil had spoken insincerely. So, he couldn't help but burst into loud laughter.

Young Black Devil quietly stood there for a while... He had lowered his head so that no one could see the expression in his eyes. One would certainly become flabbergasted if they saw the current expression on his face.

It was because he clearly had the look of relief in his eyes. In fact, he had suddenly become completely relaxed. It seemed as if he had finally found a justification. He felt relieved of a burden. He suddenly waved his hand, and said, "Abort this mission. Leave at once!"

He then turned around, and rushed away!

The four Heavenly Assassins behind him were the most astonished!

[What is this...? Are we going to just leave?]

[Then, why did we come here in the first place?]

[So what if Dong Wu Shang has recovered? We have more than sixty people here. Four of us are Heavenly Assassins, and we also have Young Lord. Moreover, more than fifty of us are Earthly Assassins. This strength is enough to attain an absolute upper hand!]

[We might not be able to take down Dong Wu Shang. But, we can still inflict serious damage to him by paying some price. It won't be an issue. And, Dong Wu Lei will undoubtedly die!]

[Why do we need to leave in such an excellent situation?]

"Young Lord, this..." one of the Heavenly Assassins hesitantly spoke as he looked at his Young Lord's back profile.

"I said... leave!" Young Black Devil snorted from far away. He then sinisterly said, "Do you have any objection?"

"But we..."

"No ifs... No buts...'Saber Emperor rises and the whole world cries' – have you never heard these words? It is impossible to get rid of an enmity with a Saber Emperor. So, it's better to do him a favor today!"

Young Black Devil had already floated to a faraway place as he said this. His sinister voice came through from a distance, "Dong Wu Shang, you owe me a favor! Don't forget!"

The numerous assassins of the Black Devil Clan stared blankly for a while. Then, that Heavenly Assassin finally waved his hand. He reluctantly and hatefully said, "Let's go!"

The assassins of Black Devil Clan left with several swishing sounds. And, they soon disappeared without a trace.

Dong Wu Shang bitterly smiled. He knew that what Black Devil had just said wasn't wrong. Dong Wu Shang would've had no problem in getting away even if he couldn't beat the overwhelming numeric strength of the enemy... The real problem was that his elder brother would've died!

Therefore, the Black Devil's departure was a big favor to him.

Dong Wu Shang didn't know why Black Devil – who was known for his sinister terror in the Middle Three Heavens – had spoken so well with him, and had withdrawn so easily. He knew that there

had to be a reason behind it. However, he couldn't figure it out. It made no sense no matter what he thought.

Anyway, he had remembered this favor in his heart.

However, he owed this favor to an enemy... No one would wish to owe such a favor!

Dong Wu Shang and Dong Wu Lei didn't notice, but Young Black Devil had suddenly emerged on a treetop after he had entered into the woods and gone far away. It seemed that Young Black Devil had glanced in their direction from afar. After that, he had suddenly disappeared into the dark woods like a cold breeze.

A gust of wind blew... It carried a sigh of unknown emotions...

However, there was no way the two brothers were going to pay any attention to Black Devil in a moment like this.

"Elder Brother!" Dong Wu Shang excitedly took a step forward.

"Wu Shang, you... how are you?" Dong Wu Lei was still in disbelief.

"I'm alright." Dong Wu Shang naturally knew that his Big Brother's elixir was a top secret. His elder brother had been good to him. But, his Elder Brother Dong Wu Lei hadn't yet reached to a criterion wherein he wouldn't try to attain his goals by any means possible. And, this made Dong Wu Shang abstain from telling him.

[Big Brother would perhaps be in a difficult situation if Dong Wu Lei were to find out.] Therefore, Dong Wu Shang had spoken vaguely whilst avoiding eye contact.

"You healed so fast... It was clear just a while ago that..." Dong Wu Lei wanted to say – [It was clear just a while ago that you were on the verge of death. So, how did you recover so quickly? Was all that fake?]

However, he just thought about this possibility... He didn't say it.

Dong Wu Shang was a bad liar. He would whimper and stammer

whilst telling a lie. He would continuously shift his gaze, and would avoid eye-contact.

"Were you pretending just a while ago?" Dong Wu Lei finally thought of another possibility, and his complexion turned dark. He couldn't help but become deeply angry as he asked.

Dong Wu Shang opened his eyes wide. He thought for a moment, and felt that this was a good way. So, he foolishly chuckled while he nodded.

"You... you! You're aggravating!" Dong Wu Lei pointed his finger on his brother's nose. He thought, [I almost killed myself out of remorse... I hadn't expected that this bastard had been pretending all along... Doesn't it mean that he had been mocking me all this time?]

[He has crossed all the limits of shamelessness this time!]

Dong Wu Lei's face turned from white to red. Then, it turned from red to purple... then from purple to black, and then from black to green...

He suddenly bellowed, "You bastard! Do you find satisfaction in pulling pranks on others?"

He then jumped up, and kicked Dong Wu Shang to the ground... He pounced on him, and rode him like an animal... He clenched his teeth, and rained punches on him!

Dong Wu Shang didn't dare to hit back. He took the beating with his teeth clenched. He didn't utter a word.

Dong Wu Lei's anger would've gradually vanished if Dong Wu Shang had begged for mercy a few times... The problem was the kind of person Dong Wu Shang was! This guy was a fierce man who wouldn't utter a word even if he were to be crushed bone by bone!

How could he possibly cry out with such a temperament?

He didn't cry out... In fact, he felt comfortable in his heart. [Elder brother will calm down after beating me for a while... Aren't these just a few punches? I can take them!]

However, he didn't know that the more he restrained his cries, the angrier Dong Wu Lei got!

And, the angrier he got, the more he beat him!

A long while passed like this. Dong Wu Lei was finally left with no strength after beating Dong Wu Shang so much. Meanwhile, Dong Wu Shang still didn't utter a word.

"I. I, I... I'll beat you to death... you unyielding bastard!" Dong Wu Lei's eyes turned green. He then ruthlessly kicked Dong Wu Shang. This younger brother had been like this since childhood to adulthood... He had always been mischievous. He would never admit his mistake. He wouldn't utter a word no matter how much he would be beaten!

He would die... But, he wouldn't say, [I made a mistake...]

Such kids make adults worried to death... and angry to their livers...

The rims of Dong Wu Lei's eyes turned red as he beat Dong Wu Shang. He recalled that he had given up all hope just a while ago. He had been feeling so guilty that he wished to commit suicide... Dong Wu Lei sat down on the ground. Then, this majestic man suddenly burst into tears, "You bastard! You don't know that you had scared me to death! You stupid pig, what would I have explained to Mother and Father if something had happened to you? You bastard... You pig!"

Dong Wu Lie had truly been frightened when he had seen Dong Wu Shang in that injured state...

....

Chapter 665: Hothead!

The two brothers — Dong Wu Shang and Dong Wu Lei — were walking on the road whilst pulling Dong Wu Lei's horse. They were chatting along the way. Neither of them had felt this relaxed and happy in the past few years.

However, the remaining nine experts behind them were very nervous. They were following the two brothers whilst trembling with fear.

The unexpected thing was that the two brothers had neither mentioned about these nine experts... nor had they talked about how to deal with them. They hadn't even spoken a word to them. They had been ignoring them in such a way.

The nine people wanted to talk. But, they were very embarrassed. They were nervous in their hearts. They were indeed suffering along the whole way.

The rims of Dong Wu Lei's eyes were still somewhat red. He would rub around the rims of his eyes from time to time. However, he would do it very sneakily each time.

He was depressed and embarrassed.

[Dammit! I burst into tears in front of so many people. It's almost the same as destroying my reputation!]

Dong Wu Lei was at a loss. He felt that he had lost face.

He recalled his appearance when he had been crying in a pathetic manner a while ago. The Young Clan Lord of Dong Clan wished the earth to spilt open and take him in.

[This will make me lose my mind. Wouldn't it have been better if this stupid pig had died? No way in hell would I have grieved over that... Fu*k!]

Dong Wu Shang naturally wasn't the kind of man who would be

considerate enough to ignore this. He would step forward in concern for his brother, and ask about his eyes every time Dong Wu Lei rubbed them. Moreover, He would ask with a simple and honest face, "Elder Brother, do your eyes still feel uncomfortable? Alas, could it be that I made you that emotional... you, alas. You're crying... I'm seeing you cry for the first time since childhood..."

...

And, Dong Wu Lei would become ashamed and unable to show his face every time! [You bastard... can't you notice that I'm rubbing my eyes secretly? You just had to come over to console me...]

[Console my ass!]

Dong Wu Lei rubbed his eyes the eighth time, and Dong Wu Shang again came up to console him the eighth time. However, Dong Wu Lei couldn't help but explode this time...

He efficiently and directly beat the crap out of Dong Wu Shang! He scolded him whilst giving him the beating, "Has that King of Hell Chu taught you to be a stupid swine? How did such a clever man become a brother of a pig-head like you? You had followed him every day. But, you couldn't learn a little bit of fu*king cleverness from that clever man? You can't even take a hint?! Smile now! Why don't you try to smile again? I, I, I... I'll beat you until you die. I..."

Dong Wu Shang covered his head with his hands, and took the beating with his eyes full of grievances. [What is this?]

[This guy doesn't know how to distinguish between good and bad intentions. I seldom console Gu Du Xing and the others when they feel unwell. Can't you see that I had done it because you're my elder brother? ...What's wrong in that? Is it wrong to be concerned about you?]

The more Dong Wu Shang thought, the more wronged he felt.

[I'm giving you the honor that others don't get to enjoy. And, you're beating me?]

[This is going beyond the limits of forbearance. I can't take this anymore!]

[Enough is enough!]

[I can't bear this anymore even if I wanted to!]

"Let me go!"

"Smack! Smack!"

"Let me go!"

"Smack!"

"You're still not done?!" Dong Wu Shang finally flipped out. He turned over, and started to strike back. He outrageously resisted his elder brother!

A fight had broken out between the two brothers. And, they both got badly battered as a result. Finally, they both lay down on the ground, and started to groan loudly.

Dong Wu Lei didn't have to worry about his eyes turning red at the moment. It was because his eye-sockets had entirely turned blue...

....

A long while passed. Then, Dong Wu Lei said, "Wu Shang, I had noticed that what had happened today was weird!"

"Weird?"

"Yes! It was too weird! Why did the Black Devil let us go?" Dong Wu Lei's mouth had swollen like a pig holding grass in its mouth.

"Yes. I also felt that Black Devil wasn't his normal self," Dong Wu Shang's complexion had become quite strange. He blinked his eyes; his one eye had turned back, while the other one had turned blue.

"Let's say the fight had happened... The best we both brothers

could've done was that we could've taken them down with us! In fact, we might not have achieved that either!" Dong Wu Lei said with discretion. It could be said that his understanding of Dong Wu Shang was the deepest.

"That's because I had showed up. I had showed up, and become a burden on you. You wouldn't have escaped if I hadn't been able to escape. Then, the final outcome would've been that everyone would've fought desperately!

"However, those people were many in number. Their Emperor Level Experts lacked the sharpness of your Saber Emperor, but they were still six or seven grades higher than you. So, you would've undoubtedly died as long as they were willing to pay a price and stake everything to fight you!

"And, our Dong Clan would've collapsed with the deaths of us brothers. So, why did Black Devil give up at such a crucial moment?" Dong Wu Lei said, "As for what he had said - 'Saber Emperor appears, and the whole world cries'... it was simply nonsense. Had he implied that a Saber Monarch or a Saber Saint can't make the world cry? A Saber Saint can't make the world cry, but a trivial Saber Emperor can?"

"Did he have some other purpose?" Dong Wu Shang stood up from the ground, and pondered. "Or, so to say... he had some other plot against us?"

"Nonsense! What can he possibly plot against us? He wouldn't dare to plot anything against a powerful enemy like our Dong Clan even if he is mad," Dong Wu Lei distressfully said, "But, one thing is certain... He had a reason behind it. And, I'm afraid that this reason isn't a small one!"

"Or, it can be said..." Dong Wu Shang stroked his chin, "He basically wanted me to owe him a favor?"

Dong Wu Lei became speechless. He then rolled his eyes, and said, "Do you think that you're a Supreme Expert?"

"Supreme Expert? It would perhaps take a few more years to get there..." Dong Wu Shang honestly replied, "At least a few decades."

"Fu*k off!"

Dong Wu Lei didn't know whether to laugh or cry. So, he just spat his saliva. He then looked up to the sky, and heaved a deep sigh, "I've started to think that it had simply been an unforgivable blunder on my part to be scared and jealous of you earlier! Would you start using your brain a little?"

Dong Wu Shang said as if it was the most obvious thing, "Why do I need to use my brain as long as I'm with you?"

Dong Wu Lei was startled by this.

These casual words of Dong Wu Shang had revealed his incomparable trust in his elder brother. Moreover, this trust seemed deep-rooted!

[Why do I need to use my brain as long as I'm with you?]

Dong Wu Lei couldn't help but become teary-eyed. He also couldn't help but smack Dong Wu Shang, "You brat, you're trying to gain sympathy?!"

"Sympathy...?" Dong Wu Shang comforted the back of his head since he was unable to understand this unfathomable mystery. He then disdainfully said, "You're sick!"

Dong Wu Lei heavily breathed in anger.

A long while passed. He then said, "You must be vigilant when you meet Black Devil in future. I can feel that this matter isn't that simple."

Dong Wu Shang nodded in agreement. However, he thought, [It isn't simple? Could it be that it is depraved?]

...

Both of them had crawled up from the ground. They were going to reach their clan soon. They were silent.

"I'll leave the clan afterwards." There had been a long period of silence. However, Dong Wu Shang became the first to open his mouth. He sincerely looked at his elder brother, and said.

Dong Wu Shang's body suddenly shuddered.

"Two swords can't fit in one sheath. I... don't fit in the clan. There's no rivalry between you and me, but there are many people in our clan who either have ulterior motives... or have groundless fears."

Dong Wu Shang ran his mind. He then said, "The elders, priests, and senior elders of the clan will raise a rebellion once they are convinced that my aptitude has surpassed yours. You, father, and I... none of us would be able to stop it."

Dong Wu Lei silently lowered his head, and proceeded.

His heart again sank into conflicting views.

[I hate to let my brother leave. But, I'm also not willing to let him stay at home.]

"As for these nine people... let them be." Dong Wu Shang smiled, "You don't need to punish Elder Sister-in-law either. After all, almost all of her Yu Clan's elite troops got killed this time. They had come to deal with me, but they had done so for you."

Dong Wu Lei coldly snorted and said, "I won't let them off the hook that easily!" All the conflicting views and affection in Dong Wu Lei's eyes changed into cold-heartedness as he talked about this matter.

Dong Wu Lei had finally revealed that ruthless and ambitious side of his personality.

"Think about my nephew," Dong Wu Shang said.

Dong Wu Lei snorted.

They arrived at their clan whilst chatting. Dong Wu Lei then issued an order... The remaining nine experts obediently went to

the hall of discipline by themselves. They were then beaten till they were half dead. However, they didn't dare to utter a word.

Father Dong Qi Gong saw that both the brothers had returned together... His face had been brimming with anxiety until now. But, it finally revealed a smile of relief at this moment. However, he then noticed that both the brothers had bloody noses and swollen faces. So, he hastily asked them what had transpired.

"He hit me!" Dong Wu Shang pointed his finger towards Dong Wu Lei.

"He also hit me..." Dong Wu Lei snorted through his nose.

Dong Qi Gong had a hearty laugh. And, his worries disappeared in their entirety.

A big banquet was arranged in the Dong Clan that night... Everyone drank to their heart's content. However, Dong Wu Lei hurriedly rushed out after drinking halfway... His complexion was gloomy.

Dong Wu Shang didn't ask his elder brother anything about what had happened with his elder sister-in-law. And, Dong Wu Lei didn't say anything either.

Both the brothers had a tacit mutual understanding in this regard.

The Dong Clan's troops prepared to go for a military campaign the next day.

Dong Wu Lei was naturally leading the troops. Dong Wu Shang was also with him. They had planned to take a detour along the way. They wouldn't pass through the Broken Soul Cliff. They would instead take the Two Suns Mountain Pass. They would reach the Gu Clan's domain after they took a turn from the Two Suns Mountain Pass. Then, they would go to the north along with Gu Du Xing and the army that he was leading. Then, they would go to the Mo Clan, and join forces with it.

The decisive battle of the Middle Three heavens was finally going to take place!

Dong Wu Shang and his father had had a long conversation till late night the same day. Dong Qi Gong had sighed over and over till mid-night. Then, he had finally agreed since he didn't have another choice.

Dong Wu Shang had knelt before the clan's elders before going to the battle. He had knocked his head nine times on the ground.

Then, he had turned around, gotten on his horse, and started off on his journey.

A group of people arrived at the Two Suns Mountain Pass. In fact, it was a strong army!

There was a forest on both sides of the army. Dong Wu Shang had been walking at the forefront. He suddenly felt that there was something wrong. He turned his head around, and looked... A black light had suddenly flown over towards Dong Wu Shang from the woods on the left side.

Dong Wu Shang snorted. He then hastily stretched out his hand, and caught this black light; it was a black-feathered arrow. Dong Wu Shang rapidly flew from his horse as he caught this arrow... His Black Saber changed into a black beam. Then, his body united with his saber, and he instantly flew into the forest.

Dong Wu Shang covered four-hundred feet into the forest with a 'shua' sound. However, he didn't find anything. He was left puzzled by this. However, his peripheral vision suddenly made him realize that grasses were gently swaying a hundred feet away from him on his left side. So, he bellowed, and pounced over to that side.

A black-clothed shadow cried out in alarm, and flew out from the underbrush whilst issuing a rustling sound. The shadow then flashed, and rushed more than a hundred feet away.

Dong Wu Shang couldn't help but gawk. This person's figure was slender, fair, and graceful. The figure looked like a tender willow swaying in the wind as it moved. Its speed was fast, but its movements were quite exquisite.

It was clearly a young maiden!

[How could a maiden appear in such a place?]

Dong Wu Shang remained startled for a while. Then, he went to pursue that maiden. The maiden's agility skills were fast and nimble. Her speed was also very quick. However, her cultivation was clearly much inferior to that of the Saber Emperor – Dong Wu Shang.

The black-clothed maiden became angry and anxious when she saw that Dong Wu Shang was in close pursuit. She then turned her head, and coldly shouted, "I've come with a kind intention to deliver a message to you. Then, why are you chasing me as if I'm your foe? You're indeed a hothead!"

...

Chapter 666: I Appoint you as the Military Advisor of Heavenly Armament Pavilion!

Dong Wu Shang was startled. He couldn't help but halt his footsteps. That girl seemed to be relieved... Her physical appearance became visible for an instant. Then, she disappeared without a trace with a 'shua' sound.

Dong Wu Shang had only seen that girl vaguely when she had turned her head around... Her face had been veiled. And, her eyes had been sparkling with a crystal shine... just like cold stars twinkle brightly in the sky.

He stopped looking all pensive, and looked at his hand which had grabbed that black-feathered arrow... There was a piece of paper tied to that arrow.

"Ao Qing Yun and Ao Feng Yun are leading their troops to intimidate Gu Clan."

The message contained just these fifteen words.

Dong Wu Shang's entire body shook.

And, he rushed back like a tornado the next moment.

"Wu Shang, who was that?" Dong Wu Lei saw Dong Wu Shang returning.

"I don't know." Dong Wu Shang turned around, and got on to his horse, "Elder Brother, Gu Clan is in danger. I have to go there first. You also speed up the army, and get there soon."

His voice hadn't even fallen when his legs clamped the sides of the horse's belly. The horse neighed, and rushed from there with a 'swoosh' sound.

Dong Wu Lei instantly reacted. He put out his hand, and pulled down a King Level Expert from his horse. Then, he patted on the buttocks of that horse with his right hand. The horse dashed out,

"Take another horse with you!"

"Okay..." Dong Wu Shang's voice came from far away.

"Speed up!" Dong Wu Lei took a deep breath. He could see his younger brother's figure disappearing into the distance. Then, he waved his hand, and the army behind also accelerated its pace.

[Gu Clan and Dong Clan are an alliance now. So, it would be bad if Ao Clan got hold of Gu Clan.]

...

Mo Clan...

Mo Tian Ji entered the study room.

"Breaking news! Dong brothers have reconciled! Dong Wu Shang has returned safe and sound to his home. Black Devil had to return without any success," Mo Tian Ji's voice sounded clear and relaxed.

King of Hell Chu had been pacing back-and-forth with a sour face since the past few days. He would repeatedly ask about the developments in Jianghu. It would make Mo Tian Ji somewhat tense. His heart would jump up whenever he saw King of Hell Chu.

Chu Yang's complexion suddenly became relaxed when he heard this news. He finally heaved a sigh of relief.

He knew that Dong Wu Shang had finally gotten through the first crisis in his life!

A psychological crisis!

[Dong Wu Shang was the one in the biggest crisis among the brothers. He had to face Black Devil... someone who is famous for being sly and vicious. Moreover, there was Dong Wu Lei with his ulterior motives.]

[Dong Wu Shang is a person of the most passionate and sincere nature. His heroic zeal is matchless. He is incomparably bold and powerful. A man like him is unlikely to suffer harm easily. However, he may not be able to recover if he were to suffer a blow

from his loved ones!]

[Dong Wu Shang had ultimately started to follow the Heartless Saber way in the previous life.]

[His Heartless Saber had been incredible, but it had eventually gone to the extreme.]

[Dong Wu Shang's relations had been deteriorating continuously in the previous life. The two brothers had eventually fought it out many years later. Their relation had become beyond repair at that time. However, their relation has finally become good in this life. And, it has happened earlier than in the previous life...]

[It can be seen that some things are happening ahead of time in this life. However, that's not a bad thing.]

"Do you finally feel relaxed?" Mo Tian Ji finally dared to sit in front of King of Hell Chu.

King of Hell Chu had been coming to the study room early in morning during the past few days. He would then wait for some news. Mo Tian Ji would keep fidgeting restlessly the entire time that he stayed there... This study used to be Mo Tian Ji's favorite place for leisure. He would experience a kind of wonderful feeling whilst 'devising strategic plans, and controlling the entire world'.

However, Mo Tian Ji simply had to sit at King of Hell Chu's side since King of Hell Chu had occupied it all. This had been like a torture for Mo Tian Ji. This guy was like a bomb that could explode at any time. This Master of Calculation and Manipulation was someone whom the entire Middle Three Heavens feared. But, even he felt like someone who had a boil on his buttocks in front of Chu Yang.

However, he could finally sit calmly and steadily now.

"Who does finally feel relieved?" Chu Yang rolled his eyes. He sat on a large wooden armchair. He was partly reclining in a leisurely sprawled out posture. "I wasn't worried, okay? Anyway, stop being

so nosy, and mind your own business."

Mo Tian Ji spurted out his saliva. His fingers trembled as he pointed at Chu Yang. "You... how dare you say this to me. Don't you have a conscience?"

"Let's get down to business now." Chu Yang lazily held out his ear, "You can get out if there's nothing else. I want to sleep".

Mo Tian Ji started to fume with anger at this.

[Is this my home or your home?]

"Get up! There's obviously some business that we need to discuss!" Mo Tian Ji said whilst feeling aggrieved, "After all, why else would I come to see your stinky face?"

"First, the Dong brothers are leading their troops to the Gu Clan. It seems that they'll come here after meeting up with Gu Clan's people." Mo Tian Ji said.

"Oh." Chu Yang closed his eyes.

Mo Tian Ji clenched his teeth, "The second thing is about Ao Clan's Ao Feng Yun and Ao Qing Yun. Both of them are striving to put pressure over Gu Clan."

"Oh." Not even Chu Yang's eyebrows moved at this.

"Aren't you worried?" Mo Tian Ji was astonished.

"Are you worried?" Chu Yang asked back.

"I'm not worried..." Mo Tian Ji smiled wryly. [I've underestimated King of Hell Chu's wisdom. This is just a trivial matter for King of Hell Chu. In fact, it seems that he would prefer to listen to someone farting.]

[He would just cover his nose after the fart... That's all.]

[Ao Clan might dare to assassinate Gu Du Xing. However, trying to extinguish Gu Clan out in the open is something not even those six stupid 'geniuses' of Ao Clan would dare to do!]

[Moreover, Gu Du Xing isn't alone at present. He has Gu Clan, Dong Clan, Luo Clan, Mo Clan, Xie Clan, and Ji Clan to back him up!]

[On top of that, there's the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. And, this group has been giving everyone a headache of late.]

[Only two people of Ao Clan are involved in this — Ao Qing Yun and Ao Feng Yun. And, they are very cowardly... There's no way they would dare to poke such a hornet's nest... and that too in this kind of sensitive situation.]

"It won't be a violent or ferocious affair when they attack. It would just be treated as a farce. However, let's say they do attack fiercely. Then, it can be said that these two guys will never return to the Ao Clan alive," Chu Yang lazily said, "Besides, it's better for them to withdraw. Dong Wu Shang is currently on his way there... These two geniuses will surely be doomed if they also happened to be present there when Dong Wu Shang meets up with Gu Du Xing.

"The sole outcome of that situation would be that those two would turn into a pile of shit," Chu Yang concluded.

"Don't tell me... Gu Du Xing would dare to kill them?!" Mo Tian Ji stared.

"Is it very strange to kill them?" Chu Yang looked at Mo Tian Ji with great surprise, "Brother Master of Calculation and Manipulation, you think that Ao Clan's people can't die? From the looks of present Jianghu... The Ao Clan won't dare to ask for trouble even if all six brothers are to be killed; let alone just two of them. But, let's say they do dare to mess with me... I shall grab a group of male wolves, and feed them aphrodisiac. Then, I'll throw their only remaining successor — Ao Xie Yun — in that pack... so that the wolves can enjoy him. After that, I'll invite all the big Clans of the Middle Three Heavens to come and witness the scene...!"

Mo Tian Ji shivered all at once, "You're so evil!"

He sighed, and said, "It'll be our problem, and we'll deal with it together if they do ask for trouble... You and your brothers have rescued Ao Xie Yun. So, you wouldn't do this. Moreover, what good would it do to just let him die?"

"The Ao Clan had sent all six of them to search for Ao Xie Yun's body... This would've also allowed them to display their capability whilst accomplishing this meritorious deed. This would in-turn help in selecting Ao Xie Yun's replacement... There had been one more reason for doing this... To take revenge! Their target was to go and face Black Devil Clan and the others. There isn't any doubt regarding this.

"However, they received the news that Ao Xie Yun hadn't died just when they were about to start their action."

Mo Tian Ji sighed, "Isn't that crazy? These six guys don't stand any chance since Ao Xie Yun is alive! They have no chance left. However, they're still trying to use this whole situation as an opportunity... After all, how could they restrain themselves from nourishing the desire to do something so big that it would shock the world? Wouldn't they easily surpass Ao Xie Yun in one fell swoop by doing so?"

"But, what thing can be so big?"

"Perhaps, they could unify Jianghu. Or, they could find some powerful young masters who can reach up to Monarch Level or Saint Level, and get them to join the Ao Clan. After all, they can help Ao Clan to rush up to the Upper Three Heavens in this way! Won't they supersede Ao Xie Yun by achieving that?"

"Your Heavenly Armament Pavilion's popularity is going off the charts at this time. Every individual is a genius with boundless prospects. You say... who would they have targeted if not you?"

Mo Tian Ji said in a scolding manner... He suddenly got very angry, "You bastard... You're making this messy situation even more troublesome!"

"What do you mean by 'your Heavenly Armament Pavilion'," Chu Yang said in a slightly disgruntled manner, "You should say 'our Heavenly Armament Pavilion', right?"

"Our Heavenly Armament Pavilion...?" Mo Tian Ji was taken aback.

"Yes, I declare it. Mo Tian Ji, you will be the Military Advisor of our Heavenly Armament Pavilion from today." Chu Yang joyfully said whilst feeling immensely proud.

"I don't want to!" Mo Tian Ji was panting with indignation. He almost vomited blood. [How did I become a subordinate within a blink of an eye?]

"Objection overruled!" Minister Chu said in a dignified manner, "I've accepted your application."

Mo Tian Ji was extremely angry. But, he still laughed. They had been in the middle of an important conversation, but this guy had suddenly made him go crazy.

"First, let's talk about this matter..." Mo Tian Ji angrily said.

"Is it even worth it to talk about this?" Chu Yang rolled his eyes, "The present situation is that these things have already happened! What we should be discussing is... how to resolve this matter... how to deal with it! But, you are bugging me instead of doing this. What's the point?"

"Hic..." Mo Tian Ji was startled. His habit was to investigate the cause-and-effect of every matter regardless of anything else. So, he immediately started to think as to why it would be useful to investigate the reason behind this matter after he heard what Chu Yang had just said... He quickly realized that doing so was indeed useless.

"As for how to deal with this matter... I've already planned it in advance." Mo Tian Ji snorted twice, and said, "I've just been waiting for Gu Du Xing to return home and Dong Wu Shang's

matter to get finished. That's all. The basic preparations can be considered to have been finished now."

"Oh? And, what about Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo? Chu Yang asked.

"These two people don't matter," Mo Tian Ji said. "They are just good as your followers."

Chu Yang rolled his eyes, and angrily said, "But, Luo Ke Di is still missing. He hasn't been found yet."

"He'll most likely not be in trouble." Mo Tian Ji said, "Luo Ke Wu simply doesn't consider him to be his competitor. Secondly, the relationship of the brothers would most likely not be ruined even if Luo Ke Di's cultivation increases even further. Then, what are you afraid of? Could it be that you believe that Luo Ke Di has the potential to become the Clan Lord? Don't tell me that you want him to sit on the seat of Clan Lord, and scream every day?"

Chu Yang just hiccupped... He was stupefied.

"And then, there's Ji Mo... who simply ran away. There wasn't even enough time to transfer the position of Ji Clan's Clan Lord onto him. This guy fled even before this event could take place. And, it is likely that he won't return. You expect him to be responsible?" Mo Tian Ji snorted, "That lecher will never crawl out from his wife's chamber."

"This statement is reasonable," Minister Chu touched his chin. [...I think what Mo Tian Ji just said is very much probable.]

"I believe that it would've been a perfect match if that woman Huyan Aobo had chosen Dong Wu Shang or Li Xiong Tu. After all, both husband and wife would've been tall, strong, and majestic. I hadn't expected that that she would fall for someone like Ji Mo. This is like..." Mo Tian Ji thought for a while. Then, he shook his head, and said, "...chopsticks with toothpicks... celery with bean sprouts... but bean sprout is the male in this case!"

The planning had already been completed. Everything had

already been arranged properly. Mo Tian Ji's mind was relaxed. So, he couldn't help but gossip.

[Chopsticks with toothpicks...? Celery with bean sprouts...?]

Chu Yang spurted the moment he heard this. He coughed repeatedly... It seemed as if he was choking.

Chapter 667: True Transformation of the Master of Calculation and Manipulation

Mo Tian Ji started to issue orders one after another. Innumerable invisible falcons flew over in rapid succession, received the orders, and then flew out one after another.

Block the trade routes.

Block the water channels.

Block the mines.

Block...

Mo Tian Ji had directed the first three orders just to aim at the various fields of profit making of the great clans. He had formulated different countermeasures for dealing with the clans of different strengths. Each order could make anyone's hair stand on end. Even Chu Yang was scared witnessing all this up close.

Mo Tian Ji would yell every time he would write a letter, "Come in."

Then, an attendant would come in, and take the message. And then, he would go out, and release five invisible falcons in a row according to Mo Tian Ji's arrangements.

Mo Tian Ji had sent more than forty messages within an hour. He had sent them separately to Gu Clan, Xie Clan, Dong Clan, and all the other allied clans. He had also sent them to the small clans that were attached and dependent on these allied clans!

Then, it was the time to make arrangements in the Mo Clan itself. Mo Tian Ji made arrangements casually as if without thinking. He issued sixty orders within one hour!

Every strategy was a critical hit. There were ordinary methods as well as... abnormal methods. The abnormal ones included cruel methods, despicable methods, and shameless methods...

In short, it could be said that Mo Tian Ji was unscrupulously resorting to all sorts of methods... He was stopping at nothing!

He wanted to devastate the physical bodies of those several enemy clans. He wanted to psychologically rape those several enemy clans. He wanted to drug, and then rape the financial resources of the enemy clans. He wanted to violate these clans in out in the open. He wanted to rape these clans' morality in such a way that they would get pregnant, and would then have a miscarriage...

His sinister, mean, shameless, and wretched methods had attained a righteous cause since they had been used properly upon all the professions... whether belonging to the upper echelon or the lower echelon of the society!

This... this was fu*king awesome! It had crossed all the limits of awesomeness!

Finally, Mo Tian Ji wrote a letter intending to make an announcement in Jianghu.

Its entire content was as follows,

"This is to inform the like-minded Jianghu people of the Middle Three Heavens.

The Middle Three Heavens are in a treacherous and unstable situation these days. The reign of terror and bloody wind are breeding like flies.

Dozens of preexisting clans got exterminated. Many young girls went missing. Then, countless young female beggars went missing. Xie Clan, Dong Clan, Ji Clan, Gu Clan, and my Mo Clan did some investigation together. And, we finally discovered something...

....

Everything had happened under the Meng Clan's evil schemes. They had done all this in order to practice their evil technique so that they could rule over Jianghu.

.....

Then, Meng Clan was suddenly exterminated when the investigation got close to the truth. And, the main culprits turned out to be... those ally clans of the Meng Clan!

The clans were trying to cover it, but they got even more exposed instead!

Black Devil Clan, Tu Clan, Ou Clan, Tian Clan et al... these clans have already gotten their hands on the practice method for the Meng Clan's evil technique. And, they've also butchered and wiped out the Meng Clan. These great clans might destroy the entire Middle Three Heavens with their financial resources, physical resources, and manpower in the coming few years. Their wild ambitions have been completely uncovered now.

....

Perhaps, the combined strength of the Middle Three Heavens wouldn't be able to contend against them once they are fully-fledged. The poison techniques and evil techniques will bring disaster to the world. It's needless to say that the loss of life would be enormous.

....

All of us are good-spirited and free people of Jianghu. So, how can we be slaves?

Therefore, we've decided to fight to death in order to maintain the current order of our Jianghu! After all, we martial artists are hot-blooded!

We martial artists would rather die standing than live kneeling down!

We would prefer death over dishonor!

There will be a war of life and death on the bank of the 'Lake of Despair' on the tenth of October... We'll see who dies and who

lives!

..."

Mo Tian Ji finally finished, and blew on the ink writing. He then said with a smile, "This announcement must be sent after our written war declaration is accepted by the enemy. There wasn't any need to hurry. However, I'm furious today. So, I took advantage of my salty mood, and wrote this down in advance."

Chu Yang's hair stood up on end.

[Mo Tian Ji, really... really...]

Chu Yang was speechless!

[Mo Tian Ji would first launch an attack against those several clans. Moreover, that would be a full-scale three-dimensional attack! Then, he would pass-on a written war declaration when the enemy would've been driven beyond the limits of forbearance.]

[Those few great clans would probably recklessly accept the challenge at that time because their rage would already be soaring to the heavens.]

[Then, they would find out that Mo Tian Ji had issued the announcement in the entire Middle Three Heavens the moment they had accepted.]

[All the dots would be joined together!]

[Then, we would pounce on the enemy clans like a storm.]

"We'll certainly win as long as we can hold on until the decisive battle!" Mo Tian Ji said with a smile, "There would be no use even if reinforcements from the Upper Three Heavens do come down when the time comes..."

"On the bank of Lake of Despair...?" Chu Yang suddenly became startled. He called out in surprise.

[Lake of Despair...? Isn't the fourth section of Nine Tribulations Sword at that place?]

[Mo Tian Ji has picked that place to have a decisive battle with the enemy?]

Mo Tian Ji had finally finished the arrangements... He softly let out a long sigh. Then, he started to ponder with his eyebrows pressed together. He was clearly going through his plan once again... He said once he became sure that his plan was foolproof, "Brother Chu, do you have any additions to my plan?"

"No, I don't." Chu Yang sincerely replied, "This plan of yours is perfect."

It was indeed perfect!

Mo Tian Ji had frequently neglected one thing whilst making plans in the past — the human nature!

However, Mo Tian Ji had now come up with a plan according to the nature and life history of the ones in power in the enemy clans! Every move he'd make would hit the lifeline of the enemy clans. Moreover, it would hit the weak spots of the powerhouses of those clans as well!

Mo Tian Ji had planned in such a way that it would target every vital player.

Each move was perfect and impeccable!

"Brother Mo, you're gradually maturing." Chu Yang slowly said. [Yes, this plan is exactly like what the Master of Calculation and Manipulation of the previous life would've formulated!]

"Brother Chu, the credit for this plan goes to you as well!" Mo Tian Ji said with a smile, "You had told me a few days ago that I didn't pay attention to human nature whilst making plans. Those words had reminded me that I only took the final benefit and strength comparisons into consideration... or plots and tricks when I made a plan... I didn't pay attention to the human nature. You don't know this, but I've spent the past few nights thinking what exactly human nature is?"

Mo Tian Ji exposed a pondering expression.

Chu Yang also became solemn. [This topic seems vague and shallow. But, it is the key to Mo Tian Ji's transformation!]

"Then, I finally figured out that the human nature is basically the weakness in one's disposition." Mo Tian Ji cruelly smiled, "Everyone has a weakness no matter if they're good or bad. And, this weakness develops since childhood. Therefore... I can easily find the weakness in a person's disposition once I've investigated a person's life, understood their past, and combined all that with their present personality."

Chu Yang was dumbfounded, [Motherfu*ker... what way of thinking is this? Human nature is the weakness in one's disposition?!]

[I'm hearing this theory for the first time! This is way too fu*king creative!]

"Therefore, I've aimed at this point whilst making plans this time. I almost thoroughly investigated and analyzed the life history of everyone that we're going to deal with. Then, I understood their nature."

Mo Tian Ji seemed somewhat proud of himself, "And, I found that the success rate of such a plan is hundred percent! Brother Chu, you're my good mentor... You've awakened me from a dream!"

....

Chapter 668: A Pair of Beasts!

Chu Yang was somewhat dumbfounded.

[Human nature... is exactly the nature of a human. It's not the character of a person. I made you study human nature. But, you left that path, and headed towards a different direction altogether.]

"I know that you had meant something else. You had been talking about the human instincts!" Mo Tian Ji waved his hand to-and-fro. He then said in a serious manner, "I've also vigorously thought about the instincts of a person. But, there's nothing to study about it. It can be summed up in these few words — the strong prey on the weak!

"What I've just said may sound somewhat cruel. However, it is the reality... Even a good person has to face this fact throughout their life. Good people want to live properly. They don't want to harm anyone. However, they'll inevitably do so as long as they go on living!

"To survive is to compete... Martial Artists do it. Even common people do it! There is always someone who can do a job properly. And then, there's someone who can't do it properly. The person who can do a job properly hasn't harmed anyone. But, their boss will certainly keep them, and expel the one who isn't suitable. Therefore, the one not suitable was harmed because of the existence of that diligent person who meant no harm.

"We get used to this kind of environment because we experience it every day. Therefore, we think nothing about it. As they say — 'Survival of the fittest'. Things keep changing every moment. Everyone steps on others' shoulders to gain superiority! One can stand firm only after they've defeated others even if they are merely responsible for killing pigs in a meat shop!

"This victory is bound to harm others no matter if the person has

gained it by integrity... no matter if they have a good conscience and good ethics."

Mo Tian Ji let out a deep sigh, "This is how a human is! Good people follow the law of jungle. And, bad people do the same.

"This is human nature!

"It takes a mountain full of skeletons for one person to succeed. A person becomes famous at the cost of thousands. Even a poor or common person has to step on piles of skeletons so that they can chew the fruit of victory!

"The fact that others aren't competent enough isn't a justification for you to harm them. However, you will harm them even if you don't want to. A person harms so long as they exist. This has been the case since ancient times.

"Therefore, there's no need to discuss human nature. It is already obvious."

Chu Yang was pondering. He was silently digesting Mo Tian Ji's words. He slowly nodded, "You might have exaggerated it a bit. But, I have to admit that it is a bit rational."

"Apparently, this is the difference between you and me." Mo Tian Ji looked at Chu Yang with some admiration, "You are vicious and merciless, but you only see the bright side of human nature. On the other hand, I always see the dark side of it. Therefore... Chu Yang, it won't come as a surprise to me if someone kills you someday. However, no one can kill me — Mio Tian Ji — as long as some unreasonable violence doesn't occur!

"This is my luck, but your misfortune. But, it's not the other way round!"

Mo Tian Ji's voice had become serious.

Chu Yang's complexion had turned solemn. [I feel that a person wouldn't have any fun throughout their life if they focus only on the dark side whilst considering an issue... But, Mo Tian is clearly

enjoying this mindset, and doesn't seem to be bored by it.]

"I like calculating... I like playing people at the palm of my hand. Forcefully manipulating the predatory behavior of people gives me pleasure." Mo Tian Ji laughed at himself.

"Therefore, I only think of a person's character when you mention 'human nature'! It is because human nature in itself doesn't have any weakness. But, a person's character has flaws! And, these flaws can be my biggest weapon to defeat that person!

"For example... I would start at the Lower Three Heavens if I want to deal with you – Chu Yang. I wouldn't try to kill you in the Middle Three Heavens. That's because it's necessary to defeat your friends to deal with you... You're known as King of Hell Chu. However, the fact is that you are a passionate and sincerely devoted man. So, you will undoubtedly die once you lose your friends!

"This is your biggest weakness as well as your greatest strength."

Mo Tian Ji heaved a deep sigh.

Chu Yang was shocked in his heart.

[Very good!]

[Hadn't I been defeated exactly like this in my previous life? The destruction of Beyond the Heaven Sect had made me a man who wouldn't think about anything except revenge. I only focused on my 'Heartless Sword Way' due to the hatred in my heart. But, it harmed Qing Wu in the end!]

[My life became gloomy after Qing Wu died. I had thought of getting rid of my inner demon by taking revenge, but I hadn't thought that I would lose my heart in the process. And, how could I possibly have had the inner demon to push me for revenge when I had lost my will to live? Therefore, I couldn't advance even an inch after Qing Wu's death!]

[Mo Tian Ji has indeed seen through my character!]

"Therefore, I'm very concerned about the lives of Dong Wu Shang and the others." Mo Tian Ji continued, "It's because I know that you'll go insane if one of them were to die!

"And, all of us will be done for if you go insane."

Mo Tian Ji forced a smile, "It is like a big circle. Every person has an important role to play in this!"

"Or, this is how you go on in your life!" Chu Yang slowly said in a tone of a seasoned person.

[After all, Mo Tian Ji is Mo Tian Ji.]

[He's on the journey of the Master of Calculation and Manipulation of the previous life! He has already turned into the man who wouldn't hesitate to collect information from anyone he would meet. Then, he would analyze that person's weaknesses and habits. And then, he would formulate countermeasures to deal with them.]

[He can even make out what the first sentence of that person will be. He can even know what that person would say next... or whether the person would change his mind or not. He can tell what all things can enchant that person. Or, what kind of words can infuriate that person in a flash. Or, what kind of words can calm that person down.]

[He's an amazing person. But, he's perhaps pitiful too.]

[It's because he would only read others all his life, and would lose all his life's joy in doing so.]

"The plan is already set. Today is September 17. The decisive battle will occur on October 10 at the Lake of Despair! Not many days are left, but we still have time. Also, we have three days of free leisure time."

Mo Tian Ji said with a smile, "What are you going to do in these three days?"

"I'll go check out Qing Wu's small courtyard." Chu Yang insipidly said.

Mo Tian Ji gawked... He shot a look of confliction from his eyes, and said, "I'll go with you." He smiled and said, "Brother Chu, I'm not afraid of your jokes. I've been feeling very ashamed in my heart these days. I don't dare to go alone to my little sister's courtyard. I often go to its door, and I feel as if I'm hearing my little sister crying. Alas... my poor little sister."

Chu Yang became speechless. He had no choice, but to pat on Mo Tian Ji's shoulder to comfort him.

The two went together, and arrived at Mo Qing Wu's courtyard.

The courtyard was very clean. It was evident that someone cleaned the courtyard every day.

Mo Tian Ji stopped his footsteps when they reached the entrance. Then, he let Chu Yang walk ahead of him... intentionally or otherwise. It seemed that he still didn't dare to be the first one to push open the door of Mo Qing Wu's room.

Chu Yang opened the door, and a creaking sound issued.

Then, a faint but familiar sweet fragrance spread out from the inside.

[This is Qing Wu's smell...] Chu Yang felt moved in his heart.

[This is Younger Sister's smell...] Mo Tian Ji felt his emotions stirring up.

The two puffed their noses at the same time, and deeply inhaled. Then, they closed their eyes. Then, they found that the other person had also done the same. They then opened their eyes, and glared at each other.

"What are you sniffing? Is your nose uncomfortable?"

"What are you sniffing? Is your nose uncomfortable?"

Both of them asked each other at the same time. They both came

in their defensive mode at this moment... as if their sovereignty mustn't be violated.

"Why do you care?"

"Why do you care?"

They spoke in unison.

"Humph!"

"Humph!"

They both angrily snorted. Then, the two big men tried to push each other aside... They crashed into the room at the same time.

"You beast!" Chu Yang gritted his teeth, and cussed in rage.

"You beast!" Mo Tian Ji gritted his teeth, and cussed in rage.

There was a lot of dust on the table in the room. It was clear that no one had come here ever since Mo Qing Wu had left.

The quilt was neatly folded on the bed... There was a small pillow on the pink cotton-wadded quilt. And, there was a tattered scabbard on that pillow.

They both suddenly felt a pain in their hearts as they saw that tattered scabbard. [The unendurable moments of Mo Qing Wu's life had passed holding this thing.]

[Mo Qing Wu... must've been feeling aggrieved and depressed back then!]

Chu Yang felt his eye-sockets heating up. He then turned his head, and firmly glared at Mo Tian Ji... as if he would eat him alive.

Mo Tian Ji didn't have the courage to look Chu Yang in the eye this time. He lowered his head feeling ashamed.

"You did a very good deed!" Minister Chu stamped his foot. He angrily cussed at Mo Tian Ji whilst feeling aggrieved.

Mo Tian Ji sadly heaved a deep sigh.

Chu Yang took a step forward. He then gently lifted the scabbard from the pillow... The scabbard seemed light and empty. It seemed as if it hadn't changed since Chu Yang had last seen it. However, Chu Yang detected that it was slightly different from before.

The scabbard was a lot cleaner than it was at the time when he had given it to Mo Qing Wu. Moreover, its color had also darkened at some places.

Consequently, he couldn't help but form a picture in his head — Mo Qing Wu is pitifully holding the scabbard. She's sticking her little face on the scabbard. She is sitting in front of the door, and longing for him with her head raised.

"Elder Brother Chu Yang, I miss you."

"Elder Brother Chu Yang, I feel as if you've almost come to pick me up every time I hold this scabbard."

....

Chu Yang heaved a deep sigh. He felt a pain in his heart... as if his heart had been twisted.

Mo Tian Ji took a step forward; he was about to take a look at the scabbard. However, Chu Yang suddenly opened his eyes wide and lifted up the scabbard. Mo Tian Ji stared at him for a long time. But, he eventually retreated whilst feeling disappointed.

Chu Yang gently unfolded the quilt... A delicate but dense fragrance came out. He couldn't help but firmly sniff with his nose.

Mo Tian Ji was behind him. His expression became fierce as he saw this. He almost wanted to kick this shameless guy out.

Then, Chu Yang sat on the edge of the bed... He didn't move after that. Mo Tian Ji touched his nose for a while. Then, he finally walked over with a shameless face, and sat down on the bedside. Minister Chu naturally rolled his eyes at him once again. However, the Master of Calculation and Manipulation didn't care. He had coughed twice, and calmly sat down.

Mo Tian Ji then stroked his hands to his left as well as to his right.

Both of them traced their hands under the bedding... They suddenly felt a texture that didn't feel to be a part of bedding. It also issued a very slight rustling sound...

Then, both of them started to fight intensely.

There was clearly some paper or something like that under the bedding. Mo Qing Wu had probably made some notes, and hid them here.

In fact, both of them had come here for this.

Mo Qing Wu must've had too many feelings back then. However, there had been no one to share them with. So, she could only write them down somewhere, and then hide it... But, where could a little girl hide it?

Naturally, it couldn't remain hidden from the eyes of people like Mo Tian Ji and Chu Yang.

.....

Chapter 669: Who Will Compensate For My Youth?

"Let go!" Chu Yang glared at him in a fierce manner.

"You let go!" Mo Tian Ji became angry.

"Let go! Little Wu wrote this for me," Chu Yang wanted to punch this guy in the nose.

"Nonsense! My younger sister has written this, and I can't see it? But, you — an outsider — can see it?" Mo Tian Ji wasn't willing to let up.

....

A long while passed. Then, the two finally compromised.

"Let's divide... half each!"

"..."

Mo Tian Ji looked at the first paper of his half of the pile with a twisted face. It read, "Stinky Second Brother! I hate you! I hate you... hate you... hate you!"

Mo Tian Ji's complexion turned white. He then heaved a long sigh, and turned over the paper.

The second paper read, "Smelly Second Brother Mo Tian Ji, I hate you!"

Mo Tian Ji rubbed his temples. He went on looking at the third paper, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I miss you! When are you coming to pick me up?"

Mo Tian Ji's face turned black.

The fourth paper read, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I miss you. I miss you so much. I cried again today. Boohoo... the more I miss you, the more heart-broken I feel..."

The fifth paper read, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, come soon. All of them bully me. Even Second Brother bullies me. Your Little Wu is dying..."

"I miss you... Elder Brother Chu Yang."

Mo Tian Ji quickly flipped through the papers, and finished this pile. There were more than a hundred papers. And, all of them were related to her missing Chu Yang... except for the ones in which she had scolded Mo Tian Ji!

[Am I the one who had hurt Mo Qing Wu the most back then? She had already seen it coming that others would harm her... She had been prepared for it. However, she hadn't been prepared for what I had done.]

[But I... what I had done was for her own good...]

Mo Tian Ji felt a knife twisting in his heart. His hands were trembling.

"King of Hell Chu! I'll kill you!" Mo Tian Ji finally shouted with grief and indignation. He had seen the last three papers just then.

One of them read, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I'll be your good wife if you come back, okay?"

The second paper read, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I'll be your good wife when I grow up, okay?"

The third paper read, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, you had said that you'll marry me when I grow up... I'm looking forward to it..."

These two papers had been crumpled. In addition, they had been placed at the bottom of the stack. Apparently, this little girl had felt embarrassed after she had written all this. So, she had secretly stuffed these at the bottom...

Mo Tian Ji erupted. He looked at Chu Yang with infinite grief and indignation, "You animal! You've captured my little sister's pure heart!"

Chu Yang felt a pain in his heart. He looked at Mo Qing Wu's handwriting line by line. It was puerile yet proper. Chu Yang could feel how pitiful she must have felt back then.

[Mo Qing Wu had been missing me so much. It's clear that she had been very upset at that time.]

[Otherwise, why would so many strange ideas come in the mind of a ten year old little girl?]

Minister Chu felt sad as he saw these papers in which the cute little girl had poured her feelings out. Then, he became so angry that he couldn't contain his anger. He hadn't expected that Mo Tian Ji would be the one asking questions. It was simply like adding fuel to the fire.

King of Hell Chu erupted in a flash, "Bastard! All of this has happened because your family had abused Little Wu. Otherwise, how could she possibly miss me so much? Who am I at the end of the day? After all is said and done... what about all of you who treated her like that for more than a month? You have no sense of shame. You shameless, filthy, and lowly people... your Mo Clan is the worst! And, you're wrongly accusing me for capturing your sister... Have you been very good to her?! Would I have been able to so-called 'capture' her heart if you had been nice to her?"

[This King of Hell Chu is so doughty. He has captured someone's younger sister's heart, and he's still counter-attacking in a righteous and self-confident manner. He might be the first man to do so since ancient times.]

Mo Tian Ji seethed with anger, "So, you do admit that you've captured my younger sister's heart!"

He narrowed his eyes. "So, you hadn't meant it when you had said to her that you would marry her after she's all grown up?"

Chu Yang stared blankly. However, he reacted within an instant. He angrily said, "Hey... wasn't it you who told me that I would

already be an old man by the time your younger sister grew up?"

"However, it seems to have much possibility looking at the signs that you've cleverly captured her heart." Mo Tian Ji paced back-and-forth in the room. He was extremely distressed, "Only you were there with Little Wu to comfort her when she was the most helpless. She was very young back then. So, she had built a deep-rooted dependence on you... This dependence is most likely to blossom into feelings of love after she grows up..."

He clutched his hair, and sighed in despair, "I had let you be with her and meet her frequently. That was because I had thought that nature would perhaps take its course and build a love of brother and sister between you two. However, it turned out that it was you who she missed the most while suffering hardships. You came to save her when she was the most vulnerable, and she became even more dependent on you as a result.

"...she was taken away by Supreme Experts shortly after you saved her! So, she left before the misunderstandings between her and the clan could be cleared out. She thinks that you're the only good person. Now, you two won't meet for a long time. So, how would she not miss you?"

"She'll start to have intimate feelings once she turns fourteen or fifteen... Then, she'll long for you impatiently. And then, this longing of hers will carve into her bones, and engrave in her heart... It's bad... It's very bad!"

Mo Tian Ji roved around with his hair clutched in his hands. He looked like a donkey tied up in a mill.

However, Chu Yang sucked in cold air on the contrary, and continued to burst with joy.

[Mo Tian Ji is right. Mo Qing Wu would've easily developed a love between brother and sister towards me if she and I had stayed together like that more. And, that would've been very scary...]

[However, it seems that all the conditions are right now. So, success will follow by itself... even if I'm very sad that she has been taken away by those Supreme Experts.]

[Mo Tian Ji's understanding of Mo Qing Wu is matchless. And, his understanding of human nature and evolution of feelings is even better. There's definitely a big possibility of it happening since he has said so...]

Minister Chu was ecstatic. He was grinning from ear to ear.

He then put on a flabbergasted look, and asked, "It can't be, right? Brother Mo... you... you're saying this just to scare me, right? How can that little girl have such a complex heart?"

Mo Tian Ji had become very angry. He was flustered and exasperated, "Others may not have. But, Little Wu surely does!"

"What to do about this?" Minister Chu foolishly asked.

"What to do you ask? You're the one who has brought this disaster! And, you're asking me what to do?! King of Hell Chu, you just wait for your death if my younger sister comes back all grown-up and falls in love with you!" Mo Tian Ji clenched his teeth. This man would usually be calm and composed. However, he was pointed his finger at King of Hell Chu's nose at the moment. He was shouting and cussing. He was spurting his spittle on King of Hell Chu's face.

"Speaking of this..." Minister Chu seemed worried and heavy-hearted, "I'll turn eighteen this year. Most people fear that their son has become too old at this age... So, I can't keep waiting for a small girl for God knows how many years... I might truly become an old man by then."

"Huh?" Mo Tian Ji was startled. He tilted his head, and looked at Chu Yang.

"Brother Mo, it's good that you've reminded me." Minister Chu firmly said, "I should also think of my big day. Otherwise, it would

be... terrible in case Little Wu becomes exactly what you've just said."

"What?!" Mo Tian Ji jumped like a cat whose tail had been stepped on. He then blinked his eyes, and thought, [Wouldn't that poor little girl die of heart break if she were to find out that her dear Elder Brother Chu Yang got married after she comes back? After all, her wait of so many years will have been in vain in that case. That girl is very stubborn... What if...]

"Brother Mo," Chu Yang said whilst being in deep sorrow, "I understand your feelings. I also understand the fact that this is an important matter. Therefore, you need not worry. I'll resolve this problem as soon as possible. What you've said is right. It's true that Little Wu is too young... I truly can't afford to wait..."

Mo Tian Ji was dumbstruck. He stared blankly.

"Let me tell you... I don't say anything, but that's what it truly is. There are many pretty girls in the Middle Three Heavens with whom I can try to develop a relationship..." Chu Yang exposed a lustful color in his eyes. He then proudly said, "Brother Mo, I – Chu Yang – have good prestige and reputation. So, it shouldn't be difficult for me to find a girl to marry."

"Find a girl to marry? You dare not!" Mo Tian Ji suddenly became flustered and exasperated. He scurried about, "Motherfu*ker, you want to pat your buttocks, and slip away after causing a disaster? Let me tell you King of Hell Chu... you won't even think of getting married before Little Wu comes back! I'll kill the girl that you find! And, don't even try to find two of them... because I'll kill both of them!"

"You're making no sense!" Minister Chu felt wronged, and shouted. "Had you not caught my words, and criticized me when I had jokingly said that I would wait for your younger sister to grow up? Moreover, you don't approve of it. You'll kill me if your younger sister likes me! I'm okay with that now. I said that I would

find a wife. But, you have a problem with this too? You... you're being too controlling, okay? Do you think you're my father?"

Mo Tian Ji's entire face had turned a deep shade of red. He argued wickedly, "It won't do in any case! What would we do in case my younger sister fell in love with you? Wouldn't it break my younger sister's heart if you got married to someone?"

Mo Tian Ji was pestering unreasonably and endlessly.

Chu Yang spread out his hands. "I can't meet these unreasonable expectations of yours! You tell me... what should I do? Let me listen to you. Do you want me to abstain, and wait to woo your younger sister?"

"You dare not!" Mo Tian Ji bellowed.

"That won't do?" Minister Chu again spread out his hands, "Fine... Then, I'll hurriedly find a woman, and settle down with her. Wouldn't that be right?"

"You dare not!" Mo Tian Ji again roared.

"Fu*k!" Minister Chu was burning with anger, "What do you want me to do? Are you fu*king insane?"

Mo Tian Ji was stuck in a mental conflict. He didn't want to let his younger sister go to this animal. But, he also didn't want his younger sister to be sad. He knew Mo Qing Wu's nature very well. [She'll break down if she were to find out that Chu Yang has gotten married after she comes back! And, it won't be strange... if some accident happens due to that.]

"You're not allowed to woo my sister in any case. And, you're not allowed to get married before my sister comes back." Mo Tian Ji resolutely said.

"I won't bear this farce!" Minister Chu turned around, and started to walk. He cursed whilst walking away, "Motherfu*ker, you won't let me get married... You want to make me wait for a little loli. And, you don't want me to woo her after I would've waited for her

for so long. I won't let you take advantage of me. I'll start looking for a girl to get married right now. Dammit! I'll be eighteen soon. And, I don't know how many more years I would have to wait... Then, it would be useless even if I do get married..."

"Brother Chu, Brother Chu, Brother Chu..." Mo Tian Ji hurriedly stopped him. He then thought for a long while. Then, he finally gave in. He said in a low and submissive voice, "I think that it would be good if you were to become my brother-in-law," he had said these words with his teeth gritted. So, it was clear that he didn't wish to let go of Mo Qing Wu. Moreover, he might go back on his word any time.

"I don't give a fu*k!" Chu Yang raised his head.

"What else do you want?" Mo Tian Ji bellowed, "I've already conceded."

"You've conceded? Well, let's say that I accept it. But, tell me one thing... What would I do in case your younger sister doesn't fall in love with me after she comes back? You're making me wait for her like that... and do I go on waiting after that as well? Who would compensate for... for my lost youth? I'm in the prime of my life. A man's beauty becomes outstanding in his prime. He becomes a graceful youngster! How many such years are there in a person's life? Mo Tian Ji, it seems that you haven't calculated that!"

Minister Chu spoke forcefully and righteously, "You want me to make such a sacrifice, and you think that you won't have to pay any price? Dream on!"

....

Chapter 670: Brother Chu, This Must Be Very Difficult For You

Mo Tian Ji was at a loss for words. He had become speechless.

He himself knew that he was forcing Chu Yang to do something against his will. [My younger sister still hasn't decided... And yet, here I am not letting him find a wife... Compelling him to wait obviously isn't justified.]

[She hasn't decided yet. But, the present signs show that there is more than ninety-percent assurance that she will head in that direction.]

[So, am I wrong to be prepared for my younger sister...?]

"Brother Chu, you must consider this. After all, you also like Little Wu. You also wouldn't want Little Wu to be heart-broken, right?"

It was clearly visible that Minister Chu was in uncontrollable rage. So, Mo Tian Ji had no other choice but to change his tactics... He tried to guilt-trap him. He started persuading him patiently instead of being forceful.

"Brother Mo, I like Little Wu a lot. But, you must know that this kind of liking is different than 'that' kind of liking." Chu Yang said whilst 'giving his bare heart into Mo Tian Ji's keeping', "Little Wu is intelligent and adorable. She is pure and innocent like jade snow. So, who wouldn't like her? But, this... this is completely different from what you think."

Minister Chu had clearly felt guilty when he had said these words. So, he couldn't help but sigh.

His liking towards Mo Qing Wu was indeed completely different from what Mo Tian Ji wanted. But, it was also so pure and true that even Mo Tian Ji simply couldn't 'comprehend it in his heart'...

"I know. I know..." Mo Tian Ji sighed. He continued to argue strongly for his younger sister's happiness, "Brother Chu, you're just eighteen, that's all. You may have to wait for five to six years... But, you'll only be over twenty by that time. This is no big deal..."

"Brother Mo..." Chu Yang sorrowfully said, "I understand where you're coming from. I also admit that you're a very good elder brother. You're very concerned about your younger sister. Moreover, you're very meticulous. So, Little Wu is the luckiest to have an elder brother like you..."

Mo Tian Ji warmly smiled. However, he had clearly become disoriented by Chu Yang's praising, "She's my younger sister. Who else would I pamper if not her?"

Chu Yang felt like puking in his heart. However, he continued to sincerely say, "Brother Mo, you and I are both men. I hope you understand that we start to develop feelings towards the opposite sex by the age of thirteen or fourteen. And, I will be eighteen this year. Eighteen!!"

Chu Yang had made a sobbing face. And, his voice could make people have an urge to cry. A person would feel as if he had said eighty and not eighteen if one would listen to his tone.

"I – Chu Yang – am still very young. And, I'm a genuine person. I don't like those vulgar women who only know how to apply makeup and have a short-sighted attitude. Moreover, I'm a sensitive and serious person. I'm not the 'skirt-chaser' type."

Minister Chu was very eloquent in his expression. He had made a supreme effort to express his moral integrity.

He was talking about his own helplessness, but he was in fact hinting that, [Mo Tian Ji, I'm the right man to be your brother-in-law! Where else would you find an outstanding man like me? You're blind if you don't hold me tight for your younger sister...]

Mo Tian Ji grabbed Chu Yang's hand, "Yes, I believe what you've

just said. Oh, that Wu Qian Qian is a peerless talent and beauty. She had deep-rooted love towards Brother Chu. But... Brother Chu, you stayed polite, and didn't mess around. You're truly a role model for our generation."

Mo Tian Ji was trustworthy when it came to talking about Chu Yang's integrity.

Mo Tian Ji didn't hide anything... The data that Mo Tian Ji had collected about Chu Yang was the most thorough and detailed one in the whole world. So, how could he not know about Chu Yang's integrity? He had never heard of Chu Yang messing around with any woman...

Chu Yang was a man who could turn the world upside down. Moreover, he had a high status. So, which woman wouldn't want to be with him? It could be said that King of Hell Chu only needed to say, [I want a wife!] Then, the emperor of the Iron Cloud Empire – Tie Bu Tian – would've picked the top beauties for him!

Mo Tian Ji firmly believed this speculation of his.

[But, it is simply outrageous that King of Hell Chu's integrity can reach to this degree. He is simply a sage!]

[If this kind of man is not reliable... I don't know what other man can be!]

Mo Tian Ji got more and more anxious to rope-in Chu Yang for his younger sister after he thought this.

"Eighteen..." Minister Chu listlessly said, "I must look for a..."

"Don't worry, Brother Chu. You don't need to be worried about this." Mo Tian Ji shook his arm, "You'll still have many choices to choose from later."

Chu Yang forced a smile, "Brother Mo, you're also a man... just like me. So, I hope you can understand that... sometimes the urges make us very unwell... I've dampened my urges dozens of times this year."

"Yes, I do..." Mo Tian Ji's complexion turned black. He said, "I know it's very hard to control the urges..." He recalled that he had held his maid to... deal with it when he had had an urge back then. So, he couldn't help but admire that Minister Chu had managed to dampen his urges.

[A man who can do this is rare.]

"You want me to wait for Little Wu to grow up... However, she'll take at least four or five years to get ready to marry, right?" Chu Yang's face was somewhat distorted.

"To get ready to marry..." Mo Tian Ji wanted to cuss at him, [My younger sister will be just fifteen or sixteen after four or five years. And, you animal... you want to lay a hand on her?] But then, he remembered that he wanted help from this person. So, he had no other choice but to swallow his anger. He said with a forced smile, "Brother Chu's calculation is very good!"

"What would I do in these four to five years? Wouldn't it suffocate me to death?" Chu Yang righteously said, and looked towards Mo Tian Ji. "Forget about the others... You tell me, Brother Tian Ji. Can you... abstain for four or five years?"

"I..." Mo Tian Ji was dumbfounded. [I haven't gotten married yet. But, I've had many concubines in my room. So, how can I be like you? Abstain for four to five years? Motherfu*ker... won't I turn into a horny pervert in that case?]

"But, my Heavenly Armament Pavilion is still in a developing phase. Powerful enemies are all around, and danger is lurking on every side. I can't tell how vast the danger would be in future. So, I don't have time to bother about romance or such feelings..." Chu Yang changed the subject.

"Yes, you're right." Mo Tian Ji hurriedly said, "A real man must give priority to his ambitions!"

"Everyone in our Heavenly Armament Pavilion has excelled in

the world. But, we lack a resourceful military counselor." Chu Yang sighed with regret, and said, "Brother Tian Ji, let's do it like this... I won't beat around the bush anymore. I'll come to the point. You want me to abstain, and wait for your younger sister to come back? Fine! But, I have one condition..."

Chu Yang finally came to the point after beating around the bush. He finally revealed his real intention. He now started to speak genuinely.

Mo Tian Ji forced a smile. [Fu*k! Could it be that this guy wants to turn me into a slave?]

"You become the military advisor for my Heavenly Armament Pavilion. Let us brothers unite, and work together for the great cause!" Chu Yang righteously said, "And, I'll try my best to abstain, and wait for your sister to come back! I'll also sacrifice myself and help Little Wu if she truly... falls in love with me..."

Minister Chu heaved a fake sigh after he said this... as if he was making a great sacrifice.

Mo Tian Ji experienced an overwhelming amount of feelings at once in his heart.

[How did this matter develop into... this situation? I'm being sold into slavery...? Moreover, I also have to cup my hands in obeisance, and see off my younger sister? And, this guy has given consent in such an unwilling manner... as if he is doing a great favor on me...]

[This guy pretends that he is 'sacrificing himself and helping my younger sister'?]

The fun fact was that Chu Yang had completely tricked and disoriented Mo Tian Ji – a guy whose intelligence was as deep as the sea and who was famous for being super-smart.

Mo Tian Ji smacked his lips. He chattered and muttered to himself, "But, what I'm listening... why does it feel wrong? What

does it mean... It's very confusing..."

"Brother Mo, you don't need to feel awkward." Chu Yang continued moaning and groaning in displeasure. "I know that my Heavenly Armament Pavilion is a small temple, and it can't contain a great deity like you. So, let's pretend that I haven't said anything if you have any objection."

He seemed to heave a sigh of relief, "I'll now go and look for a wife without delay. In fact, I truly feel regretful for not doing so in the Lower Three Heavens now that I think about it..."

"Don't, don't. Stop..." Mo Tian Ji hastily stopped this guy from speaking. He then clenched his teeth, "I just need to be your military adviser, right? Moreover, we brothers will work towards a great cause together. This is exactly what I – Mo Tian Ji – have been looking for. So, how can I disagree?"

"But, I don't want you to agree reluctantly..." Chu Yang said whilst being insincerely courteous.

"I'm not doing it reluctantly!" Mo Tian Ji retorted.

"But, I don't want you to make a decision against your will... Otherwise, I might as well cancel this agreement now-itself if you're going to be in a bad mood and not work hard for the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. After all, my youth... won't come back once lost..." Minister Chu continued to persuade. He beat around the bush whilst trying to eliminate the future trouble.

"Am I – Mo Tian Ji – that kind of person?" Mo Tian Ji became extremely angry.

"But I..."

"No buts! This matter is decided!" Mo Tian Ji aggressively waved his hand, and made the final decision. "But, King of Hell Chu, what if you don't wait for my sister...?"

"Then, I'll be worse than an animal! May the heaven strike me five times with lightning! May ten-thousand arrows pierce my

heart! May I go through ten-thousand tribulations, and not reincarnate ever! May I burn in hell forever...!" Chu Yang raised his hand, and vowed... This vow was simply earth-shaking! It could make the listeners have their hair stand on end!

"Besides, Brother Mo, we'll be most grateful for your assistance. How can I – King of Hell Chu – be so cheap as to not keep my end of the deal? You rest assured... I'll try my best to groom myself for your younger sister's feelings... Yeah. And, I'll accept it when the time comes no matter the outcome... Little Wu may not have a liking towards me... But, I, I will... I will still..." Chu Yang said with difficulty.

Mo Tian Ji was emotionally touched. [He took such a malicious oath. One can see how much Chu Yang values me. He agreed to make such a commitment and sacrifice so that I can be a member of his pavilion!]

Mo Tian Ji was a cool-blooded strategist. However, a warm feeling that 'he would die for his friend' welled up in his heart with in an instant.

"Brother Chu, you feel relieved. I – Mo Tian Ji – am not the kind of person who doesn't know how to appreciate others' good intentions." Mo Tian Ji seriously said.

However, Mo Tian Ji was still anxious in his heart. Chu Yang had made this commitment, but a look of worry could clearly be seen on Mo Tian Ji's face. It was just an exchange of conditions. However, he couldn't be sure how Younger Sister would turn out to be in the future... After all, Little Wu only had the 'pure and honest love between brother and sister' towards Chu Yang at present.

[Mo Qing Wu's feelings towards Chu Yang are very likely to change. It'll just need the right conditions. Year after year of deep-rooted sense of longing will eventually take shape of undying love. But, Chu Yang is an adult. And, for an adult to grow feelings for a

little girl... this is going to be extremely difficult...]

Mo Tian Ji put himself in Chu Yang's shoes. He thought that it would have been very difficult for him to accept this if he were Chu Yang...

"Brother Chu... I know... this is... must be... hard for you." Mo Tian Ji felt apologetic as he said.

....

Chapter 671: The Two Supremes Who Hamper a Student's Progress

"No... You are too kind..." Minister Chu's heart blossomed with happiness, but his face only showed a faint smile as he said, "Brother Mo doesn't need to be that serious... just relax. I can get over this inner demon."

Mo Tian Ji sighed, [Changing from the sentiment of younger sister to the feeling of his lover... this inner demon is indeed going to be difficult to get over. I'm forcing him to do something against his will...]

Chu Yang was continually moaning and groaning in displeasure on the outside, but he was joyfully satisfied in his heart, "Will I have such an inner demon? No fu*king way... It will be bewildering if I do have it..."

"Then, shall we consider this matter decided?" Chu Yang asked.

"Yes, this matter is hereby fixed!" Mo Tian Ji replied.

The two men looked at each other. Then, they reached out to shake hands.

"Brother Chu, recruiting me in the Heavenly Armament Pavilion must've been your long-term plan?" Mo Tian Ji smiled.

"Er..." Chu Yang smiled, "We can also say that both sides were willing, right?"

"Brother Chu is so careful about the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. It seems that he is ready to lead the Heavenly Armament Pavilion into the Upper Three Heavens; am I right?" The look in Mo Tian Ji's eyes was impossible to unravel.

"Let me guess... Brother Chu is recruiting me to help him in dealing with Diwu Qing Rou and Zhuge Clan; correct?" Mo Tian Ji deduced.

"That is to say, Brother Chu is ready to be enemies with Diwu Qing Rou and Zhuge Clan," Mo Tian Ji drew inference.

"But, all matters are still unclear. After all, you haven't even met the Zhuge Clan's people yet. However, you've ascertained them to be your enemy."

A bright color flashed in Mo Tian Ji's eyes. He leant closer to Chu Yang's ears, and whispered to him in a soft and nearly inaudible voice, "Brother Chu, are you the current age's Nine Tribulations Sword's Master?"

Chu Yang's complexion changed.

"Ha-ha... Let's pretend that I didn't say anything. After all, I don't know anything," Mo Tian Ji spread out his hands and laughed.

The two looked at each other, and couldn't help but laugh.

"Brother Mo, when did you start to suspect?"

"Gu Du Xing and the others... They've made a rapid progress since they've started following you. This is the first one.

"Why would Diwu Qing Rou give up on such an excellent situation of fighting a decisive battle with you, bring about his own defeat, and then flee? This is the second.

"I was checking the celestial phenomenon in the night sky of the Middle Three Heavens after Diwu Qing Rou's army got defeated. After all, I wanted to read the destiny of my Mo Clan. I had seen a gorgeous and scarlet 'fate energy' rushing towards the Upper Three Heavens at that time," Mo Tian Ji smiled, "Don't forget that I'm well-versed in the art of reading destiny. My technique is called 'Grasping the World's Destiny'.

"Third, I have already seen Gu Du Xing's sword and Dong Wu Shang's saber.

"Fourth, Little Wu's injury suddenly got cured."

Mo Tian Ji put on an honest smile. His voice again became

inaudible, "Maybe I am ill-informed and narrow-minded, but I still know that there's a magical existence called... Nine Tribulations Pill.

"Fifth, my plan was to first divide the world into three warring factions. Then, I would've started the war. But, you destroyed the Meng Clan in advance. Then, you destroyed the Ou Clan as well. Then, you deliberately instigated a civil strife in the Ao Clan. And, these situations would only lead towards the unification of the world after the chaos settles down...

"I know that it is the Sword Lord's duty to conquer the world."

...

Mo Tian Ji slightly smiled and said, "So, Brother Chu, I would still have joined the Heavenly Armament Pavilion even if you hadn't used Little Wu to pressure me. Otherwise, why would I have strongly advocated that the War of the Middle Three Heavens must be led by you? Could it be that I – Mo Tian Ji – not qualified enough to be the leader?

"I'm able to strategize plans in an army tent. Could it be that I can't obtain victory out there on the battlefield... thousands of miles away?

"I know the weight of these things. So, I have been keeping them tightly sealed in my heart. I haven't mentioned to anyone."

Mo Tian Ji took the initiative and explained the most prominent doubt in Chu Yang's heart first. He said with a smile, "After all, this might be the only chance that my Mo Clan will get to dash up to the Upper Three Heavens."

Chu Yang was rendered speechless.

[I thought that I was taking advantage of him. But, I genuinely don't know which one among us got played in the end...]

Or, both of them won. After all, both of them had achieved their goals.

Chu Yang eliminated the biggest obstacle between himself and Mo Qing Wu. And, he eliminated a huge crisis by doing so. Moreover, he cleared the way for his future with Mo Qing Wu.

The only thing that made him feel uncomfortable was that... his brother-in-law was unsure.

Mo Tian Ji had also achieved his goal... First, to make Chu Yang and his younger sister be together. Second, he had successfully gotten a ticket to the Upper Three Heavens.

Moreover, Chu Yang had urged him to come over.

Consequently, both of them were relieved.

However, Mo Tian Ji quickly became serious after they had loosened up a bit. And, that's because he knew what kind of road he would face in the future... And, what kind of enemy he would face!

He had been making these plans and strategies in the Middle Three Heaves with painstaking efforts. However, they were like child's play when compared with those enemies.

In fact, he was like a baby who was learning to speak in front of those enemies!

Mo Tian Ji laughed when he saw Chu Yang frowning, "You don't have to worry. I am quite the trickster, you know. I like to play tricks on people. But, there's one thing I would like you to understand — I have never tricked those on my own side."

He smiled faintly, "Of course, cracking jokes is an exception."

What Mo Tian Ji said was indeed right or correct. Chu Yang was most-worried about Mo Tian Ji's scheming nature. Ji Mo and the others might be fine with it, but Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang weren't the type who joked around. Moreover, they didn't like it when someone played tricks on Chu Yang. So, he naturally calmed down after listening to Mo Tian Ji's statement.

"I want to remind you that this is going to be a dangerous road! Just because the previous Sword Lords could succeed doesn't mean that you will succeed as well. The pressure of this road will be unparalleled!"

Mo Tian Ji whispered, "So, some of our brothers will inevitably crack under this pressure! So... it is necessary to crack jokes and relax on this journey. Otherwise... we would crack under stress of our own accord even before the enemy attacks us if we don't crack a few jokes."

"This, I understand." Chu Yang nodded deeply.

It was easier said than done. It was already too soon to be talking about the unification of the Nine Heavens. Chu Yang's strength was presently far inferior than any of the nine great clans. In fact, his strength hadn't even reached 1/1000th of the other party. The pressure of the road ahead could be well-imagined from this one fact alone.

"You don't need to think too much about it. The boat will go straight with the current when it gets to the pier-head," Mo Tian Ji said slowly, "You will only scare yourself to death if you think too much."

...

"Brother Chu, I will issue the war declaration the day after tomorrow. We will fight a decisive battle on the shores of the Lake of Despair. We should receive a reply within one day. Then, I will make the manifesto to the world. And, we should head out once that happens.

"We will assemble before the Wind and Snow mountain range. And, we will set out for the Lake of Despair from there.

"This war should see the participation of all clans in the Middle Three Heavens.

"So, this war is crucial!

"We have to recharge our batteries in the coming few days. We only have three days of leisure time. You will have to make haste if you wish to improve your strength. After all, you will need to make the best use of time."

The two men discussed and walked out of Mo Qing Wu's area.

"By the way, I wasn't joking with you regarding my younger sister's matter," Mo Tian Ji solemnly reminded him.

Chu Yang didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

Now, he once again felt the same vibe of the Mo Tian Ji he had been close friends with in his previous life. That is... The Mo Tian Ji who was very controlling and manipulative.

[It is a lucky thing to have more people like Mo Tian Ji around. But, it can also get somewhat annoying at times. Because, he knows everything before you've even had the chance to say it. He already understands everything, and even has a solution ready...]

[It's also quite boring to talk to this guy. That's because he will do all the talking if he doesn't want to allow you to speak.]

[And, that includes the questions you have to ask... your confusions, doubts, etc... He would summarize all these for you. Then, he would accurately guess what your response would be to his statements. And then, he would even begin to clarify your doubts...]

Chu Yang had endured countless such experiences in his previous life... He recalled that he had once chatted with Mo Tian Ji for an afternoon. However, he had later realized that he hadn't said a single word the entire time...

It was like watching someone putting on a one-man show...

The second half of today's conversation had basically been the same... Chu Yang hadn't said a word. Mo Tian Ji had planned everything, and had answered all the questions that Chu Yang hadn't even asked.

Chu Yang sat in Mo Tian Ji's study room. He realized this problem after some time had passed. He couldn't help but spit his saliva out of resentment, "Fu*k! I already knew this was going to be so annoying..."

...

These two amazing geniuses were blathering-on. In fact, they weren't far away from another round of a big fight. However, a cute little girl had been earnestly practicing somewhere on the road to the Upper Three Heavens this entire time.

Ning Tian Ya and Bu Liu Qing were taking Mo Qing Wu, and were going back to the Upper Three Heavens. They were still halfway when the two Supreme Experts encountered a big trouble.

"Two Masters... Can I go to say goodbye to Elder Brother Chu Yang again?" Glistening teardrops were flickering in this cute little girl's eyes, "I miss him boohoo..."

The two supreme experts staggered; [She is missing him already? How long has it been since they've separated? She actually wants to say goodbye 'again'? We won't be able to reach the Upper Three Heavens for a lifetime if wants to go back this often.]

"It's fine if we can't go back to say goodbye. How about you two bring Elder Brother Chu Yang over?" A look of eagerness and longing flashed in the cute little girl's eyes.

The two supreme experts remained silent.

"Of course; how can I be so stupid?" The cute little girl clapped her hands, "Are you two masters worried that you can't find an apprentice? Then, why don't you accept Elder Brother Chu Yang as an apprentice?"

"This is very a good idea..."

"Masters... what do you say?"

...

The two supreme experts finally collapsed. In fact, anyone who had suffered this on a nearly 10,000 miles-long journey would've collapsed.

"Dear Apprentice, it's not like we don't want to do it. But, your Elder Brother Chu Yang is no ordinary guy..." Ning Tian Ya explained with a painstaking look on his face, "We don't dare to be his masters... It will be the doom of us if we took him in as our disciples..."

"Elder Brother Chu Yang is that powerful?" The cute little girl suddenly got excited.

"Well, your Elder Brother Chu Yang... will become the most powerful person in the Nine Heavens if this Old Man isn't mistakes!" Bu Liu Qing said this.

"Wow!" The cute little girl's eyes lit up.

"Wow! Wow! Wow!" The cute little girl exclaimed in surprise, "That is to say... Elder Brother Chu Yang will become more powerful than the two masters in the future?"

"Eh..." The two supreme experts rolled their eyes at the same time; [Did we say that?]

"That means... the two masters are no match for Elder Brother Chu Yang?" Mo Qing Wu became exhilarated.

"Eh..." The faces of the two supreme experts turned dark.

"Then, why do I need to study under you two? Can't I learn from my Elder Brother Chu Yang instead?" The cute little girl rolled her eyes and furiously said, "Are you two trying to hamper your students' progress?"

The cute little girl suddenly got angry and bitter... [Humph!]

Ning Tian Ya and Bu Liu Qing felt like crying, but had no tears to shed.

The Nine Heavens had a 90,000 year old history. Had someone

ever dared to say that two supreme experts were hampering their apprentice's progress? It seemed like... this had happened for the first time today...

...

Chapter 672: The Battle for the Middle Heavens

These Supreme Experts first had to sort-out this 'hampering the apprentice's progress' issue since they didn't have a better choice.

"Khaff khaff... your Elder Brother Chu Yang will be very powerful in the future. But, he's nothing right now!" Ning Tian Ya restrained his gloominess and explained, "You will have to wait for him to grow up. How can it happen before several hundred years have passed?"

Mo Qing Wu coldly snorted. Her complexion was still as unconvinced as before.

"Moreover... Your Elder Brother Chu Yang would be so powerful in future. But, you wouldn't be able to catch up with him if you don't practice hard. And, you will be left behind if you can't catch up. How will you be a match for your Elder Brother Chu Yang, then?" Bu Liu Qing had mentioned a very important thing while making this comparison. In fact, he had pointed out a crucial point.

"Yes... I must practice hard!" Bu Liu Qing proudly looked at Ning Tian Ya as Mo Qing Wu said this. The Old Man's meaning was obvious... [Did you see that? My method is effective.]

...

They went back to Ning Tian Ya's residence. Ning Tian Ya didn't have time to take a rest. He began to prepare for instructing his apprentice with everything he had. However, he obviously wanted to make a good relationship with her first.

"Xiao Wu, you take a look at this. Isn't it nice? Do it like this... Like this..."

"Master, why haven't we started to practice yet?"

"This... this thing... Don't you like it?"

"Yes. But, this thing won't make me catch up with Elder Brother Chu Yang."

The two masters hadn't expected this. They had expected that they would have to urge this cute little girl to practice, but that didn't happen. Instead, this cute little girl urged her masters to start with the practice.

This was a good start. It made both the Supreme Experts happy. Therefore, Ning Tia Ya immediately started training her.

One day later...

The cute little girl was somewhat exhausted. "One more time."

Two days later...

The cute little girl had become weak, "Come... one more... time."

Three days later...

"Boohoo... I miss Elder Brother Chu Yang..." The cute little girl gave up.

Ning Tian Ya didn't know how to deal with it.

"My whole body is aching..." The cute little girl's eyes were gleaming with tears.

Ning Tian Ya looked upwards and deeply sighed.

However, the one thing that made both the Supreme Experts happy was — this cute little girl's aptitude was incredible. It was the best in the entire world. Her physical strength wasn't too good, but her wisdom was so great that she could deduce many things from one case. Moreover, the cute little girl could recite the theoretical chants from memory in one go.

So, not much time was spent when it came to these things.

However, the cute little girl's physical strength couldn't keep up. Therefore, practice turned out to be the most difficult thing.

"Would you like me to give you a massage every day? I can massage you if you want!" Ning Tian Ya couldn't do anything about her body-ache. So, he volunteered to give her a massage. A majestic Supreme Expert had lowered himself to be his apprentice's masseur...

"Absolutely not!" The cute little girl's eyes were gleaming with tears because of the pain she was in. So, it was a bit exceptional that she had firmly refused her master's offer, "You may be my master, but you're a man at the end of the day! I won't allow any man to touch my body. It belongs to Elder Brother Chu Yang only!"

Ning Tian Ya felt like crying.

When had a Supreme Expert ever given a massage to someone? However, he had taken the initiative now. And, she had embarrassed him on the spot... He had shown kindness, but he had been snubbed. He felt so depressed that it seemed as if his innards were smoldering...

[I am more than fu*king ten-thousand years old. Would I still have sexual intentions towards a little girl like you?]

Bu Liu Qing looked at Ning Tian Ya teaching their apprentice with the critical eyes of a bystander. His mouth remained open, and didn't close.

The apprentice's aptitude would make him smile in satisfaction. The apprentice's cuteness would make him smile while pampering her. The apprentice's intelligence would make him smile in gratification. And now, the apprentice's mischief was messing with his old rival Ning Tian Ji. So, it obviously made him take joy in other's misfortune...

Ning Tian Ya felt rejected. So, he went out with a dark face.

Therefore, Ye Clan's chief masseuse – Ye Mei Li — went missing that night. It must be mentioned that Ye Clan was the top clan among the Nine Great Ruling Aristocratic Clans of Nine Heavens...

The cute little girl mischievously laughed and practiced kicking and punching for a while under the attentive gaze of her frowning masters. After that, she groaned while enjoying a massage as she lay in a jade essence bed. Meanwhile, her masters could only look at her whilst being speechless.

What she had felt this day was called 'pure satisfaction'!

Moreover, the most satisfying thing was that Bu Liu Qing had thought of a special method to heighten the little girl's comfort. He had made several holes in a huge jade essence bed that had formed hundred thousand years ago. Then, he had installed some Purple Crystal Jade Essence Beads, White Crystal Jade Essence Beads, Blue Crystal Jade Essence Beads, and Deep Sea Crystal Essence in different spots of the bed. Then, he had used his cultivation prowess of Supreme Level, and had circulated his vital energy through these rare crystals to establish a channel. And, this had led to the formation of an array.

Therefore, this bed would spontaneously attract the spirit energy from the world into this array formation. Then, the energy would be injected into these few heavenly treasures. And, it would create a loop of energy circulation.

Thus, this jade essence bed would get turned into a platform to supply the spirit energy from the world.

Therefore, Mo Qing Wu wouldn't even need to do anything as long as she lay in it and rested. The rare world energies would spontaneously gather here and transport into Mo Qing Wu's dantian. Then, they would spontaneously and randomly enter into her meridians.

Moreover, they would untiringly cleanse the impurities within her body.

This cultivation method was simply fantastic!

This jade essence bed was lifted from Ning Tian Ya's room after

this method was successfully established. Then, it was put into the cute little girl's chambers. Henceforth, it became exclusive for Mo Qing Wu.

However, the cute little girl pouted when this bed was being moved to her room. She looked as if she was being wronged. She carefully cleaned the bed using fresh water. Then, she sniffed the right side of the bed with her little nose. And, she repeated the same thing on the left side as well. She then wrinkled her brows, and reluctantly accepted it.

"Humph, Master Ning hasn't bathed once since I've arrived here. And, he now wants me to sleep on the bed he used to sleep in... This is obviously bullying. Humph! I'll have to wash it again!"

The cute little girl pouted. She felt wronged. She felt that she was being mistreated; "They didn't even get a bed for me... These Supreme Experts are so poor..."

Both the Supreme Experts almost vomited out blood on the spot.

[Poor? Who can dare to call us poor? You can investigate the entire Nine Heavens. Where else would you find such jade essence bed? Even one bead from this bed can overturn the entire Nine Heavens!]

[We both Supremes have transformed many of the world's top treasures with great effort. We spent so much vital energy to craft these top treasures that can help in a person's cultivation... And, they're being treated as trash?]

[Alas. Let it be trash or whatever... It's fine as long as our treasured apprentice can rest in it...]

Both the Supremes had been rendered speechless; only tears were flowing down their eyes.

The next day was a more intensive abyss of suffering. The cute little girl practiced very devotedly. Moreover, she was very serious and hard-working. Her improvement was also very quick. It was

because the cute little girl had made a strong determination in her heart; [I have to become strong as quickly as possible! I will protect Elder Brother Chu Yang... I will hurriedly study and master martial arts. Then, I will hurriedly and go find Elder Brother Chu Yang...]

She spent the first few painstaking days with such attitude. In fact, her diligence had soon reached a level where the two Supremes couldn't bear to watch her push herself so much.

But... the problem was that Chu Yang had made her used to one thing — she would listen to stories before going to bed.

How could both the Supremes be willing to disappoint their treasured apprentice? Therefore, both of the Supremes would take turns and tell her stories.

"Long long time ago..."

"Once upon a time..."

"It is said that..."

This continued for a month. But, both the Supremes' bellies emptied out of stories after that. So, they would have to face sullen expressions from this little girl. And, both the Supremes would be left feeling like bashing their heads against the wall.

[Is this an apprentice we have received? Or have we invited a grumpy grandma over?]

The more excessive thing was that... Mo Qing Wu would shake her head every time she would listen to the stories; [It is not as good as Elder Brother Chu Yang's incredible stories.] Then, she would rest her chin on her hands; [I really miss you, Elder Brother Chu Yang...]

Both the Supremes eventually developed a strong resentment after experiencing this for many days. Perhaps, it could be said that they had developed a conditioned-reflex — they would have a headache every time they listened to the name 'Elder Brother Chu

Yang'.

They would clench their teeth in secret; [I swear that I am not a man if I don't tidy up this guy Chu Yang the next time I meet him! That bastard will have to answer me... How much has he spoiled this Old Man's apprentice...]

Naturally, they had been carrying-on Mo Qing Wu's routine practice while complaining. Moreover, she had been progressing by leaps and bounds. In fact, her speed of progression had become like whirlwind...

The two Supremes had competed hard with the intention of victory at first. However, their zeal gradually became weak. Why would they compete for this apprentice? It couldn't be said for sure when these two would hit their final impasse. However, it was certain that the whole world would treat her as their joint successor when they'd kick the bucket. So, why would they even bother to compete?

[Um, our little apprentice's cultivation speed is much faster than ours when we were her age. So, she would be able to go out in the Jianghu after several years. And, she would be able to learn through practical experience after that...]

The Supreme Experts would sit in front of each other and drink tea from time to time. However, both of them would feel depressed; [Our apprentice will inevitably be gobbled up by that beast Chu Yang at this rate...]

The two Supreme Experts would wish to go down to the Middle Three Heavens whenever this thought would cross their minds. After all, they wanted to castrate that brat named Chu Yang...

These two Supreme Experts of the Upper Three Heavens hadn't heard of any external affairs. After all, they had been teaching their apprentice wholeheartedly. Meanwhile, the chaotic storm of the Middle Three Heavens had finally become vigorous.

More than a dozen clans had simultaneously set into action. They had started attacking each other at close hand.

The bystanders also started to get caught in the crossfire as time passed. Consequently, the clans who hadn't stuck their head out also got involved. In fact, the daily death toll had gradually exceeded four digits.

The daily closure of shops had increased to three digits. The daily staff-change of the shops had also exceeded three digits...

The conflict intensified by the third day. All the great clans mobilized their military forces. They would go out in regiments with 'ding dang' marching sounds. The gangs would spread out, and walk on the road. And, they would go up to anyone who wasn't wearing the same attire as them. Then, they would brutally attack the opposite party.

The number of casualties had exceeded ten-thousand people on the third day...

Those who would walk alone in the Jianghu had the most bad-luck. In fact, they would be chased down by everyone like rats if they didn't have a backer. After all, who would care whether they were guilty or innocent?

Mo Clan's first action was — to act under the banner of "Seeking justice for the people of Jianghu, and ensuring safety of the people of Jianghu." Many frightened and restless people of Jianghu had started to feel that they were in danger. And, these people instantly threw themselves at the Mo Clan's door...

....

The situation had gone out of control by the fourth day. Almost all the businesses of the Ou Clan's allied clans had been smashed. The entirety of their financial sources had been cut off as well. They had flown into rage as a result, and were venting it out everywhere...

At this time, Mo Tian Ji sent out the war declaration...

His tactic was very simple — "The war to determine the winner! The war for the Middle Heavens! Come to the Lake of Despair's lakeside on October 10. Do you dare?"

Tian Bu Hui flew into a rage. He replied on the spot, "You want a battle? Then I will give you one! The battle to change the current order of the world! The battle for the Middle Heavens!"

Then, Mo Tian Ji issued orders to dispatch his punitive forces to deal with the problem of Jianghu.

The several great clans which were headed by the Mo Clan stood at the peak of morality. And, they also had heavy support from the masses. They occupied the high moral ground. Then, they started killing the people from Ou Clan's allied clan by using the sword of justice.

The Ao Clan also declared their participation in the war at the same time!

After all, not entering the war won't do. It was estimated that the winning party bring about the change of order in the entire Jianghu. And, that party would have far superior reputation than the Ao Clan. So, the Ao Clan wouldn't be able to keep up with the heat even by eating shit if they didn't participate...

It was almost dusk on this day. Two pieces of news spread across the Middle Three Heavens at the same time. The Middle Three Heavens was already in chaos at the time. But, the news flared it further.

....

Chapter 673: Two Messages

These two pieces of information were transmitted one after another. Chu Yang and Mo Tian Ji were left stunned after they listened to the first piece of information...

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had joined hands together, and had destroyed the two brothers of the Ao Clan — Ao Qing Yun and Ao Feng Yun!

Ao Qing Yun's heart was pierced by Gu Du Xing's sword. And, Ao Feng Yun was chopped into two by Dong Wu Shang's saber!

Mo Tian Ji cursed when he saw this message, "You say... aren't these two brothers of ours truly very valiant? Otherwise, how would they have slaughtered those two boys... those two so-called great geniuses?"

Chu Yang spat saliva on the floor, and said, "Brother Mo, why do you have such resentment towards these two geniuses? A person being talented in martial studies doesn't mean that they will be adept at battle strategies too. After all, stratagem surpasses all kind of talents... Every genius of one subject is bound to be naïve in another."

Chu Yang deeply and heavily said, "I believe that these two geniuses of Ao Clan are naïve. Otherwise, they wouldn't have been blinded by their wild ambitions like that."

Mo Tian Ji laughed out loud. Then, he puckered up his brows, "They may be naïve. But, it still wasn't a good thing to kill them at such a critical time."

Chu Yang snorted, "This isn't necessarily a bad thing either."

They both exchanged a glance. Then, they both made evaluations in their hearts. Mo Tian Ji and Chu Yang had completely different views in this matter.

Mo Tian Ji followed the circuitous approach. [This isn't the time

to kill. It would be good to kill them after they are no longer needed... After all, isn't it still revenge even if it is taken a bit later? Everyone knows that it still won't be late if a gentleman takes his revenge after ten years, right?]

On the other hand, Chu Yang was a hardliner. [I'll kill if you dare to provoke me! I'll kill you no matter what. What Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang have done is absolutely right! They've killed those two. That's it... Big deal!]

The two naturally didn't understand each other's reasons.

The message said that the two Great Young Masters of the Ao Clan had taken their troops to the Gu Clan that day. They had made an announcement of their arrival, and had then entered the Gu Clan. They had been somewhat arrogant since the beginning. However, they had been a bit courteous at first this time.

But, the main issue that they had mentioned was that they had come to recruit the Gu Clan.

So, Gu Du Xing had exploded.

[I was happy and content. And, you guys came to mess up my life's best moments?]

Gu Du Xing had sternly refused. Then, he had driven both of them out.

On the second day... both the young masters had been unwilling to let go. They had analyzed the situation, and tried to convince Gu Clan with reason. They had also tried to move them with feelings. In short, they had said, [Your Gu Clan will definitely be done for in this crisis of the Middle Three Heavens. So, it would be better if you were to start serving our Ao Clan as soon as possible...]

However, Gu Du Xing had paid no heed. [You two are boneheads. This is simply hilarious. Do you even know who I am?]

On the third day... Gu Du Xing had finally been unable to take it anymore.

It was because Ao Feng Yun had mentioned about Gu Miao Ling amidst the conversation. He had said sincerely and earnestly, [What would be the fate of Gu Miao Ling if Gu Clan got exterminated? Only Ao Clan would be able to offer her protection...]

Gu Du Xing flew into a rage before Ao Feng Yun could even finish speaking. He rushed out, and brutally attacked them.

Both the great clans clashed and hurt each other. Everyone stayed in their margins, and no one got killed. But, they sustained a lot of injuries.

This made both the Ao Young Masters angry.

The Ao Clan was considered a tyrant in the entire Middle Three Heavens. Had they ever received such a provocation?

So, they started to rain curses. They even proclaimed to exterminate the Gu Clan.

Gu Du Xing was at the end of his patience. So, he finally started to fight heartlessly... Second Master Dong coincidentally arrived at this moment!

Dong Wu Shang had rushed the entire journey. He had only been a few miles away when he had heard Ao Clan's curses. So, he had flown into a rage, and rushed in like a meteor. He united with his saber... A 'shua' sound was issued. Then, he chopped off Ao Feng Yun's body in the most vicious manner!

Both the brothers of the Ao Clan were martial arts geniuses... But, their talents had been of no help on that day. They had been no match in front of abnormal geniuses like Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing.

Ao Feng Yun had lost his life in just one move!

Ao Clan's people naturally became angry. So, they encircled Dong Wu Shang in succession. They wanted to kill this man who had chopped their Young Master into pieces.

Gu Du Xing also dashed out at this moment. He took advantage of the time when all the people of Ao Clan were busy in besieging Dong Wu Shang. He slashed his sword, and a smooth sword-light flashed. It sent the soul of the other Young Master Ao Qing Yun straight to hell!

The matter had already escalated to such a point that Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had become unafraid of getting into trouble. So, they made a full-on counter attack. The Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor rushed into Ao Clan's crowd unhindered. They bellowed loudly, and battled fiercely. Then, all the people of Gu Clan also rushed out, and pulverized the already defeated enemy...

Only three senior Emperor Level Experts of the Ao Clan were able to run away from this battle. The rest got buried in front of Gu Clan's main gate...

The show had already ended by the time Dong Wu Lei arrived with his troops.

It was said that Eldest Young Master Dong – Dong Wu Lei — had cried on the scene. [My two dear daddies... you two have killed the two Young Masters of the Ao Clan at such a crucial time?!]

[Do you think that this fu*king enmity will die out easily?!]

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang expressed the same opinion regarding Dong Wu Lei's worries; [Ao Clan... who cares?] Dong Wu Lei was left speechless in front of these two bold guys.

On the same day... Gu Du Xing dispersed Gu Clan's clansmen in order to avoid retaliation from the Ao Clan. Then, he commanded his army to start off to the site of the decisive battle along with Brother Dong Wu Lei...

Dong Wu Lei continuously moaned and groaned in depression along the way...

This was the first message.

....

Then, the second message fell into Chu Yang's and Mo Tian Ji's ears... Chu Yang violently cursed out 'mother-fu*ker' on the spot. And, Mo Tian Ji – who had great self-control – pounded his hand on the table.

The second message was even more infuriating than the first one!

The remaining four Young Masters of the Ao Clan had suddenly joined hands. They had then attacked the Xie Clan like lightning along with an army of more than a thousand people!

It was because they had obtained the exact news, [Ao Xie Yun is in the Xie Clan!]

All of them would have an opportunity to kill Ao Xie Yun now. The clan may blame them for this. But, they couldn't bring the dead back to life!

Therefore, the four Young Masters had discussed for a while. Then, they decided to attack the Xie Clan.

It was said that the attack had been heaven-shaking and earth-quaking. The Xie Clan had been caught off-guard. And, half of the sky above the clan had turned red due to the fires.

The eight eighth grade Emperor Level Experts of Ao Clan engaged the ancestor Xie Zhi Qiu of Xie Clan. The other people attacked brutally, and caused wanton destruction.

Xie Dan Qiong had just returned to the clan. However, he was besieged by two Emperor Level Experts in this fight. Consequently, he was seriously injured. Xie Dan Feng also received serious injuries; so did Rui Bu Tong. Tan Tan had been rushing everywhere and protecting everyone with difficulty. Ao Xie Yun had obviously been his priority. But, he got severely injured while protecting Rui Bu Tong.

Afterwards, Xie Zhi Qiu and several Emperor Level Experts of the Xie Clan rushed out, and broke the siege at the risk of their lives. They are presently running towards the Mo Clan! But, the Ao

Clan's army is unwilling to let go, and is chasing after them...

The several hundred years old foundation of Xie Clan was destroyed in a short while!

Chu Yang jumped up when he heard this message.

Mo Tian Ji didn't wait for Chu Yang to speak. He pounded on the table, and issued an order, "All forces... set off immediately! Set off without delay! You must meet up with the Xie Clan before Ao Clan does. You must provide back up to Xie Clan!

"All the intelligence personnel... you people start planning for the battle from this moment. Do not hesitate even a bit. You must protect Xie Clan's people at all costs. You must save them... You mustn't let them die no matter what you have to keep on stake! The treatment and aid to the families you leave behind shall be a hundred times more if something were to happen to you!"

Many invisible falcons flew out. Simultaneously, Chu Yang and Mo Tian Ji ran out of Mo Clan's door whilst being extremely anxious.

"You quickly come along with some people. I'm heading out first," Chu Yang quickly got on a horse, and left behind a few words... He had gone several hundreds of feet away by the time the last word was heard.

Chu Yang and his horse had vanished into the twilight that had just arrived by the time Chu Yang's words faded.

The expression on Mo Tian Ji's face made it seem as if he was drowning. He waved his hand, and the forces marched forward.

A fire seemed to be burning in his heart at this moment! In fact, it was seemingly burning his insides... It was making him feel sick.

This information had thrown Mo Tian Ji into confusion.

"It's hard to believe that there exist people who don't care about the big picture!" Mo Tian Ji finally couldn't help but vent out his

feelings, "They would mess with the entire Jianghu just to get to the Ao Clan's throne? These several geniuses of Ao Clan are simply shameless bastards!"

Mo Tian Ji's plan was at the risk of collapsing if Xie Clan were to suffer such a serious loss at this time. In fact, they were in danger of being defeated in this war of the Middle Three Heavens!

Moreover, the plan that he had made after such hard work would be giving benefits in vain to Tian Bu Hui and his allies...

So, how could Mo Tian Ji not get angry? This was the matter of several clans' survival... And, his own Mo Clan was no exception!

"Clan Lord, perhaps... we haven't thought over this matter enough," An Elder of Mo Clan stroked his beard on one side. Then, he said in a deep voice, "The Ao Clan has stood tall and proud in the Middle Three Heavens for millenniums. It is like a towering tree reaching to the sky for these several Young Masters! They'll have some hope for ascension if they kill Ao Xie Yun. Moreover, their lives are safe as long as their status is safe... regardless of how things would be in the Ao Clan at that time. So, they simply don't care about the overall situation of the world. In fact, it seems that the dispute between the two big alliances of the world is just like a joke in their eyes. They think that they just have to look-on without lifting a finger. They don't wish to take the side of any one party."

"But, the Ao Clan has already announced their participation in the battle!" Mo Tian Ji ferociously said, "Ao Tian Xing has personally said these words this morning!"

"Therefore, they are taking a risk out of desperation," that Elder of the Mo Clan said.

"It still isn't right!" Mo Tian Ji clenched his teeth, "They shouldn't have such courage. They shouldn't have such strength to break through the Xie Clan in one day's period. Something is fishy!"

"The Xie Clan's strength is greater than our Mo Clan's. In fact, it is not inferior to that of the Dong Clan! However, a bunch of dandy so-called 'geniuses' broke through the Xie Clan in just one day?! This is a big joke!"

Mo Tian Ji heavily said, "This is impossible!"

Then, he puckered up his brows, "Ao Clan has declared their participation in the war. Therefore, these people couldn't have gotten the Ao Clan's full-fledged assistance since they are preparing for the battle. And, this means that it can only be those four people, and the teams of experts that are with them. According to our reliable sources... those four had troops of not more than 150 people each. So, they shouldn't have been more than six-hundred people in total.

"But, the message here reads that there were 'more than one-thousand people'. This information isn't wrong. Then, where did those extra 400 people come from?"

Mo Tian Ji frowned. He then let the horse under his crotch speed up. He was constantly pondering and speculating as the gusts of wind blew against his face... Suddenly, there was a flash of light in his mind, "Could it be that the reinforcements of Tian Bu Hui and the others have arrived? But, how can their reinforcements join hands with Ao Clan? But, who else could it be if not them?"

.....

Chapter 674: Father-in-law and Son-in-law Must Not Speak of this Tale...

Second Master Ji was proud of his success these days.

This guy had kept saying that he was going to return to the Ji Clan ever since he had split up from his brothers in Xie Clan. But, he had instead turned his direction towards Huyan Aobo's clan.

[Ji Zhu is in Ji Clan. He's the backbone of the Ji Clan. So, what would I do after going back?]

[That bastard Ji Zhu might hand over this Second Master Ji some long-term task. And, I wouldn't be able to get over with it easily.]

Therefore, Ji Mo turned his ass, and changed his way.

The entire journey after he turned around was smooth. He didn't meet any other interception in his way. This was very strange for him...

The fact was that every interception that was directed against him was lying in-wait on the way to Ji Clan. However, Ji Mo had turned towards the Huyan Clan. Moreover, the Huyan Clan wasn't even remotely connected to the route towards the Ji Clan. Therefore, his journey had stood those people up... The enemy's ambush had gone in vain.

Second Master Ji kept rubbing his crotch happily and excitedly the entire way. He entered into the Huyan Clan's territory with eyes filled with anticipation. It was early evening. Lanterns were being lit. It was supper time.

Second Master Ji looked for a restaurant. He first stopped by to eat and drink.

He had barely sat down and moved the chopsticks when he suddenly heard sounds of majestic footsteps coming from upstairs. Then, the door opened, and it suddenly turned dark before him!

He only saw a tall, sturdy, and big person standing at the door of his private box; the person's height was around eight feet. The person had a tough and stocky built. This person seemed majestic and ferocious. It could even be said that this single person could outdo a thousand men!

This person's imposing aura was innately heroic and mighty. This person seemed to have a bold and powerful tyranny embedded into the bones!

Ji Mo was amazed. But then, he suddenly felt that there was something wrong. He felt that this person's pectoral muscles were far too developed. Their buttocks were also bulging out a bit too much. He attentively looked, and found that it was his own fiancée Young Miss Huyan – Huyan Aobo.

"Aobo..." Ji Mo sprang up, and started to jump as agilely as a monkey. He said while being unable to contain his joy, "How come you're here?"

"You've arrived in my clan's territory. You think I still wouldn't know?" Huyan Aobo walked over majestically. She extended her hand, and pulled out a chair. Then, she sat down; two creaking sounds came from the chair that she had just sat in. She indeed had an overbearing presence. She seemed very powerful and intimidating.

"Hehehe...." Ji Mo giggled. He then thought, [She's extremely strong. It's so satisfying. She gives me a sense of security...]

"Aobo... I've missed you!" Second Master Ji threw a coquettish look, and asked, "Did you miss me?"

Huyan Aobo wrinkled her brows. And, a faint blush slowly rose up on her face. She bit her lip, and just snorted. She didn't say anything.

"Waiter! Bring two chopsticks! Oh, it's better that I go and bring them." Ji Mo fled out with a whooshing sound. He then

immediately came back with a whooshing sound. He had a pair of chopsticks in his hand, "Take these. Aobo, fate has brought us together at last."

He reached out, and took Huyan Aobo's hand in his own. Their arms were almost abreast. One arm was thick, solid, and powerful, while the other one was weak, thin, and tiny. In fact, it seemed as if an arm and a thigh had been placed together.

And, Ji Mo was the 'arm' here...

Then, Ji Mo sat next to Huyan Aobo with a drooling face. This scene could be well compared by a little monkey sitting next to a big black bear.

"Thank god your little conscience knew that you should first come looking for me," Huyan Aobo insipidly said. But, there was a trace of satisfaction in her voice.

"You're my wife. Who else would I look for if not you?" Ji Mo politely picked a piece of beef. Then, he put it into Huyan Aobo's plate.

"Humph..."

Both of them told each other everything after they had finished their meal. Huyan Aobo was a bold and frank woman. She wasn't pretentious in any way. And, Ji Mo was even more casual.

Ji Mo courageously held Huyan Aobo's arm as he walked on the road. Huyan Aobo turned her head, and looked at him. She said, "It's not very elegant."

Ji Mo hung on Huyan Aobo's arm, and twisted his neck. He said, "What's unsightly about this? I'm just taking a walk with my wife; that's all."

"The image is reversed."

"If it's reversed... it's reversed. Who cares?"

Second Master Ji didn't care about it.

However, Huyan Aobo was a bit worried. But, she then thought for a while, and a smile sprinkled on her face, [We are living our days, and making happy memories. So, why should we care about what others would say? Let them see if they want to.]

Ji Mo seemed as if he didn't need to 'blend'. In fact, he had used the price he had paid by being laughed at to cancel out the apprehension in his heart.

Huyan Aobo sighed. She then extended her hand, and pulled Ji Mo's arm.

They both held each other's arms like any other couple would hold arms together. However, it had an absolutely different meaning for them.

Ji Mo raised his head in surprise. But, he couldn't help but knowingly smile in his heart when he saw Huyan Aobo's warm smile and calm eyes.

Both of them were ostentatiously roaming around the town hand-in-hand. They were calm and at ease. They were leaving a trail of dumbfounded gazes in their wake.

The Huyan Clan's guards also found it funny at first. But, they watched these two for a while, and started to feel that they two could sacrifice anything for each other. [They took the initiative to bear becoming the laughing stocks, and faced it confidently. They are truly a harmonious couple.]

One of them was tall, while the other was short. One was sturdy and strong, and the other one was thin and weak. However, they still looked very harmonious while walking together.

They were walking together in such a way that the ridicule in people's hearts slowly turned into respect.

[Would I be able to go for a wife that doesn't suit me if I were in Ji Mo's place?]

[Would I dare... if I were in Ji Mo's place?]

Everyone searched their souls, but didn't find any answers.

But, one thing is certain... One would only let the happiness slip away from their hand if they didn't have such courage. And, one mustn't say that they regret their past mistakes when one starts to feel regret later.

It's because one's happiness was initially in one's own hand. And, they were the one to abandon it. Therefore, they don't have any qualification to say that they 'regret their past mistakes'.

Love doesn't need a reason. It doesn't need self-abasing!

Ji Mo received a heroic hospitality when he arrived at the Huyan Clan's courtyard!

Clan Lord Huyan Tian Feng had made a decision; [This Ji Mo is such a heroic man! He deserves to be my son-in-law!]

Huyan Tian Feng had left to look for this man who was deeply in love with his daughter as soon as he had heard that Ji Mo had come. The eyes of Huyan Clan's Clan Lord had become moist when he had secretly looked at his daughter and Ji Mo walking hand-in-hand in the town.

He was a man. So, he knew what a man cared about the most. Any man would've felt disgraceful while walking hand-in-hand with a woman like that. But, Ji Mo hadn't care about it!

Even Huyan Tian Feng might not have been able to do it if he were in his place. So, he knew that it wouldn't have been too easy for Ji Mo either!

[This is how a real man behaves! This is how a man should be!]

Huyan Tian Feng knew that his daughter wasn't ugly. Moreover, she was clever. She had a good judgment in dealing with things. It could be said that there were many manly qualities in that woman; and, that was obviously not a bad thing.

However, her body-structure was too big. So, she even looked

like a man. She had a great vision, but she lacked the ability to find a suitable spouse... She was high and mighty, but she had already resigned herself to her fate. Otherwise, how could a man like Gao Sheng be worthy of this heroic woman?

However, Huyan Aobo might have suggested her unwillingness to marry Gao Sheng if Gao Sheng hadn't already fled to avoid the marriage.

But, Huyan Tian Feng's daughter had met Ji Mo now. And, it had unburdened him from a big concern!

Huyan Clan held a big banquet that night even though they had already had dinner. They conspired to get their future son-in-law drunk. The more Huyan Tian Feng looked at his son-in-law, the more satisfied he felt. Both father-in-law and son-in-law huddled at the table, and drank to their heart's content.

Ji Mo held himself back at first. But then, he started to empty wine cups. Ji Mo was thin and weak. But, his drinking capacity was no joke. Moreover, he had come to the Huyan Clan for the first time. So, he couldn't show any weakness. He simply wanted to out-drink his father-in-law!

They drank till midnight. Cups and dishes lay in disorder. Huyan Tian Feng couldn't drink anymore. So, he was about to slip off.

Ji Mo had already been ninety-percent intoxicated. But, he was still drinking. However, he saw that his father-in-law had the intention of refusing to acknowledge that he had lost the drinking match... So, Ji Mo slammed his hand on the table, and stood up. He then valiantly bellowed. Then, he firmly pinched his father-in-law's nose, and poured a jug full of liquor down his throat...

Everyone was so flabbergasted that they felt as if they were witnessing a celestial being.

Huyan Clan's Clan Lord turned over and stealthily got under an adjacent table after a jug full of wine went down his belly. This

new son-in-law Ji Mo was visiting his in-laws for the first time, but he was still carrying a jug of wine in his hand. He sang a few folk songs in a loud voice. Then, he dropped it down. He felt his head spinning as he foolishly chuckled twice. He moved around the table, and then happened to collapse on top of his father-in-law with a thumping sound.

This new son-in-law hugged his father-in-law the next moment. Then, both of them started to snore whilst issuing heaven-shaking sounds...

Huyan Clan's people were stunned!

Huyan Aobo and her mother hurriedly came over to see them. They saw that the son-in-law was lying under the table whilst hugging his father-in-law with a look of satisfaction on his face...

Both mother and daughter didn't know whether to laugh or cry. They hastily ordered their men to separate these two. But, these two had drunk too much, and were holding each other tightly... They couldn't be separated even a bit. So, they had to be carried together, and were thrown in the guest room...

Next morning...

Both of them cried in alarm... Their voices were so loudly that they almost broke the sky. Their screams had come out from the guest room...

Then, a bang was heard. Both of them made two holes in the guest room as they rushed out.

Huyan Clan's Clan Lord ran whilst covering his face with his hands. He was ashamed and unable to show his face... His whole lifetime's reputation had gone down the gutter.

Only Ji Mo was left standing foolishly in the courtyard. He had a splitting headache. He was holding his head, and was trying his best to recall what had happened the previous night...

Second Master Ji became famous in his in-laws' house after this!

In fact, the Huyan Clan's ancestor especially ended his seclusion to come and have a look at this new son-in-law who had slept hugging his father-in-law the entire night...

[This... this is simply a prodigy who has been made in heaven.]

Madam Huyan saw her son-in-law trying to find his father-in-law everywhere the next day... Father-in-law was finally found in the living room... Huyan Clan's Clan Lord had been hiding in the Madam's chamber. And, he had been found by this guy.

"Lord Father-in-law, you, you, you... you didn't do anything to me last night, right?" Ji Mo was very sullen and tense. He tried to get to the heart of the matter, and inquired about the truth.

"Get lost!~~~~"

Huyan Tian Feng violently roared. He flew into a rage out of humiliation, and firmly kicked him. Madam Huyan still hadn't clearly seen what her son-in-law looked like when this guy issued a weird cry and was sent out flying like a meteor by her husband's kick.

...

Chapter 675: Who Provoked the Nine Tribulations Sword Master?!

Ji Mo was living in the Huyan Clan. So, it was obvious that he would frequently think of paying respects to his little guy down there.

But, how could it be possible?

The Huyan Clan was a great clan. And, that guy wanted to sleep with the Young Lady before marriage? It was highly improper!

Moreover, Huyan Aobo strictly adhered to keeping up the final barrier. She couldn't let this guy break through it. Ji Mo tried hard many times. But, he could basically do everything except for breaking through this final barrier. And... this final barrier of morality was as tough as iron!

Later, Second Master Ji hardened his heart. [Dammit! How would I achieve success if I don't pay any price?]

Therefore, he raised his head and gulped down a bottle full of Lust Dragon's Blood that Chu Yang had given him just before leaving. Then, he circulated the martial power in his blood vessels, and became vigorous. His entire body turned burning hot.

He then ran like a wisp of smoke, and started to look for Huyan Aobo.

"Aobo, this is bad. I had an aphrodisiac ..." Ji Mo said whilst panicking.

"You brought aphrodisiac in my home?" Huyan Aobo looked at him with a baffled expression. But, how could she not know what this guy's intentions were?

"Yes. Yes... Moreover, it is the most severe one — Lust Dragon's Blood. Aobo, save my life..." Second Master Ji was feeling extremely upset as he shouted. His face had turned red due to

holding back.

"Attendant, come in!" Huyan Aobo called out, and a few bodyguards came in.

"Lock Second Master Ji in the guest room. No one is allowed to go inside without my permission. I repeat... no one!" Huyan Aobo blushed. Then, she moved her mouth close to Ji Mo's ear, and whispered, "You had an aphrodisiac? It was Lust Dragon's Blood? Well then... go and release yourself in the guest room!"

Ji Mo's hands and feet turned ice-cold. "Hic, no no no, no no no... Aobo, dear... oh my dear god! Ah, could you not? Booohoo..."

Ji Mo started to cry. Second Master Ji felt like killing himself as he looked at Huyan Aobo leaving furiously.

The fact was that Ji Mo shouldn't have mentioned Lust Dragon's Blood at any cost or by any means. That was because he might've had it his way if he had said that it was some ordinary aphrodisiac.

However, Huyan Aobo was very experienced. So, how could she not know... that the Lust Dragon's Blood wasn't considered an aphrodisiac?! It would only boost the sexual drive of a man... It could increase the excitement to an extent that it couldn't be restrained. But, it was otherwise harmless!

[Let this guy suffer for several days. He'll be alright.]

Ji Mo had tried to gain an advantage, but had ended up worse off. He had been locked inside this small and dark room.

He remained locked in for three days.

Three days later... Second Master Ji finally got over with it. He came out. But, he found that he had become extremely sensitive. 'It' would stand up whenever he would randomly see pink clothes...

But, this prodigy who had taken an aphrodisiac himself so that he could take unfair advantage of a lady had become a celebrity in the

Huyan Clan!

This news spread from the mouths of several bodyguards. And, the name of Second Master Ji was spread far and wide!

Naturally, the most praiseworthy thing was that this guy's skin was so thick that even an army of a million people wouldn't be able to pierce through. Anyone would've felt too ashamed to show their face if they had been in his place. But, this guy had no sense of shame. In fact, he would first become happy, and then he would feel honored if someone were to mention this in front of him.

Huyan Clan's Clan Lord sighed, [I can see clearly now... This son-in-law doesn't take responsibility for anything... He's super-shameless!]

Ji Mo and Huyan Aobo were sitting together and chatting that evening. Suddenly, a piece of news came through.

"Clan Lord has instructed... Son-in-law must take a look at this news without delay," the bodyguard who had brought the news stammered.

"What kind of news?" Ji Mo received it with curiosity.

Ji Mo gave it a glance...

Then, he suddenly erupted!

"Bastards! Those bastards of Ao Clan! I'll swallow you fu*kers alive if something happens to my brothers!"

Second Master Ji rushed out in a crazy manner.

He had already rushed out like a tornado on horseback by the time Huyan Aobo chased after him to the stable. His eyes had turned red, and he had ferociously clamped his legs in the horse's belly. He was continuously brandishing the horsewhip, and was dashing away without stopping.

"Hey... you, wait a minute for me!" Huyan Aobo shouted.

"Wait for what? It is men's business. Don't meddle!" Ji Mo's voice

came through. The man and horse rushed away at lightning speed, and disappeared into the night!

The sound of hoof beats surged-on like muffled thunder from a distance.

"What happened?" Huyan Aobo caught that guard, and asked.

"The four Young Masters of the Ao Clan have launched a surprise attack on the Xie Clan. Xie Clan has received serious casualties. The major personalities of the Xie Clan have fled... Young Master's brothers are also among them..." that bodyguard replied whilst trembling with fear.

Huyan Aobo cried out in alarm. She then turned around, and went into Huyan Clan's hall.

"I must go!" Huyan Aobo bluntly said to her father.

"Has he left already?" Huyan Tian Feng asked.

"Yes."

"He truly deserves to be called a brave man... He abandoned this easygoing lifestyle, and threw himself into his brothers' crisis... He didn't hesitate..." Huyan Tian Feng muttered to himself. Then, he said, "Not just you... The people of our Huyan Clan will also go!"

He decidedly ordered, "Our Huyan Clan can't stay out in the chaos of Jianghu! All the personnel, start the preparations. The outbreak has occurred earlier than expected. Therefore, we'll also set off in advance!"

"We'll stand on the side where Ji Mo will stand!"

"Set off!"

A little while passed... Then, a cavalry of Huyan Clan's several hundred people rushed out of the clan with a whiz. They were being led by the father and the daughter. They soon disappeared in the curtain of night.

Inside the manor... Madam Huyan had knelt down in front of the

god's idol. She was sincerely knocking down her head, [Heaven bless my husband and my daughter. May they soon return safe and sound...]

Smoke from the burning incense was rising in spirals...

....

Chu Yang was riding a horse whilst dispersing dust in a manner that made it seem as if an arrow had left a bowstring. His black robe was dancing in the night wind. He was issuing fierce 'bang' noises. His sword-like sharp eyes were shooting heartless rays.

He felt as if his heart would burst, and his chest would split open. A worry was unceasingly increasing inside his belly as he was tightly pursing up his lips!

That slight curve at the corner of his mouth revealed his heartlessness. This was enough to induce palpitation in people!

The Nine Tribulation Sword in his Dantian seemed to have been infected by Chu Yang's heaven-soaring murderous intent. It unconsciously gathered to his Dantian, and issued sword-cries with clangs! Suddenly, invisible sword energy was emitted out from Chu Yang's body. Even Chu Yang didn't know that the clouds in the sky were being smashed and dispersed by his heaven-soaring sword energy!

Chu Yang and the horse changed into black lighting in the dim light of the night.

He was moving like a hurricane!

[Brothers!]

[I'm coming!]

[I — Chu Yang — will cause a river of blood in the Middle Three Heavens if you receive the slightest of harm!]

Mo Tian Ji was dozens of kilometers behind him. He had a calm and composed face. He looked solemn. However, he was constantly

issuing orders, "Hurry up! Faster! Throw all the extra baggage. Throw all of them! We only need speed at this moment!"

The large military force sped forward. The sounds of hoof beats echoed like loud rumbles of tsunamis and landslides. They were advancing through the dim light of the night!

....

Ji Mo had bent his body on the horseback, and was rushing madly. The night wind was fiercely blowing against his face. He had opened his eyes wide in anger. He couldn't blink them even if he wanted to.

The rage was rising upwards from his entire body. His anger was rising bit by bit with every passing moment. He felt as if lava was boiling in his heart. He was extremely anxious.

[My brothers, are you alright?]

[You must hold on!]

[You must endure!]

[I – Ji Mo – am coming!]

.....

"Quick! Quick! Quick!"

Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing moved like meteors on the main road, and separated away from their troops. They were rushing on the road on their quick horses. They were burning with anxiety. They were surging ahead like hurricanes.

Their eyes were bloodshot. A brutal and murderous aura seemed to be congealing around their entire bodies!

The wrath of the Sword Emperor and the Saber Emperor had spread everywhere. Several passers-by along their way had swords and sabers on them. However, they had found that their swords and sabers had automatically unsheathed and flickered cold lights when these two had quickly passed by...

The troops of Gu Clan and Dong Clan were repeatedly accelerating under Dong Wu Lei's leadership in the distance behind them. They had doubled their speed. They urged their horses to rush forward and catch up with their Young Masters without hesitation!

Both men were rushing at a speed that made it seem as if they were keeping pace with hurricanes. They were roaring along the way, and were rushing towards the horizon!

Their faces had become like iron. Both of them had the same desire in their heart.

[Brothers!]

[You must stand firm!]

[We're coming!]

....

In a small town... people were discussing about the matter of this surprise attack on the Xie Clan. Everyone was discussing enthusiastically about this sudden and crazy news!

A youngster who had wounds over his entire body listened to this news, and his complexion suddenly changed. Then, he stood up with a 'shua' sound, and threw down one silver coin. Then, he moved out of the restaurant like a gust of wind. He then waved his hand, and knocked down a middle-aged man from his horse. After that, he turned over, and got on the horse. He then dropped a gold coin without turning his head. Finally, he clamped his legs, and rushed away with whooshing sounds.

The middle-aged man had fallen down behind him, and had gotten covered in dirt. So, he roundly abused the youngster. But, the youngster turned a deaf ear to him... In fact, he had already gone quite far away.

This youngster was Luo Ke Di!

Second Master Luo's luck had been a bit bad of late... He had encountered two interceptions in a row. And, he had sustained severe injuries each time. But, he had been able to escape by a fluke. He had already eaten the incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill that he had with him after the first interception. So, he had no other choice but to endure the second time's injuries.

He had been recuperating by hiding here ever since. But, he still wasn't in a good condition. However, his chest had suddenly felt as if it would split open as soon as he had heard this news. Then, he had immediately rushed out without thinking about anything else...

[My brothers were attacked!]

[I must go!]

Luo Ke Di's body was riddled with scars. There were countless wounds that hadn't healed yet. Therefore, blood was continuously oozing out of his body. But, he still didn't blink his eyes. In fact, he wasn't feeling even a little bit of pain now!

This Second Master Luo had always been laughing, cursing, and playing. He had been issuing 'Ahwooh' sounds whilst laughing and cursing at death when he was intercepted by his enemies. He had done so even when he had been in danger. He had been bantering and laughing even when he had been confronting powerful enemies. However, his complexion had become unprecedentedly solemn at this moment. In fact, it had revealed a sense of urgency.

[Brothers, I won't let anything happen to you!]

[...at any cost... any cost!]

.....

In another direction... Luo Ke Wu was leading the army. He suddenly crumpled the paper of information that he had in his hand. Then, he ordered in a thunderous voice, "Cancel the camping plan! Move forward with full speed!"

Luo Clan set into action!

....

In another direction... Young Clan Lord of Ji Clan — Ji Zhu — suddenly dashed out of his comfortable carriage after he received the news. He then performed a flying-kick. That carriage was sent flying out, and cleared a path from within the troops.

He quickly got on a horse, and roared, "Advance as fast as possible!"

This Eldest Young Master would always sit. He would never stand... He would lie down, but he would never stand... In fact, he had displayed such an action for the first time in his entire life!

...

At a certain place...

Jun Lu Lu read the information. She then lowered her head and sighed. [The Middle Three Heavens is in chaos. Elder Sister and Xiao Yu haven't completed their training in seclusion, but they need to look at this. Dark Bamboo is related to this. So, not doing anything is out of the question!]

She was about to give an order when a man's shadow suddenly flashed... Then, a blue silhouette appeared in a majestic manner... It was Young Master Yu; he had been gone for many days.

"Why did you come out?" Jun Lu Lu was pleasantly surprised as she asked.

However, Young Master Yu didn't answer. Instead, he asked with a serious look, "What has happened? Why has the sword energy suddenly filled the Middle Three Heavens? Who has provoked the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword?"

...

Chapter 676: Must Feel Proud... Whether in Life or Death!

"The Master of Nine Tribulations Sword? Has the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword appeared?" Jun Lu Lu suddenly stood up. She was completely unaware about Chu Yang's matter. So, she had never heard about the identity of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master.

A light flashed through Young Master Yu's pupils. He gently said, "Ah Lu, there are some things... you're better-off not knowing about. The more you know... the more danger you'll be in."

Then, he folded his hands behind his back, and leisurely looked outside the window, "We mustn't get in contact with anything related to the matters like that of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master. This is the catastrophe of the Nine Heavens that comes once in every ten-thousand years! And, it will take our lives if we get linked to it in any way!"

Jun Lu Lu didn't truly understand, but she still nodded.

Young Master Yu gently sighed. His eyes became limpid and calm since he thoroughly understood the ways of the world. He then casually grabbed a dead leaf that had been fluttering outside the window, "He's so confident since all of the previous Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword had successfully unified the world... You'll rule everything with those two mysterious and inexorable eyes... You'll produce clouds with one turn of hand, and rain with another... You'll turn the sky upside down! But... can you see me – Young Master Yu?!"

"Xiao Yu..." Jun Lu Lu anxiously looked at him. She suddenly felt that he was behaving very strange today. Be it his manner of speaking or his appearance... everything seemed very different than usual.

"I'm fine." Young Master Yu faintly smiled. He then slowly walked to the front of the window, and looked up at an isolated piece of white cloud in the sky... He deeply gazed at it.

"Sword energy is soaring and disrupting the Nine Heavens. But, it made me break through the bottleneck of several decades. And, I went past all obstacles, and became a Second Grade Saint Level Expert once I got the epiphany! What do you want? Do you want to make me assist the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword?"

Young Master Yu muttered. He then exposed a taunting smile from the corner of his mouth. A strand of black hair hung down from his forehead. It hung down on his jade-like bright and clean face. This blue-robed man's languid and graceful scholarly appearance seemed to have been enhanced because of his strand of hair.

"But, I'm Young Master Yu... How can I succumb to someone's manipulation?" Young Master Yu snorted. "I don't care if he's the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword. It won't do if one can't get my approval with their abilities."

He thought for a while. Then, he slowly said, "Transmit an order to the people of the Dark Bamboo of the Middle Three Heavens. They will only observe the war. They have to hold back our troops. Tell them that we can't participate in this chaotic fight. We won't participate in this!"

"Ok." Jun Lu Lu complied.

"All the great clans of the Middle Three Heavens are already in chaos. So, the Middle Three Heavens would be done for if the underworld also entered into the fray," Young Master Yu quietly said, "Your elder sister will probably come out from the seclusion after one or two days. But, it's better to let her watch over the headquarters..."

Young Master Yu looked somewhat anxious. "Upper Three Heavens probably won't get involved in this chaos of the Middle

Three Heavens. Lady Zhu and I must be separated, and keep a balance of things from both ends."

"Alright!"

"I'll go and take a look at what's happening." Young Master Yu turned around. He still didn't have a definite plan. He sadly said, "It's too early for the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword to become known to the world at this time... What's that for?"

Young Master Yu took the letter from Jun Lu Lu's hand. He then gave it a glance. Then, he waved his sleeves and his blue shadow flashed... His whole person disappeared without a trace in an instant.

Jun Lu Lu bitterly smiled. She thought in her heart; [You've strictly ordered Dark Bamboo to not participate in this chaos. But, you yourself can't wait to jump-in. Aren't you contradicting yourself?]

.....

The black ink-like darkness of the night was exuding killing intention and bloody aura.

Ao Xie Yun's body was covered in blood. He had sustained serious injuries on his chest and back. Flesh and blood were dripping from his leg. His shoulders had been shattered. His right leg had been broken. It had gone limp, and was dangling. His body was tied to Rui Bu Tong's back. And, he was trying his hardest not to fall down.

He had exhausted almost all of his willpower to keep himself from fainting.

"Put me down! Abandon me!" Ao Xie Yun repeatedly begged and yelled. He hurriedly said, "They want to kill only me. So, put me down, you bastard! Just put me down, and quickly run away!"

"Shut up!" Rui Bu Tong started to rebuke without turning his head. He was running fast, and was following Tan Tan.

"I'm begging you to put me down... All of us will die if you don't put me down!" Ao Xie Yun pleaded, "You guys must stay alive... so that you would be able to avenge me in the future. I request you... Grandfather! Big Brother! Please, discard me! Abandon me!"

"Shut up! I'll skin you alive if you don't shut up!" Rui Bu Tong's complexion had turned pale. His whole body was riddled with scars. It seemed that his injuries were far worse than those of Ao Xie Yun. However, he was still leaping forward with ease... In fact, he was moving like the wind.

"Oh Brother Rui!" Ao Xie Yun's voice became serious. "Oh Brother Rui, I got the chance to be friends with you in this life. So, I – Ao Xie Yun – will die with no regrets! But... the people before our eyes would die if you continue to drag me in a situation like this! Is it worth it to take the trouble for me alone and let so many brothers lose their lives in the process? Put me down!"

Perhaps, Ao Xie Yun would've gotten down by himself if he hadn't been tied on Rui Bu Tong's body... or if he had any strength left to struggle. He wouldn't have bothered Rui Bu Tong and the others in that case.

Rui Bu Tong ran silently for a long time. Then, he said in a deep and low voice, "Big Brother had once said – we brothers must live with pride if we live together. And, we must let our brothers die with pride if there's no way to save them!"

He heavily said, "And, everything that the rest of us brothers have done for that dying brother is his pride!"

"Ao Xie Yun, I hope you step on the road to the netherworlds proudly because of us... But, only if you can't avoid death till the last moment today. You must be proud even when you become a ghost! That's because we will have put our maximum effort for you.

"Don't let down us or our kind intentions for making so much effort for you even if you die!"

Rui Bu Tong became silent after he spoke this. He didn't say another word. He just swiftly rushed forward.

Ao Xie Yun was suddenly startled by this. He didn't say anything for a long while. Then, two teardrops fell down from his eyes, and he tightly shut his lips. He only felt emotions surging inside his heart.

He had been thinking that he could save them by sacrificing himself if Rui Bu Tong put him down. And, it would be noble to do so. But, Ao Xie Yun had suddenly started to feel that... [Making such a request is tantamount to insult in the company of such brothers!]

"Yes! Brother, I'll certainly be proud..." Ao Xie Yun exposed a smile of satisfaction and pride on his face, "Even if I die! Truly!"

He suddenly felt boiling hot in his heart. A kind of strange yet soul-warming feeling rose up in his heart at this moment.

[Such Brothers! They are real brothers! I – Ao Xie Yun – will devote my life and soul to them if I don't die today. And, I will definitely be one of them!]

[That's because this is the biggest pride of a man... whether in life or death. This is his most precious wealth!]

Ao Xie Yun didn't speak. He just circulated his primary power with all his might, and strove to restore his strength a little bit. [You people can make me feel proud even if I die. So, could it be that I — Ao Xie Yun — can't make you feel proud of me?]

Meanwhile, he felt something strange in his heart. And, the battle scene from earlier surfaced in his mind...

Rui Bu Tong had fought two Emperor Level Experts at the same time, and had gotten seriously injured in the process. Ao Xie Yun had even heard Rui Bu Tong's ribs breaking. The enemy's swords and sabers had attacked all at once, and Rui Bu Tong was about to be killed in no time.

Ao Xie Yun had gone all-out to rush to his help at this time. And, he had bumped into them. Consequently, he had also gotten seriously injured. Then, Rui Bu Tong had escaped with all his strength whilst carrying Ao Xie Yun on his shoulder... He had grabbed Ao Xie Yun, and flown out. He had eventually caught up with the fleeing troops that had broken through the enemy encirclement. Then, he had been nudged forward by Tan Tan so that he could finally keep pace with the team.

[Rui Bu Tong's injuries are more serious than mine. However, I'm lying down on Rui Bu Tong's back in such a way that he doesn't even have the space to move properly. I'm almost dying. But, Rui Bu Tong has still run for a thousand miles whilst carrying me on his back?!!]

[How is this possible?]

.....

Tan Tan was carrying Xie Dan Feng on his back. He had been dashing like a gale of wind. He was currently at the forefront of the fleeing troops. He was leading the troop in the direction of escape.

Tan Tan's complexion was unprecedentedly grim at the moment. An extreme madness was brewing inside his pupils...

The ancestor of Xie Clan — Xie Zhi Qiu — was behind Tan Tan. He was bathed in blood. Even his snow-white beard was dripping with blood. He was carrying Xie Dan Qiong on his back. Both of them were silently rushing forward with their teeth clenched! They were just rushing!

They were just rushing without knowing where to go...

Xie Dan Feng was unconscious... Xie Dan Qiong's face had also turned like a golden paper. His whole body was injured. His breathing had also gone weak.

Everyone was battered and exhausted.

Tan Tan and Rui Bu Tong were regretting in their hearts. Chu

Yang's healing medicine worked on almost everyone. But, it didn't work on Tan Tan and Rui Bu Tong. Therefore, these two had casually declined when Chu yang had been distributing the incomplete versions of Nine Tribulations Pills to everyone.

They felt like slapping their own faces tens of thousands of times as they recalled it now! They couldn't use it for themselves... but other people could always take them, right? They needed it the most right now. But, they couldn't get them...

The attack on Xie Clan had been very sudden. 700-800 people had broken out from the siege together. But, there had remained less than 200 who were fleeing as of this moment!

That's because the pursuers had been launching concealed weapons in the dimness of the dark night. Therefore, the people who were at the back of the team had been continuously falling down while screaming. However, they wouldn't be able to crawl up once they had fallen.

The people in the front would only feel a knife twisting in their heart as they would listen to the screams. But, they would tightly bite their lip until it bled, and wouldn't dare to turn around.

It was because it would be a total defeat of their team if they were to turn back!

No one had thought that the enemy's attack would be so formidable!

In fact, the enemy hadn't even used any conspiracy. They had just rushed in! They had smashed everyone with their tyrannical military strength!

The Xie Clan's people had been routed as soon as the enemy had come in contact with them...

The first grade Monarch Level Expert Xie Zhi Qiu had been fighting three eighth grade Emperor Level Experts alone at first. He had been winning. But then, a mysterious masked man in black

robe had appeared. And, only one palm of his' had announced the destruction of the Xie Clan!

That one palm had fiercely hit the first grade Monarch Level Expert Xie Zhi Qiu. Blood had spurt out of Xie Zhi Qiu's body, and he had fallen back.

Xie Zhi Qiu had many years' experience of Jianghu. So, he had quickly realized that nothing could be done. Consequently, he had made a prompt decision, and had broken through the siege. Finally, these people had been able to escape from there.

The enemy would've surrounded them if he had been a moment late. After all, they had an overwhelming numerical advantage. And then, it would've been impossible for them to escape.

The pressure from the pursuers behind them was like a poisonous sore that grows close to the bones. The enemy could be faintly heard. The distance between the enemy and them was almost nothing. It was a few kilometers at most...

It was such a short distance that the enemy experts might catch up with them in just a few pounces. However, the enemies were moving at a moderate speed whilst chasing after them. It was clear that they were waiting to take timely profits after these people would get completely exhausted.

Or... could it be that they intended to use these people as bait to lure Chu Yang and the others... so that they could wipe all of them in one fell swoop?

However, how did so much formidable power come in the hands of those four Young Masters of Ao Clan? Perhaps, all the experts of Ao Clan had come out in full strength, and that had resulted in this kind of victory...

...

Chapter 677: No One Can Even Think of Harming Her As Long As I'm Alive!

"Where are we headed to?" Xie Zhi Qiu was following behind Tan Tan. He asked while panting.

Tan Tan stuck his neck out, and stuffed a Fifth Grade Spirit Beast's core into his mouth. He then gulped it down into his stomach. Then, he replied without turning his head, "You only need to follow me. There's no need to indulge in idle talk! Just keep moving ahead at full speed, and burst into the mountain forest up ahead!"

Tan Tan felt that the strange sign on his forehead had shone fiercely the moment he had swallowed the spirit beast core. It was like there was a blazing flash in this deep grassland... in this dark night.

Xie Zhi Qiu had no choice but to ask since he had noticed that Tan Tan had deviated from the original escape route. He had begun to rush crazily in the direction of the Cang Lan Battlefield.

"Burst into the forest? What is the use of doing so?" Xie Zhi Qiu secretly whispered to himself, but didn't speak further. He just sighed deeply, and kept following Tan Tan at full speed.

Anyone would've felt uncomfortable after being reprimanded by their great-grandson-in-law if they had been in his place.

However, a kind of kingly imposing aura had swelled out of Tan Tan's body when he had spoken a moment ago. And, it had made even Xie Zhi Qiu refrain from retorting. In fact, Xie Zhi Qiu hadn't been able to prevent himself from feeling timid.

...

Only 400 people remained out of the nearly 700 pursuing soldiers of the Ao Clan. However, there were more than 300 people clad in black clothes among the pursuing troops; they were also wearing

black masks.

"Senior Zhuge, why don't we rush ahead and kill all of them in one vigorous blow?" Ao Lang Yun knitted his brow, and asked the black-clothed man who was next to him, "After all, a long delay may give rise to many problems... It won't be pretty if we keep waiting and their reinforcement arrives."

"You people only wish to kill Ao Xie Yun. But, 'we' are precisely waiting for their reinforcements!" That 'Senior Zhuge' stated in a heavy voice. His eyes flashed, "And, it will be a crime without amnesty if you juniors interfere with our plan!"

Ao Lang Yun's complexion changed. He could only utter 'yes sir'.

Even he couldn't understand why such a big help had suddenly fallen into his lap from the skies. So many experts of the Upper Three Heavens' Zhuge Clan had come down for some bewildering reason. Moreover, the first thing they had done was look for him. Then, they had plotted the assault on the Xie Clan!

He couldn't understand, but this was exactly what he wanted.

The four leading men of the Zhuge Clan were inquisitively looking at each other as they discussed, "Did you discover anything?"

"No."

"I didn't either!"

"This is very strange."

"Spirit Slaughtering Blade had revealed that he should be in the Xie Clan. But, we haven't spotted anything even after shooing away these people for so long," That leader looked pensive, "We are waiting for reinforcements... Could it be that... that he's going to be there among the reinforcements? Could it be that he isn't here?"

"That's a possibility."

Everyone was pursuing in silence.

"That old bastard of the Divine Clan isn't deceiving us, right?" another black-clothed man whispered.

"Not a chance... not even a Supreme Expert can withstand that kind of torture. Anyway, it ought to be true that he doesn't know the concrete details," that black-clothed leader said in a deep voice, "That mysterious 'awakened being' has to be one these few people if we judge by the current situation of the Middle Three Heavens... First one is that King of Hell Chu, and the second is Gu Du Xing. Then, Dong Wu Shang, Rui Bu Tong, Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di... He has to be among these people. After all, only these few people have had an incredible progress of late..."

"Yes, Big Brother is right. Also, I think that this Rui Bu Tong is the most suspicious in the bunch. Even a Monarch Expert wouldn't be able to survive from the kind of injuries he has sustained. But, he's still alive and kicking."

"The plan is to wait for now. We had better let these people assemble. After all, we can get rid of them in one fell stroke if that happens. And, we'll definitely find our target that way. Otherwise, the others would get wind of it from far away, and escape if we killed these people and our target wasn't among them. Then, we won't be able to find them."

"Yes."

"Nine Heavens' great tribulation doesn't just involve this 'awakened person'. There's also the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master. This matter is an endless headache! We've luckily obtained the intel and managed to rush here in time when this 'awakened being' hasn't yet fully awakened. Otherwise, our Upper Three Heavens would've been done for if he had completely awakened. After all, this would've been combined with the awakening of that Devil King, and the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword."

"Big Brother is right. Aren't the elders in the clan looking for an inscrutable twist of fate to find the Nine Tribulations Sword

Master? What news do you have on that now?"

"It's very hard to find him since the 'fate clues' are very vague. After all, there are no clues to go on during these days since the heaven's machinations are in chaos," the black-clothed leader replied, "However, the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master won't pose a problem if we can grasp this 'awakened being' in our clutches."

"Yes."

They kept their footsteps moving as they discussed. Then, each of them dispersed.

"You Ao Clan's people can go one step ahead, and kill a few people. But, be careful... Don't kill the important members," the black-robed leader looked at Ao Lang Yun, and instructed, "There are too many people now. It's always a bad thing when it's in uproar. So, go and kill some."

Ao Lang Yun got excited. He said, "Ok!"

He turned around, and issued an order. Ao Clan's experts suddenly came out en masse, and rushed ahead. They chased after the escaping team of Xie Clan like a gust of wind. The four Eight Grade Emperor Level Experts were at the forefront!

"Pay attention to any detection of awakening during the fight!" Several people of Zhuge Clan signaled each other. Short knives appeared in the hands of many as this was said. These knives had a strange evil gleam to them. They were only the length of a finger. Still, the entire body of these knives was glowing. In fact, it seemed as if the knife-light was flowing like liquid...

Slaughtering Spirit Blade!

This was a special tool used to detect the Divine Clan's people. It was the result of Zhuge Clan's great efforts to research the means of specially dealing with the Three Stars Divine Clan!

"Attack!" Ao Clan's Emperor Expert — Cai Xiao Cheng —

bellowed. His body flew high up in the sky. He took a few steps in midair, and fell directly in the middle of the Xie Clan's fleeing crowd. Then, he shot his left palm, and brandished the sword he held in his right hand!

"Where are you running?!" Li Chang Long's blue robe fluttered. He overtook the entire team, and went 200 feet ahead of the team's leader — Tan Tan. Then, he stopped in the middle of the road to block their path.

Two whooshing sounds were heard, and the other two Eighth Grade Emperor Experts also flew down swiftly. They landed next to Li Chang Long.

Tan Tan and Xie Zhi Qiu halted at the same time. However, Xie Zhi Qiu merely stopped for a moment. Then, he dashed forward!

It was necessary to cut a bloody path out of here as soon as possible. Otherwise, the Xie Clan would be finished since the road was blocked.

Tan Tan's ugly face contorted. He then turned his head, and swallowed two spirit beast's cores.

Then, he suddenly dashed forward. Li Chang Long laughed and welcomed him!

Meanwhile, Xie Zhi Qiu was already engaged in a world-shaking battle with the other two Emperor Experts. Dust and smoke had started to soar as a result.

They had been obstructed less than a thousand feet away from the woods.

Xie Dan Feng was seriously injured, and had been leaning on Tan Tan's back. And, Tan Tan had been escaping whilst using one hand to support and heal her the entire journey. So, she was already a lot better now... Tan Tan's body constantly changed positions as he engaged in a fierce battle. And, the jerky movements made her wake up.

She opened her eyes, and saw a blue-robed old man fighting fiercely with Tan Tan in the front. She couldn't help but be shocked when she realized that Tan Tan was in a very seriously disadvantaged position.

Tan Tan had been escaping for a long time. He had also suffered serious injuries. He was almost like an arrow at the end of its flight at the moment. On the other hand, Li Chang Long was an Eighth Grade Emperor Expert... There was a difference of an entire realm between him and Tan Tan. So, Tan Tan had gotten suppressed as soon as the fight had started.

Tan Tan might've been in a serious danger if not for Zhuge Clan's strict command to not kill any important people in this team.

Puff!

Tan Tan received a blow on his chest. He spurted out blood, and his body was sent flying backwards.

A brutal light flashed in Li Chang Long's eyes. He didn't stop. Instead, he chased after Tan Tan.

Tan Tan was about to fall on the ground with his face upwards. But, he fiercely turned his body in midair at the very last moment, and landed heavily on his face instead. His face got drenched with blood as a result. However, Xie Dan Feng remained safe and sound on his back.

Xie Dan Feng suddenly felt a pain in her heart. She then screamed loudly, "Put me down! Put me down!"

Tan Tan spat out dirt from his mouth. Then, he turned over, and jumped up to stand. He ignored Xie Dan Feng's pleading, and engaged Li Chang Long in a brazen fight.

Bang Bang Bang!

The two men fought at close quarters continuously. However, Tan Tan was once again sent flying after they had exchanged only three moves. He couldn't turn over in midair to protect her this

time. He could only turn enough that the side of his body heavily slammed into a big tree. Cracking sounds were heard as his left arm, left chest, and three ribs got fractured. However, he was still holding-on stubbornly in order to prevent Xie Dan Feng from receiving the slightest of harm!

Xie Dan Feng burst into tears. And, they tears streamed down her cheeks.

"Don't cry." Tan Tan said in a low and deep voice. He had said this in a serious manner; this was rare for him, " You're no man if you can't even protect your own woman, or if you can protect her but still don't...

"So, it's my responsibility to protect you even if I die today. After all, I'm your man! So, why are you crying?!" Tan Tan shouted in a stern voice.

Xie Dan Feng didn't dare to sob again. However, even more tears were streaming down her face now...

"Such a fine man! I would like to see how incredible a man you are!" Li Chang Long sneered and shot his palm. This Emperor Expert was the same one who had been tricked by Chu Yang into taking the lust poison. And, he had turned into a sex fiend as a result. His heart started to pound for no apparent reason when he saw this scene of two lovers caring for each other. However, he still attacked ruthlessly and relentlessly.

This palm attack was aimed at Tan Tan's right shoulder! The target was certain get shattered as soon the palm's wind would hit it. Moreover, Xie Dan Feng would also be sent flying away at once...

Li Chang Long's mentality had changed after the lust poison incident. The thing which he absolutely couldn't tolerate now was lovers! [You youngsters are so lovey-dovey? See how I beat you two lovers up with a club! I'm not willing to believe that a man would choose to save his lover when facing a certain death situation!]

[Humph!]

The wind unleashed by the palm attack issued a whistling sound! Tan Tan was already too late to evade it!

"Don't hurt my man!" Xie Dan Feng screamed crazily. Her face was dripping with tears. She quickly broke free from Tan Tan's back, and fiercely shoved her head forward to welcome Li Chang Long's right palm!

Li Chang Long was shocked by this. He had a look of disbelief in his eyes. He felt as if a certain part of his heart had suddenly gotten emotional. Consequently, he couldn't help but slow down this palm-attack.

Tan Tan let out a fierce scream. He received strength from god knows where, and twisted his body despite the fact that his left shoulder had broken after knocking against the tree. The sounds of his broken ribs were heard in this moment; they had broken even further. However, he was in a hurry right now. He had to get Xie Dan Feng's head out of the way... So, he used his own chest to face Li Chang Long's right palm!

Puff!

Tan Tan was flung backwards like a ball. He used the last bit of his strength, and barely managed to turn over when he was about to fall. He had still managed to use his body as a cushion on the ground...

Xie Dan Feng's body fell. In fact, it happened to fall on Tan Tan! And, Tan Tan's ribs broke one more time...

Tan Tan projected a crazy and somewhat affectionate light from his eyes as he whispered, "Go... Go quickly!"

Then, he suddenly separated Xie Dan Feng from himself, and pushed her away. His injured body then miraculously got up again, and stood in front of Li Chang Long.

"No one can even think of harming her as long as I'm alive!"

Tan Tan's eyes shot two blood-red lights. He glared at Li Chang Long whilst gritting his teeth. Blood was crazily and unceasingly spurting out from his mouth, "Old Bastard, you dare to hit my wife?!"

...

Chapter 678: You Owe Me Happiness. How Would You Make Up For Its Deficiency?

Screams could be heard endlessly from everywhere. Blood was continuously whirling and sprinkling. It was dyeing the night sky in blood.

Li Chang Long looked at Tan Tan's blood-soaked body and tottering appearance... Tan Tan's eyes had become so fierce that the fierceness had become seemingly substantial. Li Chang Long's heart pounded heavily without any reason as he saw this.

Tan Tan pushed Xie Dan Feng. She staggered two steps away, but didn't escape as she had been told. Instead, she suddenly stood firm. Then, she turned around, and foolishly looked at Tan Tan's back profile. Her eyes filled with bliss and happiness.

Yes. Xie Dan Feng had no sadness, no despair, and no fear of death in her eyes in such a desperate situation. She only had bliss and happiness.

"Why haven't you left yet?!" Tan Tan irritably yelled.

"I won't go. I'm scared." Xie Dan Feng said in grief, "I'm scared. What would I do after I've gotten lost on the road to netherworld... if I don't die together with you? I'll be alone. Nobody will be there to protect me. I'll be scared even if I become a ghost.

"I've never felt this protected before. Therefore, I would never fear anything. But, I want to be protected by you now that I know..." Xie Dan Feng bit her lip. Tender feelings of love were overflowing from her eyes. The expression on her deathly pale face was faintly discernible amid the flashes of sword and saber-light flickering in the surroundings. "Tan Tan... I want us to die together.

"Such is happiness and bliss..." Xie Dan Feng sighed in a manner that made it seem as if she couldn't be happier.

"Stupid woman! Stupid woman!" Tan Tan cursed with his teeth clenched, "How can you be so stupid?"

Xie Dan Feng's body swayed for a bit. Then, she said with a smile, "I... It's good that I'm foolish. I fear that you wouldn't want me... if I turned intelligent..."

Tan Tan looked up to the sky, and bellowed. Deep-red blood suddenly spurted out of his mouth. He then yelled, "Woman, you'll die after me if we're both going to die. You must know that I don't want a bunch of ghosts to point fingers at me behind my back in the afterlife, and say things like... 'This bastard couldn't protect his wife!' Do you understand? I practice martial arts just to protect... to protect you... to protect my master... to protect my senior brother... to protect!"

Xie Dan Feng childishly nodded, "Don't worry. I'll stay alive until you die. But, I'll swallow my last breath with you when you close your eyes. You can't think of abandoning me no matter if we're dead or alive!"

Warmth welled up in Tan Tan's heart. He suddenly started to take heavy breaths. He felt as if indescribable emotions had started to accumulate in his heart. It suddenly gave him a feeling that his body would explode...

Li Chang Long was standing across from of them. But, it seemed as if they hadn't even seen this deadly enemy.

However, Li Chang Long suddenly seemed to have been struck by lightning when he heard Tan Tan's words. He felt an overwhelming pain in his heart. He felt as if a soft corner in the depths of his heart had been ruthlessly and maliciously struck...

Li Chang Long's breaths suddenly became heavy at this instant. His lofty and insufferably arrogant stature suddenly squatted. In fact, it nearly curled into a ball.

"I practice martial arts just to protect... to protect you... to

protect my master...

"To protect... I practice martial arts just to protect..." Li Chang Long muttered, "So, whom do I protect? Where is the person who needs my protection right now...?"

Li Chang Long suddenly seemed to be at a loss. His body swayed as if a big mountain had been pressed down on him.

And, this pressure was making him feel suffocated.

"You can't think of abandoning me no matter if we're dead or alive!" Xie Dan Feng's voice came through. It had come from a short distance. However, Li Chang Long's ears had felt as if it had come from a very remote place. It sounded incomparably vague. Still, it was clearly heard...

It seemed as if someone else had turned towards Li Chang Long in the dark, and had said in a low voice, "You can't think of abandoning me no matter if we're dead or alive!"

[You can't think of abandoning me no matter if we're dead or alive...]

[I practice martial arts just to protect...]

....

"Ah!~~~" Li Chang Long suddenly raised his head... He had a sad expression on his face. He then bellowed towards the boundless blue sky with everything he had! The muscles of his face contorted, and his eyes filled with grief and regret. Suddenly, he clasped his head with his hands. He then madly and unceasingly yelled with his face upwards. Two lines of tears suddenly flowed out from his aged eyes.

He felt an overwhelming pain in his heart. And, he had soon drowned in that pain...

Memories of an era-long-gone had started to well-up in his heart out of the blue...

[This kind of true love...]

[I also had once! I also had once!]

[[I also had once...]

[I had been just a little kid back then. A little girl used to live in my neighborhood. She wasn't too good-looking. But, she was gentle and caring.]

[We were each other's childhood sweethearts. We grew up together. We both knew that we were going to accompany each other for our entire lives.]

[Our lives would've been ordinary if we didn't face an accident. But, it would've been full of happiness.]

[She and her father had complied when I had proposed marriage to her at the age of seventeen. I had drunk at her house on that day. I had gotten drunk in sheer happiness...]

[But, I had seen a wedding when I had come out of her house the next morning... There was a youngster riding a snow-white horse. That horse was pulling a carriage. And, his bride was inside the carriage. Moreover, there was a look of happiness and satisfaction on that bride's face...]

[I had felt very inferior at that moment. I had felt angry.]

[I had suddenly realized that the woman I liked hadn't sat in a carriage in her entire life... let alone our own carriage...]

[I had suddenly thought that I must make money... I must struggle... I must earn a carriage for the woman I love. And, I must make her happily sit in the carriage when she enters our home!]

[This had become my dream... And, I had begun to work diligently for this dream.]

[Then, I had found that I couldn't compute accounts. So, I couldn't do any business. Moreover, I didn't have any strength.]

[Strength... Yes. I could buy a carriage as long as I could have

strength. Moreover, I could protect my woman!]

[Therefore, I started to wish for strength.]

[I started to look for opportunities from then on. And, I followed after my master without the slightest of hesitation when he appeared...]

[Pan Pan, you wait for me. I'll return to marry you after I've become a great hero!]

[These were the words I had spoken to her before I had left.]

[Pan Pan had said — I don't want you to become a great hero. I only want you to be with me, okay?]

[But, I hadn't listened to her. I had only requested, "Wait for me to return!"]

[Then, I had left!]

[Yes. I started to work hard for my woman at first... Just for her!]

[But, I don't know when I started to lose myself in this Jianghu... I felt that I wasn't strong enough, and that I couldn't protect the people who were on my side. Therefore, I continued to practice...]

[I became obsessed with killing. I became obsessed with hatred and revenge. I continued to fight unceasingly... But, I forgot that my original goal was... just a carriage!]

[Just a carriage... That's all!]

[I eventually succeeded in getting stronger. After that, I saw the errors of my ways, and returned to get married with my woman... I had already made up my mind at that time — Pan Pan, I don't care if you've turned old or ugly... I'll marry you! I'll certainly marry you!]

[But... I only saw a lonely grave when I went back. And, only two words were written on the tombstone — Pan Pan!]

[Her name meant 'hope'. But, I don't know whether her grave

had been marked with her name... or her hopes of my return!]

[Pan Pan! Was it your name... or your hope?]

[I heard the villagers saying that you had never gotten married in your entire life. You had always waited for me. You had waited until your body grew weak. You had waited until your heart was hurt and your soul broke apart. You had waited until you took your last breath. You had kept holding on to the hairpin I had gifted you back then...]

[You hadn't spoken a single word of complaint until you had died. You had always remained silent...]

[You had died. But, your lonely grave had still been waiting and hoping...]

[I had already gotten a carriage at that time. Moreover, I had obtained it very conveniently. But, who could come and sit in my carriage?]

[I had the ability to protect you. But... where were you?]

[I had practiced martial arts to protect. But, who was I... going to protect?]

Li Chang Long screamed. In fact, he yelled at the top of his voice. It seemed as if he wanted to yell out all the pain and regret of his heart. So, he bellowed. But, the more he shouted, the more pain he felt in his heart. The more he felt pain, the more he wished he were dead... Teardrops welled up in his eyes.

He was witnessing lovers who were willing to protect each other without any hesitation... They were in such a hopeless situation. But, they still wanted to be with each other.

They wanted to stay with each other... whether in life or death.

Li Chang Long suddenly understood. He understood what Pan Pan had said back then. He suddenly understood what Pan Pan must've hoped for on her deathbed... How much unwillingness and

regret she must've carried off with her to the afterlife when she had taken her last breath...

...as well as how much longing!

Wasn't the present Xie Dan Feng just like the Pan Pan of his past? Xie Dan Feng didn't demand her man to be stronger than anyone else. She only wanted them to stay together... and die together... even if her man couldn't protect her.

This was enough for her!

The greatest happiness is in being together!

He compared Xie Dan Feng and Tan Tan to his own mistakes, and what he had lost... And, he realized that they were much happier than him even though they were on the verge of dying.

In fact, they were ten-thousand times happier than him.

Li Chang Long curled up in pain. He suddenly felt an intense desire, [I wish I could go back right now! I wish I could go back to Pan Pan!] Weeds must have had grown over her lonely grave...

But, he wanted to go back!

He groaned, and suddenly yelled, "Go! Quickly go away! I'll kill you two if you don't!"

Tan Tan hadn't thought that this formidable enemy would suddenly assume such an abnormal stance at such a scary moment. But, he didn't have the time to think over it... He held Xie Dan Feng's hand, and they rushed away whilst tottering and staggering.

They rushed past Li Chang Long.

Tan Tan's broken arm suddenly brushed past Li Chang Long's lapel while they were rushing. However, Li Chang Long apparently didn't feel it. He just stood there staring blankly. His eyes were filled with pain...

"Come on quickly!" Xie Zhi Qiu's body shook. He was fighting with two Emperor Level Experts. Those two Emperor Level

Experts were hitting this Monarch Level Expert with everything they had. And, he rolled out like a ball.

Xie Zhi Qiu spurted out blood, and rushed forward with Xie Dan Qiong on his back. He grabbed Tan Tan with his left hand, and Xie Dan Feng with his right... His eyes had become like copper-bells in anger. He broke into the forest while coughing blood. However, his feet didn't even touch the ground.

Fifty to sixty people of the Xie Clan lost their lives behind him within a quarter of an hour. The remaining less than hundred people rushed past Li Chang Long. They took advantage of the gap created by the motionless Li Chang Long, and went into the forest!

Rui Bu Tong's body was soaked in blood. He was rushing while spitting blood with Ao Xie Yun on his back.

Li Chang Long allowed the crowd to rush past him. In fact, he remained indifferent the entire time.

Someone passed by from his side with blood-shot angry eyes, and easily slashed him with a knife. However, he didn't move. Instead, he allowed the knife to stab him in his shoulder... and stay embedded in his shoulder...

....

Chapter 679: Who Dared to Hurt My Brothers?!

"Brother Li! Bother Li!" Cai Xiao Cheng rushed over. He seemed frightened out of his wits. He believed that some black magic had taken over Li Chang Long.

Li Chang Long blankly lifted his head in response. Cai Xiao Cheng was gob-smacked as he saw this. And, he went three steps back in response.

Li Chang Long's face was densely covered with wrinkles at this moment. He seemed old and decrepit. His lifeless eyes suddenly issued a beam of light. He then muttered, "I practice martial arts just to protect! Pan Pan, I must go back."

"I must go back!" Li Chang Long's tall body suddenly rose up. He yelled to the sky... as if he had gone crazy.

Cai Xiao Cheng was at a loss. He didn't know what to do.

The black-clothed and masked leader of the Zhuge Clan was behind them. He calmly put his hand down. The several blue-gleaming ox-hair needles in his palm quickly vanished without a trace.

"This Li Chang Long has suddenly lost his heart and gone crazy. But, it is good. I didn't need to personally go into action!" he quietly pondered, "These bastards of the Ao Clan have nearly eliminated this group of people. This is simply aggravating."

"Keep in mind... You have to maintain distance!" Another black-clothed and masked man glared at Ao Lang Yun. He cursed, "Bastard, are you blind or deaf? I had asked you to chase after them... I hadn't asked you to kill all of them. Would I have waited till now if I had wanted to kill all of them? Stupid cu*t!"

Ao Lang Yun became so angry that it turned dark before his eyes.

He almost couldn't resist the rage in his heart. He was about to bicker and complain, but was stopped by Ao Meng Yun. "We only want to kill Ao Xie Yun. Let them do whatever they are doing. It's fine as long as Ao Xie Yun dies."

"Humph!" Ao Lang Yun heavily snorted.

The complexions of the four black-clothed and masked people of the Zhuge Clan suddenly changed. Their eyes emitted cautious looks as they looked towards the sky far away.

They saw a cold and mighty pressure suddenly appearing in the distant sky. It seemed as if a sharp sword was cutting off the atmosphere!

Black clouds had densely covered the sky. But, bright starlight was suddenly exposed in the distance!

This was indeed the embodiment of 'violent rage soaring to the heavens'. Then, the black clouds were suddenly shattered into pieces!

Those four men became shocked at the same time.

They looked at each other. Then, one of them whispered, "Who is this?"

His question was obviously irrational. After all, these people were very far away. So, it was obvious that no one knew who it was. But, all of them were certain about one thing... This person was extremely scary!

The black-clothed and masked leader hesitated for a while. Then, he suddenly exposed a look of astonishment in his eyes, "Could it be that our pursuit to tempt the 'awakened being' has drawn out the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword?!"

The people rushing ahead suddenly stopped and stood still as soon as these words came out. Then, there was a dead silence!

Then, those four people suddenly felt something once again.

Therefore, all of them turned around.

They saw that sharp and acute sword energy was soaring to the heavens at another place. But, this place was far away behind them. In fact, a piece of black cloud in that area was wiped out clean in the blink of eye by it!

Both the sword lights – one from the north and the other from the south – were confronting each other from afar.

Suddenly, the wind blowing in the sky also got split off!

Two sharp sword energies — one from south and one from north — had appeared in the sky whilst splitting the blue dome of heaven. It seemed as if two peerless swordsmen had agreed to fight together. It seemed as if they had unsheathed their swords, and were ready to fight!

They were just about to fight!

[They already possess such power and might! So, how earth-shaking will it be when these two fight?!]

A little while passed. Then, these two sword energies vanished at once.

However, the repression in the air became increasingly dense!

"It's not the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword!" another black-clothed and masked man said, "It is well-known that there's only one Master of Nine Tribulations Sword. But, these are clearly two different people."

The black-clothed and masked leader insipidly nodded and said, "It seems that I was mistaken. However, isn't it extremely strange that two such peerless swordsmen have appeared in the Middle Three Heavens?"

"The so-called rules of the Nine Heavens are only limited to average people. Big Brother, our status entails us the knowledge that some transcendental existences aren't limited by the so-called

rules of the Nine Heavens."

"You're right."

"Let's go... We need to catch up!"

....

In a distant place... Chu Yang attentively looked into the faraway distance from where a sword light had just emerged. The black clouds in the starry sky were converging slowly. It seemed as if the open curtains on a stage were slowly closing up.

Chu Yang's eyes suddenly lit up as he sped along the road. [This is indeed the Lake of Despair's direction!]

[Fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword!]

Chu Yang suddenly felt excited in his heart. But, he turned towards the direction in which the Xie Clan's escapees were rushing.

He loosened his hand, and let go of an invisible falcon.

[Mo Tian Ji's intelligence network is indeed very convenient.]

....

Xie Clan's people broke into the dark forest. Tan Tan took out five or six inner cores of Spirit Beasts whilst coughing blood. He ate all of them. However, he felt that it wasn't enough. So, he took out five or six more, and swallowed them as well.

"Run! Go straight ahead, and don't change direction." Bright radiance seemed to flash in Tan Tan's eyes as he resolutely ordered.

"Don't take a turn?" Xie Zhi Qiu reluctantly asked.

"Don't take a turn!"

Tan Tan heavily said.

The group of people disappeared into the woods with a rustling sound.

Ao Clan's people chased-in after them.

Ao Lang Yun had taken the lead, and was rushing ahead of his group. He no longer wanted to stay together with those black-clothed masked men. This was because he had understood one thing, [Those people have a purpose. And, it is impossible to make relations with those people using today's matter as a pivot.]

The Ao Clan was prominently the number-one clan in the Middle Three Heavens, but it wasn't enough in the eyes of a colossus like the Zhuge Clan!

Ao Lang Yun and the others felt as if something was wrong as soon as they broke into the forest.

This forest was clearly very strange.

Rustling sounds came from all the directions. And, they got denser bit by bit! Then, everyone felt that something was falling on top of them.

A King Level Expert of the Ao Clan reached out with his hand, and grabbed towards his head. He couldn't help but cry out in fear after he saw what it was.

A little green snake was wiggling in his palm. And, there were two caterpillars, four or five ants, and a tick...

"What the hell is going on?" he cried out in fear. He threw away these things as if he had received an electric shock.

However, no one answered him. It was because everyone else had had the same encounter.

The rustling sounds continued to come through from all directions. They were getting louder and louder like the dense drizzle in an autumn night.

Suddenly, countless earthworms, rats, vipers, ants, and so on... fluttered about as if this section of land had been flipped over. They all began to crawl on the ground layer upon layer.

Ants, rats, and all the other creatures were attacking using their only attacking methods. They were crazily attacking these people who had suddenly burst into the forest.

Everyone was thrown in confusion. And, all of them began to move their hands randomly.

Then, a buzzing sound echoed in the distance. And, a large group of bees lined-up in an overwhelming number. They were so eager to attack that they launched an attack before even getting close to their targets.

"What's going on here? What the hell is this?!" Ao Lang Yun slapped in the air in confusion. Everyone possessed profound primary energy in their bodies. So, these things naturally couldn't do any harm to them. In fact, these tiny insects couldn't bite out even a little bit of skin even if they were to bite until they died out of exhaustion.

However, these things were present in an overwhelming number. In fact, they had piled up to neck-level within an instant. So, the creepy feeling was truly maddening!

Moreover, these people would feel something squishy under their feet every time they would take a step. But, they wouldn't know what they were stepping on. Moreover, their feet would be coiled by three or four snakes that had been creeping about bravely with no thought of personal safety...

"This is so fu*king weird!" Cai Xiao Cheng was slapping in the air. He was continuously cussing, "How can such a bizarre thing happen?"

"Don't deal with these little things. Rush out with your full strength!" Another Emperor Level Expert launched his domain-field of protection. His face had become sullen. Who could've thought that an Emperor Level Expert would need to release his domain-field to deal with tiny insects?

However, these creatures would've fallen onto his nape or his skin if he hadn't unleashed his domain-field... He could've continued to shake them off. But, all of this was still disgusting...

This forest wasn't small. These little creatures seemed to be increasing in number as those people forged ahead. And, there was a thick layer of these creatures under everyone's feet now.

The Zhuge Clan's people also arrived in the forest later. The black-clothed leader was suddenly and pleasantly surprised when he saw this terrifying phenomenon. It seemed as if his spirit had been roused.

He shouted, "He had been here all along... just like I had expected. There hadn't appeared anything abnormal for such a long time of our pursuit. But, we've almost allowed them escape! Go ahead, and catch all of them alive! Don't kill anyone. The 'awakened being' has to be among them!"

He was finally sure...

...that the awakened being of the Three Stars Divine Clan was among them!

"But, why didn't the Slaughtering Spirit Blade show any reaction?" The four people looked at the knife in their hands. And, all of them remained silent.

They were at a loss about this matter.

....

Tan Tan felt itchy at the wounded spot on his body. He was squirming. His mood had become ruthless. It seemed as if he was slowly breaking out of a cage. His pupils had turned blood red without his knowledge...

It seemed as if a murderous aura that had been hibernating for tens of thousands of years had been gradually waking up.

Meanwhile, the countless small creatures were rushing forward

without slowing down. All of them were willingly getting trampled-on just to stop the pursuers for a moment...

Tan Tan's body was getting hotter and hotter!

Finally, Tan Tan's forehead flashed again. The strange mark on his forehead seemed to have become bigger. It flickered three times in a row.

Tan Tan suddenly looked upwards, and roared madly.

Then, an aura suddenly emitted out from his body. This aura was darker than the night. It densely rose up, and shrouded Tan Tan's entire body! And, it turned pitch-dark around him.

Tan Tan's body had seemingly vanished inside this black fog!

....

The Zhuge Clan's people swarmed in!

All of these people were experts. Their capabilities were leagues above that of Ao Clan's people. So, they overtook the Xie Clan's people in just a few pounces.

The black-clothed and masked leader looked-on, and saw that the black fog had suddenly risen up in the forest several hundred feet away. His eyes issued a proud look. He insipidly said, "It's a pity. You're late!"

He waved his hand, "Begin!"

However, two long and loud shouts suddenly resounded outside the forest at this moment. Then, an intense sword-energy and a sharp saber-light surged!

Two bursts of murderous aura penetrated into the forest!

Then, a sword-light magnificently radiated, and a saber-light fiercely blossomed. They had broken into the forest whilst conquering every obstacle. They seemed like two giant balls that would change everything that came in their way into dust!

There was a big tree that would require three people to wrap their arms around it. It suddenly changed into dust, and made the whole sky dusty in a flash!

That black-clothed masked man of Zhuge Clan emitted rays of amazement from his eyes. He suddenly stopped moving. He then said while being shocked, "Pure Sword Emperor and Pure Saber Emperor?! How can such men appear in the Middle Three Heavens?"

Another man next to him found it baffling. He unconsciously muttered, "Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor are supposed to be arch enemies. But, these two are coming shoulder to shoulder?!"

Two furious shouts echoed like thunderclap amid the sword-energy and saber-light! Then, they illuminated the entire sky at the same time... just like two strikes of lightning!

"Who dared to hurt my brothers!?"

"Who dared to hurt my brothers?!"

...

Chapter 680: Who Besides Me Is Referred To By This Name?

The saber and the sword changed into two terrific lightning bolts. They then lit up outside the forest, and broke inwards. Everything that came in their way turned into dust with ease. In fact, things got smashed like rotten wood... no matter if it was a human, tree, or even those tiny creatures.

Blood fell like rain and swirling fog!

Gu Du Xing.

Dong Wu Shang.

Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor!

Both of them had undertaken a long and difficult journey. So, their physical strength had been exhausted to some extent. However, their spirit and murderous aura had reached the pinnacle!

These imposing auras were so ferocious that the sword could chop off the sky and the saber could split open the heavens!

It was kind of nuts! It was hysterical!

Even the four Monarch Level Experts of the Zhuge Clan couldn't help but firmly look at the power and influence of both Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor flashing!

In fact, they couldn't help but involuntarily evade.

This dodging of Zhuge Clan's people looked alright. But, the Ao Clan's people behind them got lit up under the incoming saber and sword attacks of the Saber Emperor and the Sword Emperor.

Gu Du Xing's Black Dragon Sword exuded a bright ray of light as he reached behind a King Level Expert of the Ao Clan. Then, that King Level Expert's flesh and blood sprinkled and spread like thick

fog!

Then, Gu Du Xing's black-clad figure suddenly dashed out of the blood fog. The Black Dragon Sword was still shining. It appeared like a long and glowing dragon. It went recklessly and barbarically into the Ao Clan's troops, and plowed-out a bloody passage through them!

Gu Du Xing broke through Ao Clan's crowd with a flash of light, and landed in front of Rui Bu Tong. He didn't have enough time to say anything. Moreover, he had turned his back towards Rui Bu Tong while landing. So, he was facing Ao Lang Yun now!

His heaven-shaking divine sword had an extremely frightening murderous aura. It looked awe-inspiring! All attacks were blocked and routed wherever the sword's tip was pointed out.

On the other side, Dong Wu Shang's great saber was even more powerful and domineering. It was crazily chopping and killing people!

The saber was hacking up-and-down, and slashing left-and-right...

Each saber-slash was inevitably accompanied by a loud shout.

It seemed as if the entire forest was shaking and shivering with these loud shouts!

Dong Wu Shang hadn't broken into Ao Clan's troops like Gu Du Xing had done. Instead, he took solid and steady steps, and advanced using his supreme might. He carefully rushed into the crowd whilst cutting a bloody path.

He had truly cut a bloody path!

He brandished the saber to the left. And, it was intercepted by a King Level Expert. "Clang!" That expert easily got cut into two along with his sword!

The saber then swept to the right along with a big shout. And, a

man was cut into halves from the waist!

Dong Wu Shang's magnificent figure forged ahead step by step. Whoever came in the way was cut by his saber!

[A Saber that causes No Injuries...]

[...but causes certain death!]

Dong Wu Shang was about to break through the siege. He suddenly slashed his saber onto the sword of a third grade Emperor Level Expert from the Ao Clan. The man spat out blood, and his sword got shattered.

Then, Dong Wu Shang shouted, "Rui Bu Tong!"

Rui Bu Tong got excited and shouted, "Fourth Brother, I'm here!"

"Alright!" Dong Wu Shang slashed his saber. The enemy in front of him got chopped, and rolled over like a bottle gourd. Dong Wu Shang then shouted, "Tan Tan!"

"Tan Tan is also here. He's recuperating," Rui Bu Tong hurriedly replied since he knew that Tan Tan couldn't answer at this moment. And, Dong Wu Shang might've gone insane if Tan Tan hadn't replied.

"Xie Dan Qiong!" Dong Wu Shang's saber slashed in sync with his loud shouts as he listed out the names of his brothers.

Xie Dan Qiong was being carried by Xie Zhi Qiu on his back. However, he shouted with all his strength, "I'm also here!"

"Ao Xie Yun!" Dong Wu Shang fiercely slashed his saber, and chopped down the last enemy in front of him. Then, he strode over.

"I'm here!" Ao Xie Yun weakly replied.

"Good! Ha ha ha ha..." Dong Wu Shang laughed heartily with his face upwards. Then, he turned around like a tornado. His tall and majestic body looked like an iron tower. It seemed as if a high and mighty mountain was standing motionless in front of Ao Lang Yun

and the others!

Ao Lang Yun and the others suddenly had a feeling as if a lofty mountain had suddenly appeared in between them and Ao Xie Yun.

Dong Wu Shang lifted the Black Saber horizontally. Then, he slightly pointed it to the front, and shouted, "Is it you all?! Just you people?! What a disappointment!"

Ao Lang Yun involuntarily drew a step back.

His three younger brothers were behind him. They exposed a solemn look in their eyes. Dong Wu Shang was on the enemy's side. But, they still felt their minds swaying in the face of his innate heroic and imposing spirit. In fact, a strong feeling of admiration had risen up in their heart.

"Are you Dong Wu Shang? The new Saber Emperor of Dong Clan – Dong Wu Shang...?" Ao Yu Yun didn't conceal the admiration in his eyes as he asked.

"Is there anyone else who is called by the name Dong Wu Shang?" Bright flashes of lightning shone in Dong Wu Shang's eyes. He then looked up to the sky and wildly laughed. His wild tyranny seemed to have the potential to overturn the world in a flash, "Who can have a spirit like mine in the entire Nine Heavens? Who except for me – Dong Wu Shang?! No one! Not even a supreme expert!"

This statement was extremely crazy.

However, even the four Monarch Level Experts of the Zhuge Clan slightly nodded in approval. They thought in their hearts, [These words are highly reasonable. They're true!]

There were many people in the entire Nine Heavens who had a higher cultivation than that of Dong Wu Shang. They could easily kill Dong Wu Shang. In fact, such people were as many as the stars in the sky.

However, no one – not even Supreme Level Experts – could have an innate heroic and imposing spirit like that of Dong Wu Shang. His spirit was such that he could resist all the living beings of heaven and earth by himself. Moreover, he was the type of man who would come out alive even if he were to overreach himself and attempt something impossible.

There was no other person who had such an imposing aura, and such overbearing presence.

Ao Lang Yun snorted and indifferently said, "So what if you're unique and unmatched in the entire Nine Heavens? Aren't you still nothing more than King of Hell Chu's lackey?"

A stern look flashed in Dong Wu Shang's eyes. He then wildly laughed, "How can a dog like you comment on whether I – Dong Wu Shang – am a lackey or not? State your name! This Second Master Dong needs to decide... whether he should use the back of his saber or its edge to kill you!!"

Rui Bu Tong couldn't help but chuckle. "There are dead people lying everywhere. So, why bother about whether to use the back of your saber... or its edge to kill this guy?"

Dong Wu Shang glared at him, "Idiot! What if his filthy blood tarnishes the edge of my saber?" He heartily laughed, "Dong Wu Shang's saber is meant for the heroes of the world. Then, how can it behead a trash? That would be the ultimate insult to my precious saber!"

Ao Lang Yun's body trembled in anger. He said with his teeth clenched, "Dong Wu Shang, I — Ao Lang Yun — will kill you with my own hands!"

"Ao Lang Yun?" Dong Wu Shang disdainfully looked at him. He then laughed out loud, "It seems that I can only use the back of my saber to kill you!"

Ao Lang Yun lost his mind in anger... However, a voice was heard

at this moment, "Our clan is so unfortunate. They allowed you brothers to get involved in this matter. Brother Dong, you'd be doing a favor to this bastard even if you were to use the back of your saber. So, it would be better if I come and tidy up this garbage!"

A man heavily walked out from behind Dong Wu Shang along with these words. He then stood abreast with Dong Wu Shang. It was Ao Xie Yun!

Gu Du Xing had taken out the incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill from his jade token when he had dashed over here. Then, he had quickly stuffed it in Ao Xie Yun's mouth.

He hadn't thought about healing the other people since Ao Xie Yun's injuries had been the most severe. Moreover, this interception was still considered an internal affair of the Ao Clan. So, Ao Xie Yun had to step forth.

It would be a just-cause only if Ao Xie Yun were to step forth! Ao Xie Yun couldn't die. Otherwise, they wouldn't be safe from Ao Clan's wrath even if these four brothers and their men were to be killed to the last man!

Therefore, Gu Du Xing had rushed-in and given Ao Xie Yun the medicine first... Dong Wu Shang had attracted everyone's attention soon after that. So, he had created a distraction for Gu Du Xing. And, he had also bought time for Ao Xie Yun to heal.

This Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor duo hadn't had any interaction during this period of time. However, their coordination had still been flawless!

Ao Xie Yun finally regained his vitality to some extent. He hadn't completely healed yet, but the Nine Tribulations Pill was still at work inside his body. Therefore, he had stepped out. He looked at Ao Lang Yun, Ao Yu Yun, and the other members of Ao Clan with his keen eyes. Then, he said with a gloomy mood, "You all... do you truly wish to rebel?"

Everyone had come along with their Young Masters to kill Ao Xie Yun so that their Young Masters could occupy the leading position. However, the upright Young Clan Lord of Ao Clan was standing safe and sound in front of them at this time. This made everyone feel ashamed in their hearts. Therefore, all of them lowered their heads one after another.

Ao Lang Yun felt anxious in his heart. He shouted, "Ao Xie Yun, you're like a stray dog now. Even your loyal subordinates want to give you a final send-off! What qualifications do you have to be a Young Clan Lord? How can our Ao have a spendthrift like you who willfully creates trouble?! Attack! Kill him for me!"

The sounds of hoof beats rose like muffled thunder from afar at this time. It was very obvious that these troops were rushing towards here!

All the people who had come out of Ao Clan had already arrived here. So, the ones coming here at this moment could in no way be the men of Ao Lang Yun and the others... They could only be Ao Xie Yun's reinforcements!

Ao Yu Yun, Ao Lang Yun, and the other two young masters became greatly worried. They shouted at the same time, "Attack! Kill him! It'll be a great success if we kill him today!"

Ao Xie Yun's body swayed. He looked at his four younger brothers. All of them were his blood-related brothers. He had grown up with these younger brothers. All these men were the children of his blood-uncles.

However, they had set a deathtrap for him. And, they were adamant on killing him...

On the other hand, Gu Du Xing and the others were protecting him even though he had known them for a very short time.

He suddenly smiled in a saddened manner, and said, "Are you truly my blood brothers? How can you be so crazed?! Is power..."

that important for you?"

However, no one answered him... The eyes of Ao Lang Yun and the others turned red. They had begun to urge their subordinates to quickly kill Ao Xie Yun!

Ao Xie Yun sadly closed his eyes. Then, he opened them again... The expression in his eyes had changed into heartlessness! He then lowly said, "Then, don't blame me... for being heartless!"

Nobody heard his words amidst the shouts. But, callousness glinted in his eyes which made the people who were rushing head-on towards him shiver in their hearts.

Gu Du Xing issued a loud and long cry, and brandished his long sword. The Black Dragon Sword issued a fierce sword-cry. Gu Du Xing shouted, "Who dares to make a move in presence of us brothers?"

Dong Wu Shang burst into laughter, "That's right. We brothers are here. Who wants to come and die?"

There was an injured army behind these two. So, only two men were confronting hundreds of experts. The power of these several hundred people was enough to kill both Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang several times over. But, the heroicness of these two was so intense that they seemed invincible. These two were feeling as if the opponents were just clay chickens and pottery dogs!

The several hundred experts facing these insufferably arrogant Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor stopped. In fact, all of them had frozen at their place!

Sounds of hoof beats echoed like a rainstorm. Then, a single fine steed burst into the forest in the dim light of the night. After that, a carefree voice shouted in high spirits, "Ahwooh~~~ Dong Aunt! Second Brother Gu, your words have suddenly hyped me up! Fu*k, its impact was so intense that I almost climaxed!"

.....

Chapter 681: Fierce Battle!

A fine steed burst-in along with the cry. Then, a slim silhouette suddenly jumped in midair from the horseback. It took several dozens of somersaults like a whirlwind, and landed in front of Gu Du Xing like a meteor.

Then, this man suddenly turned around. His body displayed a majestic appearance. He loudly shouted, "Ahwooh~~ Dong Aunt! Second Master Ji is here! Who dares to come? Who wants to come up? Whoever comes up will die!"

He had said these words in an extremely pretentious manner. Moreover, his pretense had a proud and cocky vibe to it.

It was because Ji Mo was suddenly feeling relieved.

[None of my brothers have died!]

[Moreover, I have come.]

[All of us are together now.]

[So, when else would I show off if not now?]

[I wouldn't have any regret whatsoever even if I were to die with my brothers!]

[So, when else would I show off if not now?]

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had said 'Who wants to come and die'. And, it had kind of intimidated everyone. It had made them feel fear of death! But, Ji Mo's words 'Whoever comes up will die' gave off a feeling of relaxation and relief to everyone.

These vicious words had made everyone feel that this person in front of them was very happy... and very cheerful!

That's because he indeed was at this time!

Everyone became startled.

A weak yet ruthless voice heavily said at this time, "Cough

Cough! Yes, whoever comes up will die!"

This man had repeated Ji Mo's words. However, his stiff manner of speaking had flipped over the joy of the sentence 'whoever comes up will die', and had changed it into a vicious feeling of hellish cruelty!

He had said these words with his teeth clenched. And, he had also coughed several times while speaking.

A youngster appeared out of the woods along with this voice. His figure walked over step by step to Ji Mo's side. It then turned around, and stood next to him.

He suddenly smiled and said, "Dammit! The feeling that comes after rushing thousands of miles to rescue someone truly makes me feel fu*king great! I'm bleeding from head to toe. I had been burning along the whole journey. But, I'm not burning now that I've taken a look at you guys."

The complexion of this person was pale, and his eye-sockets had sunken down. In addition, bandages were wrapped all over his body – on his chest, back, shoulders, thighs, and so on. Blood was still continuously seeping out of them. It was taking shapes of flower umbra on the bandages.

This person was Luo Ke Di.

His location had been at the nearest distance from here. However, he had slowed his speed down in the midway since he couldn't allow himself to faint halfway... He had to keep going up until now. This was why he had arrived so late.

However, he had managed to arrive despite everything... He had come at this crucial time!

Ancestor Xie Zhi Qiu of Xie Can closed his eyes. He then fully circulated his martial power. He strived to restore maximum strength in the shortest possible time. He had heaved a sigh of relief when Gu Du Xing and the others had come. His face had

exposed a hint of incitement. Then, he had sat down to circulate his martial power.

He knew that these youngsters who had come were very talented. However, he also knew that the disparity between theirs and the enemy's strength was too big.

Therefore, he believed that these youngsters had come just to throw their lives away. They had come to die along with their brothers.

Therefore, Xie Zhu Qiu didn't say anything.

The present situation was dangerous... There was absolutely no hope to escape. So, he only thought of regaining a little bit of his strength and dragging down as many enemies as possible along with himself to hell!

He knew that the most formidable expert among the enemy hadn't yet set into action.

The black fog around Tan Tan churned up, and spread out.

Almost all the animals, insects, and birds of the forest concentrated towards here. They fluttered about in abundance. They were small and weak. However, they had formed gigantic tides! The branches and leaves of trees were falling from time to time. They were being broken by the weight of those creatures.

The stems had also slowly hung down.

The pairs of small eyes ominously and ruthlessly looked at the people of Ao Clan and Zhuge Clan. Even rats opened their mouths, and exposed their sharp teeth; their teeth were sparkling in the dim light of the night. Vipers had coiled and dangled in circles. Their eyes looked spooky as they revealed a glimpse of their poisonous fangs.

Ao Lang Yun turned his head in panic, and looked at the black-clothed and masked people of the Zhuge Clan. It seemed that he was seeking help.

The black-clothed and masked leader had crossed his hands behind his back. He was looking in this direction in an indifferent manner... He didn't seem to have any intention of setting into action. However, his vision was flashing from time to time whilst looking at Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang. His eyes were filled with admiration.

[The harvest is going to be great today!]

[We can besiege the Awakened Being of the Divine Clan. Moreover, we can have the harvest of a Sword Emperor and a Saber Emperor who are both under twenty years old!]

[These two youngsters won't take more than two-hundred years to become Saint Level Experts if they are given the time! They can even become Supreme Level Experts!]

The Zhuge Clan had been seeking such talented individuals with eagerness. So, how could he let go of these excellent young successors?

Ao Lang Yun, Ao Yu Yun, and the other brothers gradually froze in their hearts. All of them could see that the other party was unlikely to help them. It had become clear that they were going to watch in safety whilst others fought... After all, these people wanted to reap the rewards once both sides had been exhausted.

The four 'geniuses' gritted their teeth after they realized this, [Do you think we can't tidy up these scattered remnants if you don't help us?]

"Kill!" Ao Yu Yun waved his hand. He maliciously said, "Who wants to come and die...? We'll see who dies!"

He had waved his hand. But, it looked as if he was waving to all the insects, animals, and birds in the forest.

The people of Ao Clan hadn't set into action yet, but these little creatures had...

Shua shua shua...

The sky seemed to have gotten filled with vines in an instant. However, they were vipers in reality!

The vipers hung from trees in abundance. They sprang up, opened their mouths wide, and exposed their venomous fangs. They then attacked Ao Clan's experts!

Rats, birds, ants, hornets... attacked in full swing at the same time!

These attacks obscured everyone's line of sight within an instant.

These creatures couldn't cause any injury to these experts, but still seemed extremely frightening!

Ao Clan's experts had no choice but to fight. They would have to deal with these tiny creatures before they could attack the enemy.

A light flashed in Gu Du Xing's eyes. He then stretched out his hand, and grabbed Luo Ke Di's shoulder. He shoved him backwards. Luo Ke Di fell next to Rui Bu Tong. Then, Gu Du Xing said, "Look after him!"

Luo Ke Di was seriously injured. So, how could Gu Du Xing let him stand in the front?

Luo Ke Di angrily said, "Second Brother Gu, you bastard!"

Gu Du Xing's complexion became cold and stiff. Then, his body suddenly rushed out. He changed into a glistening sword light!

He was the only one to set into action.

That was because he was the only one fit to set into action by himself.

The enemy had been besieged by these little creatures. So, the best move at this time was to take advantage of their crisis for personal gain, and launch a sneak attack. These creatures were extremely small. They would perhaps get wiped out within an instant. Therefore, it was extremely important to seize this opportunity.

Dong Wu Shang was unsuitable for launching a sneak attack. And, Ji Mo's cultivation was slightly weaker.

Gu Du Xing's body moved... Sword-light flashed. Then, it erupted like a thunder, and pierced into a man surrounded by ants and hornets. Then, Gu Du Xing pulled it out, and rushed in.

A blood stream shot out from the spot from where he had pulled out his sword. And, a King Level Expert collapsed with a frightened look on his face.

Several Emperor Level Experts of the Ao Clan gave a long and loud shout, and set into action at the same time. They launched their domain-fields in an instant, and sent a shock with a loud bang!

A few 'whoosh' sounds lightly echoed. And, all the little creatures that had filled the sky and earth shook to their death. A thick layer of carcasses was formed on the ground as a result.

Then, the forest became silent.

A total of nineteen Emperor Level Experts had launched their domain-fields at the same time! So, it was clear that these tiny creatures had driven these Emperor Level Experts beyond the limits of forbearance. They had directly launched their sharpest move. It was clearly overkill. They had annihilated them all in one fell swoop!

Gu Du Xing's body flashed. The sword-light appeared intermittently. His body shot over like lightning.

Blood spurt out like fireworks from the throat of a first grade Emperor Level Expert in front of him. That expert then weakly collapsed on the ground.

Gu Du Xing went in and came out. He only had enough time to go in and come out. But, ten people had died under his sword in this instant!

However, Ao Clan's people had already pounced over this way.

So, Dong Wu Shang loudly shouted, and unsheathed the Black Saber. Rains of blood broke out as soon as he arrived. He had opened the prologue to the decisive battle in this way!

Ji Mo cried out. He also unsheathed his sword, and rushed out whilst following Dong Wu Shang closely.

Rui Bu Tong and Ao Xie Yun also set into action.

Xie Zhi Qiu rose up in one bound from his cross-legged position on the ground, and joined the fighting circle. The war had broken out all around!

However, the people of Zhuge Clan still held back their troops. They didn't move. They were indifferently looking at the war in front of them. They were only paying attention to three people — Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the one with the black fog!

The sounds of hoof beats were becoming more and more urgent outside the fighting circle! It was clear that they were getting closer and closer.

Gu Du Xing's sword issued a sword beam; he was fighting with an eighth grade Emperor Level Expert. Both of them had started to bleed after the first clash. Gu Du Xing's left shoulder had been pierced by a sword. And, a piece of flesh and skin had been cut off from that Emperor Level Expert's thigh.

Gu Du Xing's martial power wasn't sufficient to injure his opponent. However, his Black Dragon Sword had recently been upgraded by Chu Yang. After that, it had become a top-tier heavenly weapon!

The two came in contact, and engaged in a close combat. Gu Du Xing desperately fought using his agility skills. Consequently, that eighth grade Emperor Level Expert didn't get any opportunity to stall.

Meanwhile, Dong Wu Shang directly engaged two eighth grade Emperor Level Experts — Cai Xiao Cheng and Li Chang Long. His

Black Saber hacked and slashed. He didn't move an inch backwards! He simply clenched his teeth, and desperately fought with all his strength!

[I can't retreat... My injured brother is behind me!]

Dong Wu Shang was in imminent danger. He was surrounded by perils. However, he still brandished his Black Saber in a bold and wild manner. This combination of man and saber could eliminate even an army of thousands!

Xie Zhi Qiu pounced from behind him, and desperately fought Cai Xiao Cheng along with him!

Cai Xiao Cheng drew back. The pressure on Dong Wu Shang had greatly decreased. He then madly wielded his saber, and went to press down Li Chang Long.

Li Chang Long was somewhat distracted at this time. However, he was still an eighth grade Emperor Level Expert. His cultivation was seven grades greater than that of Dong Wu Shang! However, Dong Wu Shang was still fighting with all his might, and making him retreat in defeat little by little.

However, Dong Wu Shang wasn't at ease. His wrist would ache and become numb every time the enemy gave him a jolt. In fact, his whole body would shake.

However, he didn't seem to feel anything.

That black-clothed and masked leader of the Zhuge Clan had been watching the fight. But, he suddenly wrinkled his brows in this clamorous situation. He then suspiciously looked all around. However, he didn't find anything.

[I've clearly felt someone sneaking in... But, why can't I spot him?]

Chu Yang had entered this bloody jungle like a wisp of blue smoke! And, the first thing that he had done was heave a sigh of relief.

[My brothers are here!]

Chu Yang had been on the verge of setting into action. However, he had only taken a glance of the situation when he had discovered something... And, he had quickly hid away as a result.

Gu Du Xing and the others were in a very disadvantageous situation at present.

However, Chu Yang could still see that they weren't in any mortal danger for the time being. [But... what are these around two-hundred black-clothed people doing here? Why do... these people seem so formidable?]

[What are these people's intentions?]

Chu Yang glanced at them. [These black-clothed people are tonight's biggest crisis!]

[My brothers will no longer have a hidden trump in their hands if I go out there right now.]

[Therefore, I have to act accordingly!]

"Monarch Level Experts! Four of them!" Sword Spirit said in a heavy voice in Chu Yang's mind, "Three of them are second grade Monarch Experts, and one is at the third grade!"

Chu Yang's entire body trembled.

[Four Monarch Level Experts?! Where did they come from?]

...

Chapter 682: I Focus on What's Before My Eyes When I Can't Attend to Everything Simultaneously!

"Tonight... it'll be a fierce battle!" Sword Spirit slowly said.

Chu Yang smiled bitterly.

[Fierce battle...? What fierce battle? The people on our side are facing just Ao Clan's experts. And, they are still in a disadvantageous situation. I'm afraid that they would get wiped out in the blink of an eye... if they were to confront these black-clothed people as well.]

"Sword Spirit, would we have some chances of success if you were to take control of my body?" Chu Yang took a deep breath, and asked.

"I don't recommend this," Sword Spirit sighed. "You can have hundred-percent chances of defeating them if I were to take control of your body. But, this isn't the right time."

"Why?" Chu Yang felt happy in his heart.

"The fourth sword fragment has already appeared!"

"The fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword lies in the center of the heaven's tricks. So, the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword has to take the predestined way once it appears. Moreover, the entire Nine Heavens will also go through tremendous changes now! This is the biggest opportunity for the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword in the process of obtaining the entire Nine Tribulations Sword!"

Sword Spirit seriously said, "Moreover, the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword is supposed to be a threshold that will concern the life and death of the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword. Therefore, it'll need your overflowing spiritual prowess.

And, it would be impossible if your spirit decreased even a bit... There will be a big loss in your spirit if I were to take charge of your body now. And, you won't be able to make up for it when the time comes... Consequently, you won't be able to make through this barrier when the time comes. In fact, there are high chances that your spirit will be wiped out in the process."

Chu Yang muttered to himself for a moment. Then, he said, "Is there any possibility that the people on our side will manage to escape if they set into action with all seriousness? What are the chances that Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others will die?"

Sword Spirit forced a smile and said, "Our people have hundred-percent chances of dying if the enemy decided to kill. Similarly, our people have zero chances of running away if they decided to capture them!"

Chu Yang nodded as he clearly understood. He mischievously smiled, "Then, what choice do I have? Do you think that I would watch my brothers die in front of me if I don't make you set into action?"

"But, this choice is in my hands. And, I won't set into action at this time since the fourth sword fragment has appeared!" Sword Spirit sighed, "I'm only responsible for the Nine Tribulations Sword and the mission for the Nine Tribulations Sword! I don't have any responsibility towards you or your brothers!"

Chu Yang said with full confidence, "You'll undertake this task... I'm sure!"

Sword Spirit sighed, "Don't force me." He was well aware that Chu Yang was going to force him to set into action anyhow.

"It's you who is forcing me!" Chu Yang coldly said.

"You mustn't forget that Mo Qing Wu is still waiting for you." Sword Spirit didn't have any better option than to use Chu Yang's

tried and tested weakness. In fact, he was convinced that the name 'Mo Qing Wu' would change Chu Yang's mind.

It was because Mo Qing Wu had been Chu Yang's biggest obsession in his previous life. In fact, it could be said that he had taken the rebirth only for Mo Qing Wu!

"Qing Wu is currently with her masters. So, I feel very relieved. Her destiny has changed!" Chu Yang indifferently said, "Anyway, this life isn't just about love!

"Mo Qing Wu would be broken-hearted if I were to die because of this. But... I can't do anything about... her broken heart!" Chu Yang softly said, "I loved her very much in my previous life. However, she had still been driven away from my side by me... and she had still died..."

"You'll end up exposing your identity!" Sword Spirit was anxious, "Your master is still waiting for you to go and help him with his dream."

"I focus on what's before my eyes when I can't attend to everything simultaneously," Chu Yang indifferently said.

"Stupid!" Sword Spirit became angry and cursed.

Chu Yang laughed out loud in his heart, and said, "Sword Spirit, being stupid is sometimes the only way for a man to have a clear conscience.

"The word 'stupid' is used to scold people. But, being silly is sometimes the most praiseworthy thing in life!"

Chu Yang said, "You're not a person; you won't understand. So, please shut up. I only need you to help me right now!"

Sword Spirit angrily turned around, and returned to the Nine Tribulations Space. He didn't speak anything further.

[I'm not a human! Motherfu*ker, you've dared to say that I'm not a human! I've been in this world for ninety-thousand years. What

feeling or what thing have I not seen? I've seen so many Masters of Nine Tribulations Sword. But, I've never seen one who is such a brainless stupid cu*t!]

Chu Yang smiled, and said in his heart, "It is sometimes necessary to be a stupid cu*t in life."

Then, they both became silent at the same time.

In the battlefield... the fierce battle was getting more and more intense!

All the people of Gu Clan were seriously injured. They were basically unable to withstand in this one-sided battle. Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, Rui Bu Tong, Xie Zhi Qiu, and Ao Xie Yun had been obstructing most of the attacks. Otherwise, all of them might've been wiped out long ago.

However, everyone had been encircled in a very small range... But, all of them were doing their utmost to withstand.

Tan Tan was in the center; he was wrapped in black fog.

A muffled groan was heard, and a splash of bright blood flashed from Ji Mo's shoulder. His whole body was aching and shivering... His back was about to be ruthlessly cut by a saber. Gu Du Xing shouted out loudly at this moment. Then, he ferociously puffed out blood from his mouth. He was forced to rush to the front of the enemy, and protect Ji Mo behind him. He angrily said in a low voice, "Where is your medicine? Bastard!"

Ji Mo's complexion had already turned black. He was on the verge of crumbling. He had received severe injuries twice, and had almost given up on his life. But, he came to a realization as soon as he heard these words. He then hastily reached out in his bosom, took out the Nine Tribulations Pill, and swallowed it. Then, he said in embarrassment whilst chewing it, "I almost forgot..."

"You just remember your Aobo." Luo Ke Di was panting next to Ji Mo. He mumbled to himself whilst brandishing his sword with all

his effort, "Dammit, this is strange. You've already met Aobo. You fu*ker... how come she hasn't crushed you to death?"

"Fu*k your sister-in-law!" Ji Mo got furious. He felt his vitality restoring. His wounds didn't hurt anymore. He then rushed out... while cussing in a deafening voice!

Luo Ke Di almost vomited out blood. He cursed, "It's alright if you curse me. But, why are you cursing my elder brother's wife... She's my elder brother's wife... not mine, you know..."

He hadn't even finished his sentence when a feeble whisper echoed in his ear; it had sounded like the buzz of a mosquito, "Open your mouth."

Luo Ke Di became extremely happy. [Big Brother? Big Brother has come?]

Luo Ke Di hurriedly opened his mouth. He smelled a burst of fragrance in front of him. And, a pill went accurately into his mouth. Then, he felt all the injuries on his body getting healed within an instant. He then looked upwards, and wildly laughed, "Ahwooh~~~ Ahwooh~~~ Ahwooh!~~ Fu*k your grandmother... How dare you provoke Second Master Luo!" He rushed off to kill whilst being full of life.

Gu Du Xing's words hadn't only reminded Ji Mo... They had also reminded Chu Yang.

[I need to stay in the dark for the time being, but... it can't prevent me from saving my people.]

[I'll spend the incomplete versions of Nine Tribulations Pills until these fu*kers of Ao Clan exhaust themselves to death... as long as I have enough.]

Xie Dan Qiong was being carried by Xie Zhi Qiu on his back. He was somewhat dizzy. He suddenly heard someone saying, "Xie Dan Qiong, make your ancestor open his mouth!"

Xie Dan Qiong was startled. That voice then echoed once again

the next moment. Xie Dan Qiong heard it clearly this time, "This is Chu Yang's voice!"

He hurriedly said to Xie Zhi Qiu, "Ancestor, open your mouth. Take the healing medicine."

Xie Zhi Qiu was a spent force. He could collapse at any time. He angrily said, "Haven't you given me yours already?"

Xie Dan Qiong anxiously said, "It's not mine... You open your mouth. Someone will throw it into your mouth..."

"Motherfu*ker!" Xie Zhi Qiu didn't believe him. He said, "This Old Man has opened his mouth dozens of times to spout blood. The only thing that goes-in are those damned caterpillars."

Chapter 683: A Real Man Must Not Take A Wrong Step In His Journey!

"Oh my God! Ancestor, just trust me," Xie Dan Qiong would've stamped his foot in anger if he hadn't been seriously injured.

Xie Zhi Qiu coldly snorted. He didn't have a better option. So, he believed Xie Dan Qiong, and opened his aged mouth. Then, he didn't know from where a pill was precisely thrown into his mouth with a 'pop' the next moment.

[So, it was true...]

Xie Zhi Qiu was startled by this. He thought, [I don't know whether it'll work or not... But, who threw it?] However, he didn't have the time to look around.

Suddenly, he felt an upsurge of heat in his almost dry Dantian. He then regained nearly half of his strength within a breath's time. And, he became pleasantly surprised as a result.

Then, he roared and rushed out. He made a violent and ferocious attack. [My strength... is entirely restored already?!]

Xie Zhi Qiu's happiness-level had gone off the charts!

He had the strength of a first grade Monarch level Expert. So, it wouldn't be a difficult thing for him to deal with these people of Ao Clan if his strength got completely restored. He madly roared and rushed forward whilst bursting with vigor.

Cai Xiong Cheng just sneered while receiving a palm blow on his chest. He thought, [You old bastard, I would've been afraid of you if you had been at the peak of your strength. But, ninety-percent of your vitality is gone already. I don't fear your fu*king weary ass now!]

However, Cai Xiao Cheng felt an earth-shattering strength suddenly rushing over into him when he thought of extending his

palms to counterattack. So, he loudly shouted, and exposed a look of disbelief in his eyes. Suddenly, blood gushed out of all seven orifices of his head. And, his body was sent out flying like a ball. He resolutely slammed into a big tree, and all of his ribs broke with snapping sounds.

He loudly screamed before losing consciousness, "What the hell? This is impossible!"

Xie Zhi Qiu burst into laughter. His white beard fluttered in the air. He finally vented out the anger that he had pent up while being chased down the entire way. He leapt forward, and entered into the crowd of enemies like a tiger. Then, he ferociously started to kill with the palm of his left hand as well as the sword in his right hand.

He realized that his home had been destroyed. The hard work of several hundred years had gone up in smoke. However, he had been fleeing the entire way. And, countless of his descendants had died before his eyes... Xie Zhu Qiu sorrowfully laughed, and angrily attacked. He had tears in his eyes. But, his tears vaporized with his rage before they could trickle down.

Blood was continuously splashing under his sword and palm attacks. It made this old man Xie Zhi Qiu feel a boundless pleasure of taking revenge. He would see the soul of a brave hero of Xie Clan rest in peace every time bright blood splashed. He would see those heroes closing their eyes in death, and dying with a content heart...

"Bon voyage! Bon voyage! Bon... voyage, ah! ~~~" Xie Zhi Qiu was crazily shouting in sorrow whilst launching his attacks. He was delivering his blessings to the souls of those heroes... whom he hadn't been able to save.

[It's because I'm avenging you people!]

It seemed as if he was looking at that quiet and noiseless road to the netherworlds... as if he could see that his clansmen had a smile of contentment on their faces after witnessing their enemy's

downfall... as if they were floating on that shining road... as if they had no cares or regrets, and they didn't need to look back...

"Look! Look! I'm avenging you all! I'm avenging...!" Xie Zhi Qiu attacked more rapidly and more fiercely. His strength was recovering at a crazy speed at this moment.

A glittering jasper flower blossomed from his background at this moment. It was Xie Dan Qiong... He had also become healthy after he had taken an incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill. His strength had gotten restored instantaneously. He fiercely leapt down from the back of his ancestor. And, the first thing he did was to launch his jasper flower!

A bright, glittering, and magnificent jasper flower went out... It gave rise to bloodbath and terror wherever it went!

Jasper Flower blooms, and all other flowers wither!

This world's best concealed weapon had suddenly set into action. And, the results were absolutely outstanding!

It was completely unexpected. No one had thought that the Young Clan Lord of Xie Clan would suddenly regain his strength. The lives of many people were suddenly taken away by his jasper flower.

Jasper flower brilliantly fluttered about in the air. It carried a chilly and colorful blood-light with it. The bright petals of the flower penetrated the body of a man. Then, it again came out. Then, it penetrated into the body of another man, and that man issued loud screams.

Then, Chu Yang's Nine Tribulation Pill flew out, and Lou Ke Di started vigorously killing the enemies. His injuries had also been healed all of a sudden.

Dong Wu Shang bellowed amid the fierce battle. He suddenly launched nine crazy and overbearing blows from his saber in a row whilst ignoring the load it would have on his body.

Li Chang Long on his opposite side immediately felt extreme pressure on his body.

Dong Wu Shang made a brave move along with the Black Saber of about 285 kg weight. He had no thought of personal safety. The sharpness of the Saber Emperor and a god-like bold and powerful imposing aura were fully exhibited. And, he was successful in bridging the disparity between the strengths of the two sides in this manner...

Dong Wu Shang's first saber-blow went out and resisted Li Chang Long's horizontal sword blow. The sword got smashed with a clanging sound. However, blood fiercely flowed out from the seven apertures of Dong Wu Shang's head.

However, Dong Wu Shang didn't stop even for a moment. He clenched his saber, and launched the second saber-blow.

Li Chang Long bellowed. And, a white aura emitted out from his whole body. He welcomed the saber-blow with his bare palm.

His left palm and the edge of the saber came in contact and stopped. Then, he took a step back. After that, he thrust his right palm to block while moving back seven steps continuously. He managed to resist the sharp point of the saber with his pure-white palm when he issued his seventh palm-attack. Then, he fiercely counterattacked!

The Black Saber was shaken, and it turned upwards... Dong Wu Shang glared with his bell-like eyes. Then, the web between the forefinger and thumb on both of his hands ruptured with a rumbling sound. However, he still launched his third sky-splitting saber blow!

Selfless and Heartless Saber!

Dong Wu Shang had displayed the Heartless Saber to the peak! Every saber-blow was mixed with all of his vigor and energy. The enemy couldn't dodge the attacks. The enemy could only defend

with all his strength.

Li Chang Long let out a sharp cry, and his body spun. Then, countless palm-attacks popped out from his body. His palm-attacks collided with the point of the saber one after another...

The fourth saber-blow was launched!

Then, the fifth saber-blow...

....

Dong Wu Shang faced upwards, and shouted wildly. A perfectly round pillar of blood spurted out from his mouth. Suddenly, the sleeves of his robe floated in the wind with flapping sound as he jumped up. Then, he gripped his saber in midair! He then turned upside down, and hacked his ninth saber-blow using his vitality!

Li Chang Long bellowed. He intuitively knew that this was his opponent's last attack. So, he ferociously urged the circulation of his primary energy. Then, he suddenly shot both of his palms.

However, he had ignored the fact that he had been using just his hands for a very long time. So, his hands had already sustained several hundred saber wounds! He had been relying on his Emperor Level strength and domain, and they hadn't broken down yet. However, his palms were riddled with scars...

Li Chang Long had stimulated the entirety of his power in this move. His hands started to emit thin wisps of blood like a fountain. Li Chang Long was gob-smacked. He hurriedly tried to dodge and move back. But, it was too late now!

Dong Wu Shang's 'world-ruling' saber-blow had arrived!

Li Chang Long bellowed. He didn't have any other option but to move forward and resist the attack with his palms.

'Kacha!' Li Chang Long screamed as his palms got chopped into pieces!

The saber-attack continued onwards. However, there was no

time for him to retreat. So, his arms got cut off!

However, the saber point continued its pressure, and his shoulders also got cut off!

Then, the saber hacked down further, and his sternum shattered!

After that, Dong Wu Shang shouted out loud. And, the overwhelming and irresistible saber energy surged up violently, and broke into Li Chang Long's insides.

Li Chang Long let out a long scream. He was suddenly stunned... as if he had received an electric shock!

His eyes opened extremely wide, and his gaze turned blank.

It seemed as if his entire life was flashing in his mind at this moment!

The hardships of youth, the happiness of betrothal, the ambitions of youth, the struggles... [I had followed my master and stepped on the road of Jianghu that day. I haven't looked back since then... The sun had been as bright as blood that day. After all, someone had been weeping behind me...]

[I entered into Jianghu step by step. I crawled my way up step by step. I climbed up to a high position step by step... But then, I suddenly turned around, and realized that I had lost the willpower to keep going...]

[I only saw a lonely grave with no boundaries when I returned. Weeds were growing all around it... Pan Pan!]

[I got poisoned by lust poison and lost all sense of morality and taboos since then... I became depraved... Is it still me? Is it truly me – the person that Pan Pan had suffered and longed for her entire life?]

[I'm going to meet her now. But, do I still have the face to meet her?]

[How will she accept my nasty and filthy body...?]

"A real man of the world mustn't take a wrong step... on his countless journeys!" Li Chang Long stood there disappointed and frustrated. His body had been smashed into pieces. His insides had been shattered like fine dust. It seemed as if he didn't have any feelings. He muttered, "...even one wrong step won't let you return home. There's no turning back even if it is the road to the netherworlds..."

Li Chang Long sighed in disappointment and frustration, "Alas~~~~" He seemed to have sighed out the entirety of his life's bitter experiences with this sigh.

Suddenly, Li Chang Long lost all the radiance in his eyes. Then, he suddenly saw a peasant-maiden in that darkness. She had braided black hair. There was an expression of longing on her simple face. She was dressed in a printed cotton jacket, and pure joy was flashing in her eyes. She was running towards Li Chang Long whilst taking small and quick steps.

It seemed as if a wife was greeting her husband after waiting for a thousand years.

Li Chang Long suddenly became happy. He muttered, "Are you forgiving me?"

Dong Wu Shang thought that Li Chang Long was speaking to him. So, he doubtfully asked, "What?"

Li Chang Long didn't pay any attention to him. Instead, his aged mouth revealed a childish happiness as he said, "Have you come to greet me? This... filthy me?"

His voice became lower and lower. Dong Wu Shang had to incline towards that side to be able to hear clearly. He was just about to ask. But then, he heard Li Chang Long sighing in satisfaction. He heard him saying with a smile, "Pan Pan, I'm very happy..."

Dong Wu Shang stayed still, and waited to listen more. But, he noticed that Li Chang Long had stopped breathing...

A feeling of infinite content remained on the face of that dead Emperor Level Expert. However, it was mixed with a kind of guilt as well. It seemed as if he was pleasantly surprised of someone's compassion. However, he was also ashamed of his mistakes. But, when it's all said and done... he was finally happy...

He died.

Dong Wu Shang shook his head. His head felt a bit dizzy. He muttered, "A real man of the world mustn't take a wrong step on his countless journeys. Even one wrong step won't let you return home. There is no turning back even if it is the road to the netherworlds..."

He shook his head and whispered, "Maybe... you need to go back. But, I only move forward. I don't need to go back."

This strong enemy was gone... Dong Wu Shang felt his whole body aching. His body had become as light as feather... He felt as if he wanted to float. He didn't have any strength left. He staggered for a while, and almost fell on the ground.

He then unloaded his Black Saber on the ground with a 'clang'.

Suddenly, he heard a voice, "Wu Shang, open your mouth."

"Big Brother?" Dong Wu Shang lifted his dizzy head, "Where are you? Am I hallucinating?"

A pill suddenly got into his mouth with a popping sound. Then, a familiar fragrance went into his nostrils. He then felt his whole body becoming relaxed and peaceful...

Gu Du Xing's silhouette moved swiftly. His mind seemed to be floating away in this moment even though he was facing enemies from all around.

He had shot his sword, but he had forgotten...

He had forgotten about the enemy... He had forgotten about the fight... He had forgotten about the world...

What remained was... only his lone self.

A lonely swordsman with Unruffled Sword Play!

Gu Du Xing was floating and swinging in a manner that made it seem as if he was sleep-walking. In fact, his vision had become intensely blank. His Black Dragon Sword also seemed to be sleep-walking in the air.

It seemed like a weak sword-blow when the sword-light flickered. However, it rushed out like lightning. Then, splendid blood-lights bloomed from the throats of the enemies one after another.

Gu Du Xing looked like a blind man who had lost his memories... It seemed as if he had lost his consciousness, and was now dancing in the weightlessness of space.

However, every movement he made was taking a life!

...

Chapter 684: Insidious Minister

Gu Du Xing's figure flew along with the sword-light. The sword-beam was swallowed in, and spat out like lightning. Ao Yu Yun let out a loud shout, and softly collapsed... A big hole had been opened in his throat. Then, the bodyguards on his side pounced over crazily.

It seemed that Gu Du Xing didn't even realize that he had killed an important person. He didn't seem to notice that the enemy was approaching him from everywhere in a crazy manner. His body turned around whilst being as light as feather. Then, it rushed into another direction like lightning. The sword-light went slashing the whole way, and people kept screaming and collapsing...

His body suffered many heavy blows in a row. However, he remained unfazed. He had immersed himself in this bizarre situation wherein he kept harvesting human lives...

Then, a bold and mighty silhouette suddenly appeared... And, the big saber hacked right in the face of another Young Master of the Ao Clan – Ao Cheng Yun. Ao Cheng Yun didn't even get the time to scream. He got hacked into two equal halves from head to toe!

His body seemed as if two pieces of pork that were about to be put on shelf had gotten separated equally whilst being drenched in blood.

The people of Ao Clan went insane!

Two Young Masters had been killed in an instant. This made these people fight with their entire might!

They started fighting with the method of 'an eye for an eye'.

After all, Xie Clan's people were already very few in number. And, they were close to the inner circle of the encirclement.

The eyes of that black-clothed and masked leader of Zhuge Clan flashed at this moment. It seemed that he was somewhat nervous.

He took a step forward. His eyes were tightly fixed at the mass of black fog around Tan Tan.

"Big Brother, it seems that something wrong," another black-clothed and masked man frowned. He said while being puzzled. "How did the situation suddenly get reversed? These people of Xie Clan are only a few in number even if these fresh troops are taken into account. But... they are surprisingly evenly matched now. Three of the top Emperor Level Experts of the Ao Clan have been defeated in an instant. But, the enemy side hasn't received any damage. Instead, all of them are fighting more and more bravely..."

The eyes of the black-clothed and masked leader shrank. He hesitated for a while, and said, "Second Brother, haven't you noticed yet? The Xie Clan's people seemed to have changed into monsters that simply won't go down ever since that awakened being has started to emit that black fog from his body..."

"Does Big Brother mean that..." that black-clothed and masked man said with a shock, "something is off... about that block fog?"

"I'm afraid that's right," the black-clothed and masked leader said, "The 'awakened being' is awakening his several millennia old bloodline. And, this must be the awakening of the bloodline of a King... And, that black fog must have extremely strong healing effect towards the people on his side if my guess is correct!"

"However, our harvest will be much more than our expectations... if it is truly so!"

The mysterious light in the eyes of that black-clothed and masked leader blazed increasingly. "Fortunately, we have put all of our efforts in capturing an important persona of the Divine Clan. We are lucky that we have already discovered this heaven-shocking secret about the awakened being. Otherwise, it would've been a terrible disaster in case we had let this man mature..."

Then, another black-clothed and masked man came over. He said

every word very carefully, "Big Brother, I think this matter is too fishy. I had even wanted to ask the elders when I had been in the Upper Three Heavens. I can't help but say now... that this matter isn't that simple. Let's say that it's true that Three Stars Divine Clan's bloodline is awakening in the human world after several millennia. Then... why hasn't it appeared before?"

"Or maybe... they have died a premature death. We can't say." The black-clothed masked leader didn't care about this aspect. He said, "After all, 'awakened beings' are very vulnerable for a long duration before... and even after awakening... They are vulnerable to the extent that even we brothers wouldn't need to go into action... Just the troops that we have brought with us can annihilate him thousands of times over!"

"Moreover... it's okay that you've said these words in front of me. But, you had better not say these words in the future!" The black-clothed masked leader strictly looked at his third brother, "Are you even aware that we're in the Middle Three Heavens?"

"Do you know how this information had come to us in the Upper Three Heavens?" he snorted and said, "The Great Elder hadn't hesitated to lose precious years of his life after he had captured that man of the Three Stars Divine Clan... He had deconstructed the mind of that Divine Clan's expert nine times in a day with Nine Needles Soul Deconstruction Technique! That is how we have obtained this piece of information... The Great Elder has lost nine years of his lifespan because of this. So, how can it possibly be a small matter?"

"Great Elder is already over 1700 years old. So, he knows that he won't live past this year. Still, he had taken the initiative to propose the usage of this great technique... just for obtaining this top secret information for the clan! And, you doubt it? What about Great Elder's sacrifice?"

"Even a ninth grade Saint Level Expert can't survive the Nine Needles Soul Deconstruction Technique; let alone if it is used nine

times on a person.

"It can only be the will of the heavens if it turns out that the information that has come out of this is fake!"

He looked at his brothers with his sharp eyes. "You're not allowed to speak about this matter in the future. Otherwise, don't blame me for not caring about our brotherhood!"

That black-clothed and masked man was drenched in sweat. He complied, and then walked away.

The black-clothed and masked leader attentively gazed in Tan Tan's direction. Then, he insipidly said, "Prepare the Slaughtering Spirit Arrow, Capturing Soul Powder, Truncating Soul Powder, Soul Breaking Pan-pipe, and Spirit Lifting Net. We'll begin once that 'awakened being' fully awakens. And, we'll attack and capture him as soon as his body emits the black fog again!"

"Yes."

The several brothers complied at the same time. They got excited. Then, each of them gripped one or several exquisite items in their hands; these items were grotesquely shaped.

All the capable assistants of the black-clothed and masked leader had held the Purple Crystal Jade Bottles. Strange powders were faintly visible inside those bottles.

These "Slaughtering Spirit Arrow, Capturing Soul Powder, Truncating Soul Powder, Soul Breaking Pan-pipe, and Spirit Lifting Net" were five great killing devices. They had learned about the awakened being after having caught that important persona of the Divine Clan. Then, they had used cruel methods to interrogate him further. And, they had found out the most effective method to subdue the awakened being.

These five great killing devices were extremely vicious! They had been refined with such a method that even these experts of the Zhuge Clan had been astonished. Moreover, the required materials

to craft them were exceptionally rare and precious!

Therefore, no one would doubt that something could be wrong in the clear crafting procedures of such a cruel method...

The fight was becoming more and more intense now. In fact, it had reached the superheated stage!

Chu Yang had thrown the last incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill into Gu Du Xing's mouth.

Outside the forest... sounds of hoof beats were getting nearer and nearer.

The experts of Ao Clan had become even crazier. They were facing deadly attacks inside the protection circle of Dong Wu Shang and the others.

Everyone was exhausted. But, the situation of the battle had become even more desperate now.

The two brothers — Ao Meng Yun and Ao Chang Yun — were the only ones remaining out of the four. They had a look of despair on their faces at the moment. They had gone insane. They hadn't expected that their dominant military force would have to fight so desperately at the risk of their lives.

Their foreign aid was clearly formidable. However, their external help had gone on a 'strike' at such an urgent and critical moment; this was an unfathomable mystery to them!

This would make people vomit blood to death!

On another side... Chu Yang was quietly moving. He had taken cover in the darkness of the night, the trees, and the underbrush amidst the saber-lights and sword-shadows. He silently sneaked over to under a big tree.

Then, the Nine Tribulations Sword stabbed out like a viper!

Under the tree... the eighth grade Emperor Level Expert Cai Xiao Cheng had been sent flying by Xie Zhi Qiu's palm attack. He had

received serious internal injuries as a result. His internal organs had been dislocated, and all of his ribs had been broken. So, he was now circulating his martial power, and healing himself with all his strength. His body was shrouded with white fog. Pitter-patter sounds sounded during the healing process, and he soon reached at the critical juncture.

There were two first-grade Emperor Level Experts beside him. And, they were anxiously guarding him from left and right sides.

Cai Xiao Cheng would be able to break through Xie Zhi Qiu's tottering protection circle in one fell swoop as long as he could recover.

Even the people engaged in the fierce battle weren't aware that there was a key person who could change the situation of fight merely by raising his hand.

However, how could Chu Yang have missed this? How could he allow this eighth-grade Emperor Level Expert — Cai Xiao Cheng — to destroy the advantageous situation that he had worked hard to create?

He had been waiting for this very moment for a long time.

Minister Chu didn't dare to be distracted at this moment. After all, it was the moment for Minister Chu to move into action!

Both the 'protector' Emperor Level Experts beamed with joy when they saw that Cai Xiao Cheng was going to recover soon.

A feeble and dull sound resounded at this moment. And, the Sword Point penetrated the big tree behind Cai Xiao Cheng. Then, it flashed over like a viper, and quickly shrank back thereafter.

Consequently, the white spiritual energy that had been rapidly circulating Cai Xiao Cheng's body suddenly exploded with a bang and scattered in all directions. Then, Cai Xiao Cheng opened his mouth, and resolutely spouted out blood. The blood fell on the ground, and formed a deep and bloody hole!

Cai Xiao Cheng's expression became sad and angry. He angrily roared, "Coward! Show yourself!" His voice had become hoarse by the time he had spoken the last word. He then spat out a bucket of blood from his mouth... His vomit contained chunks of his internal organs!

It seemed as if all of his internal organs had become like a pot of porridge!

"Martial Emperor Cai?!" both men cried out in alarm.

However, Cai Xiao Cheng couldn't hear them. His neck had become soft, and was dangling down. And, he had lost all of his vitality. Then, his body slowly leaned over, and fell forward. And, he fell into his own pool of blood with a splash!

There was a fine sword-mark on the back side of his vest.

A tyrannical sword-light had broken into Cai Xiao Cheng's internal organs with the strike of the Nine Tribulations Sword. Then, it had smashed the most vulnerable spots of his insides.

"Who is it?" Both the Emperor Experts madly jumped out. A sword crashed into the forest. The sword-light slashed out vertically and horizontally, and the fragments of wood swirled about in the air. But, no one could be seen.

It seemed as if a phantom had stabbed its insidious sword in the dark... and disappeared.

The two searched in several places, but found nothing. Then, they turned back in a daze. They saw that Emperor Expert Cai's corpse was lying on the ground... He had died with his eyes open. There was anger and resentment in his eyes!

Suddenly, they felt weak in their whole bodies. It seemed as if they were about to collapse on the ground due to distress.

[Three among the four eighth-grade Emperor Level Experts have perished. Only one of them is remaining now. And, he is also being suppressed by Xie Zhi Qiu. A crisis is approaching him. He

wouldn't be able to go on for long.]

[Six-hundred experts of the Ao Clan had started-off on this trip. But, only less-than-sixty men remain! Could it be that Ao Clan's entire younger generation will be buried here tonight?]

....

Ao Clan began the final attack like surging tides! Ao Meng Yun and Ao Lang Yun roared. And, the soldiers rushed forth under their leadership!

Gu Du Xing and the others had recovered by using the Nine Tribulations Pills. But, they had undertaken a long and wearisome journey. And, they had been fighting till now. So, they almost couldn't go on any longer.

All of the senior members other than Xie Zhi Qiu had stepped back while facing the final attack of the enemy. After all, the enemy had launched these attacks with their entire might. So, a crisis was approaching their defense line. And, it was going to bring destruction any time now!

At this moment...

Suddenly, a bang was heard. And, the black fog that had been densely revolving and floating around Tan Tan's body erupted all of a sudden!

...

Chapter 685: Devil King! Awakens!

Suddenly, a sound of explosion was heard. And, that ball of black fog that had been densely floating around Tan Tan's body exploded!

Then, a shadow suddenly appeared...

It was Tan Tan!

Tan Tan's body seemed taller at this moment... People could feel that the black robe he was wearing was extremely well-fitted.

Moreover, that strange mark on his forehead was already half complete... It was glowing! His facial features were still the same. But, it wasn't known how his face seemed to have attained an endless charm.

No one would think that he was ugly at this moment!

It wasn't known when the headband on his head had broken into pieces.

His jet-black and shiny hair was smooth and fine. His perfectly straight hair hung down to his chest. And, a perfectly straight hairline was exposed in the middle of his head.

However, such gentle, smooth, and shining hair was giving off gloomy and ruthless vibes to people! Also, a feeling of restoration of the world's experiences was arising involuntarily from it.

The eyes of everyone in the battlefield had turned red with killing intention. However, the echo of this sudden and loud sound startled them all, and they involuntarily came to a stop.

Then, Tan Tan began to walk slowly. His movements were very weird. He first took three steps ahead... But, he seemed to be uncomfortable and uncoordinated while walking. So, he stopped after he had taken just three steps.

Then, he lowered his head, and looked at his legs in a strange

way. He then slightly wrinkled his eyebrows — one high and one low. His eyebrows were equally leveled as he wrinkled them this time.

He frowned and looked at his own body whilst being very dissatisfied. Then, he muttered, "It's very annoying!"

Then, he stretched out his hands, and shook his arms... The black fog that could be seen with naked eye suddenly disseminated from his arms. His long and fine hair suddenly got slammed up along with the shakes of his arms. His hair looked like seaweeds on a seabed. They had suddenly started to float upwards whilst continuously swaying in an erratic manner!

Then, his entire body suddenly twisted.

It twisted in a very weird way.

The sound of popping of beans came from his body. It was such a painful sound that it could make people's teeth ache.

Everyone who heard this sound had a clear feeling... They felt that all the bones in Tan Tan's body had dislocated. And, they were again being reintegrated.

Then, Tan Tan lifted his arm, and his hair fell down... His hair was still soft and fine. It was still giving off the gloomy and desolate feeling.

He then lowered his arms, and raised his head.

Xie Dan Feng was next to him. However, she had a clear feeling at this moment, [Tan Tan has suddenly become taller! He is almost two inches taller than he was just a while ago!]

She didn't know why a strange feeling had suddenly risen up in her heart.

This feeling made Xie Dan Feng feel extremely frightened. The rims of her eyes ached, and she felt like crying. But, she didn't know why she was feeling so. She felt a pain in her heart... as if her

heart had shattered into pieces!

Tan Tan twisted his neck after he had lifted his head; his neck issued a crisp breaking sound. He twisted his neck to the left and to the right. Then, he straightened his head.

His movements seemed very funny. But, no one had dared to laugh... In fact, everybody felt an intense chill in their hearts whenever he made these movements.

In fact, even Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing felt the same... they felt a strong shiver in their hearts!

Then, Tan Tan took the fourth step!

However, this fourth step gave out entirely different feelings to everyone as compared to the previous three steps.

This step had been lightly lifted and gently dropped. In fact, even the grass on the ground didn't rustle. However, all the people of Ao Clan clearly felt as if the earth had cracked and the sky had overturned in front of them with this step of Tan Tan's!

It was quiet and calm all around. But, these people of Ao Clan clearly felt as if they were seeing the end of the world... Mountains were toppling. The water on the ground was rising up to the skies. All the clouds in the sky were being torn apart. And, the clear sky seemed to have many big holes.

There was this black-clothed figure in front of these scenes of catastrophe. His long and fine hair hung down. He was looking at the common people of the human world with a callous, indifferent, and disdainful feeling. He stood with his hands behind his back.

The King of the world!

However, he didn't look like a king who worked under an Emperor. Instead, he seemed to be... that supreme ruler who controlled the entire world!

Tan Tan took the fifth step...

Ao Meng Yun stood at the forefront. However, he immediately felt as if a vast and magnificent mountain had come upon his head!

He didn't know what he was feeling. Suddenly, he went weak in the knee, and knelt down with a thud sound.

He knelt in front of Tan Tan.

However, the strangest thing was that all the people of Ao Clan who were seeing this didn't find anything wrong about it in their hearts. They felt as if the fact that their Young Master was kneeling in front of this man was... proper! It felt inevitable and justified!

In fact, these people would've kicked and bent their Young Master's legs to make him kneel if hadn't done this by himself!

[You're not kneeling in front of this man?! This is treason and heresy!]

Tan Tan apathetically looked at Ao Meng Yun in front of him... It seemed as if he hadn't even noticed this big living man who was kneeling down in front of him... Tan Tan finally stood still. His hands were also still behind his back. He then slightly lifted his head, and swept his eyes all around once. Then, he threw his gaze to a farther place. He faintly took a look, and then withdrew his gaze.

His gaze had come in contact with the four Monarch Level Experts of the Zhuge Clan who had been standing far away this entire time.

The four men hadn't felt anything unusual at first.

However, they felt their hearts beating in their chests in an increasingly violent manner along with thumping sounds immediately after Tan Tan moved his gaze away. Moreover, their faces had turned red.

They hadn't felt anything a while ago. But, they now felt as if the man in front of them had controlled even their heartbeats with his

apathetic glance.

The four men looked at each other. And, they suddenly felt aghast in their hearts!

[How can this awakened being... be so terrifying? Were we not told that the bloodline of the Three Stars Divine Clan is awakening? Then...why does he look as if a devil king has come to rule over the world?]

The same thought faintly rose up in the minds of those four. [Could it be that... all of this was planned?]

However, this doubt vanished from the heart of these four like smoke in thin air after Tan Tan pulled his gaze away... [Dammit! We have five killing devices with us. Would we still not be able to deal with an awakened being of a puny bloodline?]

The fact that such changes of thought had happened in a Monarch Level Expert was simply an unbelievable thing. But, this had indeed happened.

Chu Yang had been hidden in the dark. However, he had felt that Tan Tan had spotted him. Moreover, Tan Tan's gaze seemed to have bore into in the depth of Chu Yang's heart. Chu Yang couldn't help but feel a shiver therein. [Tan Tan... has finally begun this type of... change?]

Sword Spirit was at a loss inside the space. He had become frantic and astonished. He suddenly shouted, "What is this? This is the devil! This is clearly the power of a devil king!"

Chu Yang felt heavy in his heart.

Tan Tan finally stopped sweeping his eyes. Then, he suddenly sucked in a long breath... This breath created a vacuum in the entire forest!

Everyone suddenly started to suffocate due to this.

Then, Tan Tan let out the breath whilst being disappointed and

frustrated. He then said in a low and apathetic voice, "This world... has truly changed..."

Then, he sighed again, and said to himself, "I'm too weak."

After that, he looked at the Ao Clan's people in front of him; there were only fifty-eight of them left. He knitted his brows, and said, "I was forced to this point... by these people inferior than bugs?!"

He had slightly raised a corner of his mouth and smirked while saying this. There was a clear contempt towards the entire Nine Heavens in his ridiculing smile!

He was quietly looking at these men horizontally. But, Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing felt as if Tan Tan was standing on the peak of the highest mountain on earth whilst looking down on everyone!

Tan Tan stretched out his hand, and put his five fingers on Ao Meng Yun's head. He then caressed his hair, and indifferently said, "This sacrificial offering... is too weak... It's so weak that it's appalling!"

Ao Meng Yun's entire body shivered... He was being caressed on his head as if he was a puppy who was being petted. However, no feelings of resistance grew inside his consciousness. He issued whimpers from his throat like a puppy on the point of demise.

Tan Tan lifted his hand...

Ao Meng Yun's head was silently lifted up along with Tan Tan's hand! The entire head from the cavity of neck was lifted up!

It seemed as if Ao Meng Yun's head had already been cut by a sharp knife. And, it had just been fitted tightly on his neck cavity...

That's because the neck cavity that was revealed after his head had been detached was... flat and smooth! Moreover, not even a single drop of blood had come out of it.

Tan Tan grabbed the head... He then frowned as he looked at it. Then, he casually threw it away.

Then, blood suddenly gushed out and rose up into the sky from Ao Meng Yun's neck!

"This smell of blood..." Tan Tan indifferently said. He looked at the bright blood gorgeously rising up in front of him. He felt very nostalgic as he said, "It's been so many years since... I have smelt it..."

He then knitted his brows in disappointment and frustration, and conveniently grabbed Ao Lang Yun.

There had been three people in-between him and Ao Lang Yun. But, Ao Lang Yun had still landed in Tan Tan's hand in a flash.

Then, Tan Tan very gently grabbed Ao Lang Yun's head... And, he made Ao Lang Yun stand in front of him in a proper manner. Then, he twisted him with both his hands.

Ao Lang Yun had been grabbed by Tan Tan like a puppet. His feet had felt to have grown roots. He had felt as if he had been fixed to the ground. However, his body from his ankle to the top of his skull had been gently twisted into a huge 'fried dough twist' by Tan Tan!

His clothes, muscles, bones, and skull had all been twisted. They all had assumed a spiral pattern.

Ao Lang Yun had died without uttering a word. But, his body was still continuously issuing breaking sounds. These sounds were very rhythmic. Tan Tan twisted him for a little while. Then, he wrinkled his brows. He then slightly tilted his head, and listened to this rhythmic sound of shattering bones. Then, he insipidly said, "I got to hear it again. This breaking of human bones is still the same."

He lifted his head. Then, he slightly smiled, and said, "I had given a name to this piece of music a very long time ago... I call it 'bones

symphony'."

He insipidly explained as if he was explaining it to himself, "A person becomes an evenly-formed 'dough twist' if they are twisted with a very stable force. And, this produces a kind of sweet tune that causes all the 786,459,633 hairs on the listener's body to become erect!

"I hadn't heard it for a very long time," Tan Tan smiled in pleasure, and said while feeling a bit nostalgic. He then licked his lips, tilted his head to one side, and started to imitate the music with his mouth... He narrowed his eyes and softly sung, "Kachacha... Kachacha... Kachacha..."

Meanwhile, his teeth intermittently issued a fierce glow in the dimness of the night.

....

Chapter 686: Give Me Back My Tan Tan!

Everyone trembled as if they had been stuck by thunder. They stared blankly at Tan Tan like fools. They couldn't help but feel a chill running down their spines. Even their jaws trembled.

Then, Tan Tan took another step, and entered into the encirclement of the Ao Clan's remaining experts. He then twisted his brows, and said, "You petty and lowly humans disappoint me!"

Then, he extended his hands along with his black sleeves.

He twisted all the people on his left side like he had twisted Ao Lang Yun when he extended his left hand. Then, six people were sent out flying like rubber-balls as he raised his right hand. They all flew into midair, and their bodies cracked open!

They scattered, and turned into a mush of blood!

Then, Tan Tan launched three kicks with 'bang' sounds, and three people were sent flying like meteors.

Not a single man dared to oppose him!

He walked like this among more than fifty people of Ao Clan. He still had an apathetic look on his face; his eyes didn't have the least bit of emotion.

He was sending these rude and unreasonable experts to hell with every gesture he was making!

The remaining twenty people shivered from head to toe. There was horror in their eyes. It seemed as if they were having a fierce struggle with an invisible devil within their hearts. Finally, a man screamed loudly, "Ah~~~"

He screamed towards the sky with all his might. His voice was filled with fear. He was extremely terrified.

This scream seemed to have awakened everyone. Everyone just foolishly stood like blockheads for a second. Then, they quickly

began to scatter in all directions. They all were battered and exhausted. So, all of them stumbled and staggered as they fled.

Tan Tan pursued them at a moderate pace... It seemed as if he was strolling idly in a garden.

His movements were very sluggish and leisurely. In fact, every movement of his hand and every lifting of his foot seemed to be showing a natural elegance that was seemingly coming straight from his being. It seemed as if his body was filled with the eccentric appeal of a poet. He seemed to strolling in a small forest inside a painting under the illumination of the early-morning sun. His heart seemed to be filled with the verses of sorrow of spring and pain of autumn.

However, more-than-fifty people of Ao Clan had one by one collapsed at his hands amidst this elegant stroll.

The last eighth-grade Emperor Level Expert had run away to a distance of several-thousand feet.

Meanwhile, Tan Tan still stood in his original spot.

Therefore, everyone began to think that Tan Tan would let that guy go along with his horse. However, Tan Tan lifted his head towards the faraway distance at this moment. He then insipidly said, "Did I tell you to leave?"

These words seemed to have some kind of bizarre magical power. Everyone felt a violent jolt in their heart as soon they heard these words. It could be seen with the naked eye that layers of strange ripples had appeared in the air between Tan Tan and that eighth-grade Emperor Expert.

That eighth-grade Emperor Expert was about to flee away. However, his figure suddenly shuddered... and he came to a stop. He then stood there foolishly... as if he was a soulless sculpture.

"Why don't you come back?" Tan Tan casually said.

His voice had just fallen when that eighth-grade Emperor Expert

obediently turned around. Then, he walked over step by step with a lifeless look in his eyes.

Everyone was shocked by this. In fact, their jaws dropped to the ground.

[This... what's going on?]

The Emperor Level Expert soon walked over here like a puppet. Then, he stood in front of Tan Tan.

"Well done." Tan Tan said, "Look how obedient you are..." He then extended his hand, and pointed out, "Go there, and kneel down. Then, bang your head until you die!"

Everyone looked at the spot that had been pointed out... They saw that there was a boulder at that spot; this boulder was half-exposed from the ground.

They couldn't help but feel spooked out in their hearts as they saw this.

However, that eighth-grade Emperor Expert turned around whilst swaying. He then walked towards that boulder, and arrived in front of it. He then determined the appropriate distance between himself and the boulder, and knelt down.

He had determined the appropriate distance so that his head could be 'properly' banged against that boulder.

Then, he fiercely banged his head down!

Bang!

Blood splashed!

Bang!

Bang bang bang...

That eighth-grade Emperor Level Expert soon turned himself into a living skeleton by knocking his own head whilst everyone stared.

Bang!

The Emperor Level Expert's body went limp, and he fell down with the last sound... His skull softly fell down from his neck with a thud, and rolled over towards another side of the boulder.

A bloody red patch was left on the boulder.

He had smashed his own head!

Tan Tan had had his hands crossed behind his back during this entire crazy and weird process. He looked far into the distance with a desolate look in his eyes, and sighed. He didn't move even a bit.

Everyone felt a heavy pressure in their hearts. But, nobody spoke anything.

Meanwhile, Xie Dan Feng's muffled sounds of deep and low sobbing were heard from behind.

A long time passed. Then, Tan Tan exhaled a breath, and finally turned around.

The first person he saw was Gu Du Xing.

"You? You're not bad." Tan Tan praised. Then, he looked at Dong Wu Shang, and casually said, "You're also very good." Then, he muttered, "All of you guys are good."

He unwillingly said soon after that, "I... I'm much obliged to you people!"

Xie Zhi Qiu had the strength of a first-grade Monarch level Expert. But, even he couldn't control the overwhelming feeling of gratitude that had risen from the bottom of his heart when Tan Tan had said these words.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were standing the closest to Tan Tan. Their breathing had become loud and heavy as soon as they had listened to this sentence.

They were Pure Sword Emperor and Pure Saber Emperor!

Both of them were exceptional beings of this generation with first-grade perseverance.

And, the reason why they had been able to become such formidable Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor lay in their dedication. Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing were definitely among the best in this respect.

These two didn't get the overwhelming feeling of gratitude. Instead, a violent rage rose up in their hearts.

And, that violent rage quickly spread throughout their body.

Dong Wu Shang fiercely glared at Tan Tan. It seemed as if his eyes were emitting two substantial saber-beams. He asked, "What do you mean?" He had said this sentence in an extremely low voice. It seemed as if he had suppressed his imposing aura. However, his fury had reached to an uncontrollable level when he had spoken the last word to question Tan Tan's meaning. Then, he loudly asked once again, "What do you mean?!"

These were the same words. But, he had said these words in a feeble voice the first time... as if of a mosquito. However, he had said this in a thunderous voice the next time!

The entire forest vibrated with a buzzing sound as these words sounded!

Gu Du Xing was much calmer than Dong Wu Shang. He only stared at Tan Tan, "Why did you say these words? These words... do you truly mean them?"

Tan Tan moved his eyes, and looked at both of them. He had apparently gotten angry. But, he eventually controlled his anger. He then insipidly and disdainfully said, "You're merely two sharp swords... That's all you are."

He had said these words in a very low voice. In fact, even Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang hadn't been able to hear each word clearly. However, the arrogance and disdain contained in these

words was very clear.

Both of them flew into a rage!

"Bastard!" Dong Wu Shang angrily shouted. "Did I go through fire and water for a thousand miles to come here just for your shallow gratitude? Who do you think you are? Do you think that I'll cherish your 'gratitude'?"

Gu Du Xing didn't shout angrily. He just looked at Tan Tan's face, and coldly said, "I don't know who you are... And, I don't care that you've said that you're obliged, and that you think that this is an important matter to you. But, I want to say a few words now."

Tan Tan had almost lost his temper when he had heard Dong Wu Shang's words. But then, he heard these words of Gu Du Xing, and insipidly asked, "What words?"

"Get out of this body!" Sword beams blazed in Gu Du Xing's eyes. He shouted like a thunderclap, "You've tarnished my brother's body! Get the fu*k out!"

Gu Du Xing rarely cussed. But, he had cussed in rage today.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had known for a very long time now that Tan Tan's body held many secrets.

In fact, Chu Yang had once told them that there might be a strange and formidable soul residing in Tan Tan's body. And, the soul was just about to awaken. Chu Yang had informed only Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing about this matter.

Chu Yang had said back then, [Don't blame Tan Tan if it happens someday.]

Tan Tan had revealed this appearance today. So, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang knew that this man before their eyes wasn't Tan Tan!

Or, it should be said that this ancient and formidable soul wasn't Tan Tan...

Tan Tan was startled by this. But then, his eyes became dark. And, strange and dangerous sparks began to flash in their pupils.

However, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang weren't scared by this. Both of them straightened their backs, and looked at Tan Tan in the eye with an ice-cold look. One of them had a sword in his hand, while the other had a saber.

Their stance clearly showed that they were ready to fight if Tan Tan wanted to.

"Tan Tan... are you Tan Tan?" a sweet and piteous voice sounded.

Then, a delicate figure walked over whilst staggering and stumbling from behind Tan Tan's body. She was bleeding from head to toe, and her complexion was pale and ashen. However, she stubbornly refused to let anyone support her. She approached Tan Tan from behind whilst staggering. She was very careful, very heart-broken, and very nervous. She asked with hope and mournful sadness, "You... are you Tan Tan? Are you my... Tan Tan?"

Tan Tan's body seemed to have shuddered.

However, he was still standing tall and straight. He remained motionless. He didn't even turn his head.

"Turn your head!" Xie Dan Feng pleaded, "You... turn back your head. I want to see... whether you're my Tan Tan or not!"

Tan Tan still stood upright. He was as motionless as a mountain.

However, Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing could clearly see that a fierce struggle was going on in Tan Tan's eyes.

"You... give me back my Tan Tan!" Xie Dan Feng suddenly seemed to have understood something when she saw that Tan Tan wouldn't turn his head no matter what. Suddenly, she fiercely erupted, and bellowed. Then, she pounced over... She firmly grabbed Tan Tan's shoulders, and screamed in grief, "Give me back my Tan Tan!"

Then, she maliciously bit him.

She desperately bit him!

It seemed as if she wanted to tear this body to shreds.

Xie Dan Feng was devastated and heart-broken... Her family was ruined, and her people had been killed in an attack. But, it hadn't made her collapse. She had been chased for thousands of miles. But, she still hadn't lost heart. It was only because she had Tan Tan by her side that entire time.

They had been caught up in a hopeless situation a while ago. But, Tan Tan had roared, and given her the sweetest and most romantic happiness of her life, "Woman, remember... You'll die after I die!"

"I won't let anyone hurt her as long as I'm alive!"

"You old bastard! You dared to hit my wife?!"

Xie Dan Feng had clearly known at that time that death was near at hand. But, she had still been elated in her heart. In fact, she had felt as if there was no other woman on earth who was happier than her.

[All enemies have died in the blink of an eye now. And, I'm still alive.]

[But... the person that I deeply love has suddenly changed... He has turned into a Devil King!]

[He is very strong, and he has saved everyone. But, he isn't the person that I'm deeply in love with.]

[No!]

[Where did my Tan Tan go? Can he still come back?]

Xie Dan Feng was in true despair.

She was firmly biting, beating, punching, and kicking him. It seemed as if she would waken her lover using this method! [He's very formidable right now. But, I don't care!]

Suddenly, the look in Tan Tan's eyes fiercely changed.

Then, the world seemed to have turned dark.

Gu Du Xing felt a chill in his heart... That glowing mark on Tan Tan's forehead had suddenly extinguished.

Immediately after...

"Ouch... Ssss~~ Fu*k!" a sound of gritting of teeth and sucking of air came. Tan Tan cried out while enduring the pain, "Little Girly... you're biting me to death... Sss sss... Oh my god! Let me go... Ow, hey... you're hurting me..."

Everyone became petrified within an instant!

....

Chapter 687: The Five Killer Tools!

Tan Tan's body shook before everyone's eyes. Then, his eyebrows began to jump up and down. He then clenched his teeth, and his whole face convulsed with pain. Tears of pain welled out from his eyes, "Sss... Xie Dan Feng... Ow~~ You Little Girly... Oh my god... Forgive me..."

Ancestor Xiu Zhi Qiu was the one with the highest cultivation. But, he could only look at Tan Tan with a dumbfounded expression. Then, he suddenly sat down on the ground, and wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. He then cried out in a groaning manner, "Oh my fu*king god~~~ I, I... I thank the heaven..."

The atmosphere which had originally been suffocating to the extreme had suddenly turned calm along with Tan Tan's screams.

Gu Du Xing and the other brothers curled their lips, and revealed a faint smile. Their taut muscles had finally loosened.

The powerful enemies had vanished in thin air.

The only people remaining now were the ones on their side. So, how could they not relax?

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang looked at each other, and saw the cold sweat on the each other's forehead. The horror of facing that terrifying coercion was still lingering in their hearts. However, both of them had still erupted at that time in unison. Moreover, their rage had been unstoppable!

[You're strong! But, you aren't my brother!]

[I asked for my small and weak brother. I didn't ask for you!]

[I would indeed be envious if it truly was my brother who was that strong. But, I would also have felt happy and safe in that case. Moreover, he would've certainly been the aim of my pursuit.]

[But, you are not my brother!]

This incident was certainly a wake-up call for Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang. They both knew that this awakening of Tan Tan had been a forced one. That... this was only the first awakening of that Devil King. So, the unleashed power hadn't been too big.

This was also why the real Tan Tan had been able to surface back.

But... would Tan Tan be able to do so if the power of that devil king would be too high the next time it happened?

The two of them were relaxed for now. However, a thought had faintly risen in their heart, [Who knows what will happen next?]

However, Tan Tan's awakening had also reminded Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang, [So this is what it means... to be a real powerhouse!]

[The real powerhouse... is precisely this!]

[My previous goal had been... too small, too small!]

[Such a powerhouse has already appeared. So, it is confirmed that they exist! Then... why can't... I be one?]

A deep imprint of 'becoming such a powerhouse' had gotten engraved in the hearts of Gu Du Xing and the other brothers at this moment.

They had thought about this before as well, but this concept had been too vague at that time. They had seen the two Supreme Experts — Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Yan. But, those two Supreme experts hadn't revealed their true powers. However, the most important thing was that they hadn't used their supreme power to kill people.

However, these brothers had now understood... how frightening the so-called powerhouse could be!

...

Xie Dan Feng's tears turned into laughter when she saw that Tan

Tan Tan had woken up. She was smiling, but she was also angry. She hugged Tan Tan, and started crying tears of joy, "You came back... you came back..." Her heavily injured body could no longer withstand such strong excitement. So, her body went limp, and she fainted.

Tan Tan smiled bitterly, and tightly held Xie Dan Feng's body.

However, no one had noticed that there had been a hint of spooky gloss in the depths of Tan Tan's eyes. This spooky gloss had quickly faded away in silence. Then... a faint conflicting pain had flashed therein. This was the ultimate pain... He was full of deep sorrow!

He was holding Xie Dan Feng as if he could only hold her just this once in his life. He had hugged her tightly. His eyes were full of unwillingness to let to... However, he had no alternative.

He wanted to burst into tears, but this was clearly not a sad moment. It would only make everyone more anxious if he did so.

He remembered all his memories clearly at the moment.

He clearly felt that the master of his heart had suddenly changed.

No!

That's not accurate... He himself had suddenly undergone a change!

That person... that soul... was powerful and cruel. But, Tan Tan was clear about one thing, [It is me! It's definitely not another person!]

[There aren't two souls!]

[That's my own soul. But, I... But, how did I turn into that?]

Tan Tan could still recall how that incredible power had suddenly exploded out of his body... And, a brutal and indifferent state of mind had taken over his body after that.

Tan Tan had gone all-out in order to snatch the control of this

body back, but he had also felt... [It's still me who is controlling this body!]

This was weird. He didn't know which feeling was true. He couldn't determine whether it was him in control or not. This contradiction had gone to the extreme.

Moreover, he clearly felt that these two feelings were quietly blending. This was even stranger. It was as if a person who had been leading a good life was suddenly hit hard on the head and had become an idiot as a result. He would no longer have any memories of his past. So, he would be like a newborn baby from the moment he would wake up. He would then start to learn everything from the beginning... He would begin to form a new character and a new personality. He would start a new life...

However, all of their memories that had been sealed off after being hit hard would suddenly start to resurface one day!

Then, all of these memories would be a part of him... The new memories and the old memories would be violently attacking each other. However, they would also be careful not to hurt each other; they would be accommodating. In other words, they would want to be the master, but they also wouldn't let the other one disappear...

Tan Tan was in deep sorrow!

He was holding Xie Dan Feng's unconscious body as if he was holding the world's most precious treasure... as if he could lose this treasure at any moment.

[Will I... will I still get to be with Xie Dan Feng... if ... If that ancient power and that personality completely awakens? Will I still have Chu Yang and the other brothers?]

Tan Tan's whole body shuddered in fear.

That's because he had come to a conclusion, [I'm afraid... no!]

...

The powerful enemies had been eliminated. So, everyone felt relaxed; their taut muscles suddenly loosened. Everyone felt exhausted to death. But, they couldn't help but sit down and start to tend to their wounds.

Tan Tan was also carefully dressing Xie Dan Feng's wounds.

Things seemed to have calmed down.

Suddenly...

"Ha ha ha... 'Awakened One', you're truly formidable," a gloomy voice laughed, and said. "You haven't disappointed me. Very good! This is superb."

A masked black-clothed man floated over with this voice.

He landed in front of everyone. The eyes behind his mask looked at Tan Tan as if they were looking at an incredible treasure.

Xie Zhi Qiu's eyebrows quivered a bit... There was a sense of powerlessness in his heart, [They've moved into action...]

They hadn't moved during that desperate battle a while back. So, he had been under the impression that they wouldn't participate.

However, they had finally made a move at this time...

"Who are you guys?" Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang took the lead, and jumped ahead. Simultaneously, their weapons unsheathed!

Both of them had felt the arrival of very strong people.

Nearly three-hundred black-clothed and masked men had appeared en masse. They had made a large-encirclement, and had trapped everyone inside.

"Relax," the masked black-clothed leader said with a smile, "You two won't die."

Gu Du Xing snorted, and asked, "Why?"

"We're from the Upper Three Heavens..." the black-clothed

masked leader casually said in an arrogant and condescending manner, "We're the people of the Zhuge Clan! My humble self is Zhuge Chang Feng!"

Upper Three Heavens!

Zhuge Clan!

These words pounded in the hearts of the Xie Clan's people like a sudden shock!

"May I ask... Mr. Zhuge, why has your clan come here?" Xie Zhi Qiu stood up with great difficulty, cupped his one fist in the other hand, and asked.

He was extremely resentful in his heart. He wished he could skin these masked black-clothed men alive. That's because he knew that the real culprit behind Xie Clan's destruction wasn't Ao Clan.

It was these people in front of him!

However, he didn't dare to reveal his resentment. After all, he and his people would be done for if he did so.

"Of course... you can ask anything," that black-clothed masked man — Zhuge Chang Feng — smiled slightly, and said, "Our original intention was to bring back a person with us. But, it suddenly seems that I'll be taking two more."

After that, he no longer paid attention to Xie Zhi Qiu. He gently warned, "Do not move... Whoever moves shall die!"

Then, he slowly stepped forward two steps. He looked at Tan Tan holding Xie Dan Feng, and insipidly said, "Awakened One, I assume you can't awaken twice within a day, right? You... will come with us!"

"Come with you?" Tan Tan was startled by this. He asked in bewilderment, "Why would I want to go with you?"

"...because these people here will die if you don't come with us!" Zhuge Chang Feng said, "...including this woman in your arms!"

"Huh?" Tan Tan's eyes suddenly sharpened. He then angrily said, "Why don't you say that one more time?!"

His eyes turned pitch black once again as he said this.

And, a faint black aura began to emerge from his body.

Zhuge Chang Feng was startled by this. He suddenly remembered Tan Tan's power when he had awakened earlier. So, he took a prompt decision, and shouted, "Begin!"

Tan Tan was furious in his heart, but he was also full of powerlessness. That's because he had found that he couldn't summon that power when he urgently needed it.

He couldn't stimulate that terrifying power no matter how much he tried.

He couldn't help but be aggrieved as a result.

It took long to explain all this. However, Zhuge Chang Feng had taken the lead and attacked as soon as he had ordered his men. He had already shot a black-feathered arrow from his hand along with a black flash of light.

The feathered arrow turned into a mass of black dust as soon as it was shot. It then formed a column of smoke, rushed like a lightning bolt, and pierced into Tan Tan's body.

Then, Zhuge Chang Feng repeatedly raised both of his hands as if he had cramps in them. The Capturing Soul Powder, the Truncating Soul Powder, The Soul Breaking Pan-Pipe, and The Spirit Lifting Net were all shot out like tidal waves by his hands.

The other three black-clothed masked men also began at the same time. And, they did the same thing as well. And, all these pitch-black vicious strikes entered into Tan Tan's body.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were taken aback by this. They hurriedly moved into action to block the attacks. However, they couldn't block any... Those things had turned into smoky powder

which seemed to be sentient. They were going to be intercepted in midair. But, they automatically curved around, and avoided the interception. Then, they crashed into Tan Tan's body!

A total of twenty such powders entered into Tan Tan's body at once, and none of it got wasted!

There were still twenty trails of these violently poisonous smokes in the air. One could see that even the air along these twenty trails had gotten corroded. Moreover, it had remained eroded for a long time!

Zhuge Chang Feng heaved a sigh of relief. He then said with a faint smile, "Awakened One, you can't fight us at your current strength. Just give up, and let yourself be captured."

Twenty black smokes had fully injected into Tan Tan's body. However, Tan Tan's body didn't seem to show the least bit of abnormality!

Suddenly, his body trembled fiercely, and his eyes jerked-open. He then glared at Zhuge Chang Feng with a spooky glint in his eyes.

Then, there occurred a loud bang!

A golden net had appeared around Tan Tan's body, and shrouded it.

Then, an endless shiny golden gas fiercely emerged from him. It then rushed to the top of his head, and on his head it...

...formed a magnificent crown!

It suddenly looked like the coronation of a king!

Chapter 688: I Would Rather Rely On Myself Than To Depend On The Heaven, The Earth Or The Ancestors!

Zhuge Chang Feng felt relaxed in his heart. [According to the confession of that important personage of the Divine Clan... The 'awakened being' won't have any strength to revolt as long as this golden net appears.]

[And, as for the crown... he had given no explanation. But, the man had also said that there will be some bizarre phenomena because of the incredible neutralization effect of the various toxins when the five killer devices would be used.]

[Moreover, these bizarre phenomena are uncontrollable and unpredictable. It is said that it may very likely blossom into a flower... or it may likely take the shape of a knife... or even... possibly turn into a pile of shit...]

[This indicates that it's not unusual for any situation to arise.]

[But, could it be that the appearance of this crown is still something totally unexpected?]

[But, it doesn't matter... It doesn't matter in the big picture.]

Sure enough, the black aura on Tan Tan's body seemed to have met its nemesis. So, it retracted into his body when this golden crown appeared along with the big net.

Moreover, Tan Tan's widely-opened eyes slowly closed. Then, his whole person sat on the ground... He seemed lifeless.

There was silence.

"Ha ha ha... it worked!" Zhuge Chang Feng smiled happily. He had already witnessed the earth-shattering might of the awakened being a while back. So, he had understood that if he brought this awakened being back...

...his contribution to the clan would inevitably skyrocket! In fact, he might even become an elder.

Gu Du Xing and the others hastily rushed over to Tan Tan's side. However, they screamed and drew back in haste as soon as they approached the golden net.

And, that's because the front piece of their clothing had been eroded after it had come in contact with the golden net!

This poison was extremely potent!

It didn't allow anyone to approach Tan Tan.

[Our biggest threat is gone. And, everyone else is still in check. So, we just need to wait for this bizarre phenomenon to disappear. Then, we can grab the awakened being and go back.]

Zhuge Chang Feng was a veteran. But, he still couldn't help being somewhat proud of himself. He leisurely said at this moment, "Don't waste your energy. This Old Man has something to say to you two young Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor. I wonder whether you would be willing to listen..."

Gu Du Xing's eyes flashed as he said, "Don't say it if it's something unpleasant to hear."

Zhuge Chang Feng chuckled, and said, "Your temper is as sharp as a sword." He paused, and then said, "The two of you are outstanding geniuses. You are elites among elites. My Zhuge Clan is always looking for heaven-warping talents like you. You two have god-gifted talent. So, I can recommend you two if you are willing to join Zhuge Clan. What do you say?"

There were many young Emperor Level Experts in the Upper Three Heavens. However, Zhuge Chang Feng was well aware — becoming an Emperor Expert in the Middle Three Heavens was entirely different from achieving the same in the Upper Three Heavens. After all, the amount of resources available in the Upper Three Heavens was too high.

That's because the cultivation conditions in the Middle Three Heavens were far inferior to that in the Upper Three Heavens.

The family heritage of these youths here were far worse than the family heritages of the Upper Three Heavens' young masters. They could easily pile up young Emperor Experts in the Upper Three Heavens with the help of elixirs and heavenly treasures.

However, these two young men before him were murderous, and their foundation was solid. They clearly hadn't attained a quick success.

Such people were the true geniuses!

Dong Wu Shang sneered, "Utter bullshit!"

Gu Du Xing shook his head, "It is indeed bullshit!"

Zhuge Chang Feng said, "Oh? Could it be you two intend to reject my offer?"

Dong Wu Shang laughed out loud, "You're such a smart person... You're truly worthy of being in the Zhuge Clan."

Zhuge Chang Feng's face was hard to look at. He said hesitatingly, "Do the two of you know what the consequences of rejecting our kind offer are?" He was a bit stunned. [Zhuge Clan's name is famous even in the Upper Three Heavens... One must consider carefully when someone from the Zhuge Clan extends the olive branch.]

[But, these two refuse to even consider it?]

"What consequences?"

"The family members of you two, your friends... even those behind you... He he he..." Zhuge Chang Feng's eyes looked sharp like a knife. He chuckled, and said, "I'll just need to give a command, and all of them will turn into corpses!"

"Are you threatening us?" Dong Wu Shang frowned, while Gu Du Xing's gaze turned into a stare.

"If the two must think like that... then it is a threat!" Zhuge Chang Feng crossed his hands behind his back, and insipidly said, "But, I wonder... can you two bear such a threat?"

Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing laughed in unison. Then, Dong Wu Shang proclaimed in a loud voice after he was done laughing, "You have misread us. We brothers have never succumbed to threats. We would die standing proud instead of spending a lifetime kneeling down!"

He then pointed out his great saber forward, and said with a heroic laugh, "Zhuge Clan of the Upper Three Heavens. Ha ha ha... is it very great? Why do I think it isn't?"

Gu Du Xing also laughed. Then, Rui Bu Tong, Ji Mo, and Luo Ke Di laughed all at once. Ji Mo chuckled, and said, "We also don't think so. Zhuge Clan? Why does it sound like 'Pig Brothers' Clan? Could it be that it's a great clan of perverts?"

Luo Ke Di heard Ji Mo's comment, and burst into laughter. He then said, "Pig Brothers Clan... Hahaha, you might as well change your clan's name, and call it Hoodlum Clan instead."

The killing intent was boiling in Zhuge Chang Feng's eyes. His whole body was exuding an intense chill in the surroundings.

His body shuddered in anger and his pupils contracted as he heavily said, "Well! Well! Well!"

He then suddenly waved his hand, and fiercely shouted, "All men, begin... Kill them all!"

[They can't be used by us. So, we might as well kill them as early as possible...]

[...so as to avoid future trouble.]

The numerous masked black-clothed men shouted, and moved into action all at once.

...

Meanwhile, Chu Yang was anxiously questioning in the shadows, "So you won't get into action no matter what?"

Sword Spirit replied, "I won't go into action since the matter concerns the potential destruction of the Sword Lord's spirit."

Chu Yang slowly nodded, and somewhat sorrowfully said, "Fine! Sword Spirit, it seems you can't see... I'm asking for your help because my cultivation isn't enough to protect my brothers from getting bullied. So, I have to helplessly watch my brothers die in front of me now."

Sword Spirit clearly sensed a decisive vibe from Chu Yang's pitiful voice. So, he couldn't help but ask in horror, "What are you going to do?"

"You have your responsibility. But, you seem to have forgotten that I don't!" Chu Yang coldly said in a low voice, "The so-called responsibility of the Nine Tribulations Sword is fart in my eyes. I'm very angry... I renounce it!"

"Don't be impulsive! They won't necessarily die," Sword Spirit anxiously said.

The field was already in commotion.

Gu Du Xing and the others had fallen into an extreme crisis right after the fight had begun. It was only the first clash, and they had already sustained injuries of varying degrees.

Chu Yang saw this, and his eyes opened wide in rage. He then flipped over his wrist, and there was already a dagger in his hand; this dagger was glittering like frost and snow. Then, he brought the dagger towards his own chest without the slightest hesitation!

He then shouted in a low voice, "You and your mission will accompany me to hell! And, you'll have to wait for another 10,000 years to re-appear!"

"Stop!" Sword Spirit panicked. He hastily tried to stop him. He had never imagined that Chu Yang would take such a decisive step.

Then, the dagger entered the muscles with a puff, and was stabbed deeply into the chest... It was only a distance of a fine hair away from puncturing the heart. Chu Yang's eyes turned cold as he faintly asked, "You... won't go into action?"

Blood suddenly spurted out.

His hand was tightly and steadily holding the dagger's hilt, "Anyway, I've already died once in the past. And, I feel that I've earned these last few years by cheating. So, it'll make no difference if I die once again.

"I can't accept as a 'nine-robbery sword master' that I still have to carry the restraint of you, Sword Spirit. I want to do something, but I can't. I can't stand this kind of grievance!" Chu Yang bitterly said, "I won't ask you to go into action again... So, let's just do this! Let us both go to fu*king hell now!"

He then moved his hand slightly, and was just about to piece his own heart!

Sword Spirit truly panicked this time. He quickly used his own spiritual power to lock the dagger where it was, and said repeatedly, "Who said I can't do it? Why wouldn't I do it? I would do it..."

Sword Spirit felt wronged when he said these words.

In fact, he felt so wronged that he almost burst into tears...

[When have I restrained you? Don't you always do whatever you want? You keep adding one rule after another. When have I ever restrained you?]

[Why would I bother to take all this trouble and refuse to help? Can't you see that I'm clearly looking out for you? You can't even recognize others' good intentions. How can the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master be such a brain-dead guy?]

[Don't you know that you will die someday if I took charge of you today?]

[Oh, no, no, you don't care. You wouldn't have taken such a self-destructive step at this time if you cared.]

[I can't believe that you inserted a dagger into your chest and forced me with such an extreme and violent method.]

Let's presume that Sword Spirit had a body and he had looked at the wound on Chu Yang's chest. Then, it could be estimated that Sword Spirit would be so scared that his whole body would be covered in cold sweat. [You went too far! You tried to drag me down with you. You tried to silence me for another 10,000 years... My 100,000 years of life experience would be all for naught if I were to run into a Nine Tribulations Sword Master like you again.]

Sword Spirit was sullen. He was feeling wronged. Still, he began to make the preparations.

He was also extremely anxious in his heart, [Chu Yang's spirit would get damaged if I took over his body. Then, the possibility of Chu Yang being able to survive through the emergence of the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword... will be infinitely close to zero!]

Sword Spirit sighed. He was so depressed that he almost vomited blood. [How the hell did things turn out... like this?]

Sword Spirit was sullen, but Chu Yang was more sullen!

[Fu*k! Why is my strength not enough? Would I need you if my strength had already broken through to the Monarch Level? You would just be excess baggage in that case...]

[You're looking out for me? My brothers are going to die... Can't you see? You think I need you to look out for 'me' in such a situation...?]

[The key to everything... is strength! Only strength!]

[Strength!]

This clear realization had dug deeply in Chu Yang's heart like a

knife's tip, [Sword Spirit is very powerful, but he isn't me! Nine Tribulations Sword is very powerful, but it isn't my power!]

[I would rather rely on myself than depend on the heaven, the earth, or the ancestors.]

[I can't depend on anyone in the future... I can't depend on Sword Spirit! I can't depend on the Nine Tribulations Sword!]

[I can only depend on myself!]

[I must depend on myself!]

...

Gu Du Xing and the others were in imminent danger. The might of these people from the Zhuge Clan was far greater than that of the Ao Clan.

This disparity in strength was so huge that no one had the slightest strength to fight back.

It could be said that these people had fought back with all their power in the face of the previous crisis. However, there was no such possibility while facing this much stronger enemy.

Gu Du Xing let out a muffled groan. His body had received two palm blows. Dong Wu Shang had desperately gone all-out to rush forward to protect him, but he had suffered two sword slashes in the process. The two of them looked at each other, and a feeling of desperation arose in their hearts.

Both of them had only one thought, [It is good that Chu Yang is hiding in the shadows in this crisis of life and death... You must restrain yourself, and stay hidden! You can't come out!]

[We brothers and the other people here can continue our dreams through you if you don't come out. Otherwise, we would all be wiped out if you came out. Then, everything will be over!]

"Don't come out!" the two of them faced upwards and bellowed as they spouted blood from their mouths!

Chapter 689: Crazy Sword Spirit!

Zhuge Chang Feng firmly looked at Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang in front of him. He felt very pleased in his heart.

He had previously wanted to rope-in these two the most. However, he wanted to kill these two the most now. After all, he was well-aware what men like these could achieve once they grew up.

[They can very likely turn the Zhuge Clan upside down in case they broke through to the Saint Level.]

Such pure Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor hadn't appeared in the Nine Heavens for thousands of years. So, who could imagine what kind of destruction a Sword Saint and Saber Saint like them could bring?

Only one thing was certain...

Pure Saber and Sword experts were far higher in rank than ordinary martial artists.

An ordinary fourth-grade Martial Saint could deal with over-a-hundred first-grade Martial Saints. But, a first-grade Sword Saint could kill that fourth-grade Martial Saint with ease. And, Zhuge Chang Feng was no exception.

This difference between pure and impure would become higher and more distinct with the increase in the cultivation levels of the martial artists.

[These two in front of me clearly have such capacity. Moreover, they would become Saint Level Experts at the very least if they were to be left alone to become mature.]

[And, how fearful would that be?!]

[It is lucky that they are going to die.]

[It is lucky that they are going to die soon!]

Zhuge Chang Feng stood with his hands crossed behind his back. Meanwhile, he was also monitoring the spot where the golden light-rays had shrouded the awakened being; he was waiting for the light to die out, and was ready to capture him at the right time. But, he was also observing Gu Du Xing and the others.

Then, he discovered that the several youngsters beside the Sword Emperor Gu Du Xing and the Saber Emperor Dong Wu Shang were also heaven-warping geniuses... In fact, all of them were only one step away from breaking through to the Emperor Level!

[Have all the geniuses of the Middle Three Heavens gathered here today?] Zhuge Chang Feng whispered in his heart. [Such a group of young geniuses can't be found even in the nine ruling clans of the Upper Three Heavens, right?]

What he had guessed wasn't the least bit incorrect. The most splendid geniuses of the Middle Three Heavens had indeed centralized here.

They were — Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Xie Dan Qiong, Ao Xie Yun, Rui Bu Tong, Ji Mo, and Luo Ke Di!

Zhuge Chang Feng shot a crazed look from his eyes as he saw that victory was within his grasp.

He even tightly clenched his fist.

In fact, he would've set into action personally if he hadn't been bearing the responsibility of monitoring the awakened being.

However, he had a doubt in his heart at the same time, [Why has the clan sent me for such an important matter? After all, they generally don't give me opportunities to attain such great merits...]

[The clan would ideally send those specially nurtured geniuses. Or... they would dispatch an elder.]

[Anyway, this is my chance to make easy gains!]

[They certainly wouldn't have thought that this matter would go

so smoothly, right?]

Zhuge Chang Feng smiled.

[I'll attain great merit this time no matter what.]

....

A bleak and desolate aura suddenly swept across the surroundings at this time!

This bleak aura seemed to have come from ancient times. It started to blow everywhere in the forest. It felt as if it had inspired an endless bleakness and anger deep inside the veins of everyone's hearts.

It had also filled their hearts with suffocating vengefulness... This feeling was very strange!

The people of the two sides couldn't help but stop their movements even though they were engaged in battle. Then, all of them turned their heads to look.

They only heard a voice saying with suppressed anger, "You truly deserve to be one of the clans of the Upper Three Heavens. After all, you have great power and prestige. You've come to the Middle Three Heavens, and you're making endless demands. You can't be anymore arrogant!"

There was a sarcastic tone in these words. It made the faces of the Zhuge Clan's people heat up, [One of the nine ruling clans of the Upper Three Heavens has come to the Middle Three Heavens, and is showing off its might... This isn't a glorious thing.]

Zhuge Chang Feng felt cold in his heart... He turned his head, and looked.

He saw that a masked black-clothed man was floating out of the dark woods from the left side. This man was floating thirty feet above the ground. He seemed to be weightless like a leaf. And, he was slowly coming this way.

His sinister and dense aura was becoming heavier as he approached them.

"Who are you, Sire?" Zhuge Chang Feng had instinctively realized that something was wrong. This black-clothed man was clearly very formidable. In fact, he was so formidable that he had given palpitations to Zhuge Chang Feng.

"Who am I?" Sword Spirit snorted, and indifferently said, "I'm your goddamn ancestor!"

Sword Spirit blasted with abusive words that he would rarely use.

He showed no trace of politeness since he was feeling very suffocated at the moment. He had received sullenness from Chu Yang just a while ago. And, he had poured all of it down on Zhuge Chang Feng in torrents.

[Why would I have gotten involved in this if not for you all shit-heads?]

[Motherfu*ker, you've led me to such a miserable situation this time... I will disappear for ten-thousand years if Chu Yang doesn't make it through that barrier. Ten fu*king thousand years, ah!]

[How would you puny human beings know what it's like to be alone for ten-thousand years... Even gods would lose their mind in such a situation!]

However, Sword Spirit's words couldn't be considered entirely wrong. Swords Spirit was indeed an ancestor of the Zhuge Clan to some extent. He was an old ancestor.

[Such a mysterious expert has appeared. And, he hasn't shown the least bit of elegance since the moment he has come. All he is doing is cussing?]

Zhuce Chang Feng felt more confused than angry, "Are you a madman? Do you know who you're facing?"

"I'm an idiot..." Sword Spirit murmured, "I'm having idle talk with a group of dead people!"

Zhuge Chang Feng became furious!

[I don't know where this powerhouse has come from. But, he is very arrogant.] He suddenly had a realization in his heart, and asked, "Are you from the Lan Clan?!"

Sword Spirit didn't say a word... Instead, a clanging sound was heard, and several swords appeared in his hands. He then pounced over like a demon god.

Two 'clangs' were heard... Zhuge Chang Feng could block only two swords. Then, he rolled over... The sword in his hand had turned into four fragments in a flash. And, a bloody hole had appeared in his chest. Flesh and blood dripped out of it. He spat out blood with three 'blurgh' sounds as he rolled.

He cried out in fear, "Saint Level Expert...?! And, that too a high graded one?!"

However, Sword Spirit obviously didn't have free time to pay attention to his question? He was controlling Chu Yang's body. He now rushed into the crowd like a gale.

[This Lord Sword Spirit is very angry!]

[I'm aggrieved to death!]

[You people have infuriated me!]

[Tut tut... You people have compelled the Lord Sword Master to become angry. So, he has made me take control of his body. The Sword Master hasn't hesitated to lose his spirit in the process. So, the probability of him surviving through the critical moment is very less. In fact, it's too less!]

[I have come out this time. So, I might not be able to come out to see anyone for ten-thousand years! So, I'm mad! I'm truly mad!!]

Sword Spirit had gone insane.

He set into action with his maximum strength.

A sword-light flew across like a long dragon. And, thirty Emperor Level Experts were cut from their waists like rice straws... Thirty chunks of upper bodies flew up into the sky at the same time! And, the trees all around fell down!

[What harm is there is slaughtering the entire world!]

This move was displayed perfectly by the hands of the Sword Spirit!

Sword Spirit wildly laughed. He then dashed in the air whilst taking long strides and bringing along absolute gloom. He had been walking in the air as if it were a leveled ground... Then, the sword light changed into ten-thousand sword-beams...

[One ray of cold light pierces ten-thousand fathoms!]

More-than-forty experts stopped at the same time in the face of this dashing momentum. Blood holes had opened in their foreheads one after another. They then weakly collapsed.

Sword Spirit landed on the ground. Then, he leapt up. The sword-light suddenly unleashed a giant curtain of light... as if it was rising from the ground to the sky!

[A sharp will buried deep will not change!]

Around thirty experts screamed. And, their heads flew out in the air at the same time! Blood sprinkled all over like a waterfall! Around thirty blood fountains had suddenly appeared in this forest. Moreover, they seemed to be arranged in a neat and uniform way.

Sword Spirit coldly snorted. Then, the sword-light suddenly vibrated in midair. It vibrated for hundreds and thousands of times in a row!

Winds and clouds chaotically appeared in the sky soon after that. They seemed to have taken the form of a gigantic tornado. The

winds and clouds that had filled the whole sky were gathering densely here.

The sword-light suddenly flashed the next moment. And, a gigantic crown appeared in the sky!

[Gather wind and cloud to rule over all!]

The crown illuminated like the sun. And, countless sword-lights scattered out from it. They then changed into a white light from top to down, and pierced through the chest of a masked black-clothed man.

Sword Spirit flew away like a divine dragon before the blood could splash out. He ferociously whirled around from east to west. And, pitiful screams were heard wherever the sword-light went!

Then, he went from south to north, and made a round trip.

[Wind and cloud move unhindered from east to west!]

All the black-clothed people collapsed in despair at the same time. Only two people remained standing now...

They were Zhuge Chang Feng and his Second Brother.

Sword Spirit had used only five of the sword-moves of the Nine Tribulations Sword. And, he had slaughtered most of those more-than-three-hundred experts from the Zhuge Clan as easily as breaking a dried twig from a tree!

This was the first time that Sword Spirit had gone so crazy in the ninety-thousand years since the first appearance of the Nine Tribulations Sword!

The might that he had displayed just now was also unprecedented. Or so to say, he had never before displayed such a might when the Sword Master was at such a low cultivation level.

A black-clothed silhouette had suddenly rushed over in an agile and reckless manner. He had checked out everyone once. Then, his sword had talked instead of his voice. Moreover, the sword had

come and beheaded everyone!

Such kind of ruthlessness had stupefied everyone!

Gu Du Xing and the others had almost been caught up in the crisis. But, a savior had suddenly appeared. They had been gasping for breath. But, they now saw that the enemies had been exterminated all at once...

Everyone had been panting heavily at first... But, this incident had made them choke on their breaths now...

[Oh my dear God! Isn't this insane?]

Everyone looked at each other in blank dismay. All of them felt as if they were dreaming... Nobody would believe it if today's story were told to them... even if everyone here were to continuously explain to them that it hadn't been a dream.

Gu Du Xing and the others had been beset by a deadly crisis just a while ago.

Thereupon, the Ao Clan had inflicted serious injuries upon them.

Then, the Devil King had awakened... just when the Ao Clan was going to launch the final attack... just when Gu Du Xing and the others had been in the utmost crisis.

Then, each and every person of the Ao Clan had been exterminated by that supreme and formidable power.

After that, the Zhuge Clan had appeared. And, everyone had again found themselves in a life and death crisis.

But then, a peerless expert who wasn't inferior to the Devil King had appeared. And, he had killed the Zhuge Clan's people.

Many crises had appeared one after another in such a short time. And, the strength of the enemy had been several hundred times more than these people. But, these people had still ended-up safe and sound.

This... this was simply like they were the protagonists of a fable.

A black shadow flashed, and Sword Spirit returned after he had slaughtered everyone. He then appeared in front of Zhuge Chang Feng, and coldly looked at him, "You had just said... that I don't know who I'm facing?"

This was exactly what Zhuge Chang Feng had said. He had been very proud when he had said this sentence... He had been proud of his superior status. However, Sword Spirit had set into action after he had said this sentence. Then, more-than-three-hundred of his men had died in the blink of an eye.

No one had gotten the time to escape.

Sword Spirit had even looked at the dead bodies whilst repeating this sentence. So, it could be said that this sentence had already become a big joke... a big ironical joke!

[You're very great? How great are you? I'll kill you all, and see how great you still are!]

...

Chapter 690: Wounded Soul!

Zhuge Chang Feng's body shook. His face had turned ashen.

He had met only two swords of his opponent. He continuously spat out blood. His body had turned so weak that he couldn't take it anymore. He looked at the corpses all around, and mourned in his heart as if he would die.

He hadn't thought that this mission would turn out to be so unfortunate.

He had captured the awakened being with great difficulty. But, he hadn't thought that the awakened being would be so powerful after awakening.

Then, the awakened being had again returned to his original state. But then, another anomaly had appeared.

And, more than three-hundred experts on his side had been beheaded neatly by only four or five sword moves.

He knew as he looked at the situation that he wouldn't be able to escape death.

"You... who are you?" Zhuge Chang Feng didn't have any thoughts to resist. The enemy whom he had ridiculed was clearly a high grade Saint Level Expert. And, Zhuge Chang Feng was only a second grade Monarch Level Expert. So, how would he fight the enemy?

He couldn't run away even if he wanted to.

He only regretted now, [Why did I have to rush for this mission when it was being issued. Why did I have to fight over it so firmly? Wouldn't someone else have had to face this bad luck if I had stepped back a little?]

He was hateful at the same time... He was hateful towards Diwu Qing Rou who had strongly recommended him. [That bastard from

the slave clan! Would I have come to this rotting situation if he hadn't recommended me so vigorously?]

[Fancy that I had been so thankful and grateful to him. I had even given him many gifts before I had left... So, it was all just a big trap!]

Zhuge Chang Feng remembered the words that Diwu Qing Rou had spoken at the time when he had recommended him, and the roots of his teeth itched.

Diwu Qing Rou had said at that time, [Great Elder, this man at your service thinks that this matter must be handled cautiously... The person to be sent can't be too strong. But, their strength mustn't be low as well... It must be in the middle. So, this man at your service thinks that Zhuge Chang Feng would be a perfect fit!]

Zhuge Chang Feng had heard what Diwu Qing Rou had said.

He had been fascinated in his heart at that time. He had thought that what Diwu Qing Rou was saying was very logical. So, he had also nodded strongly in approval.

Then, the Great Elder had asked, [Why do you say that?]

Diwu Qing Rou had replied, [This servant has thoroughly considered it. It is said that the awakened being has never appeared in tens of thousands of years. Moreover, there have been no rumors of any awakened being.]

[So, this matter is indeed false, and needs investigation.]

[However, let's say that this information is true... Then, our clan won't suffer any major loss if the awakened being turns out to be formidable and we lose. On the other hand, Zhuge Chang Feng would be enough to deal with him if his strength is ordinary. After all, it is in the Middle Three Heavens.]

[So, Diwu Qing Rou had had a reasonable and sensible consideration of the big picture. Therefore, the honorable Great Elder had finally yielded in front of him, and I had finally gotten

this 'cushy job'...]

Zhuge Chang Feng couldn't help but want to cry as he thought of this.

He remembered that Diwu Qing Rou had especially come to him and explained after the clan conference had ended, [I had to be expedient at that time. Otherwise, Brother Chang Feng... you most likely might not have been able to get this opportunity.]

[He had said this to me, and we both had treated each other with absolute sincerity. I had called him brother, and had asked if I could invite him to drink with me. Then, I had even sent that bastard twenty pieces of purple crystals...]

[I had been blind... I had gotten deceived and confused...]

[Boohoo...]

[It's a pity that I can't go back. Otherwise, the first thing that I would do after going back is to peel off Diwu Qing Ruo's skin and pluck out his sinews. Then, I would let him dry in the sun on the entrance of the clan...]

This was perhaps Zhuge Chang Feng's last wish.

It was because Sword Spirit didn't answer his question. He instead lifted his sword!

Swoosh!

Blood gushed out from the cavity of his neck with a gurgling sound...

Two sword-blows had fallen on the last two Monarch Level Experts of the Zhuge Clan. And, they both had immediately turned into two corpses.

Sword Spirit bellowed since he was aggrieved. He then returned to the Nine Tribulations Space whilst seething with anger. Simultaneously, he racked his brain, and pondered. [How can I help Chu Yang restore the lost spiritual power in such a short time

before recovering the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword?]

[But, the spiritual power is equal to the life force. What good method can be there be to recover it?] The more Sword Spirit thought, the stronger his headache became. The more he thought, the more sullen he became. He was at a loss. He couldn't help but endlessly jabber one cuss word in the space – 'motherfu*ker'.

Meanwhile, Chu Yang's body swayed, and he sat down on the ground.

He only felt chaos in his brain. He felt an indescribable pain... He felt as if that pain had reached into the depths of his soul. He couldn't help but shake his head. However, he felt an increasing headache.

Everything before his eyes seemed blurry. So, he had to close his eyes.

A long while passed... Chu Yang had gradually recovered to some extent. So, he stood up whilst staggering. Then, he turned around, and weakly asked, "You all... are you alright?"

Gu Du Xing opened his eyes wide, and stared at him. He uttered in disbelief, "Big... Big Brother?!" Then, he took a step forward whilst stumbling and swaying as if he was drunk. He then sat down on the ground. He had happened to sit on a broken piece of a saber. But, he didn't feel any pain. He only kept on looking at Chu Yang with his mouth wide open. He then foolishly chuckled...

Second Master Gu was so shocked that he had become muddle-headed...

Gu Du Xing had felt this black-clothed man to be familiar since the moment this man had arrived in the battlefield. He had known that Chu Yang was hiding nearby. But, he hadn't dared to think that this man could be Chu Yang. It was because the difference between the cultivation of this man and Chu Yang was... too big!

This black-clothed man was at least a Saint Level Expert!

Dong Wu Shang and Ji Mo also became damn startled. They felt as if their eyes would pop out of their heads and fall on the ground.

[This... how is this possible? This person is... Big Brother?]

They were thunderstruck! They both started blankly.

This was even more shocking than the fact that Tan Tan had changed into a formidable being. The fact that a black-clothed man had suddenly appeared and killed everyone was hundred times more shocking than that!

Luo Ke Di opened his mouth. He was about to speak... or so to say cry out in alarm. However, he opened his mouth so wide that his jaw dislocated with a cracking sound. He loudly screamed... He issued a hissing sound from his mouth, and tears flowed out his eyes in pain.

However, he couldn't help but feel shocked in his heart even in this painful condition. He said with his dislocated jaw, "Is! Is ee inpossial... Aar... ew... ig... rother? Is ee fukin..."

Chu Yang weakly and dispiritedly looked at these guys. He then weakly said in anger, "Just come over and support me already... I can't move anymore..."

He fell down while saying this.

It seemed that Chu Yang would become enormously worn and torn whenever Sword Spirit would take charge of his body. He would become completely exhausted every time. But, they needed to deal with Monarch Level Experts this time. So, Sword Spirit had set into action and gone all out in violent anger and sullenness. However, Chu Yang's body couldn't completely bear this kind of outbreak.

The damage that his spirit had received couldn't be compared to any wound on his meridians.

Chu Yang had become completely exhausted after Sword Spirit had left his body. In fact, he had collapsed. He didn't even have the strength to move a finger at this moment. However, the pain that he was feeling due to the damage in his spirit was even more unendurable.

Gu Du Xing came to his senses, and hurriedly came over to support Chu Yang. Then, he looked for a flat area, and lay Chu Yang there.

The brothers then gathered around Chu Yang. They felt as if they were dreaming.

Luo Ke Di finally remembered, and adjusted his dislocated jaw. However, he was still lisping a bit, "Big blother... big blother... you you... My heavin... My earth... dammit... It's truly you..."

Chu Yang wasn't in a good mood. He rolled his eyes, and said, "Is it you if not me?!"

Luo Ke Di was startled by this.

"Shut up!" Dong Wu Shang turned around, and thundered at Luo Ke Di. Then, he again turned around, and looked at Chu Yang. He revealed a look of worry in his eyes, "Big Brother, you... are you alright?"

Ao Xie Yun and Xie Dan Qiong were standing on one side. Their complexions became serious as soon as Dong Wu Shang said these words.

[Alright?]

[Can Chu Yang be called 'alright' judging by his appearance? Almost ninety-percent of his life energy has been exhausted!]

[Everyone is well aware of Chu Yang's cultivation. He has suddenly erupted with such formidable power. So, it is certain that he has used some secret method. And, this kind of secret method generally can't be used without harming oneself. A person's spiritual power would get harmed if their vitality was insufficient

to power a secret method. It's because only these two power sources could incite such a secret method.]

[Moreover, it is generally true that — the greater the might of the secret method, the greater the loss!]

[Chu Yang has displayed such tremendous strength. So, it can be well-imagined what kind of injuries he must've received and how huge a price he must have paid.]

The corners of Gu Du Xing's, Dong Wu Shang's, and the others' eyes became moist as they thought this. Xie Dan Qiong and Ao Xie Yun also had tears in their eyes at this moment.

Everybody had known that Chu Yang had been hiding in the forest. However, Chu Yang couldn't come out. And, they didn't want him to come out. After all, he would've been able to escape without any damage if only he had remained calm.

Moreover, none of the brothers would've blamed him. After all, he would've died if he had come out at that time.

So, how could they blame him?

In fact, they had been hoping and praying to the heaven and the earth that Chu Yang didn't get impulsive.

However, Chu Yang had been impulsive in the end...

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di finally came to their senses. They looked at the weak Chu Yang, and their noses became sour. They suddenly turned around, and squatted down on the ground at the same time by chance.

A long while passed. Then, Ji Mo sadly cried out, "Boohoo... I... I'm not dead... boohoo..."

Everyone's nose became sour. They all almost burst into tears.

Ji Mo had rushed over for thousands of miles. He had come all alone. He had come to live and die alongside his brother while facing the powerful enemy. So, how could he fear death...? How

could he cry tears of joy because he hadn't died?

Then, why were these tears flowing? For whom was he crying...? Everyone obviously knew this... He was just unable to suppress the emotions that were stirring up in his heart. So, he had used this lame 'I'm not dead' reason to camouflage the fact that he was truly sad for his Big Brother. He was trying to hide his real emotions...

Chu Yang groaned. He then weakly said, "Everyone, step aside. I want to take a look at Tan Tan..."

The yellow anomaly around Tan Tan still hadn't disappeared. It was still shining...

Xie Dan Feng had been clinging to him to guard him with her weak body. She wasn't even blinking her eyes...

Chu Yang looked at Tan Tan's complexion. He gradually felt a little bit relieved, and slightly closed his eyes. He didn't have enough time to see his own injuries at this moment.

He observed his state, and couldn't help but sigh in his heart.

[My strength will probably recover soon. The pain of spirit will also subside soon. But... the damaged part of my soul is gone.]

[Almost one-fourth of that boundless nebula-like thing in the sea of my consciousness has vanished!]

[I would soon be battle-ready without any issue. But, it is impossible to obtain the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword now.]

[As Sword Spirit had said... it was indeed hard to avoid the loss of soul!]

[But... how will I be able to control the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword when it appears?]

...

Chapter 691: All I Want Is To Be Peaceful

Chu Yang smiled bitterly in his heart. But, he didn't show anything on his face.

He had taken a big risk this time. It could be said that his death could come at any time now. He didn't have any confidence to obtain the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword now.

He had always had a feeling that all matters of his life followed a certain abstruse trajectory. It seemed as if they would be carried-on in a regular and thorough way. His heaven-defying nature to change his fate was no exception. And, he had apparently been moving in this already set line.

Everything had been rational and matter of course.

[The first thing that I had done after I had taken the rebirth was that I had punished Shi Qian Shan. Then, that had triggered a series of events. Therefore, I had obtained Wu Yun Liang's appreciation. And, that's how I had entered the Iron Cloud. And, that's how I had met Gu Du Xing.]

[I had gotten to know Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo, and Rui Bu Tong because I had met Gu Du Xing.]

[I could make the present accomplishments in the Middle Three Heavens because I had run into these brothers. And, I got to know Ao Xie Yun and Xie Dan Qiong because of them. Then, I had caused this chaos in the Middle Three Heavens with everyone's contribution.]

[The fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword is in the Lake of Despair!]

[And, the place that Mo Tian Ji has chosen to resolve the chaos is coincidentally the Lake of Despair as well!]

[Everything is so strange. But, it's also so reasonable that no one can find any loopholes in it.]

[The entire world is experiencing traces of such control because of my rebirth.]

[These individual steps have gradually pushed me on the road to the fate of the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword! I would've inevitably obtained all the fragments of the Nine Tribulations Sword with the help of this ingenious arrangement of fate if no accident had happened... I would've accomplished the unification of the Nine Heavens! I would've treaded on the path of all the previous masters of Nine Tribulations Sword.]

[But, what has happened today has changed everything.]

[This is obvious from the fact that my spirit has been severely damaged. I have willfully harmed it this time. And, that has made me independent. It has made me leave the confines of that "control"!]

[It has turned me into an independent self... It has made me go on an independent path!]

[But, there's no doubt that one must pay the price... with one's life to become independent from fate's manipulation!]

"Life... but why?" Chu Yang smiled in his heart in a cruel and untamed manner, "Could it be that I should've seen them die before my eyes? Is it possible that all the previous masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword had been cruel and cold-blooded? So... what would happen if I didn't act like these Masters of Nine Tribulations Sword?"

Sword Spirit took a deep breath, and said in Chu Yang's mind, "Lord Sword Master, you shouldn't have made me go into action. I had been compelled by you. And, I had forgotten a very important thing!"

"What important thing?" Chu Yang calmly asked. However, a cold intention was seeping out from his voice.

"Your brothers can't die! These people wouldn't have died even if

I hadn't set into action and you had remained motionless." Sword Spirit sighed. He deeply regretted. "It's because they are chosen by the Sword Master... They are destined to accompany you to the top of the Nine Heavens. So, how could they die? Therefore, another savior would've appeared!"

Chu Yang insipidly said, "I know! I had thought about this matter before you had attacked."

"You knew?" Sword Spirit looked at him whilst being dumbfounded. There was a look of disbelief on his face, "You had thought about this matter?"

He then suddenly became furious, "Then, why did you make me undertake the task? Do you not know that you will die because of this?!"

"Death isn't the worst thing." Chu Yang insipidly said, "I was determined not to take action since I had thought about that. But, I still couldn't endure it. They had been dying before my eyes... They had been bleeding in front of me. And, I was supposed to just stand indifferently, and pin all my hopes on an uncertain thing? I'm not that cold-blooded... After all, they are my brothers.

"Moreover, this incident was very strange. It had clearly developed in accordance with a plan of some unseen power. This was so obvious that I could clearly feel it." Chu Yang coldly said, "My brothers might not have blamed me if I hadn't set into action in this danger. But, they would've certainly felt awkward in the future since I hadn't set into action despite being there... This is the first thing.

"The second thing is that I also would've felt very awkward in my heart whenever I would've faced them. I would've felt guilty and remorseful. I would've thought that I was selfish... I wouldn't have been able to face them like I used to... because of my inner demon.

"And, they would've also felt the same way..."

"Therefore, the brotherhood among us brothers would've been ruined!" Chu Yang indifferently said, "We still would've worked hard for the same goal when we would've been together in the future. But, one thing would've been certain... The brotherly love among us would've never been the same as before. It would've become the relation of boss and subordinates with time.

"This would've clearly erased and destroyed our friendship!

"I didn't understand why the fate would want it destroyed. But, I couldn't tolerate it. Therefore, I had decided that I would rather die. So, I had to make you attack." Chu Yang lightly smiled, "I don't know what consequences it would have. But, I clearly feel that I have broken the law of heaven with this action now... I've gone off track.

"I know that my punishment would be severe for doing this.

"But, I don't regret it. That's because it was worth it!" Chu Yang seriously said to Sword Spirit in his mind, "I don't want to face them with guilt in the future. It's because that would be a worse pain than death for us all!

"You can't dare to look straight in someone's eyes when you feel guilty in front of them. The love and affection of several decades would be destroyed in a moment if such a feeling developed among brothers. I don't want it destroyed... All I want is peace and wholeness."

Sword Spirit was flabbergasted at first. But then, he pondered for a while. He then lowered his head, and sighed. After that, he said, "I've never seen an empathetic Master of Nine Tribulations Sword like you. You are... willing to put your life in danger just for your feelings...!"

Chu Yang became boundlessly pleasant upon hearing this sentence. He then sensitively asked, "Are you telling me that the previous Masters of Nine Tribulation Sword weren't as empathetic?"

Sword Spirit suddenly raised his head. It seemed that this question had taken him by surprise. Then, he again lowered his head, and didn't say a word. After that, his body slowly vanished from Chu Yang's mind, and went into the Nine Tribulations Space. However, he left behind a few words, "Bring your soul into the Soul Quenching Spring as soon as your treatment is over. We'll make up for your lost soul as much as... possible."

Chu Yang didn't give him a reply... He instead pondered for a long time. Then, he slowly said after a long silence, "Could it be that... only the one who completely lacks any feeling of justice... is capable of being a Master of Nine Tribulations Sword?"

Chu Yang's voice echoed in the space of his consciousness. But, Sword Spirit never answered.

The Nine Tribulations Space remained quiet...

Chu Yang remained silent for a long time... His soul body stood still in the Nine Tribulations Space. Suddenly, he issued a grim laughter. It was full of mockery, contempt, and cynicism... He then said to himself, "It's very... absurd!"

.....

Gu Du Xing and the others had been in the moment of crisis, and Chu Yang had been forcing Sword Spirit in the name of committing suicide and wasting all his hard work. However, what Chu Yang and all the other people didn't know was that there had been a figure in the sky at that time. This figure had silently entered into the forest with lightning speed!

This figure was very lithe, fearless, and fast. It seemed as if this person believed that they were among the best in the world of the Nine Heavens.

This figure was Young Master Yu! He had come here after a long and wearisome journey.

Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing had been seriously injured when

Young Master Yu had stopped and looked at the scene... They had been constantly spurting out blood... They had been on the verge of dying.

Young Master Yu had been about to set into action at that time. He had been just about to let out a loud and long cry. However, Sword Spirit had already taken possession of Chu Yang's body by then. Then, his great and formidable power had pressed down everyone present there in a flash!

Consequently, Young Master Yu had suddenly stopped even though he had rushed over at top speeds. He had then quietly hidden on a tree, and had seen the scene of battlefield change. So, Young Master Yu hadn't set into action because there had been no need of it anymore.

However, Young Master Yu would've set into action if Chu Yang hadn't. Therefore, Gu Du Xing and the others couldn't have die... In fact, it was just as Chu Yang and Sword Spirit had expected!

Chu Yang would've remained motionless if Young Master Yu had set into action. But then, it would've been just as Chu Yang had expected... Things would've become awkward between his brothers.

Therefore, Chu Yang had decided to give himself up and make Sword Spirit attack.

Sword Spirit setting into action was equivalent to destroying the already set plans of the heavens.

However, there was nothing wrong in Chu Yang's feelings. [I've jumped out... at this moment! I've jumped out from the vicious cycle of the Masters of Nine Tribulations Sword!]

However, it was hard to say if this was a good thing or a bad thing for Chu Yang.

His soul had received an injury. So, how could he survive the test of the Nine Tribulations Sword now?

Chu Yang had taken a risk using himself. And, he was going to have a future full of crises in exchange of focusing on what he had had before his eyes and in exchange of his peace of mind.

This could be called a struggle... It was a struggle of friendship and conscience against benefits and power!

Chu Yang had taken a step further. So, he felt calm and peaceful in his heart. However, he had experienced a narrow escape from death. Everything would've been perfect if he had taken a step back. But, there would've been a hole in his heart that would've never gotten filled.

What would you have done... if you had been in his place?

.....

Young Master Yu was looking at Chu Yang at this moment with an incomprehensible look in his eyes. Young Master Yu's eyes were wide open... He had a very-high-level cultivation. However, it was clear that even he had been shocked in his heart by Chu Yang's performance.

Suddenly, the sound of horse's hooves resounded like a thunderclap... The first clan to arrive was Huyan Clan!

A short while passed. Then, the people of Gu Clan and Dong Clan arrived under Dong Wu Lei's leadership.

They had seen piles of corpses when they had entered into the forest... They had sucked in cold air as they had seen this scene.

They were a little late!

Their bodies seeped out cold sweat all over as they heard these brothers speaking about the danger that they had faced just a while ago. These people didn't know whether they should feel regret or happiness.

Some of the people of these few clans would definitely have been among these corpses on the ground if they had come a little earlier.

In fact, the dead among them wouldn't have been a few in number.

However, they had come a little late, and had missed this lively fight as a result. So, they were indeed a bit regretful too.

All of these people kept silent about the incident that had happened today under the request of Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing. This was like a super lip-seal command!

Tan Tan was still sitting quietly. He hadn't shown any movement. The golden rays of light around his body were still flashing. Everyone looked at this scene, and clicked their tongue in amazement.

...

Upper Three Heavens...

In Diwu Qing Rou's courtyard... Zhuge Clan...

Diwu Qing Rou was clad in comfortable clothing. He was reading something at the desk with a calm and composed look on his face.

This was precisely the moment when Tan Tan had been struck by the so-called five killing devices...

Suddenly, a 'pop' sound was heard. And, Diwu Qing Rou's facial expression changed. He then calmly stood up.

Then, he opened a dark drawer in the desk... A very small purple jade bottle sprang out of it. Only a broken pill could be seen inside this jade bottle. A golden color had filled in this Purple Crystal bottle.

Diwu Qing Rou's complexion changed. And, he exposed a meaningful look in his eyes. Then, he said to himself, "Is it done?"

.....

Chapter 692: I'm Sure We'll Meet Again Someday. It's A Deal!

The golden color in this Purple Crystal jade bottle was exactly the same as the glittering color that had surrounded Tan Tan. The people that had been present in that dark forest in the Middle Three Heavens would've certainly been amazed to discover this if they had been here.

It was almost the break of dawn. Diwu Qing Rou slowly walked to the front of the window. Then, he pulled it open... He breathed directly into the oncoming twilight breeze. But, his face remained insipid, calm, and collected.

He remained standing still like that for a long time in the face of the blowing wind. After that, he finally turned around, and took the Purple Crystal jade bottle from the desk. Then, he put it into his bosom, and walked out.

Diwu Qing Rou's tall and carefree silhouette appeared outside a small and hidden courtyard after some time. This place was obviously heavily-guarded.

He showed a command token. And, the guarding experts silently retreated, and gave him the way.

Diwu Qing Rou entered. Then, he again put out a command token, and opened a secret way.

He showed nine different command tokens in total, and finally arrived at the end of the pathway. He had arrived in front of a secret chamber.

Four white-clothed old men were sitting in meditation with their eyes closed in front of this secret chamber.

One of them heard the sound of movement, and slowly opened his eyes. He then immediately shot two almost substantial golden lights from his eyes. He wrinkled his brows as he looked at Diwu

Qing Rou. He then said, "Qing Rou of Diwu Clan? What brings you here again?"

The three other men didn't say a word. Their eyes also remained closed. They seemed like sculptures made of wood.

"I have come to see that person. I need to confirm something." Diwu Qing Rou respectfully bowed.

"Confirm something?" that white-clothed old man asked.

"Yes." Diwu Qing Rou said. "That refined pill has exploded as anticipated."

"Oh?!" All four white-clothed old men opened their eyes at the same time as these words came out of Diwu Qing Rou's mouth. "So, you mean to say... that matter is done?"

Diwu Qing Rou took out the jade bottle, and showed it in his palm. He then said with a warm and gentle smile, "It should be done if that man hasn't lied to us."

The four old men looked at the sparkling golden color. They couldn't help but look at each other. They were trying very hard to remain calm, but all of them could see the look of being pleasantly surprised in each other's eyes.

"Go in," one of the old men insipidly said.

"Alright." Diwu Qing Rou bowed his head. And, a meaningful look rapidly flashed past his eyes.

He had said 'it's done'... but was it truly 'done'?

Squeaking sound came from the secret chamber. And, a slight door opening was exposed. Diwu Qing Rou quietly waited until the time he could enter inside. Then, he calmly and leisurely went in.

Those four old men outside the chamber again closed their eyes when Diwu Qing Ruo went in. Then, the door closed with a squeaking sound, and they opened their eyes at the same time as if by prior agreement. They then looked at each other with a

complicated expression in their eyes.

"It's a pity." The white-clothed old man in the middle took a deep breath.

"It's a great pity." The rest three nodded at the same time.

"It's not without reason why Great Elder regards Diwu Qing Rou as important," that white-clothed old man softly said. "We have an Elder of the Three Stars Divine Clan here. And, Zhuge Clan has been seething with excitement since this news has greatly spread in the clan. The Clan Lord's face becomes flushed when he waits for the time to open the door. And, his pace becomes slightly faster after he has entered. Moreover, he often gets restless to squeeze in near the gate when the gate hasn't yet opened.

"But, Diwu Qing Rou has been waiting very calmly. I've carefully observed... He has come three times. But, his facial expression doesn't change even a bit every time he comes." The white-clothed old man in the middle sighed, "This man has the talent of looking at the bigger picture at just one glimpse. He has genuine talent to look at minute details. There are only a few among the Zhuge Clan's younger generation who can rival Diwu Qing Rou's decision-taking ability and his broad thinking."

"That's right. It's a pity that he isn't a member of the Zhuge Clan..." another white-clothed old man softly said, "However, it is fortunate that Diwu Qing Rou is very loyal to the clan as their retainer."

The vision of the white-clothed man in the middle flashed. He then awe-inspiringly said, "Why would I have kept him alive up until now if it hadn't been so?"

Then, these four closed their eyes at the same time.

Diwu Qing Rou entered the secret chamber. There was a long passage. This passage was sparkling with fluorescence from left to right, and top to bottom. It was completely made of solid Black

Mysterious Iron.

The entire passage looked like a long iron coffin!

Diwu Qing Rou proceeded at a moderate pace. Then, he turned a corner, and finally arrived at a relatively spacious secret room.

This secret room's gate was around five feet wide. Starlight was twinkling on the entire gate. It was completely made of Star Iron!

There was a man behind the gate... He was covered in bloodstains. The four limbs of his body as well as his cervical vertebra appeared abnormally twisted. His head was deeply lowered. It seemed that he didn't have any breath left in him... as if he had already died.

Moreover, almost every joint of his body had been penetrated with shackles made of Star Iron. He was firmly locked up in them... He was shackled up very tightly and very cruelly. So, one could well-imagine how important a prisoner he was for the Zhuge Clan!

Diwu Qing Ruo stood in front of the gate for a long time. That man wasn't making the least bit of sound.

A look of admiration lit up in Diwu Qing Rou's eyes. He then gently tapped at the Star Iron door. Then, he softly said, "Third Elder, have you thought over it lately?"

A snapping sound came from that man's neck-joint. Then, he slowly lifted up his head, and looked at Diwu Qing Rou. A light of impatience and longing flashed in his eyes. But, his voice was indifferent and ruthless, "Your Zhuge Clan... is playing with fire. You're courting death!"

However, Diwu Qing Rou didn't get angry. He insipidly said, "Third Elder, our Zhuge Clan is one of the Nine Ruling Clans of the Nine Heavens. Moreover, Zhuge Clan's wise martial art of probing the secrets of the fate is second to none. So, the Divine Clan should cooperate with us. In fact, it would be beneficial for both the

parties. I truly don't understand why you're being so rigid."

Third Elder snorted, and weakly said, "My Three Stars Divine Clan would rather become slaves of dragons instead of becoming friends with dogs!"

"That's ambitious!" A faint look of admiration flickered in Diwu Qing Rou's eyes. He said, "But, it's only a pity that your Divine Clan doesn't have any hope now. All of your hopes have already died out."

Third Elder's entire body shook out. Suddenly, radiance flickered in his eyes, and the mark of sun on his forehead glittered and shone... It was clear that his emotions were stirring up. However, the cry that came out of his mouth was filled with anger, "You... what have you done?!"

Diwu Qing Rou chuckled, and said, "Third Elder, let me tell you that you should give up and be at ease in your heart... That's because I've already accomplished that thing."

He had said these words as gently as before. His tone also hadn't changed. It was neither warm nor hot. It was as neutral as yin and yang.

However, the Third Elder suddenly heaved a sigh of relief as if his heart had been unburdened. Then, he lowered his head, and his entire body slightly trembled.

He could feel that Diwu Qing Rou had wanted him to give up while saying these words. However, there had been another meaning in these words that only he had understood...

[You must give up and be at ease. It means... you can rest assured.]

[It's only 'me' who has accomplished that matter... It's not 'us' who have done it.]

The word 'us' was missing from his words.

The Third Elder curled up on the ground. Then, the few strands of hay on the ground issued slight rustling sounds as he fiercely trembled. His breaths had turned very heavy... It seemed as if he was blowing into bellows. Anyone who would see him now would definitely think that he was shivering out of anger and sighing out of hopelessness.

However, only Diwu Qing Rou knew that this man was in fact excited and pleasantly surprised.

"What proof do you have?" Third Elder suddenly lay low on the ground, and said in a hoarse voice, "Do you have anything to prove that what you're saying is true?"

"Proof?" Diwu Qing Rou softly said, "Of course, I have proof. But... Third Elder, what would you give us in exchange of that proof?"

Third Elder gasped, and said, "I won't say anything henceforth if you can provide me the proof."

Diwu Qing Rou showed a faint smile, and said, "You won't say anything... just that? Don't forget that you still need to give an explanation to our Zhuge Clan."

Third Elder took a breath, and said, "You rest assured. I'll give you the explanation as long as you present the proof to me."

Diwu Qing Rou gently smiled, and said, "This being the case..."

He had stretched his words while saying this. It seemed as if he was keeping the listeners in suspense... as if he was waiting for something.

A white-clothed old man had been sitting cross-legged in a very distant place... He finally smiled with satisfaction when Diwu Qing Rou spoke till here. A hair-like thin tube made of Red Cloud Steel was placed in front of him. The conversation between these two people underground was being clearly transmitted through that pipe.

That man then snapped his fingers. And, a gust of wind rose up above ground.

Then, that white-clothed old man's body started to float lightly as if he was a cloud. He kept sitting cross-legged. But, he was floating like a moving cloud and flowing water. His silhouette disappeared in a flash!

He felt relieved.

That's because there had been nothing unusual in the conversation between Diwu Qing Rou and the Third Elder. It had been entirely in the benefit of the Zhuge Clan. Moreover, it was crushing every bottom line of the enemy.

Things had come to this situation. So, he was convinced that the overall situation was already decided. [The Third Elder might not cooperate... But, our people can always use that awakened being in the Middle Three Heavens to draw in the other members of the Divine Clan!]

[The Three Stars Divine Clan would get split up into factions in that case. Then, at least some of them would be willing to cooperate with the Zhuge Clan.]

[It would be enough even if there are only a few who are willing to cooperate.]

He let go of that Red Cloud Steel pipe, and it suddenly shrank into the ground at a great speed. It quickly disappeared without a trace.

Inside the secret chamber... Diwu Qing Rou was still waiting.

Three gentle taps were soon heard from the outside. Then, there was no sound.

Diwu Qing Rou smiled. He then strolled over the pathway, "Third Elder, look what I have in my hand!"

He turned over his hand as he said this, and revealed that Purple

Crystal jade bottle.

He put it forward... A golden color was flickering and issuing light-beams in this deep grey prison. It was illuminating this entire secret chamber which had been built with various strange metals. It was emitting splendid radiance!

Third Elder suddenly raised his head, and foolishly looked at the golden light. Then, he slowly shed two teardrops from his eyes.

He remained in a daze for a long time. Then, he suddenly started to cry in a hoarse voice.

Diwu Qing Rou quietly looked at him. He didn't say a word. He had a look of deep understanding in his eyes.

A long while passed. Then, Diwu Qing Rou said in a soft voice, "Third Elder, don't forget your promise."

He then turned around, and slowly walked away... However, he turned his head to look at the Third Elder after he arrived at the gate. He then said, "We will meet again."

Third Elder sat facing the wall. He lowered his head when he heard this. Then, he turned around, and said, "It's a deal!"

...

Chapter 693: "A Good Sword!"

The four white-clothed old men kept their eyes closed and remained motionless as Diwu Qing Rou walked out.

However, Diwu Qing Rou still smiled and bowed in salutation. He said, "It was fortunate that I was able to complete my mission."

The four didn't speak.

Diwu Qing Rou walked away, and disappeared from the doorway.

The four people simultaneously opened their eyes as if by prior agreement after he had walked away. They then shot a quick glance at each other. Then, the white-clothed man in the middle softly said, "This man is capable. It's a pity that he isn't surnamed Zhuge."

Then, the four people again closed their eyes at the same time.

The sleeves of Diwu Qing Rou's robe fluttered as he walked away. The sky was already slightly bright.

Diwu Qing Rou was strolling on the road... He looked up at the sky. Remnants of stars were still faintly visible. He looked in the direction from where the sun was rising and smiled. Then, he lowered his head, and spoke a sentence, "It was fortunate that I was able to complete my mission."

Then, he sped up his pace, and returned to his own courtyard. He then sat inside the study room. After that, he finally let out a long sigh.

He heavily breathed a few times. Then, he felt his mood to have completely calmed down. After that, he slowly walked to the front of a wall... A map was hung there. He knitted his brows as he looked at it. He concentrated his attention, and stared at the map for a long while.

He then lightly pointed on the Zhuge Clan's position in the map.

Then, he drew the shape of a knife in the empty void, and slightly smiled.

The Zhuge Clan's shape on the map was like that of a little bottle-gourd.

And, Diwu Qing Rou's imaginary marking was cutting into the neck of that bottle-gourd. Let's presume that this bottle-gourd was a man. Then, the knife must have exactly been hung up on his neck.

It was a deadly threat!

Diwu Qing Rou wrinkled his brows, and pondered... He silently made computations in his heart.

[I had first made a strategy. Then, I had sent all the troops of the Zhuge Clan in the wake of the Three Stars Divine Clan's emergence... I had sent them to deal with the Divine Clan. Then, I had secretly contacted their high level experts. My original intention was just to take advantage of their authority. However, I hadn't thought that their conditions would turn out to be like that...]

[I had set a trap, and had dispatched some high level experts of the Zhuge Clan. Then, I had captured this Third Elder of the Three Stars Divine Clan who had seemed most willing to fall into this trap. Then, I had laid down the obvious picture.]

[The thing that was usually the most unpleasant to my eyes was that Zhuge Chang Feng. So, I had thrown him in the mouth of death... I had conveniently accomplished this agreement.]

[On the one hand, I would be able to be much of help for the Divine Clan. On the other hand, I would be able to set up an incomparably strong opponent for the Zhuge Clan.]

Diwu Qing Rou couldn't help but smile as he thought this. [I'll just wait for the right opportunity to come now. How would the Zhuge Clan not perish then?]

[There would be no wise clan left in the Upper Three Heavens once Zhuge Clan perishes. Then... which clan would take the great responsibility in its place except for my Diwu Clan?]

[This can also be considered as the revenge for these several years of hatred of Diwu Clan... Diwu Clan will abruptly rise whilst taking the advantage of the situation...]

Diwu Qing Rou finally sighed after he had thought all this.

He then recalled the hardships that this Third Elder of the Divine Clan was going through these days. He deeply took a breath. He greatly admired him, but he dreaded the consequences at the same time.

[Who would agree to take the shame of being a prisoner despite being a majestic eighth-grade Saint Level Expert?]

[He might not have been able to escape after being besieged by two Supreme Level Experts. But, he would've quietly committed suicide if he wasn't willing to be captured. How could he possibly let them capture him?]

[Moreover, he still has to go through extremely tragic torture after being captured. And, he has to give an impression to others that he can't hold on until he finally becomes ready to make the confession... after being left paralyzed by the torture!]

[It can be said that this Third Elder has sacrificed everything he had... including his dignity.]

[He's doing all of this just to send something that is suitable for the awakening...]

[He's so loyal and devoted... and so sacrificing...]

[...and all that just for an uncertain hope!]

[What mentality is this? What if I were to become the enemy of such an enemy one day...]

Diwu Qing Rou sighed.

He couldn't help but become somewhat curious. [After all, who is that awakened being? And, Zhuge Clan has offended this awakened being so badly... that there are definitely going to be consequences...]

Diwu Qing Rou gently smiled as he thought this.

Then, he thought in his heart, [Nine Heavens are chaotic enough. The crisis made by the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword is rapidly expanding. And, this awakened being of the Divine Clan is truly a trouble lying ahead now.]

But, it was unfortunate that Diwu Qing Rou didn't know that the one that Zhuge Clan had offended this time wasn't just the so-called awakened being... It was the Devil King who had awakened at that time!

He hadn't thought that the Zhuge Clan hadn't only offended the Devil King, but also the Three Stars Divine Clan. Moreover, they had seriously offended the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword!

Diwu Qing Rou would've been drinking a toast of wine if he had known this even though he had a very superior forbearance.

Diwu Qing Rou's expression became deep as he looked at the sky gradually lighting up... A feeling of loneliness sprang up unbidden in his heart. And, he couldn't help but softly sigh, "It's indeed lonely here."

Then, he started to miss King of Hell Chu the next moment.

Not even a superhuman could beat the wisdom of Diwu Qing Rou's entire life.

There had been a major power among the nations in the Lower Three Heavens. The Iron Cloud would've been victorious after they had put all of their efforts and strength... even if he hadn't finally done the favor on the enemy and hadn't favored increasing Diwu Clan's fate. But, the victory would've been tragic since both sides would've equally suffered!

Moreover, Diwu Qing Rou was more than 60% sure that he could've won.

The reason why he had given up was just an unrestrained gamble.

That gambling had been based on a vague, illusionary, and baseless guess on his part... There was no way to confirm if his guess was true, [Can Chu Yang... be that mysterious...]

However, it was certain that Chu Yang was roughly matched with Diwu Qing Rou in the respect of wisdom. Moreover, he had been able to make Diwu Qing Rou repeatedly suffer a loss until now. And, he had done all that by himself.

Such was King of Hell Chu!

Diwu Qing Rou cherished the memory of that evenly matched rival.

Diwu Qing Rou's status wasn't that high in the Zhuge Clan at present. However, his wisdom, tricks, and schemes were invincible. Everything was going very smoothly.

Things here were going so smoothly that Diwu Qing Rou didn't feel the least bit of joy and pleasure on his plan being successful.

It could be said that tricking a talented person who had brains and a status was a joy. However, tricking a fool... would only bring depression.

Diwu Qing Rou muttered as he looked outside the window, "King of Hell Chu, you're coming to the Upper Three Heavens, right? We'll play together if you come!

"We'll play till the end... until the entire Nine Heavens... capsize!"

The sun rose, and Diwu Qing Rou's silhouette filled the study room. It reflected on a wall, and curved.

....

Chu Yang had stood up here in the Middle Three Heavens when

Diwu Qing Rou had been talking about him. He was still swaying, but it wasn't a big problem for him anymore since his physical strength was gradually recovering.

The golden aperture was still glittering around Tan Tan. It hadn't faded in the slightest.

Chu Yang tried to extend a branch to the inside of the aperture. But, the branch became rotten and then immediately turned into smoke because of the effect of that intense poison. Then, those vapors dissipated.

Chu Yang gradually became puzzled, [Zhuge Clan has actively plotted to deal with Tan Tan. So, why have they put out this weird and violent poison?]

[This is completely unreasonable.]

[This acute poison has continued the whole night. And, it seems that it will still persist. It may go on for several days. Nothing can be said. How was the Zhuge Clan planning to take Tan Tan with them in case they had succeeded?]

[Would they have waited for so long?]

[This is totally incomprehensible.]

[Also, Tan Tan has ordinary strength. Then, why had so many experts come to deal with him?]

[What Zhuge Clan has done this time is very strange!]

Chu Yang thought for a long while, but he still couldn't figure it out.

Tan Tan was here. So, it was obviously impossible for Chu Yang to leave. However, this place was very disgusting. Therefore, Chu Yang tried his best to convince the people of the several great clans to move to some place that was more than five kilometers away from here and pitch their camps there.

Only his brothers stayed.

The unexpected thing was that Huyan Aobo who had seen that Ji Mo had stayed behind also stayed back with him. This made the other brothers very envious. Ji Mo felt what it meant to be a happy couple. He became immensely proud and satisfied. Therefore, he would constantly make a display of affection in front of his brothers in a cute and helpless manner.

I implore you to forgive my modern analogy here — Ji Mo looked like Pan Chang Jiang who carried a female basketball player after losing fifty kilograms of weight. She was still a foreign black person...

Moreover, both Ji Mo and Huyan Aobo looked graceful in their conduct.

Luo Ke Di was envious of them at first. But, he rolled his eyes and lay down on the ground on the spot after he saw this. He then covered his eyes with his hands. He wasn't ready to put his hands off at any cost. He was repeatedly saying, [My eyes hurt... My eyes hurt...]

Finally, this made the couple — Ji Mo and Huyan Aobo — fiercely beat this guy together...

Chu Yang hurriedly received the medicines brought by everyone during this time period. He constantly collected raw and scarce medicinal ingredients... He refined an incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill. Then, he made Xie Dan Feng take it.

Otherwise, this stupid girl might've been unable to last until Tan Tan would wake up.

All the brothers were obviously the most worried about Chu Yang. So, Chu Yang had no other choice but to comfort them with a smile. He didn't have any injury... He only needed a rest, and then he would easily return to normal.

There were some matters that he needed to say to do. But, there were some things that could only be done and not said.

The brothers might have lost their minds if he had let them know that he had endangered his own life to save theirs.

Chu Yang had to bear that all alone no matter what the outcome would be. And, that's it.

It would obviously be good if he were to survive. But, why should he raise a demon in the hearts of his own brothers if he were not to?

The aura around Tan Tan's body slowly started to fade after three days.

Then, his long hair which was spread around began to flutter once again.

No one... not even Chu Yang, Diwu Qing Rou, and those Zhuge Clan's people knew that the effect of these so-called 'five killer devices' would usually last for three days.

However, no one could get close to Tan Tan in those three days.

Not even a Supreme Expert!

Moreover, the Devil King would be successfully assimilated after three days. Then, the Devil King would become clear-headed for a short time when the aperture was gone. After that, he would be able to burst out his real strength.

How could the people of the Three Stars Divine Clan rack their brains and think of such a method to put into practice if they didn't have this assurance?

One must know that the entire Divine Clan would've felt an indelible shame if those people of Zhuge Clan had bumped into even a finger of their King; let alone had the King been captured by those people...

Therefore, the Zhuge Clan's people had to die no matter who was sent if they were to carry out this plan.

This was a plan that would've definitely brought them death.

What Zhuge Chang Feng had realized just before dying wasn't wrong in any way...

It was a pity that the Zhuge Clan's people were dead now when the Nine Tribulations Sword Master was standing in front of the Devil King!

This pressure had gotten virtually shifted on Chu Yang.

However, Minister Chu still knew nothing about this matter.

Finally, the aperture completely disappeared.

Then, Tan Tan calmly sat. Suddenly, his long hair rose up. He then suddenly opened his eyes, and emitted sunlight-like glaze from them. However, his vision was pitch-black.

He saw Chu Yang as soon as he opened his eyes.

He then aroused the corners of his mouth, and exposed a strange and sinister smile. Then, he coldly said out of nowhere, "A good sword!"

.....

Chapter 694: Devil King and Sword Master

"Good sword?" Chu Yang was startled in his heart. The expression in his eyes immediately became sharp. He then calmly looked at Tan Tan, and slowly asked, "Who are you?"

These few words had allowed Chu Yang to detect that this man wasn't Tan Tan. After all, Tan Tan would never speak such words to Chu Yang in this way.

"The meaning of a good sword is..." Tan Tan exposed a strange smile at the corner of his mouth. He was just about to speak, but he abruptly frowned instead. He then wrinkled his brows more and more tightly. He was experiencing a slight feeling of pain inside.

One must know that Tan Tan had the 'awakened consciousness' of the Devil King at present. And, it could give rise to a painful feeling in a person like him. In fact, it could clearly be seen that the pain was very severe.

"My spirit has split up." Tan Tan wrinkled his brows. Then, he softly said, "This era's consciousness is so strong... Wait a minute. Let me read it."

Chu Yang felt shocked in his heart. So, he didn't leave the least bit of time for Tan Tan, and closely interrogated, "You'll read? Will Tan Tan vanish as a result of this?"

Tan Tan frowned, and looked at Chu Yang, "Do you care so much?"

Chu Yang snorted overbearingly, and said, "Answer my question!"

Tan Tan became angry. He then slowly raised his eyebrows, and softly said, "You've dared to speak to me like that?" His voice was soft, but it was full of deadly vibes at the same time.

However, he just let out a stuffy snort after he had said this.

It could clearly be seen that the two bodies of conscious were fighting for the control of the body and mind. The Devil King hadn't faced any resistance from Tan Tan during the previous awakening. Or, perhaps... Tan Tan had also wanted to kill those people of the Ao Clan.

However, the Devil King was testing Tan Tan's threshold this time since Tan Tan faced Chu Yang.

It could be said that there weren't too many people who held value in Tan Tan's heart. However, Chu Yang and Meng Chao Ran were the most valuable people for him. And, Xie Dan Feng had also been added among them now.

However, the absolute thing was that Chu Yang had taken care of him since childhood. They both had grown up together, and they had learned martial arts together. So, their friendship was the deepest.

Tan Tan had been dependent on Chu Yang. He respected him. And, it was not without reason why Tan Tan almost worshipped Chu Yang.

This consciousness that had awakened now was full of hostility towards Chu Yang. So, how could Tan Tan allow it?

Therefore, Tan Tan had stimulated the fiercest resistance at this moment... Consequently, Tan Tan's consciousness seemed to have almost exploded with all his might. He was fighting, resisting, and struggling...

The pain that was coming from the depth of his soul was hard to withstand... even for the Devil King.

It was because the Devil King couldn't kill Tan Tan. After all, killing Tan Tan would be equal to killing himself.

Tan Tan deeply frowned. He had maintained an indifferent look on his face. But, beads of sweat were continuously seeping out and dripping down from the hair-line of his head.

A long time passed. Then, he gathered himself, and said a few words, "I won't kill him!"

Then, he gradually became tranquil after a while.

Chu Yang had been patiently waiting. He couldn't help but feel a jolt in his heart as he looked at the situation. A heat had started to well up in his heart.

He recalled what Tan Tan had said to him some time ago, [Please kill me if a day comes when I'm unable to control myself.] Chu Yang couldn't help but feel warm in his heart as he recalled this sentence.

Tan Tan had anticipated this situation. Moreover, he had already made a request to Chu Yang regarding such a situation. However, Tan Tan's subconscious mind was protecting Chu Yang when this day had eventually arrived... even though Tan Tan couldn't control his own body.

Moreover, he was doing this with all his might.

"I want to have a discussion with you," Chu Yang said; softly yet firmly.

"You... want to have a discussion with me?" Tan Tan looked at Chu Yang with his ghostly black pupils. He then exposed a devilish smile from the corner of his mouth, and said, "I think there's nothing that we can talk about."

Chu Yang resolutely looked at him, and said, "But, I think there is!"

"A conversation between a King and a sword?! He-he, it's very strange!" Tan Tan muttered. Then, he suddenly sneered... He silently smiled as if he was mocking himself. He then said, "Alright! You and I will have a conversation."

Xie Dan Feng was nervously looking at Tan Tan. There were expressions of hesitation, fear, and longing in her eyes.

However, she hadn't spoken anything. She was only staring at him. She stubbornly pursed up her lips, and remained silent.

Tan Tan turned around, and looked at her. He felt like rebuking her without any reason. However, he went indescribably soft in his heart as he looked at Xie Dan Feng's pitiful appearance. He sighed, and then said in a soft voice, "You wait for me here."

He felt a contradiction in his heart as soon as he had spoken these words; so much so that he even regretted it, [I... When have I spoken in such a soft voice before? How many tens of thousands of years has it been?]

He recalled the last time he had spoken in such a soft voice to a woman. [...to whom?]

In the past... there was the Queen of the Divine Clan. The Devil King felt that Xie Dan Feng vaguely resembled her. He remembered that she would silently look at him every time he would go out to fight someone. She wouldn't say a word... she would just quietly wait for him to come back.

[She wouldn't speak a word every time I would come back. However, I would feel that she had become relaxed.]

[She gradually started to speak less and less to me as my prestige grew day by day. She became increasingly cautious and solemn. But... I had liked her even though I hadn't spoken to her for so many years.]

[I've always wanted to make up to her for this. But, I hadn't gotten the opportunity to do so due to the wars on all fronts. I've kept this buried in my heart without having any better option. Each great tribe had been glaring at us like a tiger would watch its prey... The Three Stars Divine Clan had been in imminent danger. I was the King. So, I had to be extremely cautious. Besides, I had to practice my skills round the clock since I had to fiercely battle day in and day out.]

[Then, I had one day felt that there was no worthy-opponent for me in the entire universe. So, I had wanted to promise to her what I had already promised in my heart. However, an unreasonable madman had come at that time. And, he had folded the entire Nine Heavens...]

[That folding hadn't only buried millions of billions of living creatures, but it had also buried my clansmen and my lover.]

[I've awakened after ninety-thousand years. But, how would they possibly be found now?]

[Where would... that woman be whom I had longed for... for my whole life?]

[It doesn't matter if you go up to the heavens or down to the hell... It doesn't matter if you take thousands of incarnations... But... are you safe and sound?]

He couldn't help but look foolishly as he thought this. He thought it over, and felt as if his heart had become tender along with these gentle words he had spoken.

Xie Dan Feng heard these gentle words, and her lips quivered as she said, "You... are you Tan Tan?"

Tan Tan was startled. He wanted to say, [I'm not.] But, his heart quivered for a while, and he gloomily said, "I think... I should be."

He felt a little regret in his heart after he had said this.

[Why am I so tender-hearted at present?]

Xie Dan Feng was choking with emotions. She covered her eyes with her hands, and squatted down on the ground, "I just want... my Tan Tan.... that Tan Tan of mine... who had been protecting me in that moment of life and death just a while ago."

Tan Tan stared blankly for a long time. He finally sighed, and said to Chu Yang, "Follow me."

Chu Yang looked at Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing. The two of

them were looking at him anxiously. Then, he spoke-up to comfort them, "Relax." He thought for a while, and explained, "It has been three days, and Mo Tian Ji and Mo Clan haven't arrived yet. So, you must pay attention. Don't miss them."

Then, his voice hadn't even fallen when he felt his body rising high in the sky.

Tan Tan had grabbed Chu Yang. His spacious black robe flew up in the air. He looked like a huge black bat flying in the air. Then, he disappeared with a 'shua' sound.

Chu Yang only felt the sound of wind whooshing. And, the forest on both sides before his eyes suddenly disappeared without a trace. His body continuously rose upwards, and the ground under his feet became farther and farther. He couldn't keep his eyes open because of the strong wind blowing against his face.

Chu Yang opened his eyes after the sound of wind had settled. He then found that he had reached the summit of the nearest mountain peak.

This place was at least hundred kilometers away from the forest.

Tan Tan had brought Chu Yang by flying to such a far distance in just the blink of an eye. This speed was simply unimaginable!

Chu Yang lowered his head, and found that the hem of his black robe was issuing blue smoke because of the fierce friction of air.

A faint hair-burning smell was coming from it.

This smell made Chu Yang feel sick at his heart.

Chu Yang remembered that Wu Qian Qian had sewed her fine and long black hair in that with those beautiful words, [Chu Yang, Qian Qian loves you.]

He couldn't help but sigh in his heart. [That lovesick girl...]

Chu Yang had thought that he would put away that black robe when he had found those words... He wouldn't put any black robe

on anymore.

However, he finally hadn't been able to suppress his heart.

[This was probably the last thing that Wu Qian Qian had given out of her affection. Can I be so cruel?]

Suddenly, Tan Tan's voice was heard... Chu Yang's heart trembled, and he lifted his head.

"I like discussing matters on the tallest places." Tan Tan carried both his hands behind his back, and stood tall. His long black hair was fluttering, and was spread around in a disheveled way. He then slightly narrowed his eyes, and insipidly said, "I feel that I can calmly observe the winds and clouds of the whole world under my feet by being at a high place."

Chu Yang slowly walked behind him, and then insipidly said, "It's not that you're the only one who likes this feeling. There are many people who stand here just to look at the natural scenery of the earth. However, some people stand here to paint this landscape in their heart, while some stand here so that they can reach out and touch the winds and clouds of the world."

Chu Yang smiled, "Which type are you?"

Tan Tan didn't have the least bit of expression on his face. He said, "I'm not any type."

Chu Yang mischievously laughed, and said, "I also like standing at high places. You and I are same in this regard. However, the difference between you and me is that you stand here to enjoy the loneliness and quietness on the top. On the other hand, I don't want to be lonely when I stand here... I want my brothers to stand here with me."

He calmly said, "Tan Tan, you're my junior disciple. You're my brother. We've grown up together since childhood. So, we are no less than blood brothers."

Tan Tan looked at the boundless ocean of clouds in front of him.

He gazed upon them for a long time. It appeared as if he wasn't hearing what Chu Yang was saying. In fact, it seemed that he had heard everything but he had been deliberately ignoring it. He didn't speak a word.

Chu Yang continued, "I think you can understand what I mean."

"Oh?" Tan Tan said as he swept his vision at Chu Yang.

"This is not your body!" Chu Yang said, "I only want to ask you one thing for Tan Tan today. You... how can you leave this body? Tell me what your conditions to do so are!"

"This isn't my body?" Tan Tan pondered. He tried to comprehend for a long time. But then, he burst out into laughter, "You're mistaken. This is my body!"

He had the Divine Chi Gathering Fish with him. The Divine Chi Gathering Fish seemed to be going crazy at this moment. A steady flow of pure vital energy of the entire world was constantly concentrating here.

It took shape of a storm of spirit energy in the air in an instant!

Suddenly, mist surged up, and it completely covered the entire summit!

It seemed as if this entire mountain had gotten covered in a domain of dust.

....

Chapter 695: Who Are You, Who Am I, and Who Is He?

Chu Yang sneered, "Your body?! Have you eaten food for this body to grow? Have you drunk water for it? Had you been the one who had gotten bullied? Or, have you died once... for this body? Your body?! How can you say that this is your body?"

Chu Yang closely looked at the present 'Tan Tan', and said, "Do you know what this body has gone through? Do you know how much suffering this body had to undergo to grow till this point? Tan Tan has grown up with so much difficulty. And, you have the audacity to say that this is your body?"

Chu Yang laughed heartily, "Who the hell do you think you are?"

Tan Tan's face became gloomy.

...like dark clouds.

The entire sky seemed to have turned gloomy along with his face.

The dark clouds had almost pressed down to the ground.

It was clear that Tan Tan was already close to eruption.

His eyes looked deep as he tightly wrinkled his curved brows.

A long while passed. Then, he fiercely exhaled a deep breath. He then softly said, "I want to kill you."

Chu Yang lightly smiled, "There are plenty of people in this world who want to kill me. And, there are plenty of people in the world who are capable of killing me and want to kill me. But, here I am... alive and kicking!"

Tan Tan relaxed his brows. Then, he gently laughed, "There will be a fight between us sooner or later. But, it would be an easy victory if I were to kill you now. It wouldn't be pleasurable by any means."

Chu Yang indifferently said, "This is obviously up to you. I have nothing to do with it. But, patronizing me with this isn't going to work."

Tan Tan angrily snorted. But then, he smiled, and said, "You don't know how to appreciate favors."

He took a step forward. His body was entirely standing in the empty space of the sea of clouds; he stood without any support at his feet. He had put his hands behind his back. He indifferently said, "I've awakened this time for almost three days. After that, I'll give back the control of this body... to him."

"I need his continuous effort and constant improvement if I want to awaken thoroughly.

"I don't know how it would appear when I would thoroughly awaken in the future and my strength would restore to the peak." Tan Tan spoke till here and stopped.

Chu Yang had clearly understood it. So, he nodded.

He knew what these words meant... The important thing was the mindset... not the strength.

In other words, this Devil King didn't know whether he would decide to take the good side or the bad side once he had completely awakened.

"Therefore, I can't make any promises now." Tan Tan said.

"You had earlier said that this wasn't my body... You were wrong! In fact, you were gravely mistaken!" Tan Tan faintly smiled, and said, "Do you know who I am?"

"Who are you?" Chu Yang felt his heartbeat speeding up.

"Who am I? He-he..." Tan Tan shook his head, and broke into laughter. His movements were chic and carefree. But, there was faint disappointment and frustration in them, "I was born on this continent 160,000 years ago. Then, the Divine King collapsed and

died 140,000 years ago. And, the Divine Clan greatly changed as a result. In fact, it completely disintegrated. I — the master of the Star Race — then started to reunite the Three Stars Clan. Then, the Divine Clan got unified 100,000 years ago. And, I became the King of the Three Stars Divine Clan. Then, I unified the two races of birds and beasts 98,000 years ago. And then, I became the King of the two races by silently defeating the armies of birds and beasts.

"Then, I and the Devil Race had a fierce combat 95,000 years ago. My struggle lasted for two thousand years. Then, I became the Devil Race's Lord!

"I was the ruler of the Nine Heavens apart from the Phoenix Race, the Fairy Race, the Human Race, as well as several mysterious tribes of that time.

"I was the overlord of the Nine Heavens in terms of sheer power and influence. And, it wasn't just in name only... It was so in reality.

"Supreme level Experts would also have to move aside at an order even if a weakling nobody were to wield the flag of King. One order could reduce millions to rotting corpses in no time! There wasn't a single person in the entire universe who could dare to disobey the order of the King!"

Tan Tan's voice had become quite dull. A murderous aura seemed to be involuntarily welling up in his voice. He was emitting a dense and extremely overbearing imposing aura.

Chu Yang felt shocked in his heart since he hadn't expected that there was such a formidable soul in Tan Tan's body.

Saying that Tan Tan had the status of the Lord of the world wouldn't be exaggeration.

"Also, the human race finally began to feel threatened at that time. They then started to fight me. Human experts continuously emerged in succession. Their crafty plots and schemes were

impossible to defend against. This war continued for 5000 years. Then, the humans gradually became slightly more docile."

Tan Tan gently smiled. However, there was agony in his smiling expression. "Then, that man appeared just when I was ready to unify the Nine Heavens."

[That man!]

Chu Yang suddenly became shocked. And, he erected his ears.

That man... He was the man who had created the Nine Tribulations Sword. He was the man who had folded the Nine Heavens. He had folded a huge continent like it was merely a piece of paper. He had first made nine layers of the Nine Heavens, and then three.

That man!

The power of that man couldn't be described in words!

"That man..." Tan Tan had deep hatred in his eyes. His eyes also had deep admiration and a slight fear, "... that man would follow his heart's desires. He's indescribable. That man didn't care about laws and natural morality. He broke countless rules. That man was bloody and cruel. He was cold-blooded. He was number-one since the beginning of history in this respect."

Chu Yang nodded in agreement.

[Millions and billions of living beings were wiped out at a flick of his hand!]

[How can 'cold-blooded' be enough to describe this kind of behavior?]

"The entire Nine Heavens were rocked by a major disaster as soon as that person appeared!" Tan Tan's body unconsciously swayed. He wrinkled his brows, and exposed a deep agony, "All the clans disappeared! And, not even one of my subordinates survived. My brothers got... wiped out. My wife... also..."

He gently laughed twice. But, there was a tragic feeling in his laughter.

"I knew that it shouldn't have happened the first time he had folded the Nine Heavens. I hadn't had the strength to resist him. So, I could only be patient. Moreover, I did my utmost to go along with it so that I could save my subjects. However, I couldn't have imagined that... such a major event of the entire world was just a child's play for this bastard! The Nine Heavens collapsed after they got folded... He-he... Such a thing... what the fu*k... was this?!"

"That whole scene... at the time of collapse... was indeed unforgettable." Tan Tan's voice had turned hoarse and muffled. He then mischievously laughed, "One moment... I had the whole world with me. And, the next moment... I had become a loner! Several millions of my subordinates had changed into dust in front of me. They all had turned into corpses. But, not even a little bit of their remains could be found. My billions of subjects had changed into smoke!"

"So, I gradually started to wish that I was dead. I wanted the heavens to fall and the earth to crumble!" Tan Tan stood with his hands behind his back. His long hair was fluttering in a messy way as he sadly said, "I helplessly saw everyone die in front of me. And, I was their King... I was their pillar... I was the man who had vowed devotion to protect them despite any hardship. So, I didn't know what to do as I looked at all this happening. I could level oceans with the palm of my hand! I could break down mountains with a kick! But, I couldn't save even a strand of their hair at that time..."

"I had heard them speaking before they had died. The words that they had spoken were — King, you must leave! Our death would be worthy as long as you're alive!"

"But, I've never called myself 'King' after that since I don't deserve it. I only call myself... me!"

Tan Tan spoke till here. Then, he sadly laughed, "This is a deep hatred of blood of several billion people. Chu Yang... Master of Nine Tribulations Sword, you tell me... Should I not take revenge?"

Chu Yang concentrated his vision at him. He then insipidly said, "Anyone in your place would seek revenge."

"You also think so?" Tan Tan turned his head, and looked at Chu Yang... His gaze was like a knife.

"Yes. I also think so!" Chu Yang replied without hesitation.

"Good! Good!" Tan Tan faced upwards, and laughed heartily. But, tears came out with his laughter, "You're worthy of being called the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword since you were capable of awakening me!~"

Then, he changed the topic of revenge, and continued to talk about the great tribulations of the world before the great collapse of the Nine Heavens.

"I had been dying from the trauma that I had received from the destruction of the world. But, I strongly held my breath. I would die no matter what. So, I had to know who that bastard was! I was the Devil King... So, how could I die in the dark?"

Tan Tan firmly said.

"I held that breath as I saw him creating the Nine Tribulations Sword and changing the entire continent into three joint heavens. He left behind the treasured sword to support the entire continent. Then, I saw him floating away!

"But, he didn't mention his name the whole time. I couldn't endure seeing him leave this world like that.

"So, I burned the last bit of blood essence in my body, and jumped out from the ruins. Then, I shouted loudly, 'Who are you? Tell me your name!'" Tan Tan's voice became hoarse as he spoke these words. His gaze became hateful as if he had returned to that

moment.

He had the bitterness in his eyes that he had had when he had burned his last vitality to interrogate his greatest enemy.

There was grief, indignation, weakness, hopelessness, and resentment in these words. Chu Yang felt as if everything had turned gloomy before his eyes as he listened to him speaking.

Tan Tan hurriedly took two deep breaths after saying these words. Then, he continued speaking.

"That man suddenly halted his footsteps when I shouted those words. He then turned his head towards the new Nine Heavens. Then, he looked at me across thousands of miles, and suddenly asked with a smile, 'Do you want to take revenge?'"

"I had replied at that time — 'Bullshit! Would you not want to take revenge if you had been in my place?'" Tan Tan said, "I had killed many people my whole life before that. However, I had never cursed before. I had lived for several ten-thousand years. But, that had been the first time that I had ever cursed in my life!"

"That man had then smiled at me, and said, 'You want to take revenge. So, I'll give you the chance to take revenge. But, it's a pity that... you may not necessarily achieve your wish.'

"He had disappeared after saying those words. Then, I had felt the vitality of my body collapsing. It suddenly started to condense a little. It hadn't been too much. But, it had been sufficient to change my mortal body into a spirit embryo. I got dissipated into the spirit energy of the world. Then, I quietly waited for my next awakening. This is the mysterious magic art inherited from the Devil Race. No one could ever practice it before. But, I was able to practice it for the first time ever at that time using my seriously injured body!"

"Then, I lost consciousness. I wandered amidst the spirit energy of the world. I submerged under the ground as my soul slowly

matured, and absorbed the spirit energy of the earth. Then, I broke through the ground and came out after 90,000 years. After that, I changed into a newborn baby. But, I got the blessing of the world and another mind was born the moment I had taken the form of a baby. It was Tan Tan... your junior martial brother."

Tan Tan turned his head, and looked at Chu Yang. All sorts of feelings welled up in his heart as he smiled and said, "Do you understand now? You had said that this body wasn't mine. He-he... do you understand now that your junior brother is the outsider instead? It was he who had invaded and occupied my body!"

"I may not have eaten food for this body. I may not have drunk water for it. But, I've struggled for 100,000 years for this body!"

Tan Tan felt somewhat broken-hearted as he smiled in a pitiful manner. He then said, "I'm this body's owner!"

.....

Chapter 696: The Heaven's Design is in Chaos; Sword Heart is Broken!

Chu Yang muttered to himself for a long time. Then, he suddenly felt that he had nothing to say.

Chu Yang was facing a Devil King whose cultivation was far greater than his, and who had experienced far greater miseries than him. So, what could Chu Yang possibly say to him?

He used to believe that his own bitter experiences were tragic enough. But, his experiences were still somehow the consequences of his actions.

He hadn't thought that a legend like this Devil King would've gone through such things. It had been a completely unexpected misfortune... His entire community had disappeared altogether. And, their disappearing was an unfathomable mystery that had added up to his grief.

[I've merely taken a rebirth. On the other hand, this guy has been aggrieved for one-hundred-thousand years. He has now an opportunity to free himself from the misery. However, his soul embryo has been occupied by a new soul...]

A long while passed. Then, Chu Yang bitterly smiled, "These bitter experiences of yours... leave me very... speechless. They are so tragic that one can't even sympathize with you."

Tan Tan mischievously laughed. "I'm not complaining about anything. And, I don't want you to think that I'm pitiful. It's just that I think that my abilities aren't as good as that man's." He ferociously laughed his heart out. Then, he shouted, "My abilities aren't as good as that man's. So, I got what I deserved."

Chu Yang remained speechless.

These words were such that one could neither oppose nor favor them. Therefore, one could only remain speechless.

A long while passed. Then, Chu Yang said, "Your style dictates that. Perhaps... even with a man like that, you would have still lost by your hands."

"Why?" Tan Tan raised his eyebrows.

"It's because you don't leave a way for others. You block the space for others to respond beforehand. So, others can only listen to what you say. They don't get any chance to express their views when they listen to you. You already know the intentions of the other person in certain cases. But, you unconsciously make an impasse in some other cases."

Chu Yang slightly smiled.

He had obviously made an analysis from Tan Tan's words that this guy wouldn't leave the slightest room for dialog.

People could only sigh on listening to his words. They couldn't say anything. They wouldn't know how to reply to him.

Chu Yang had seen such a man for the first time in both his lives.

This wasn't overbearing... It was biased.

Chu Yang had thought that Tan Tan would either fail to acknowledge these words or get angry after listening to these words. He hadn't thought that Tan Tan would deeply ponder for a moment after listening to them. Tan Tan nodded after a long time, and said, "What you've said is right."

He smiled, "This is my nature. I don't give people leeway to express anything. He-he. However, would it still be me if I were to leave room for everyone to interfere?"

Chu Yang couldn't help but smile.

These words could make people feel strange. They wouldn't get any space to interrupt him.

"We should now discuss about the grievances between us." Suddenly, the slight smiling expression vanished from Tan Tan's

face. It then got replaced by a desolate and bleak expression.

"Grievances between us," Chu Yang nodded, "Well, there are indeed grievances between us.

"It doesn't matter what you say. It doesn't matter for how long you've suffered for this body... This body belongs to my brother. And, he belongs to this world. This is a fact... You can't deny this."

Tan Tan waved his hand. "This body will be his later on. His strength isn't even near the amount required to make me completely awaken... or to let me completely occupy this body. Then, what are you afraid of?

"Moreover, he has begun to read my memory after getting hit by the Five Poisonous Reincarnation Smokes a while ago. So, he'll slowly regain my memories. This will be highly beneficial in increasing his strength. Then, what aren't you satisfied with?"

Chu Yang remained silent for a while, and then said, "Then, when would you be able to completely awaken?"

Tan Tan remained silent, and then said, "Maybe, I'll have to wait for him to become a ninth-grade Saint Level Expert... or above."

"Supreme?" Chu Yang blurted out.

"Maybe, yes." Tan Tan contained a trace of bitterness and pain in the corner of his mouth.

"Both of our souls will get fused and become one only when he can bear the full impact of the trace of my soul. He'll have memories of both the lives at that time.

"He won't erase me, and I won't erase him!" Tan Tan said using his rare solemn voice, "You don't need to be worried for him!"

Chu Yang heaved a sigh of relief, and said, "So, that's how it is."

He was still somewhat doubtful in his heart. But, he had no other choice but to believe him for the time being.

It was because Chu Yang didn't know if there was any other way

to deal with the situation.

Anyway, he had gotten temporarily relieved from his worry about Tan Tan's safety.

"As for you and I..." Tan Tan said, "You already know that the Nine Tribulations Sword in your Dantian has been personally created by the man who had destroyed me. And, the mission of you so-called Masters of Nine Tribulations Sword has been given to you all by that man.

"In other words, you're a descendent of that man... the man who had destroyed me in the past."

Tan Tan coldly smiled, and said, "Therefore, we are enemies. And, we'll have a decisive battle sooner or later. This is beyond doubt!"

Chu Yang bitterly smiled, "You think that what you've said is fair? You've occupied my brother's body, and you want to have a decisive battle with me? How could I possibly injure his body for real? Decisive battle between experts only needs a moment of hesitation to cause a cruel death. And, you want to have a decisive battle with me?"

"Therefore, I'm giving you time. I'll let you sufficiently grow." Tan Tan said, "I'm talking to you this time. It's not to set any agreement with you to have a fight after hundreds and thousands of years. Instead, it is to remind you one thing... Don't make my one-hundred-thousand years of wait go to waste."

"Don't make my one-hundred-thousand years of wait go to waste?" Chu Yang was stunned.

"I've had faith that I'll take revenge over the last hundred-thousand years!" A black flame ignited in Tan Tan's pupils. It felt as if his own soul had flared up.

"I'll never let the successor of that person live in this world... You can live on until I don't awaken completely. But, Master of Nine

Tribulations Sword... I won't let you exist in this world after that."

Tan Tan laughed out loud, "I'm telling you this now. I'm not even worried that you'll destroy this body before I completely awaken." He paused for a while, and then continued, "You and I can't exist under the same sky. But, I'm very relieved."

Chu Yang forced a smile. [Destroy this body before you awaken? Are you kidding me? Wouldn't it be destroying Tan Tan? Moreover, wouldn't it be destroying my master Meng Chao Ran?]

[How can I do it?]

"Rest assured. There's still time for that future matter. It isn't necessary that I'll be defeated by you in our battle when that time comes." Chu Yang faintly smiled and said, "But... I hope that you'd be able to endure the blow if you completely awaken and get defeated by me when the time comes. You are awakening after a hundred-thousand years. And, you've endured a lot already. So, I'm afraid that it would be hard for you to deal with it in case you get defeated by my hands when the time comes."

Tan Tan sneered. He was just about to speak. But, Chu Yang interrupted him, and said, "You know it in your heart that it is very much possible."

Tan Tan remained silent for a long time... The ridiculing expression on his face had disappeared. He then said, "No one could defeat me in my life except for that man. So, I believe that it would be a wonderful thing that I would greatly cherish if you were to casually defeat me."

Chu Yang smiled, "I believe that you won't be disappointed."

Tan Tan laughed heartily.

A long time passed. Then, he stopped laughing, and said, "I want to remind you of one more thing beside this matter."

Chu Yang said, "What thing?"

"That creator of the Nine Tribulations Sword had destroyed so many living beings at that time. So, it had given birth to an extreme resentment... The departed spirits have remained in resentment for all these years. And, the Nine Tribulations Sword is needed to resolve their resentment. And, this has been the true mission of all the previous Masters of Nine Tribulations Sword.

"I don't know much about this. But, that man probably wouldn't have created the Nine Tribulations Sword just for fun. He could destroy millions and billions of lives with just a flick of his hand. So, it's most likely that he wouldn't care whether the survivors would be able to live peacefully. And, he obviously wouldn't care about the happiness of the living. Then, why do Masters of Nine Tribulations Sword appear? This is something worth pondering over."

Tan Tan said with a smile, "You better be careful. No one would be able to kill me after I awaken!"

Chu Yang remained silent for a while, and then said, "Many thanks for the heads up."

Tan Tan smiled, "You don't need to thank me since you're that man's successor. He has passed down the Nine Tribulations Sword. So, he certainly must have a purpose and a plan. And, destroying his plan would make me feel very comfortable... It would make me the happiest!"

Chu Yang couldn't help but smile.

Tan Tan crossed his hands behind his back. He still stood tall in the void. He slowly said with a little uncertainty, "...also... one more thing..."

Chu Yang said, "There's still more?"

"It is about the major races. All of the communities had disappeared together ninety-thousand years ago. All the living beings had died. Tens of millions of people had died. However, the

bloodlines of these great races are still spread in the human world. Some people will inevitably emerge in accordance with destiny when the time of crisis comes. If you meet them... If you meet them..."

He had said these words twice. He then forced a smile, and shook his head. He said, "Everything works according to fate. It doesn't matter whether you meet them or not. You have your principles of action, and fundamentals of life. I'll just leave you alone."

Chu Yang insipidly said, "Oh." He then hurriedly pondered in his heart, [Could it be that other ethnic races still exist in this world?]

"I had originally thought that I had a lot to tell you. But, I've found that there isn't much to tell after I've talked to you." Tan Tan unhurriedly smiled. "I'm done talking."

Chu Yang remained silent for a while, and then said, "You told me these many things. I only want to tell you one thing. I'll kill you no matter what if my brother meets any accident!"

Tan Tan laughed heartily.

Then, the two came back. The brothers had been anxiously waiting for them.

Mo Tian Ji's caravan had finally arrived here after so long.

Chu Yang got to know that Mo Tian Ji had suddenly lost consciousness after he had left. And, Mo Tian Ji had been unconscious since then. This had caused an endless panic among his troops.

Chu Yang was startled in his heart. He quickly walked in the tent, and looked. He saw that Mo Tian Ji had tightly shut his eyes. And, he was lying unconscious on a soft couch. There was still a fresh stain of blood on the corner of his mouth.

"What happened?" Chu Yang raised his head, and suddenly asked.

"We don't know. Clan Lord suddenly became like this." Second Elder of Mo Clan said, "A strange phenomenon had occurred in the sky after you had left earlier... Clan Lord had suddenly felt sword-light soaring into the sky..."

"Then, he took out seven Purple Crystals. He seemed to be foretelling..." Second Elder tightly wrinkled his brows. He then anxiously said, "But, I don't know why the seven purple crystals suddenly got crushed and changed into dust. After that, the Clan Lord only said a few words, and then he lost consciousness."

"What words?" Chu Yang was burning with impatience as he asked.

Second Elder said, "Clan Lord's complexion was ugly at that time. He then suddenly started to speak senselessly, 'The heaven's design is in chaos... Sword heart is broken. The Lake of Despair doesn't have the other shore. How can this be? How can this be?' Then, he fainted, and didn't wake up again."

Chu Yang was shocked in his heart. His face had turned as white as paper.

.....

Chapter 697: Tian Ji's Calculation

Chu Yang still remembered that Mo Tian Ji had said that he was already well-versed in the technique 'Grasping the World's Destiny' when Chu Yang had left the Mo Clan. Mo Tian Ji could also have a glimpse into the heavenly secrets of fate.

He remembered that Mo Tian Ji had said those words very confidently. Chu Yang knew that it was not so simple that Mo Tian Ji "could have a glimpse". Mo Tian Ji had certainly gotten deep accomplishments. And, that's why he had said that.

Chu Yang could tell that it was because of Mo Tian Ji's nature... He wouldn't blow his own trumpet. He would never say so even if he were 60% sure. He had to have at least 80% confidence now that he had said it.

In other words, he was very confident in foretelling the heavenly secrets of fate and could avoid any terrible disaster.

But, he had this appearance now that made it clear that he had been counterattacked by the heavenly fate.

Chu Yang tightly wrinkled his brows. His face had turned gloomy. But, there wasn't enough time left if that was the case.

"Had your Clan Lord started to forecast the heavenly secrets immediately after I had left? Had he started it when that sword energy was soaring to the heavens?" Chu Yang asked.

"Yes, that's right... um, no." Second Elder's gray beard trembled.

"Is it yes or no?" Chu Yang was somewhat impatient. [Why is this old bastard speaking so vaguely?]

"Clan Lord had started when the sword energy had started to soar to the skies. However, nothing unexpected happened at that time. In fact, Clan Lord seemed happy. But, Clan Lord then suddenly felt something once again after three hours. Then, he again started foretelling... He had had this accident at that time."

Chu Yang silently made calculations in his heart. Then, his countenance finally changed.

According to the calculation of time... it must've been the time when Sword Spirit had taken control of Chu Yang's body. Then, Mo Tian Ji must've started to foretell once again. And then, he must've been counterattacked by the heavenly mystery. But, he had revealed a piece of information which made Chu Yang flabbergasted before he had lost his consciousness.

[Heavenly mystery is in chaos. The sword heart is broken. The Lake of Despair doesn't have the other shore!]

[What does it mean?]

[Heavenly mystery is in chaos... It is because I've messed with destiny. But, what's the matter with 'sword heart is broken'? The Lake of Despair doesn't have the other shore? Could it be that he had been talking about me? Had he meant that the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword... can't get to the other shore of the Lake of Despair?]

Chu Yang smirked, and thought, [Would I — the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword — keep fighting with heaven all my life? Me changing the fate against heaven's will... Is this fu*king not finished?]

[Moreover, would I have regrets if I indeed can't pass this time...?]

Chu Yang got lost in thoughts. Then, he finally smiled.

[Mo Qing Wu's destiny has already changed. Her life would be smooth from now on. She might not have me by her side. But, she also wouldn't have to face any crisis. Moreover, she is still very young. She won't necessarily care about her childhood love after she has grown up if she doesn't have me by her side...]

[As for my brothers... their lives have gotten on the right track. So, I don't have to worry about them anymore.]

[They also understand... their life experiences clearly...]

[Hehe.]

Chu Yang muttered to himself, "If this is the case... so be it."

He sat down after he was done speaking. Then, he silently said in his heart, "Maybe, I'll have regrets in this life. But, this life is still... perfect."

But, was it truly perfect?

Chu Yang seemed to be satisfied right now. However, the fact was that he was bound to have regrets in this life if he were to die right now.

There would be many regrets. It's just that he himself didn't know it.

Tan Tan walked over, and strangely smiled, "The heaven's design is in chaos... The sword heart is broken? Chu Yang, you are out of luck."

The Second Elder had said those words in a very low voice. However, the Devil King had such a high strength. So, how could he not have heard them? He was clearly taking joy in other's misfortune at this moment.

It was because he was deeply touched by this most unpredictable crisis of the world. He had been buried for a hundred-thousand years. And, he was now seeing this guy going through such a crisis of fate. So, he couldn't help but get an 'I'm not alone' feeling.

Especially, this man who had disobeyed the track of the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword as set by that man was suffering from this calamity of change in heavenly mystery. This made the Devil King feel even more satisfied.

"I don't have a choice even if I'm out of luck." Chu Yang quietly smiled, "So, you're taking pleasure in other's misfortune. It looks like your nature didn't have any influence on Tan Tan. In fact, it

seems that you've instead gotten affected by Tan Tan's nature too much.

"This feeling of gloating is very new and odd, right?" Chu Yang mischievously laughed.

Tan Tan exposed an expression of amazement.

He recalled that he hadn't shown any emotions of anger or happiness during all those years in the past. He had always been indifferent and aloof. He had remained expressionless even whilst facing that great catastrophe. Then, how was he talking so much after he had awakened? Moreover, he had started to show all kinds of subtle emotions.

This was truly unimaginable for him.

"Fu*k!"

Tan Tan cursed.

Chu Yang laughed heartily. He suddenly felt as if his junior brother was next to him. He felt a lot of baseless comfort in his heart.

....

It was afternoon... Mo Tian Ji finally woke up.

He stared somewhat blankly towards the sky after he woke up. He seemed scared out of his wits. He seemed to have not seen Chu Yang who was in front of him.

"How can this be?" Mo Tian Ji was clearly at a loss. He thought out loud, "This has been the usual convention of the Nine Heavens Continent for ninety-thousand years. How can a mishap happen here? Such a misfortune isn't supposed to happen. How would the Nine Heavens be taken care of for so many years to come if even the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword were to die?"

"This is the turning over of the will of heavens. How can even the will of heavens change?"

"What the hell is going on?"

Mo Tian Ji rubbed his forehead between his eyebrows in distress. He rubbed it until it became deep red. His mental prowess had been excellent through his life. A matter could rarely move him emotionally. He would have an indifferent expression on his face even when Mo Tian Yun would bully him... He had never had any other expression besides 'calm and collected'.

But, he couldn't bear the shock in his heart this time.

After all, the change in heaven's will was an unacceptable thing for common people.

"What happened?" Chu Yang was calm and unruffled even in the midst of chaos as he asked.

He was extremely tranquil and indifferent... as if he hadn't asked about the matter about himself and his destiny.

"Brother Chu," Mo Tian Ji's eyes became clear as he looked at him. Then, his pupils gradually focused. Finally, he opened his eyes wide, and sat up. Then, he ferociously puked a mouthful of blood with all his strength whilst issuing a 'blurgh' sound.

"How about we retreat from this decisive battle at this point?" Mo Tian Ji had been irritable for just a moment after he had sat up. Then, he again restored to his general calmness. After that, he pondered, and said, "We'll have this battle some other time. That's it."

"What... did you see?" Chu Yang cautiously asked, "Tell me... how do you feel? What is the forecast?"

Mo Tian Ji had a confliction on his face.

Tan Tan said, "You might as well say it freely. There wouldn't be a fourth person in the world to hear whatever you'd speak here. You have me here. So, even a Supreme Level Expert... wouldn't think to eavesdrop."

Mo Tian Ji looked somewhat surprised as he looked at Tan Tan. Then, he lowered his head.

"I saw something unbelievable."

Mo Tian Ji exposed an anxious look in his eyes.

"Is it about me?" Chu Yang asked.

"Is it about him?" Tan Tan asked.

They both spoke in unison.

"Yes." Mo Tian Ji forced a smile, "I've been making various preparations ever since I've confirmed Brother Chu's identity. It includes the plans of after the brothers will rush to the top of Nine Heavens and their strength gets developed... How to bear patiently... How to take actions in secret... What they need to rely on for the time being... What they need for the long-term planning etc..."

"In short, I've started to think about everything. I've started to make preparations and plans." Mo Tian Ji said, "I'm that kind of person. Or so to say, this is what Brother Chu looks for in me. This is my worth!"

Chu Yang was somewhat emotionally moved as he said, "It's hard to imagine that you've started to think so far in the future." It was somewhat unexpected for Chu Yang. One could see the difference between him and Mo Tian Ji in this respect.

Chu Yang was good at adapting according to situations. But, this also showed that he had no foresight. He would always do things one step at a time.

[Why should I be afraid as long as everything in front of me is smooth and steady even if big waves are coming from behind?]

However, Mo Tian Ji was different. He would strategize to make plans, and then make a move. He wouldn't be bold and forthright, and wouldn't rush to do anything. He would surely analyze

everything thoroughly and in detail in case he would undertake a task. He wouldn't make the tiniest rash step from the beginning to the end of his most important plan!

He wouldn't easily undertake a task. But, he wouldn't let the enemy have leeway to counterattack in case he would.

One of them was good at devising battle plans right there in the battlefield. And, the other one was capable of planning a victory from a thousand miles away. These were the two people who were talking.

Mo Tian Ji snorted and said, "Not just this... I've thoroughly researched the nature and character of all the brothers one by one. I've determined what Gu Du Xing would do after we all get up there... what Dong Wu Shang would do... what Ji Mo would do... what Luo Ke Di would do... what Rui Bu Tong would do... what Xie Dan Qiong would do..."

"Everyone will have their most appropriate position. Then, all of us together will play the most important role." Mo Tian Ji was a bit angry with Chu Yang's irresponsible behavior. "We're about to face the enemy. And, the enemies are the Nine Great Ruling Clans that have been ruling the Upper Three Heavens for ten-thousand years! We'll be completely wiped out after getting up there if we don't prepare well for it. So, can we afford to be careless?"

"Therefore, I knew that the sword energy that was soaring to the heavens had something to do with the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword. So, I carried out 'Grasping the World's Destiny' method to peek into the operations of 'Heaven's design'." Mo Tian Ji forced a smile. "The first result was more shocking than dangerous. But, the signs indicating that the heavenly design was in chaos continued to transmit out from there. So, I carried out the 'Grasping the World's Destiny' the second time..."

He exposed an expression in his eyes as if it was something inconceivable. "There was already boundless deathly aura therein!"

"Moreover, various kinds of dangers are lurking in the Lake of Despair. Our opponents of this decisive battle aren't worthy of consideration. However, even the operations of heavenly design didn't show that we would win this decisive battle. Instead, it showed that we'll have a narrow escape and then fall into chaos. Then, we'll be doomed without a way to return!

"The heavenly design suddenly collapsed when I wanted to further investigate." Mo Tian Ji exposed a bitter smile on his face. "I hadn't had enough time to pull out. So, I got ferociously hit by it. My consciousness got caught up in the chaos. I could only utter a few sentences with great effort. After that, I don't know what happened."

Mo Tian Ji supported his body, and bitterly smiled. He said, "These words were enough to alert you to some extent if I couldn't wake up in time."

Chu Yang's heart emotionally moved. He wanted to say something. But then, he chose not to.

"But, this isn't enough to explain that the Nine Tribulations Sword Master will be on the verge of death, right?" Tan Tan tilted his head, and strangely said.

"There was a broken sword in the sky inside that deathly aura!" Mo Tian Ji sneered, "Let's say that it wasn't the Nine Tribulations Sword. But then, I can hardly think of any other sword that can be inserted in the operations of heavenly design."

....

Chapter 698: Reprieved From Death On The Road To Disaster

"So to say, it'll undoubtedly come at the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword!" Tan Tan muttered for a while, and then smiled strangely, "Boy, what would you do about the anger of gods and the complaints of people?"

Chu Yang got angry, "You've occupied the body of my younger brother. So, call me 'Big Brother' like an obedient child! Are you really calling me 'boy'?"

"..." Tan Tan stared at him.

Chu Yang snorted, and said, "So what if it's the decision of heavenly design? So what if the Nine Tribulations Sword breaks? I – Chu Yang – have never believed in the will of the heavens!"

"Good mindset!" Tan Tan blurted out.

Then, he further said, "Also, there are chances to survive even if the heavenly design collapses and the ten-thousand tribulations fall upon. However, you'll need to look for it. We would be done for if you just believe in fate and we run into such a situation again."

Mo Tian Ji tightly knitted his brows, "Chu Yang, crisis would fall on you this time. So, you must protect yourself."

Chu Yang nodded, "I know."

He bitterly smiled in his heart. [I knew it when I forced Sword Spirit to take control of my body. The 'Grasping the World's Destiny' of Mo Tian Ji is nothing but an indirect validation now.]

"Then, what about this decisive battle?" Mo Tian Ji asked.

"It's impossible to avoid it if the Heavenly Design breaks the Nine Tribulations Sword. The danger might be even bigger the next time if we try to avoid it forcibly." Chu Yang insipidly said, "This

matter is my business. You don't have to do anything about it. So, this decisive battle will be held normally.

"Don't tell others about this matter... not even Gu Du Xing. Don't let anyone know about this."

Chu Yang said in a soft voice, "Tian Ji, you must protect our brothers if this situation occurs. I know you can do it. Moreover, you would have the responsibility to keep our brothers together in the future if something were to happen to me. You must make them cautious about the various principles out there on the way to survival ahead."

Mo Tian Ji sighed, and forced a smile.

He seriously spoke about everyone's situation as much as possible. He wanted Chu Yang to give up on this operation this time. But, he hadn't expected that his warning would be disregarded by Chu Yang.

"A sword will break in the sky" – these words already explained a lot of questions.

"Heavenly design can't be observed. It is also irreversible." Tan Tan said, "What Chu Yang is saying is right... The danger will be double the next time if you try to avoid it this time in case the heavenly design truly collapses and causes a tribulation. Facing it is the only solution! Seeking a way out of the heavenly design is the only way to survive even if he manages to make a narrow escape from death."

Mo Tian Ji became speechless. He then deeply sighed.

However, Chu Yang was carefree. He said, "There's no need to argue amongst ourselves. We'll truly be screwed if we can't believe ourselves. I – Chu Yang – still believe that I'm capable of surviving."

The three people didn't speak for a very long while. Chu Yang's complexion was relaxed. And, Tan Tan's complexion was

somewhat dignified. But, Mo Tian Ji had wrinkled his brows... He heaved a short sigh.

....

In the evening... Mo Tian Ji took advantage of Chu Yang and Tan Tan muttering among themselves, and called Gu Du Xing and the others. He finally understood things a little bit when he heard that Chu Yang had suddenly erupted and fought with Monarch Experts. He couldn't help but heave a long sigh.

The kind of combat strength that Chu Yang had displayed at the time when he had erupted was hard to imagine for Mo Tian Ji. After all, Chu Yang wasn't an Emperor Level Expert yet. He shouldn't be that formidable even if he were to overdraft his own vitality.

The only possibility was that Chu Yang had used the Nine Tribulations Sword's mysterious energy. But, it was obvious that Chu Yang couldn't withstand this mysterious power at his current level. Therefore, the backfire of this energy must've brought these serious consequences.

However, Mo Tian Ji was speechless after he heard about the circumstances of that time.

[Should Chu Yang have just seen his brothers die in front of him if he hadn't set into action? Chu Yang would truly never ever be capable of doing so.]

[Perhaps, only one man among the brothers is capable of this — Me.]

[I'm not cold-blooded. However, I consider gains and losses. I'll keep myself unharmed so that I can seek revenge in the future. But, this is inevitably not enough to be considered warm-blooded.]

[Therefore, I can only work out a strategy while being behind the curtains. I'm not suitable to charge and break through the enemy lines by being the ever-victorious commander.]

Mo Tian Ji forced a smile as he thought this. [I wouldn't choose myself if I were an outsider in case I had to pick one from me and Chu Yang to be friends with — I would rather choose Chu Yang.]

[This is perhaps the biggest reason why the heaven warping geniuses — Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang — had chosen Chu Yang as their friend.]

[And, the same goes for me.]

Mo Tian Ji regained his vitality to some extent when the group of pedestrians started off on their journey the next morning. He was still sitting in the chariot. The most valuable thing about Mo Tian Ji wasn't his strength. Instead, it was his brain. Nothing could affect Mo Tian Ji's military strength even if all of his limbs were cut off as long as his brain remained intact...

However, this team was still much dull.

Everyone was still very friendly among each other. It could be clearly seen that they had become much more amiable with each other than before. The friendship between them seemed to be more harmonious.

But, this was because of the load of their minds.

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Mo Tian Ji, Xie Dan Qiong, Ao Xie Yun, and the others were secretly looking at Chu Yang with concern from time to time. Moreover, everyone looked relaxed, but all of them were like a tightly compressed coil spring. In fact, these people would appear before Chu Yang whenever Chu Yang would make any sound.

Chu Yang had no other option but to force a smile towards this kind of concern.

[Brothers, it's not the enemy I'm dealing with. It's the heaven...]

However, he couldn't reject their concern.

Tan Tan and Xie Dan Feng were walking together. Both of them

had kept their mouths shut.

Xie Dan Feng had initially kept a distance from Tan Tan. But, they had accidentally come near. Then, Tan Tan had avoided her and moved away. They both were deliberately avoiding each other. But, they couldn't help but come in contact with each other. They both felt bitter in their hearts. All sorts of feelings welled up in their hearts.

"When are you going back?" Xie Dan Feng interrogated him.

Tan Tan touched his nose, and forced a smile. He said without having any better option, "Soon."

"Can't you go back a little sooner? And, let my Tan Tan come out?" Xie Dan Feng asked.

"..." Tan Tan was somewhat aggrieved. [Lady, I had been buried for a hundred-thousand years. And, it has only been a-day-and-a-half since I've come out. And, you're asking me to go back?]

[It's very cruel!]

"What's your name?" Xie Dan Feng finally asked something reasonable.

"I... My name was... Tan Xiao... a hundred thousand years ago." Tan Tan recalled his name. It seemed as if he had recalled a memory from a very long time ago. He had a very proud look as he said his name. He was clearly very satisfied with his name. He said, "The thing that I liked to do the most in those days was talking and laughing. It would make all my enemies vanish in a puff of smoke."

"It's not as pleasant to hear as Tan Tan!" Xie Dan Feng wrinkled her nose. Then, she finally said in affirmation, "It's too out-dated and unpleasant to hear."

This man Tan Xiao almost faced upwards and spat out blood.

Chu Yang felt restless in his heart as he listened to this. So, he wrinkled his nose, and hurriedly walked away.

Was Tan Tan pleasant to hear or Tan Xiao?

One wouldn't have to think over this question... Tan Tan wouldn't be able to keep up with Tan Xiao even if it were to be encouraged. After all, Tan Xiao wasn't only artistic but also easy to pronounce. It was a catchy and domineering name that could make a huge army retreat. It was incomparable.

However, Tan Xiao had no value in Young Miss Xie's heart. Even 'Tan Jade Emperor'... would've been inferior to Tan Tan and unpleasant to hear for her!

"I'm disappointed." Tan Xiao's complexion became dark. He said, "Anyway, I've been reluctant to go back for a very long time for the past few days. But, I'm considering going back to sleep now."

Therefore, this Devil King of his generation — Tan Xiao — had become depressed after he had come out for one-and-a-half day. So, he sank into deep sleep. Therefore, Tan Tan woke up.

But, Tan Tan remained somewhat silent after waking up this time. He looked at everyone, and felt guilty.

This kind of feeling made Xie Dan Feng fly into a rage even though she had initially gone wild with joy. So, she beat him up in a maddened frenzy. Then, Chu Yang looked at the cowering appearance of this guy. He got angry but didn't beat him. Therefore, he gathered all his brothers, and they all beat this guy up.

This guy got beat-up twice. In fact, all of them beat-up this guy with eagerness! Tan Tan recklessly hit back. Therefore... the subtle guilty conscience in his heart also subsided amidst the beatings and clamor...

Perhaps, they could only be blunt towards a friend who was guilty-ridden. Perhaps, that was the only way to pull him back to normal.

They did it so that he would feel that he was also a part of this

group.

We often have a feeling... The more we get close to people, the ruder we get with each other. We would only call them bastards and idiots whenever we open our mouths. But, we naturally think of them as dear to us when we close our mouths. It's nothing out of the ordinary if we beat each other in an altercation.

We often treat each other with respect, and just open our mouths to thank each other. It looks very civilized. But, even a stranger would be able to tell by seeing from a distance that they have a moat between them.

Maybe... this is our unique culture...

....

On another side... Tian Clan, Black Devil Clan, and the other ally clans were now on their way to the Lake of Despair.

It had been quiet for a very long time. The worried look on everyone's face had almost turned into blooming smiles after almost a month.

It was because their reinforcements had finally arrived.

Tu Clan had finally invited reinforcements from the Upper Three Heavens after Tu Qian Hao had died by the hands of Gu Du Xing.

Tu Qian Hao had made his subordinates bring his words to his clan before dying. They naturally brought back his words. But, the Tu Clan's people didn't follow Tu Qian Hao's words.

The number-one youth of the Tu Clan's younger generation had died tragically. This had caused an intense and deep-seated hatred among the people.

So, how could people with such hatred have simply returned to their native place and lived in seclusion following a few words of instruction? Wouldn't that be sparing the murderer too easily? They wanted to kill Gu Du Xing first even if they must return to

their native place and live in seclusion.

As for the King level Experts who had brought back Tu Qian Hao's words... they all had been executed by the Tu Clan. This was because a rumor had been spread that they all had entrapped their Young Clan Lord and killed him...

Tu Clan's high level experts naturally understood that Tu Qian Hao had such nature; he would've definitely said those words.

But, how would they take revenge of Tu Qian Hao's death if they didn't portray Tu Qian Hao's death as assassination? How would they kill Gu Du Xing?

[Besides, our Tu Clan would be the number-one clan to give outstanding services in the alliance as long as the reinforcements came down. Our Tu Clan would be high and mighty as it should be by rights after we've defeated the enemy.]

[This is equivalent to an opportunity to raise our Tu Clan to the top. So, how can we let it go?]

[The only unfortunate thing is Tu Qian Hao's death. It wouldn't have been difficult to lead the clan to glory with Tu Qian Hao's qualifications after the clan had risen up.]

Gu Du Xing would've certainly sighed if he were to know about this situation, [It's very unfortunate that Tu Qian Hao died. He was such a hero. He gave up his life to warn his clan... but it still didn't affect the clan by any means.]

The armies were advancing day by day. But, Tian Bu Hui found that the Young Black Devil seemed to have become habitually silent ever since he had returned after ambushing Dong Wu Shang. His usual sinister voice which could draw people to hell hadn't been heard for a long time now.

....

Chapter 699: Black Devil's Wrath

The Young Black Devil calmly stood under a tree outside the Black Devil Clan's camp that night. He seemed to be thinking about something. He was silent like a ghost. He seemed to be lost in thoughts. A person passing by his side wouldn't even realize that someone was standing there if they weren't paying attention.

"Brother Black," Tian Bu Hui's moon-white long robe lightly drifted as he walked over from Black Devil's behind. He seemed to be extremely carefree in the duskiness of the night.

The guards all around saw the two Young Masters, and they clearly understood that these two wanted to chat. So, the guards discreetly left the place to give them privacy.

The Young Black Devil lightly wrinkled his brows under his mask. He revealed a look of disgust. But then, he immediately hid it up. He sinisterly asked without turning around towards Tian Bu Hui, "What's the matter?"

"There's nothing important. It's just that I've been noticing that Brother Black has been very silent these days. War is upon us now. So, I'm a bit concerned." Tian Bu Hui's sharp vision flashed as he said.

"Is there something to worry about?" Young Black Devil coldly smiled. "We have several people on our side. There's no lack of experts. The strength of our great allied clans hasn't reduced. Moreover, Tu Clan has now called reinforcements from the Upper Three Heavens. Therefore, the victory is basically in our hands. So, what are you worried about?"

He had said these words in an ice-cold and gloomy manner as usual. But, Tian Bu Hui somehow faintly felt that these words had been said in anger and in a sarcastic way.

This feeling made Tian Bu Hui feel shocked in his heart. He

suddenly became anxious.

"Brother Black, I don't understand why you're angry." Tian Bu Hui took a deep breath, and said, "I wouldn't have said anything to you if it was like the old days. We can't avoid a battle between me and you in the future even if this matter finishes. But, this is a critical time now. So, why has your mood become like this?"

Young Black Devil became silent. His face couldn't be seen from behind his mask. A good while passed. Then, he said in a taunting manner, "Can you clarify the ratio between the strength of the enemy's side and our side?"

Tian Bu Hui replied, "Yes. Ou Clan from our side has been wiped out, and Meng Clan has also changed into a wisp of smoke. But, our strength is still considerably imposing.

"Your clan, my clan, and Tu Clan are three great clans. Plum Clan and Zhao Clan are also intact. Li Xiong Tu has also agreed that he'll help in this decisive battle. We have more than a hundred Emperor Level Experts. And, we have more than one-thousand-and-two-hundred King level Experts. Moreover, we have additional reinforcements from the Upper Three Heavens."

"Hold on!" Young Black Devil waved his hand, and interrupted him. He then sneered, and said, "We still haven't started attacking despite having such formidable strength, and we've started to request for reinforcements?"

Tian Bu Hui's face turned red. He said, "Do you not know..."

"I only know one thing... I'm an assassin, but I know the demeanor of a real warm-blooded hero. So, we don't cower even if there's a heavenly God in front of us once we've pointed out the tip of our weapon. Besides, both sides are operating in broad daylight in this war which is going to sweep away the entire Middle Three Heavens. The majestic experts will have the decisive battle under the banners and fight for dominance!"

"This is a kind of war that is destined to go down in history. But, you all are tarnishing it!" Young Black Devil sneered, "The fight hasn't even started, and you've invited reinforcements. Tian Bu Hui, you aren't as good as Tian Bu Ru. Are you actually afraid of this war?"

"You've invited Li Xiong Tu. But, I won't say anything about it. After all, the people of Li Xiong Tu's clan also belong to the Middle Three Heavens no matter what is said. But, why did you invite people from the Upper Three Heavens to meddle? What relation does the Shi Clan of the Upper Three Heavens have with the war of dominance in the Middle Three Heavens?"

Young Black Devil coldly said, "Tian Bu Hui, you're deplorable!"

Tian Bu Hui's face turned red. He angrily said, "Do you know who the enemy that we're facing is? You're saying these words now. Don't you think that you're being deliberately provocative?"

"I'm being deliberately provocative?" Young Black Devil suddenly turned around. His jet-black pupil flashed in the dim light of the night. They looked like two radiating gems. "Tian Bu Hui... are you even worthy of speaking to me like that?"

Tian Bu Hui blew his top. He was about to erupt. But, he endured it in the end, and said, "Our opponents this time are Ji Clan, Luo Clan, Gu Clan, Dong Clan, Mo Clan, and Xie Clan... And, none of the three clans besides Ji Clan, Luo Clan, and Gu Clan are weaker than the clans of the two of us."

"I certainly know this." Young Black Devil's voice turned feeble on hearing the words 'Dong Clan'.

Tian Bu Hui didn't pay attention to the change in his tone. He was in the midst of his fury. He said like in quick-fire succession, "They have newly promoted Saber Emperor and Sword Emperor in their lineup. They have other people also.... Ji Zhu, Ji Mo, Dong Wu Lei, Luo Ke Wu, and Xie Dan Qiong are outstanding people of the younger generation. Mo Clan has declined a bit because of their

internal strife. But, don't forget that Mo Clan is now being operated by the Master of Calculations and Manipulation – Mo Tian Ji!

"On top of that, the invincible King of Hell Chu is also in their camp!

"They don't have fewer Emperor Level Experts than us. King Level Experts also might be in similar number. They'll be like a gridlock once the war starts. Both parties will end up being on the road of destruction if we let them join together like that. And, everyone has their individual rivals in this decisive battle. The experts of the previous generation will naturally deal with their matches of same level. Therefore, Monarch Level Experts will inevitably fight with Monarch Level Experts when the time comes and the fight is started. Emperor Level Experts will fight with Emperor Level Experts. But, the number of high level experts on both sides is almost the same. So, we won't be weak even if the opposite party occupies the dominant position.

"The fight between King Level Experts will inevitably be fierce. There's eighty-percent or more chance at that time that they'll take each other down with themselves considering their strength.

"Therefore, our younger generation will decide the outcome of the battle. But, who can deal with Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and Chu Yang from our side? Besides, who's there on our side that can be compared to the sly and crafty King of Hell Chu and the Master of Calculations and Manipulation – Mo Tian Ji?"

Tian Bu Hui angrily said.

"Haven't you been saying all this time that you aren't afraid of them? What's wrong? Do you finally admit now that you're inferior to them?" Young Black Devil looked at him in a mocking way.

"I have to admit that their strength is greater than mine no matter whether I say it or not. Especially, Gu Du Xing and Dong

Wu Shang." Tian Bu Hui sighed. "I had a lucky event in my childhood. The meridians of my whole body got unclogged. So, I never relaxed practicing over all these years. I kept on practicing martial arts unimpeded, and I've just broken through to the Emperor Level. But, those two men are pure Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor. You can judge their relative superiority at just a glance.

"However, I'll never admit this in front of people even though I'm admitting it now. I must belittle them!" Tian Bu Hui said, "That's because I refuse to accept their superiority... and also because of the morale of the troops."

Young Black Devil smirked, "You yourself don't realize why you do this. You basically want to belittle others to show your superiority. It's quite amusing that you feel this in your heart. It's a great achievement. This is your innate dark mentality that your Tian Clan is nothing but trash!"

"You!" Tian Bu Hui flew into a rage.

"Isn't it right what I said?" Young Black Devil didn't show the least bit of weakness. He raised his head, and contemptuously looked at Tian Bu Hui.

He was shorter in height than Tian Bu Hui. His stature seemed a little thinner than him. But, the imposing auras of both of them were ferociously surging up at this moment. None of them were falling in the disadvantageous situation.

Tian Bu Hui finally swallowed his anger, and said, "Black Devil, you've changed."

He finally took the last breath of tolerance, and said, "Your personality has changed a lot ever since you've returned after intercepting Dong Wu Shang."

Young Black Devil seemed to be stunned. He didn't speak anything for a long while. Then, he turned his head, and said, "It's

not that I've changed. Instead, I'm thoroughly abiding by the dignity of a martial artist. But, you've lost that dignity."

Tian Bu Hui mockingly said, "You have always been an assassin of the Black Devil by profession. Do you even have the dignity of a martial artist?"

"Tian Bu Hui, do you want to see for yourself whether... I have or haven't the dignity of a martial artist?" Young Black Devil suddenly turned his head. He already had a long sword in his hand. The sharp tip of the sword was pointed at Tian Bu Hui's throat like a spirit snake.

Tian Bu Hui's eyes flashed. He didn't dodge. He just said, "You..."

He hadn't finished saying, and he felt a sword-light flashing. A fierce and swift murderous aura emitted straight out of the sword. He turned pale in fright. Then, he faced upwards, and angrily said, "You truly want to kill me!"

He got a fine scar from the sword on his chin. The blood splashed out from the scar.

"I'm leaving you with a warning this time. You would've been dead right now if I wanted to kill you!" Young Black Devil shook his sleeves. Then, his black sword vanished without a trace. He then coldly said, "But, I won't mind killing you."

He insipidly yet sinisterly said, "I've been in a good mood for the past few days. Wait for my mood to turn bad if you want to die. And then, come back, and question my dignity of martial artist again."

Tian Bu Hui's lips quivered in anger.

He hadn't thought that his own faithful ally truly wanted to kill him at this moment.

"Black Devil, wait for this war to be over. I'll definitely come back to settle the account for today's sword." Tian Bu Hui became sullen. He almost vomited out blood. He doubted if this guy in

front of him was a psycho.

"You don't have confidence in yourself. You would've fought with me now if you had been self-confident." Young Black Devil coldly said, "Coward! You can't even be compared with a strand of Dong Wu Shang's hair!"

Tian Bu Hui breathed heavily like an angry bull. He then maliciously said, "Black Devil, you're disregarding the big picture."

Young Black Devil snorted, and said, "Big picture? What do I have to do with it?"

Tian Bu Hui swallowed saliva with gurgling sound. He resisted his urge to kill the man in front of him. He suppressed his emotions, and said, "I don't want to bicker with you. I'm only asking you who would you take responsibility for when the war starts?"

Young Black Devil coldly snorted. He turned around, and softly said, "Dong Wu Shang."

Tian Bu Hui heavily said, "Alright!"

He turned around to leave.

He didn't want to stay with this dangerous fellow for another moment.

"Who would you take responsibility for?" Young Black Devil calmly asked.

"I'll take responsibility for King of Hell Chu!" Tian Bu Hui maliciously said.

"You're very courageous." It wasn't known if these words of the Black Devil were praising or disparaging.

"And, we both are in the same boat. Your Dong Wu Shang is also very fierce!" Tian Bu Hui snorted. He left taking giant steps. His silhouette was soon about to vanish in the woods.

"My Dong Wu Shang?" Young Black Devil muttered in a low

voice. His voice had become very strange.

Young Black Devil suddenly asked as he saw Tian Bu Hui leaving, "How did you manage to convince those people of the Ao Clan? Why had they changed their minds and decided to deal with King of Hell Chu and the others? Is there a reason behind it? Moreover, is it supposed to be kept secret?"

Tian Bu Hui suddenly stopped. He seemed to be caught off guard. He said, "Why do you ask this?"

....

Chapter 700: Met On The Road; The Battle Of The Saber Emperor!

"Those Ao brothers aren't grandiose. But, how to say it... They are still geniuses. And, they'll never think of laying their hands on those brothers of King of Hell Chu without any reason even if they are stupid. They won't attack the Xie Clan. This is simply putting the cart before the horse. After all, we are the Ao Clan's personal enemies, and not those people. What role do you play in all this?"

Young Black Devil calmly asked.

"It's very simple to deal with them." Tian Bu Hui snorted, "Their weakness is too obvious. They are blinded by greed. So, they can easily be manipulated. The most crucial point is that Ao Xie Yun hasn't died yet. And, this point is very important. This is what they are worried about."

"So, that's how it is." Young Black Devil's eyes lit up.

"King of Hell Chu and Xie Clan had rescued Ao Xie Yun. So, they are the biggest enemies to those Ao brothers. Also, they hate these people to the bones, and have the biggest enmity of their life. And, we are Ao Clan's personal enemies since we've intercepted Ao Xie Yun. But, we have instead become their greatest helpers for these few people.

"There are obviously other reasons and methods.

"But, you don't need to know about these things." Tian Bu Hui said.

"What was the result of their battle?" Young Black Devil intensely asked, "Why has the news not come yet?"

Tian Bu Hui remained silent for a moment, and then said, "Half of the Xie Clan is already destroyed. As for the rest of the news... or the final news... it hasn't come yet. However, Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing have already left to rescue them. They are travelling in

the starry night at double speed. Though, they won't necessarily catch up."

Tian Bu Hui exposed a crafty expression, "Actually, I want them to catch up. That would maybe save us a lot of effort."

Young Black Devil remained silent for a long while. Then, he slowly said, "Dong Wu Shang... won't die."

"Is it because he's your rival?" Tian Bu Hui burst into laughter, "It's hard to imagine that the Black Devil who has always killed people in the dark cherishes this kind of hero who has the elegant demeanor of Jianghu!"

"It's a pity that you don't feel the same way." Young Black Devil coldly said, "Otherwise, it could make me look at you in high regard."

"I won't care about any elegant demeanor of Jianghu or heroic demeanor of Martial Artists as long as I'm sure that I'll live on! Elegance of self-restraint and elegant manners are like history books. They all belong to the victors. I'll naturally make you see that my – Tian Bu Hui's – elegance of self-restraint is still unmatched when I'd win and set my foot on the pinnacle."

Tian Bu Hui changed the topic. He clearly wanted this unpleasant conversation to end as soon as possible. He coldly said, "You've decided to deal with Dong Wu Shang... So, you must make all the preparations properly. I don't want to go to your grave to find you to have a decisive duel!"

"You won't be disappointed... only if you survive from King of Hell Chu's hands. That's because you'll still have the chance to die at my hands." Young Black Devil didn't move an inch. He said with equal harshness.

Tian Bu Hui angrily snorted, and said, "Simply unreasonable! Say that again after you kill Dong Wu Shang." He then went away into the forest with a whooshing sound.

Young Black Devil looked at Tian Bu Hui leaving with an ice-cold look. A conflicted ray of light flickered in his black gem-like pupils. A long while passed. Then, he muttered, "I kill Dong Wu Shang? Why would I kill Dong Wu Shang?"

He took a deep breath, and talked to himself in a low voice, "How can I kill Dong Wu Shang... alas..."

Then, he kept standing there alone. He looked at the starry sky, and didn't move for a long time. An unknown number of colors fluctuated in his eyes in a split second.

A long while passed. Then, he took a deep breath, "Shi Clan has sent men on a large scale in the Middle Three Heavens this time to help the Tu Clan. Could it be that the relation between them has reached to this point? But, why is Tu Clan still staying in the Middle Three Heavens if this is so? Shi Clan may have something else planned. But, what could it be?

"In the end... what should be done?"

He kept standing here the whole night. His thoughts were in a whirl. He didn't stop faintly sighing.

...

Early in the morning... Large troops of men and horses took a turn along a mountain hollow. Chu Yang and the others suddenly became startled.

A team was quietly standing one-thousand feet away In the front of Chu Yang's troops. There were about five-to-six-hundred people. They didn't issue the least bit of sound. They didn't leak a little bit of imposing aura.

They discovered Chu Yang and the others as soon as they turned this side. Five-to-six-hundred sharp visions were immediately shot. Their imposing aura seemed to be as loud as thunderclaps and thunderstorm erupting. Everyone felt their hearts stagnate.

Gu Du Xing who had been riding in the forefront slowly

straightened his body. He then slightly narrowed his eyes.

Dong Wu Shang's eyes hung down. His iron-like face was expressionless. He slightly patted his scabbard with his right index finger.

Sword energy and saber energy violently surged up.

They streaked across the sky to a thousand feet distance like a startling long rainbow. They dealt a head-on blow!

Two dignified imposing auras came head-on from inside the troops of the other side. Those imposing auras intercepted the sword and saber energies. The substantial yet invisible energies clearly clashed in the air.

It seemed as if some things had collided over the head of both the troops in the sky and mutually dissipated.

Then, a majestic voice slowly said, "Exquisite pure sword energy! Fine overbearing saber energy! Are you the Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor that have just risen in the Middle Three Heavens? Gu Du Xing? And, Dong Wu Shang?"

Gu Du Xing replied in an icy-proud way, "Yes, what of it? Who are you all waiting for?"

"Of course, for you! You have an indifferent and lonely sword-like voice when you speak. So, you must be the Sword Emperor — Gu Du Xing?" there seemed to be a lot of harsh feeling in this voice.

"Yes, this is certainly Gu! But, who... are you all?" Gu Du Xing insipidly said. He sensitively smelt that the people before him were clearly hostile. So, a vigilant feeling rose in his heart, and his sword intention was triggered. The Black Dragon Sword silently let out a sword cry in the sword's scabbard.

"And, the other one is Dong Wu Shang, right?" that majestic voice coldly and insipidly said.

"Yes, it's your Second Master Dong!" Dong Wu Shang shouted

loudly. A crazy and overbearing momentum rushed out.

Dong Wu Shang had already felt like speaking for a while now. But, Gu Du Xing had already been talking to the people opposite to them. So, Dong Wu Shang didn't feel like interrupting his brother. This concerned the honor of his elder brother. Therefore, Dong Wu Shang held himself back.

The brothers had now shared joys and worries, trials and tribulations. The brothers' affection had become increasingly deep along with time. They had become more and more caring. Therefore, everyone cared about the seniority of the elder brothers.

It didn't matter if they were generally joking. But, the order of seniority among the brothers couldn't be broken in serious moments like this.

Let's imagine that an older brother is talking in front of the enemy, and the younger one interrupts him randomly. Then, wouldn't it mean... Does this elder brother have no respect? Moreover, is your younger brother too casual? Or, the brothers don't have harmony between them?

This would be a taboo matter.

"My Second Master Dong?" That majestic voice slowly asked. Then, he gently laughed, and said in a low and restraining voice, "Really, you're worthy of being a Saber Emperor. Your imposing attitude is pretty good. It's just very easy to break as well. I'll break off this Saber Emperor today."

Dong Wu Shang laughed in a rumbling manner. Then, he suddenly shouted, "Break off? You're hiding your faces, and still you think you're worthy of saying these words? I – Dong Wu Shang – am not scared to reveal my true identity to the world. I'm not scared of facing the enemy. I'm crazy, straightforward, and upright. So, I'll prefer death over humiliation! You haven't shown your face yet. And, you still dare to speak conceited nonsense.

From which clan did you get your education?!"

The person opposite to them had been hiding among his troops while talking. He hadn't revealed himself.

"Ha ha ha... Fourth Brother, it seems that this guy has been taught by his master's wife." Luo Ke Di laughed whilst issuing quacking noises. "Does this guy even have a face to reveal? Maybe, he can show us his two shiny white buttocks..."

"Nonsense!" Ji Mo reproved Luo Ke Di saying, "How can buttocks speak? They don't have a mouth on top of them."

The man on the opposite had said that he would break off the Saber Emperor. So, he was an enemy that couldn't live under the same sky with them. And, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di would always have bitter and unkind words for the enemy. In fact, they weren't showing any mercy with their words.

"Third Brother doesn't know that that man is only speaking shit!" Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had joined hands together. They both were absolutely flawless. Especially, both of them had been mocking the man using swear words together. They were adding fuel to fire.

"Indeed..." Ji Mo suddenly had a realization, and he nodded, "I asked how the buttocks can talk. But, it turns out that this guy is speaking shit. So that's how it is... Coyote, you indeed have a brilliant mind."

Luo Ke Di became immensely proud of himself, and said, "Moreover, Third Brother, what you've previously said is also mistaken. Who said that his buttocks don't have a mouth on them? Isn't that still there?"

Ji Mo flew into a rage, and rebuked, "Coyote, that's why you're still young. You don't understand this. Is that a mouth? That is clearly a flower waiting to bloom. It is waiting to bloom!"

Luo Ke Di was in reverential awe. He willingly accepted his elder brother's view, "Third Brother, I deserve the scolding. I misjudged

this person. It's just that... how would it be able to bloom?"

"Stupid!" Ji Mo felt resentment towards him for failing to meet his expectations. His face had turned black, "Wouldn't it open up and blossom like a flower when your Fourth Brother Dong inserts his Black Saber into its scabbard?"

Luo Ke Di got fascinated, and said, "So, that's how it is. He'll probably see thousands of purple and red colors in that moment..."

"You're wrong!" Ji Mo remained silent for a while, and said, "That would have thousands of red. But, there won't necessarily be thousands of purples. There should be yellow, white, green, red, and black colors..."

Luo Ke Di scratched his head. He didn't understand a thing, "Third Brother, I understand about the reds. But, how would there be yellow, green, and black colors?"

Ji Mo became so angry that he went mad, "Could it be that there will be no green color when his gall bladder will be damaged? This man's heart is black. Can't you see it? And, as for yellow... is he not going to shit himself today?"

Luo Ke Di had been suddenly enlightened. So, he prostrated himself in admiration. "Third Brother is extremely wise. I feel as if I've read ten years worth of books after I've heard your words today..."

Ji Mo stuck out his chest. "You're flattering me. However, all of this is my lifetime experience. You're still young. So, pay attention to accumulation of knowledge. I have a lot of experience. You'll also be like me after you've seen a lot of disgusting people like him. You'll also obtain a godly insight."

"This little brother truly admires Third Brother. You're like the water of a heavenly river. You're like an unceasing torrent. You're like the waves of the sea... You're like the mighty wave higher than any other..." Luo Ke Di bowed respectfully with clasped hands. He

was crazily flattering him.

The man in the opposite remained silent for a long time. Then, he suddenly bellowed in a thunderous sound. He had become so angry that he couldn't suppress it. He said in a raging voice, "I'll tear all of you alive one by one."

A silhouette came out whooshing while saying this. It changed into a cyan lightning in the air. He then crazily pounced over.

This roasting had made this man burn with anger. He had simply lost his calm. Neither side would've been affected if both of them were to approach and start a war. But, he had come far away from his troop out of anger. He had come to Dong Wu Shang's side. And, Dong Wu Shang had already occupied the advantageous position with this.

This man had a majestic team behind him. But, Dong Wu Shang had his brothers alongside him. Therefore, Dong Wu Shang was confident that he would be much stronger than that man even if they both were to be almost on a par as long as this man had been separated from his team.

If so, the winner's side would have the advantage!

...

Table of Contents

[Transcending the Nine Heavens](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601: I Will Make You A Man!](#)

[Chapter 602: Ingenious Plan to Cross the River](#)

[Chapter 603: You Are A Good Person!](#)

[Chapter 604: I Will Take You to the Top of the Nine Heavens!](#)

[Chapter 605: Bragging to Swindle](#)

[Chapter 606: Escapes Alive From Mortal Danger](#)

[Chapter 607: Cross the River and Not Destroy the Bridge Afterwards? Just to Keep You?](#)

[Chapter 608: What Offense Did I Commit Against You?](#)

[Chapter 609: Cheeks Streaming with Tears!](#)

[Chapter 610: Where is the Spark?](#)

[Chapter 611: A Storm Rises!](#)

[Chapter 612: Bu Tian Gives Birth to a Child](#)

[Chapter 613: This is a Nine Tribulations Pill!](#)

[Chapter 614: Yang Ruo Lan's Intuition!](#)

[Chapter 615: It Can't Be So Coincidental, Right?](#)

[Chapter 616: Blames Those Heartless Parents!](#)

[Chapter 617: Your Sworn Brother!](#)

[Chapter 618: I Must Have the Prestige of a Big Brother!](#)

[Chapter 619: Son? Grandson?!](#)

[Chapter 620: How Can I Destroy Your Happiness!](#)

[Chapter 621: Mission 'Caressing Ou'!](#)

[Chapter 622: King of Hell's Banquet!](#)

[Chapter 623: I Shall Turn You Into A Ghost. What do you say?](#)

[Chapter 624: Are You Watching?](#)

[Chapter 625: I'll Come Up if You Don't Come Down!](#)

[Chapter 626: I Will Trick You to Death!](#)

[Chapter 627: Destruction of Ou Clan!](#)

[Chapter 628: Such a Quarrelsome But Loving Couple](#)

[Chapter 629: The Best Husband and Wife](#)

[Chapter 630: The Respective Highlight of One's Life](#)

[Chapter 631: Parting Ways](#)

[Chapter 632: Warning](#)

[Chapter 633: People of Ao Clan](#)

[Chapter 634: I'm the Emperor of A Million Swords!](#)

[Chapter 635: You Will Pay the Price for Daring to Provoke my Black Devil Clan!](#)

[Chapter 636: The Ones Who Bite the Hand That Feeds Them Must Be Killed!](#)

[Chapter 637: "Black Devil! So, It Turned Out To Be You!"](#)

[Chapter 638: Mean and Shameless Black Devil!](#)

[Chapter 639: Poison!](#)

[Chapter 640: Beats Them At Their Own Game, And Exterminates to the Last Man!](#)

[Chapter 641: I Regret It A Lot!](#)

[Chapter 642: Guide to the World of Poisons](#)

[Chapter 643: Gu Du Xing, Let's Fight!](#)

[Chapter 644: Tu Qian Hao's Epiphany!](#)

[Chapter 645: Already Unruffled by the Time I Want to Look Back!](#)

[Chapter 646: Sister Xiao Miao, I Came Back!](#)

[Chapter 647: Where Am I Fat?](#)

[Chapter 648: This Kind of Happiness Doesn't Come Easy!](#)

[Chapter 649: Gu Clan's Jubilation](#)

[Chapter 650: So Passionate and Sincerely Devoted!](#)

[Chapter 651: Scolding You to Vent My Anger!](#)

[Chapter 652: Two Wins Out of Three Matches!](#)

[Chapter 653: Planning Strategies!](#)

[Chapter 654: Mo Tian Ji's Information Network!](#)

[Chapter 655: Wu Lei and Wu Shang!](#)

[Chapter 656: A Man's Thoughts are Impossible to Get a Grasp On!](#)

[Chapter 657: Wu Shang's Premature Death!](#)

[Chapter 658: I'm Heartless Since You're Immoral!](#)

[Chapter 659: The Assassination of Saber Emperor!](#)

[Chapter 660: Black Devil! Lurking Behind like an Oriole!](#)

[Chapter 661: You're Not a Hero!](#)

[Chapter 662: Life and Death, Elder Brother and Younger Brother!](#)

[Chapter 663: Dong Wu Lei's Negotiations](#)

[Chapter 664: Do You Regret?](#)

[Chapter 665: Hothead!](#)

[Chapter 666: I Appoint you as the Military Advisor of Heavenly Armament Pavilion!](#)

[Chapter 667: True Transformation of the Master of Calculation and Manipulation](#)

[Chapter 668: A Pair of Beasts!](#)

[Chapter 669: Who Will Compensate For My Youth?](#)

[Chapter 670: Brother Chu, This Must Be Very Difficult For You](#)

[Chapter 671: The Two Supremes Who Hamper a Student's Progress](#)

[Chapter 672: The Battle for the Middle Heavens](#)

[Chapter 673: Two Messages](#)

[Chapter 674: Father-in-law and Son-in-law Must Not Speak of this Tale...](#)

[Chapter 675: Who Provoked the Nine Tribulations Sword Master?!](#)

[Chapter 676: Must Feel Proud... Whether in Life or Death!](#)

[Chapter 677: No One Can Even Think of Harming Her As Long As I'm Alive!](#)

[Chapter 678: You Owe Me Happiness. How Would You Make Up For Its Deficiency?](#)

[Chapter 679: Who Dared to Hurt My Brothers?!](#)

[Chapter 680: Who Besides Me Is Referred To By This Name?](#)

[Chapter 681: Fierce Battle!](#)

[Chapter 682: I Focus on What's Before My Eyes When I Can't Attend to Everything Simultaneously!](#)

[Chapter 683: A Real Man Must Not Take A Wrong Step In His Journey!](#)

[Chapter 684: Insidious Minister](#)

[Chapter 685: Devil King! Awakens!](#)

[Chapter 686: Give Me Back My Tan Tan!](#)

[Chapter 687: The Five Killer Tools!](#)

[Chapter 688: I Would Rather Rely On Myself Than To Depend On The Heaven, The Earth Or The Ancestors!](#)

[Chapter 689: Crazy Sword Spirit!](#)

[Chapter 690: Wounded Soul!](#)

[Chapter 691: All I Want Is To Be Peaceful](#)

[Chapter 692: I'm Sure We'll Meet Again Someday. It's A Deal!](#)

[Chapter 693: "A Good Sword!"](#)

[Chapter 694: Devil King and Sword Master](#)

[Chapter 695: Who Are You, Who Am I, and Who Is He?](#)

[Chapter 696: The Heaven's Design is in Chaos; Sword Heart is Broken!](#)

[Chapter 697: Tian Ji's Calculation](#)

[Chapter 698: Reprieved From Death On The Road To Disaster](#)

[Chapter 699: Black Devil's Wrath](#)

[Chapter 700: Met On The Road; The Battle Of The Saber Emperor!](#)